

# Loyalist Freemasons from the State of New York

Compiled by R. W. Gary L. Heinmiller  
 Director, Onondaga & Oswego Masonic Districts Historical Societies (OMHDS)  
[www.omdhs.syracusemasons.com](http://www.omdhs.syracusemasons.com)  
 August/September 2010



Ref. Transactions of The American Lodge of Research, Vol. XII, No. 2, 29 Jan 1973 to 27 Dec 1973. pages 208-236.

For a companion paper to this see also the present writer's compilation of "Freemasons in the Revolutionary War" [515 pages], and "Freemasons in the Revolutionary War," Proceedings of the Grand Lodge of the State of New York 1900, pages 294-316  
<http://books.google.com/books?id=QoBLAAAAMAAJ&printsec=frontcover&dq=editions:LCCN06007447&lr=#PPA301.M1>

## Contents

### References

List of Lodges

Who were the Loyalists?

Alphabetical Index of Brothers

Biographical Sketches of Masonic Loyalists

Appendix I - New York Petition of 16 Oct 1776 to Lord Richard Howe and Gen. William Howe.

Appendix II - The Frey Family

Appendix III - Ryerse and Ryerson Family

Appendix IV - Masonic Beginnings in Colonial New York

Appendix V - Captain Edward Byrn(e) and Zion Lodge No. 10, Detroit

Appendix VI - Charles Geddes - Watch and Clock Maker

Appendix VII - Captain Thomas Robison – Estate Litigation - 1831

Appendix VIII - Robert Hamilton – the Founder of Queenston, Canada

Appendix IX - John Askin

### Abbreviations Used

(A)	Ancient	d.	died	I.C.	Irish Constitution	NS	Nova Scotia
AYM	Ancient York Mason	d/o	daughter of	m.	married		
b.	born	E.R.	English Registry	NB	New Brunswick		

Note: Names appearing in **Bold Type** are, for the more part Brother Freemasons.

### LIST OF LODGES.

Sorted by Number

The lodges in New York State during the War of the Revolution, say, from 1775 to 1783, were as follows:

(note; This list is in the order in which Historian Ross had it printed;

it has been placed in columns to facilitate its reading and reference – g.l.h)

Lodge Name	No	Notes
Ineffable Lodge	x	Albany. 1767. This Lodge is inserted rather as a matter of sentiment than from any desire to suggest that in the years covered by this report it conferred any degrees below that of Secret Master, the Fourth Degree in the Ancient and Accepted Scottish Rite. CARSON emphatically asserts it did not (Gould, American reprint, vol. iv., p. 630). Things were rather loosely done in those days, however, and the Grand Lodge prerogative was not as clear cut as now. The old minute book of the Ineffable Lodge ends with December 4, 1774; and its history, so far as minutes are concerned, is a blank until 1821, when, according to CARSON, "its labors were revived by GILES FONDA YATES and others."
King David's	x	New York City. 1769. Harrison. Existed until 1791. Moses M. HAYS, an eminent peddler of "higher degrees," was first Master.

Lodge Name	No	Notes
		Charter removed to Rhode Island, 1780.
Lodge	x	1743. Scotland. This Lodge never seems to have had any place on the Scottish roll. First military lodge in Grand Lodge of Scotland. In Colonel Lee's regiment, afterward 55th Infantry; battle of Brooklyn, 1776. (See No. 7, N. Y. Prov., 1762.)
Sion Lodge	x	New York City. 1773. Ancient. Existed at least until 1778. Nothing of its history known, except two newspaper notices of its attendance at church.
St. John's Regimental Lodge.	x	Traveling warrant, 1775. Johnson. "First Military Lodge warranted by New York or any Provincial Masonic Power." — <i>McClenachan</i> , "History," vol. I, p. 310. McClenachan says: "Subsequent to the war and the disbandment of the troops the warrant for St. John's Regimental Lodge) was carried to Clark's Town, and little heed given to it until a new interest was revived in it by some of the officers in 1784, whereupon, at a Grand Lodge of emergency, New York, held on the 23d June, R.'W .'. WILLIAM COCK, Past Grand Master, in the Chair, Brothers PIE. Past Master, and KNOX, Senior Warden, of St. John's Lodge, No. 1, appeared, and on behalf of that Lodge acknowledged the jurisdiction of this Grand Lodge and took their seats accordingly." In 1789 some of the members living at Warwick petitioned that a new warrant be issued for the brethren there. This was done March 26, 1790, the name being the same — St. John's — and in 1815 it received the number, 19, previously held by Erin Lodge, New York City. In 1819 this number was changed to 18. The Lodge became defunct prior to 1825. What became of the warrant held at Clark's Town is not very clear.
Union Lodge	x	New York City. Modern Provincial (?) Hon. R. R. Livingston was Master in 1771, according to minutes of Solomon's Lodge No. 1, Poughkeepsie.
Washington Lodge	x	1779. Massachusetts. Ancient. A military lodge, GEN. John PATERSON (Master). COL. BENJAMIN TUPPER and MAJOR WILLIAM HULL (Gen. in War of 1812), Wardens, organized at New Windsor, near Newburg, N. Y. "Capt. Moses Greenleaf of the Eleventh Massachusetts Regiment afterward became Master of this Lodge. His son, Simon Greenleaf, late Past Grand Master of Masons, said he had often heard his father mention Washington's visit to this Lodge while Commander-in-Chief, and the high gratification they gave to the officers and members, especially as he went without ceremony, as a private brother." — <i>W. Hayden's</i> "Washington and his Masonic Compeers."
Military Union No. 1	1	1776. Johnson. Originally warranted as American Union Lodge by Massachusetts, confirmed in New York City by Dr. MIDDLETON as Military Union Lodge, No. 1.
Solomon's, No. 1	1	Poughkeepsie. 1771. Harrison. Became No. 5 in 1800, No. 6 in 1819; defunct about 1827.
St. John's Lodge, No. 1	1	Clark's Town, Orange Co. (See St. John's Regimental Lodge.)
Union, No. 1. Albany	1	(now Mount Vernon, No. 3). 1705. Harrison.
Independent Royal Arch, No. 8	2	(now No. 2) New York City (Provincial). (1760?). Harrison.
Masters', No. 2	2	Albany. 1768. Harrison.
St. John's, No. 2	2	New York City (English Registry). No. 273. 1757. Harrison. Removed warrant from city from 1776 to 1783.
Sion Lodge, No. 3	3	In 57th Regiment. 1780. New York Provincial. Ancient. At meeting of Grand Lodge, December 5, 1782, under dispensation from Lodge No. 210, Ancient, warrant (traveling) granted January 2, 1783.
St. John's, No. 4	4	New York City. 1783. Provincial. Ancient. Composed of members of St. John's, No. 2 (No. 1), who remained in New York during the British occupation and presumably favored the mother country. They described themselves as Modern Masons and were healed. Afterward No. 6 and No. 9. Warrant surrendered 1825, the brethren then organizing Bolivar Lodge, No. 386', and Montgomery Lodge, No. 387, the latter still existing and flourishing as No. 68.
St. Patrick's, No. 8	4	(now No. 4). Johnstown, N. Y. 1706. Harrison. [In Vol. I of the GL Proceedings it is listed as No. 9; Restyled No. 11 in 1819.
Lodge Hiram, No. 5	5	Regiment de Knyphausen. 1783. Provincial. A traveling warrant. See Lodge No. 213.
Concordia, No. 6	6	New York City. 1783. Provincial. Ancient. Made up of Ancient brethren, members of various lodges In New York, probably initiates of army lodges.
St. George's No. 1	1, 6	Schenectady. 1774. Johnson. Not represented In Grand Lodge until 1792; No. 7 in 1800; No. 8 in 1819; No. 6 since 1839.
Lodge No. 7	7	In (60th) Loyal American Regiment. 1783. Provincial. A traveling warrant. COL. JOHN YOUNG, Deputy Grand Master of Scotland, was its commander in 1758. The subsequent history of this warrant is unknown.
Lodge Union, No. 8	8	November 29, 1783. Provincial. Ancient. JAMES SAIDLER, the first Master, a merchant, up to the time the warrant was granted was a member of Lodge No. 169. In 1783 he was elected Junior Grand Warden. Declared extinct 1819.
Lodge No. 9	9	a lodge in the 4th Battery of the Royal Artillery, first warranted when the battery was in New York, 3rd July, 1781, as No. 213 [q.v.] on the register of the Ancient Grand Lodge.

Lodge Name	No	Notes
Lodge No. 24	24	1734. Ireland. In Twenty-seventh Infantry. Fought at battle of Brooklyn, 1776.
Lodge No. 35	35	1734. Ireland. In Twenty-eighth Infantry. Fought at battle of Brooklyn, 1776.
Lodge No. 41	41	1755. Ancient. In 57th Infantry; battle of Brooklyn, 1776. (See Sion Lodge, No. 3, N. Y. Prov.)
Lodge No. 42	42	No date. Ancient. In Fortieth Infantry. Battle of Brooklyn, 1776.
St. Patrick's No. 43	43	1769. Ireland. In 43d Infantry; battle of Brooklyn, 1776; in camp on outskirts of Brooklyn, 1780.
Lodge No. 52	52	In H. M. Thirty-seventh Foot. 1756. Ancient. Left the country after July 2, 1783, when it last appeared in Provincial Grand Lodge. Battle of Brooklyn; occupation of New York. In camp at Bedford, Brooklyn, July to November, 1778.
Lodge No. 63 Lodge No. 137	63	1751. Scotland. 1767. Scotland. Both warrants held in Twenty-third Infantry. Fought at battle of Brooklyn, 1776.
Lodge No. 86	86	1738. Ireland. In the Fifth Infantry. Fought at battle of Brooklyn, 1776; occupation of New York.
Lodge No. 90	90	In Thirty-third Regiment. 1761. Ancient. Acknowledged by Provincial Grand Lodge, August 5, 1783. Lord Cornwallis's Division, battle of Brooklyn, 1776.
Lodge No. 106	106	1761. Scotland. In 64th Infantry; battle of Brooklyn, 1776.
Moriah Lodge, No. 132	132	In H. M. Twenty-second Foot. 1767. Scotland. Present December 5, 1782, at opening of Provincial Grand Lodge, and on January 23, 1781, united in formation of the body of which REV. DR. WALTER became Grand Master. Left at evacuation.
Lodge No. 134	134	In 1st Battery Royal Artillery. 1764. Scotland.
Lodge No. 147	147	1769. Scottish. In the Fourth Infantry. Fought at battle of Brooklyn, 1776; occupation of New York.
Lodge No. 168	168	In Seventeenth Foot. 1771. Scotland. "Lodge Unity, in the Seventeenth Foot, was originally chartered by the Grand Lodge of Scotland as No. 168, in 1771. The Lodge landed at Boston in 1776, and was at Philadelphia in 1777 and 1778. During the latter period the Lodge (which remained on the Scottish roll until 1816) accepted a warrant (1779) from the Provincial Grand Lodge of Pennsylvania, under the Ancients, with the local No. 18."— <i>Gould</i> . Warrant 237, Ancient, was also held in the Seventeenth. Its constitution and regalia were lost in a skirmish, and returned in 1779 by Colonel Parsons of American Union Lodge.
Lodge No. 169	169	New York City. 1771. Ancient (Mass. ?). Afterward St. Andrew's Lodge No. 3 and No. 7; abandoned 1827.
Lodge No. 195	195	1749. Ireland. In 42d Highlanders (Black Watch). At Staten Island, 1776; battle of Brooklyn, 1776; landed In New York, September 11, 1776; battle of White Plains; capture of Fort Lee; in camp at Bedford, Brooklyn, July to November, 1778; removed to Pennsylvania; returned to New York, 1780, and remained until close of hostilities. Had previously landed in New York, in June, 1756, and marched to Albany; left, 1761; returned, 1762, and was stationed at Albany till summer, 1763; then it removed to Pennsylvania, embarking for Ireland in 1767.
Lodge No. 205	205	1749. Ireland. In Thirty-fifth Infantry. In battle of Brooklyn, 1776.
Lodge No. 210	210	New York City. 1779. Ancient. Afterward, 1789, Temple Lodge, No. 4; and, 1789, Jerusalem Lodge, No. 4. "From its ashes presumably arose Trinity, No. 10, and Phoenix, No. 11, the former holding under warrant of March 23, and the latter under warrant of March 30, 1795."— <i>McClenachan</i> .
Lodge No. 212	212	New York City. 1780. Ancient. M.:W.: WILLIAM COCK, second (Ancient) Provincial Grand Master, was a member of this Lodge. Afterward became Solomon's Lodge, No. 212, and St. Patrick's Lodge, No. 212; defunct about 1789.
Lodge No. 213	213	Fourth Royal Artillery. 1781. Ancient. Members who remained in New York after 1783 were granted a warrant by Grand Lodge to form Hiram Lodge, No. 5; which see.
Lodge No. 215	215	Second Brandenburg Anspach. 1781. Ancient. Only attended meeting at Prov. Grand Lodge, December 5, 1782.
Lodge No. 227	227	1752. Ireland. In 46th Infantry; battle of Brooklyn; in camp at Bedford, Brooklyn, July to November, 1778. "Lodge of Social and Military Virtues," now Antiquity, No. 1, Quebec. First came to America in 1761. "The Masonic chest of the 46th, by chances of war, fell into the hands of the Americans. The circumstance was reported to General Washington, who directed that a guard of honor should take charge of the chest, with other articles of value belonging to the 46th, and return them to the regiment."— <i>Gould's</i> "Military Lodges," p. 139. "During the Revolution its (40th Regiment) lodge chest fell into the hands of the Americans. They reported the circumstance to GENERAL WASHINGTON, who embraced the opportunity of testifying his estimation of Masonry in the most marked and gratifying manner by directing that a guard of honor under a distinguished officer should take charge of the chest, with many articles of value, and return them to the regiment. The surprise, the feelings, of both officers and men, may be imagined when they perceived the flag of truce that announced this elegant compliment from their noble opponent, but still more noble brother. The guard of honor, their flutes playing a sacred march, the chest containing the constitution and implements of the Craft borne aloft, like another Ark of the Covenant, equally by Englishmen and Americans who lately engaged in the strife of war,

Lodge Name	No	Notes
		now inarched through the enfiled ranks of the gallant regiment that, with presented arms and colors, hailed the glorious act by cheers which the sentiment rendered sacred as the hallelujahs of an angel's song." — "London Freemason's Magazine."
Lodge No. 245	245	1754. Ireland. In the Fifteenth Infantry. Fought at battle of Brooklyn, 1776; occupation of New York.
Lodge No. 299	299	1758. Ireland.
Lodge No. 354	354	1760. Ireland. In 49th Infantry; battle of Brooklyn, 1776.
Lodge No. 370 Lodge No. 226	370	1761. Ireland; 1762. England; Both in 52d Infantry; battle of Brooklyn, 1776.
Lodge No. 378	378	1763. Both warrants in the 10th Regt. Fought at battle of Brooklyn, 1776; occupation of New York.
Lodge No. 399	399	1763. Ireland. It, is on record that this Lodge was warranted for New York in the year above given, but all trace of it appears to have been lost. The brethren to whom it was issued, however, must have found out some other lodge, if they did not work under the warrant, thus issued.
Lodge No. 441	441	Thirty-eighth Foot. 1765. Ireland. Left with the regiment in 1783. R.'W.'. JOHN BROWNING , S.'. W.'. of Provincial Grand Lodge, belonged to this body and left the city with It.
Lodge No. 445	446	1765. Ireland. In 45th Infantry ; battle of Brooklyn, 1766.
Lodge No. 478	478	Seventeenth Dragoons. 1769. Ireland.
Lodge No. 512	512	1774. Ireland. In 63d Infantry; battle of Brooklyn, 1776.

To this list may be added, based upon findings during compilation of this present paper,  
The following additional Lodges, mostly in Canada

Lodge Name	No.	Notes
Parr	3	Nova Scotia, was instituted by the Rev. William Walter, Provincial Grand Master of New York in 1784. It was composed largely of members of Lodge No. 169, of New York.
Select Surveyors'	9	Warrant between 22 Apr and 8 May 1793, Quebec City; removed 1795-96 to Missisquoi Bay, Lake Champlain, "somewhat north of the International Boundary Line , 45 ° N. L., at or near the site of the present Village of Phillipsburg, which was doubtless for a considerable period made the 'headquarters' of those 'Select Surveyors' sent about that time to 'survey' the forest 'public lands' of that portion of the Province, under the superintendence of 'Bro. Jno. Fredk. Holland, who was, no doubt, the first Master of 'No. 9 A.F.M' (or A.Y.M.) L.C.
Lodge No. 9	9	No. 9, E.R. was a lodge in the 4th Battery of the Royal Artillery, first warranted when the battery was in New York, 3 Jul 1781, as No. 213 on the register of the Ancient Grand Lodge. After the peace in 1783 the battery was stationed in Newfoundland, returning to England in 1787, when No. 213 purchased the vacant warrant No. 9, which had been originally issued 12 Jun 1752, as No. 11. The battery returned to Quebec in 1790 and held its first meeting 4 Nov 1790. Is now No. 2, G.R.Q.
New Oswegatchie	14	Fort de la Presentation (Ogdensburg), New York; Warranted 7 May 1783 as No. 7, Grand Lodge of New York; in another list it is also given as No. 520 on the register of the Grand Lodge of England Lodge No. 14 met in Catarauqui [later named Kingston] and Elizabethtown [Brockville], Ontario. A 23 page paper on this Lodge by the present writer may be read at <a href="http://www.ondhs.syracusemasons.com/sites/default/files/history/Oswegatchie%20Lodge%20No.%207.pdf">http://www.ondhs.syracusemasons.com/sites/default/files/history/Oswegatchie%20Lodge%20No.%207.pdf</a> .
Cornwallis	15	Warrant 1786; ceased working 1802; Halifax, NS
Hiram	17	Petition 6 Mar 1784; Warrant 6 Dec 1786; Warrant recalled 7 Sep 1796; Halifax, Nova Scotia
St. George's	19	Warrant 7 Aug 1789, Halifax, NS; met at Maugerville, New Brunswick; ceased labor ca 1827.
Sion	21	Warrant 15 Aug 1792; Kingston and Sussex Vale, Nova Scotia; last return 1823.
Solomon's	22	Warrant 15 Aug 1792, Halifax, NS; met at Fredericton, New Brunswick; last recorded minutes 25 Nov 1828.
Hiram York	23	Warrant 6 Mar 1793; Fredericton, NB; last report 9 Aug 1800.
St. John's	29	First Warrant 18 Dec 1801; PGL NS

#### Alphabetical Index of Brothers

Name	No.	Lodge Name		Notes
Ackerman, Cornelius	2	St. George	NY	
	19	St. George	NB	
Adamson, _____	3	Sion	NY	
Alexander, Thomas	169	E.R.	NY	
Allaire, Anthony	7	New Oswegatchie	NY	
	210	E.R.	NY	
	19	St. George	NB	
	23	Hiram York	NS	
Allaire, Peter Alexander	210	E.R.	NY	
Anderson, Robert	169	E.R.	NY	
Arnold, Benedict	1	Solomon's	NY	1771, visitor in Poughkeepsie
Arnott, Capt. David	3	Sion	NY	
Auld, William	3	Sion	NY	
Baddely, Capt. Thomas	210	E.R.	NY	

Name	No.	Lodge Name		Notes
Barron, Andrew	169 8	E.R. Holland	NY	1791 Treasurer; d. 1803 Visitor 1789
Bassewich, Henry	169	E.R.	NY	Hessian Corps; 1783 Initiated
Baxter, Samuel	169	E.R.	NY	1783 Shelburne, NS (?)
Beach, Rev. Abraham	GL		NY	Grand Chaplain
Beardsley, Rev. John	210 169 17 2 19 23	E.R. E.R. Hiram St. George St. George Hiram York	NY NY NB NY NB	1781-83 Junior Grand Warden, GL New York  St. John, NB
Bell, James	169 17	E.R. Hiram	NY NB	
Betts, Dr. Azor	3 210 21 17	Sion E.R. Sion Hiram	NY NY NS NB	1777 SW 1779 SW
Betts, Ephraim	2 22	St. George Solomon's	NY NB	1792 Master; Fredericton, NB
Black, William	169 3	E.R. Parr	NY NS	
Blair, James	169	E.R.	NY	
Blaskowitz, Charles	210 211	E.R. E.R.	NY NS	
Bloomer, Joshua	2	St. John's	NY	
Booth, John	213	E.R.	NY	1782
Bottum, Elijah	14	New Oswegatchie		PGL Quebec
Bourdett, Oliver	210 17 29	E.R. Hiram St. John's	NY NB NB	1782 Grand Steward 1783 Master; 1791 Secretary; JW; 1798 Expelled
Bowden, Rev. John	210	E.R.	NY	
Bower, Nathaniel	169 3	E.R. Parr	NY NB	
Brant, Joseph	13	Hudson	NY	1805 Visitor
Brannon, Charles John	2	St. John's	NY	1780
Briggs, Ebenezer	2 19	St. George St. George	NY NB	
Brown, Samuel	210	E.R.	NY	1782; d. Halifax, NS (?)
Brownrigg, John Studholme	169 210 211	E.R. E.R. E.R.	NY NY NS	1781-83 SGW, GL NY; 1783 Deputy Grand Master, GL NY
Brownrigg, Richard Fleetwood	169 210 8	E.R. E.R. Hiram	NY NY NS	1781 SGW, GL NY (?); 1784 Visitor, Sheet Harbor, NS
Bruce, Robert	169 8	E.R. Holland	NY NY	1793 Treasurer; 1794 Master 1788 Visitor
Buchanan, John	169	E.R.	NY	
Buell, William	14 14	St. James' New Oswegatchie		PGL Quebec in King's Rangers PGL Quebec; 1787 SW
Burnham, John	210	E.R.	NY	1780; 1783, Shelburne, NS
Burns, John	210 211	E.R. E.R.	NY NS	1784 Visitor, Halifax, NS
Burritt, Stephen	14	New Oswegatchie		1788 Visitor, PGL Quebec
Butler, Col. John	1 4 19 2	Union St. Patricks St. John's Friendship	NY NY	1766, Initiated 1766 Charter Member and Secretary Charter Member, PGL Quebec, Niagara 1795 SGW, PGL Upper Canada 1795 Charter Member, PGL Upper Canada
Byrne, Capt. Edward	213 10	E.R. Zion	NY	1781-82; rejoined 1797 1794 Charter Member, PGL Upper Canada (Detroit)
Campbell, Daniel	4	St. Patrick's	NY	1767
Campbell, Donald	169	E.R.	NY	1783
Campbell, George	14	New Oswegatchie		PGL Quebec; Charter Member
Campbell, Peter	2	St. George	NY	1789
Campbell, William	169 211 17	E.R. E.R. Hiram	NY NS NB	1784 1786 ; rejoined 1789; 1790 Master

Name	No.	Lodge Name		Notes
	15	Cornwallis	NS	1786
	29	St. John's	NS	1784-97 Deputy Grand Master for New Brunswick 1792-1800 Senior Grand Warden NB Halifax, NS
Carey, Joseph	210	E.R.	NY	1782
Cartwright, Richard	74	I.C.	NY	1742 Albany, Master U.D.
	1	Union	NY	Albany
Casey, Samuel	210	E.R.	NY	1780
Chandler, Nathaniel	210	E.R. Morning Star	NY MA	1780 1793 Charter Member; Worcester, MA
Chester, William	3	Sion	NY	1786
Chew, Joseph	4	St. Patrick's	NY	1772
Clark, Capt. George	210	E.R.	NY	1780; 1782 Grand Deacon, GL NY
Clark, Lauchlan	213 9	E.R. E.R.	NY	1782 Past Master; Newfoundland Born Edinkelly, Morayshire; served in Royal Artillery; discharged aged 47 in 1791
Clarke, Dr. Duncan	211	E.R.	NS	1800
Clarke, James	3	Sion	NY	1783, SW Sion Lodge in the 57th Regt; 1786 Master; 1787 Excluded; 1790 Restored in New Jersey
Clarke, James	169	E.R.	NY	1781; 1782 Secretary; 1782-83 Dep. Grand Secretary, PGL, NY.
	15	Cornwallis	NS	1786; 1790 Master; 1792-1802 Grand Senior Warden PGL NS.
Clarke, Joseph	2	St. George	NY	1789
Claus(e), Col. Daniel	1		NY	1766 Initiated, Albany, NY.
	4	St. Patrick's	NY	1766 Charter Member and Junior Warden, Johnstown; 1770 SW
	4	St. Peter's		1771 Visitor, PGL, Montreal, Quebec
Clopper, Garet	2	St. George	NY	1789
	19	St. George	NS	
Closson, Caleb	14	New Oswegatchie		1787, Charter Member, PGL Quebec
Cluett, John	210	E.R.	NY	1782
Cock, William	212	E.R.	NY	1780 Junior Warden; 1782 Master
	GL		NY	1782 Grand Secretary, GL NY
	GL		NY	1783 Junior Grand Warden, GL NY
	GL		NY	1783-84 <b>Grand Master, GL NY</b>
Cocke, William	210	E.R.	NY	1780 Junior Warden; 1786, Halifax, NY (?)
Collins, Isaac	210	E.R.	NY	1779 Charter Member and Master; 1780-82 Master; 21 Feb 1782 'as' Grand Secretary, GL NY.
Collins, James	210	E.R.	NY	1782
Constable, Dr. John	4	St. Patrick's	NY	1766, PGL, Johnstown, NY
Cooke, Charles	210	E.R.	NY	1782
Cooke, Robert	210	E.R.	NY	1780
Cooper, Richard	169	E.R.	NY	1782
	2	St. George	NY	1782 Petitioner
	19	St. George	NB	1792 Maugerville, NB
Corby, William	210	E.R.	NY	1780
		American Union	NY	1776 Visitor
Cosh, John	3	Sion	NY	1787-88 Junior Warden
	211	E.R.	NS	1787 Visitor, Halifax, NS
Courtney, James	212	Solomon's	NY	1782 Senior Warden; 1783 Master
	169	E.R.	NY	1781 Visitor
	3	Parr	NB	1785 Saint John, NB
Craig, Robert	169	E.R.	NY	1779
Crawford, George	213	E.R.	NY	1781-82 Secretary; 1782 Senior Warden; 1783 Master
	211	E.R.	NS	1784 Visitor, Halifax, NS
Crowe, Jonathan	169	E.R.	NY	1774; 1775 Halifax, NS; d. 1780
Cunningham, Archibald	213	E.R.	NY	1779; 1782 Secretary
	169	E.R.	NY	1781 JW; 1781 SW; 1782-83 Master
	GL		NY	1783 Deputy Grand Master, GL NY
	3	Parr	NB	1790 Joined, Shelburne, NS; 1791 Treas.; 1797-1801 Secretary
Dalzell, Edward	169	E.R.	NY	1781
Davan, John	1	King Solomon's	NY	1758 Master
	1	Trinity	NY	1771 Master
	13	Temple	NY	1789
Davidson, Peter	213	E.R.	NY	1782
De Drach, William	213	E.R.	NY	1782
	5	Hiram	NY	1783, Master
De Koven, John Lewis	210	E.R.	NY	1780

Name	No.	Lodge Name		Notes
Delamater, Isaac	210	E.R.	NY	1780 Senior Warden; 1796 Master
	13	Temple	NY	1797 Charter Member and Master; 1798 Master
Delieben, Israel	169	E.R.	NY	1782
	211	E.R.	NS	1783 Visitor, Halifax, NS
Demond, William	2	St. George	NY	1789
	19	St. George	NB	1792 Mougerville, NB
Dempsey, William	210	E.R.	NY	1780
	2	St. Andrew's		PGL Quebec
de Peyster, Abraham	2	St. George	NY	1789 Senior Warden
	19	St. George	NB	Mougerville, NB
Dodge, Amos	2	St. John's	NY	1766
Drake, John	210	E.R.	NY	1782
Earle, Edward	169	E.R.	NY	1782
	2	St. George	NY	1782 Petitioner; 1783 Senior Warden
Earle, Justus	169	E.R.	NY	1782
	2	St. George	NY	1782 Petitioner
Easton, Robert	169	E.R.	NY	1781
Effingham, Lawrence	169	E.R.	NY	1784
Ellice, Alexander	4	St. Patrick's	NY	1767 Initiated, Johnstown, NY
Ellis, John	169	E.R.	NY	1776
Elrington, William	GL		.NY	1782 Attended GL
	52	E.R.	NS	1782 Master in the 57th Regiment No. 52 E.R., Shelburne, NS
Ferguson, Thomas	213	E.R.	NY	1782
	241	E.R.	NY	1782 Charter Member
	9	Select Surveyors'		1793 Joined, PGL Quebec
Fife, Adam	213	E.R.	NY	1782; Senior Warden; 1782 Master
	211	E.R.	NS	1784 Visitor, Halifax, NS
	9	Chester	NS	PGL, Chester, NS
	2	Artillery	NS	PGL, NS
Finnemore, Richard	210	E.R.	NY	1782
	17	Hiram	NB	1785, Saint John, NB
	21	Sion	NB	1792 Charter Member, Kinston, NB
Fleming, Sampson [Samuel]	1	Union (Zion)	MI	1764 Charter Member (Detroit, MI, by GL NY); 1767 Master
	4	St. Peter's		1780, PGL Montreal, Quebec; 1781 Master
	8	Holland	NY	1789
Flinn, Michael	210	E.R.	NY	1780
Foerster, John Ferdinand	210	E.R.	NY	1780
	215	E.R.	NY	1781 Senior Warden; d. 1781
Foreman, James	210	E.R.	NY	1780; 1781 Secretary
	6	Digby	NS	1784 Charter Member & SW; 1786 Demitted; 1787 rejoined; 1787-89 Senior Warden; 1790-91 Secretary; d. 17 Feb 1802
Forrester, John	210	E.R.	NY	1780
	29	St. John's	NB	1802 Visitor
Fowler, Caleb	1	Solomon's	NY	1772 1st and 2nd Degree, Poughkeepsie, NY
	210	E.R.	NY	1780
	7	Loyal Amer. Regt.	NY	1783 Junior Warden
Fowler, William	1	Solomon's	NY	1772 2nd Degree, Poughkeepsie, NY
	210	E.R.	NY	1780
	7	Loyal Amer. Regt.	NY	1783 Master
	19	St. George	NB	1791 Joined, Mougerville, NB
	23	Hiram York	NB	1793 Senior Warden
Fraser, Hugh	2	St. Andrew's		1762 Initiated, PGL Quebec; 1778 Demitted
	4	St. Patrick's	NY	1767 Joined
Fraser, Rev. James	169	E.R.	NY	
	GL		NY	1783 Grand Chaplain
	211	E.R.	NS	1783 Halifax, NS
Freligh, John	66	Montgomery	NY	
	9	Select Surveyors'		1801 Visitor PGL Lower Canada; Note: Abraham Freligh died at Durrham, LC, in 1801 received a Masonic burial from this Lodge.
Frey, Col. Hendrik	4	St. Patrick's	NY	1766; m. Elizabeth, sister of Gen. Herkimer
Fullam, Michael	169	E.R.	NY	1781 Junior Deacon
Geddes, Charles	169	E.R.	NY	1776
	211	E.R.	NS	1784 Joined; 1787 Master, Halifax, NS
Geddes, Peter	213	E.R.	NY	1782 Junior Warden
	9	E.R.		1785 Past Master
Gibson, Sgt. John	2	St. George	NY	1789
	19	St. George	NB	Mougerville, NB

Name	No.	Lodge Name		Notes
	21	Solomon's	NB	1792 Charter Member, Fredericton, NB; d. ca 1813
Gillespie, Sgt. Hugh	3	Sion	NY	1781; 1782 Master
Gill, Thomas	213	E.R.	NY	1782
Grant, Lewis	169	E.R.	NY	1779
Green, Joseph	210	E.R.	NY	1780
	17	Hiram	NB	1784 Charter Member, Saint John, NB
Griffiths, Thomas	213	E.R.	NY	1782
Grigg [Gregg], John	210	E.R.	NY	1780; 1789 Junior Warden; 1784 Senior Warden
	6	Digby	NS	1785 Master
	20	Union	NS	1790 Joined; 1791 Master, Sissiboo, NS
Gridley, John	213	E.R.	NY	1781 Senior Warden
Guest, Henry	210	E.R.	NY	1780
	3	Parr	NS	1785 Senior Warden, Selburne, NS; 1785 Master
Haggan, Cpl. Samuel	3	Sion	NY	1785 Junior Warden
	5	Solomon's	NS	1784 Charter Member, Shelburne, NS
Hall, Benjamin	169	E.R.	NY	1776; 1781 Master
Hall, Richard	169	E.R.	NY	1779; 1781 Junior Warden
	10	Hiram	NS	1785 Past Master, Shelburne, NS
Hallett, Jonah	2	St. John's	NY	1779
Hamilton, John	2	St. John's	NY	1771 Secretary
Hammell, John	169	E.R.	NY	1782; 1793 Junior Warden
	2	St. George	NY	1782 Petitioner
	3	St. Andrew's	NY	1793 Junior Warden
Hampton, Jonathan	2	St. John's	NY	1770 Master; 1785 Master; presented Bible to Lodge on which George Washington was later sworn as President
Handford, Thomas	210	E.R.	NY	1780
Hannan, William	213	E.R.	NY	1782
Harding, Major George	2	St. George	NY	1789
	19	St. George	NB	1793, Maugerville, NB
Hardy, Elias	169	E.R.	NY	1784 Master
	211	E.R.	NS	1784 Visitor, Halifax, NS
	3	Parr	NB	1784 Petitioner, Saint John, NB; Master
	2	St. George	NY	
	19	St. George	NS	1789, Maugerville, NB
Hart, Patrick	169	E.R.	NY	1779
Hauser, Frederick	210	E.R.	NY	1782
	211	E.R.	NS	1783 Visitor, Halifax, NS
Hay, Hugh	210	E.R.	NY	1780
	5	Solomon's	NS	1784 Master
	10	Hiram	NS	1796; 1796 & 1798 Junior Warden
Hay, Jehu	1	Union (Zion)	MI	PGL NY at Detroit, MI; 1785-86 Governor of Detroit
Hecht, Frederick Wm.	2	St. John's	NY	1766
				1768 Albany; 1784 Nova Scotia
Heron, Isaac	2	St. John's	NY	1770 Junior Warden; 1772 Master
Hewitt, Rev. Charles	169	E.R.	NY	1779-81
Hiatt, Thomas	212	Solomon's E.R.	NY	1780 Senior Warden
Hicks, Robert	210	E.R.	NY	1780
				Saint John, NB
Hierlihy, Timothy	210	E.R.	NY	1782
	19	St. George	NB	1781, Maugerville, NB
Hierlihy, Timothy Wm.	19	St. George	NB	1781 Junior Warden; son of Timothy above.
Hill, John	169	E.R.	NY	1776
	211	E.R.	NS	1783 Visitor, Halifax, NS
	6	Digby	NS	1784; 1785 Treasurer; 1790 Rejoined; 1790-93, 95, 98, 1805-06 Master; d. 23 Nov 1817
Hillyer, Nathaniel	4	St. Patrick's	NY	1766, Initiated, Johnstown, NY; Innkeeper
	7	New Oswegatchie	NY	1791 Joined
Hilton, Benjamin	2	Masters'	NY	1773, Albany, NY; Lawyer
	19	St. George	NB	1784, Maugerville, NS [Schenectady, NY?; see biog below]
Hithouse, Robert	213	E.R.	NY	1782
	9	E.R.		
Hodson, Thomas	212	Solomon's E.R.	NY	1780 Master
	10	Hiram	NS	1780, Shelburne, NS; 1785-96 Secretary
Hopkins, George	2	St. John's	NY	1779
Horn, Joseph	213	E.R.	NY	1783
	3	Hiram	NY	1785 Junior Warden
Houghton, Nahum	210	E.R.	NY	1780; b. 1 Oct 1732, Lancaster, MA

Name	No.	Lodge Name		Notes
Huggeford, Thomas	210 6	E.R. Digby	NY NS	1782; 1782-83 Grand Steward, GL NY 1785; 1790 Master
Huggeford, Dr. Peter	169	E.R.	NY	1787; King's Royal American Regiment
Huston, Cpl. James	3	Sion	NY	1782; 1783 Master
Hutchinson, William	2 21	St. George Sion	NY NB	1783 1792 Charter Member and Junior Warden, Kingston, NB; Master
Hutton, William	213	E.R.	NY	1782; d. 1799 Saint John, NB, age 42
Irwin, Edward	210 17	E.R. Hiram	NY NB	1782 1784, Saint John, NB
Jackson, Lt. Robert	169	E.R.	NY	1782; 57th Regiment
Jefferys, Samuel	210 2 241	E.R. St. Andrew's E.R.	NY	1781 1783 Visitor, PGL Quebec 1788 Joined, Quebec
Jenkins, Richard	210 10	E.R. Hiram	NY NS	1781 Junior Warden; 1782-83 Senior Warden 1786, Selburne, NS
Jennings, Thomas	2 17 21 29	St. George Hiram Sion St. John's	NY NB NB NB	1783 1785; 1786 Treasurer 1792 Petition, Kingston, NB; 1796 Expelled 1802 Joined; d. 1805, Saint John, NB
Jennison, William	2 19 17	St. George St. George Hiram	NY NB NB	1789, Maugerville, NB ca 1796, Saint John, NB; d. 1843, Boston, MA
Johns, Solomon	1 4 14	Union St. Patrick's St. James	NY NY	1766 Initiated 1766 Joined, Johnstown, NY; 1770 Master 1781 Charter Member, PGL, Cataraqui [Kingston]
Johnson, Col. Guy	10 4 4	Union St. Patrick's St. Peter's	NY NY	1766 Initiated, PGL NY, Albany 1766 Charter Member and Senior Warden; 1770 Master 1781 Visitor, PGL, Montreal, Quebec
Johnson, Sir John	513 GL GL	E.R.	NY	1767 Initiated, London 1767-73, Prov. Grand Master, New York 1788, Prov. Grand Master, Canada
Jones, Henry	213	E.R.	NY	1782; Chaplain, 22nd Regiment
Jones, John	14	New Oswegatchie		"Mahagony Jone," 1787, Master, PGL, Quebec
Kennedy, ____	212 211	Solomon's E.R. E.R.	NY NS	1784 Visitor, Halifax, NS
Kerr, Dr. Robert	2 GL	St. Andrew's		PGL Quebec; m. dau. of Sir William Johnson 1807 Deputy Prov. Grand Master, Upper Canada
Kerr, Samuel	169 GL	E.R.	NY	1781 Initiated; 1782 Junior Warden; 1781-83 Treas; 1784 Master 1783 Grand Treasurer, GL NY; 1784-89 Dep. Grand Master
Kipp, Samuel	210 12	E.R. Concord	NY NS	1782 1785, Cumberland, NS
Kirk, John	210 17	E.R. Hiram	NY NB	1780 1784 Charter Member, Saint John, NB
Kissam, Benjamin	169	E.R.	NY	d. 1803
Klingsohr, Julius von	210 6	E.R. Digby	NY NS	1780 1782 Visitor, Digny, NS
Knapp, Moses	210	E.R.	NY	1782 1783 Fort Cumberland, NS
Laffan, Robert	169	E.R.	NY	1781 1783 Shelburne, NS
Lenzi, Philip	210 5	E.R. Solomon's	NY NS	1782 1784 Master, Shelburne, NS
Lewis, William	210 17	E.R. Hiram	NY NB	1780 1784 Saint John, NB; 1786 Senior Warden
Lorey, Henry	213 5	E.R. Hiram	NY NY	1783 1783 Senior Warden, PGL NY
Lowndes, John	169 3	E.R. Parr	NY NS	1779; 1782 Junior Warden 1785 Charter Member
Lyall, John	213	E.R.	NY	1782
Lynch, Peter	212 15	Solomon's E.R. Cornwallis	NY NS	1781 Master 1790 Halifax, NS; 1802 Master
Mallard, Thomas	210	E.R.	NY	1780;
Mallery, Caleb aka Mallory	2 19	St. George St. George	NY NB	aka Mallory; 1789 Junior Warden 1789 Junior Warden, Maugerville, NS; 1793-94 Master
Matthews, David	GL		NY	1771-72 Grand Steward, PGL NY
Matthison, Charles aka Matheson	210	E.R.	NY	aka Matheson; 1780 Queen's Rangers, Ensign; 1783 Prarr Town, NS

Name	No.	Lodge Name		Notes
Maxwell, Lt. James	169	E.R.	NY	1783 Initiated; left with British fleet. ; Lt. of Marines
McArthur, Jeremiah	14	New Oswegatchie		1787 Visitor; PGL Quebec
McCarter, William	213 9	E.R. E.R.	NY	1782
McCuen, James				See McEwen
McDonald, John	213 9	E.R. E.R.	NY	
McDougall, Ananias	210	E.R.	NY	1780; Commander of <i>Light Bob</i> ; 10 guns
McEwen, James aka McCuen	169  169 GL 3	St. Andrew's E.R.  E.R. Parr	MA MA  NY NY NS	1767 Boston 1776 Joined; Boston, MA 1776 New York; 1778 Halifax; 1779 New York 1780 Senior Warden; 1781 Master 1782-83 <b>Deputy Grand Master GL NY</b> aft 1783, PGL, Shelburne, NS
McGrath, James	210 10	E.R. Hiram	NY NS	1782 1785, Shelburne, NS; 1790 England
McHarron, Daniel	210 9	E.R. Chester	NY NS	1784 1784, Chester, NS; 1790-91 Master; d. ca 1801
McKie, Thomas	169	E.R.	NY	1779; 1780 Secretary; 1783 Nova Scotia (?)
McLeod, Capt. Norman	4 4	St. Patrick's St. Peter's	NY	1770, Johnstown, NY 1781 Visitor, PGL, Montreal, Quebec
McMichael, William Augustus	2	St. George	NY	b. 1757 Ireland; Pennsylvania Loyalist; 1785 Nova Scotia 1789
McNiel, Archibald aka McNeil	169 GL	E.R.	NY NY	1782 1782 Grand Steward, PGL NY b. 1719; baker and flour merchant, Boston; 1757, St. John's Lodge, Boston; 1759, Masters' Lodge, Boston; 1762, Master, Second Lodge Boston; 1765, Master, Master's Lodge Boston; 1765, JGW PGL Boston; 1767-70, SGW PGL Boston; 1776, Halifax, NS; 1778, visitor St. Andrew's Lodge 2, PGL Quebec; 1779, Estate confiscated; 1783, Halifax, NS; 1784, visitor Lodge No. 211 ER (A), Halifax; 1784, murdered by Indians at Quebec.
McNeill, James	210 10	E.R. Hiram	NY NS	1782 1784, Shelburne, NS; Saint John, NB
McPherson, Capt. Peter	169 17	E.R. Hiram	NY NB	b. 1751 Scotland 1786 Joined, PGL NS; Parr Town, NB
Menzies, Gilbert	169	E.R.	NY	1795
Michel, Steven	169	E.R.	NY	1783 Healed and Joined
Middleton, Dr. Peter	GL		NY NY	Brother-in-law of George Harison, PGL 1755 Charter Member and Master at Albany 1771 Deputy Grand Master, NY
Miller, John	GL 8 3 10	Union Parr Hiram	NY NY NS NB	1783 Grand Deacon, GL NY Charter Member and Junion Warden 1785 Shelburne, NS Junior Warden, Saint John, NB
Mills, John	2	St. John's	NY	1772
Mills, Nathaniel	169 3	E.R. Parr	NY NB	1781 1783, Saint John, NB; 1791-99 Senior Warden; 1799 Demitted
Milwain, Thomas	2 21	St. George Sion	NY NS	1783 1783 Petitioner, Kingston, NS
Moody, James	169 6 20	E.R. Digby Union	NY NS NS	1781 1788 Joined, Digby, NS 1790, Sissiboo, NS; 1790-91 Master 1793 Lodge in Royal Nova Scotia Regiment No. 24; d. 1809
Morton, John	210 17	E.R. Hiram	NY NB	1784 1784 Saint John, NB
Mullen, Mark	169 211	E.R. E.R.	NY NY	1784 Visitor, Halifax, NS; d. ca 1795
Nunn, James	3	Sion	NY	1783 Secretary; 1785 Master; 1788 SW; 1789-91 Master
Nutting, John	169 211	E.R. E.R.	NY NS	1776 1783 Visitor, Halifax, NS; d. 1800 Newport
O'Brien, John	210	E.R.	NY	1782
Olding, Nicholas Purdue	210 8	E.R. Hiram	NY NS	aka Oeding; 1782 1784 Sheet Harbor, NS; 1784-88 Master
Osborne, Joseph	169  6	E.R.  St. George	NY	Initiated Lodge in Royal Nova Scotia Regiment No. 24 1782 Joined, Charlestown, Prince Edward Island

Name	No.	Lodge Name		Notes
	211	E.R.	NS	1784 Joined; 1785 Demitted; d. 1816 Quebec
Osborn, Thomas	169	E.R.	NY	1782
Pack, John	210	E.R.	NY	1780
Parke, John	210	E.R.	NY	1780
Parker, Ebenezer	169 3	E.R. Parr	NY NB	1781 1785 Treasurer, Saint John, NB
Parker, William	213	E.R.	NY	1782
Paul, Sgt. John	213 17 38	E.R. Hiram Union	NY NB NB	1782; 1783 Senior Warden 1784 Charter Member and Junior Warden; Saint John, NB 1814; Saint John, NB; d. 1833
Pecker, Jeremiah	210	E.R.	NY	1780
Perrine, William	210 17	E.R. Hiram	NY NB	1780 1784, Saint John, NB; 1786 "gone to sea"
Phealon, Timothy	210 211	E.R. E.R.	NY NS	1782 1783 Visitor, Halifax, NS In Government Service as foreman of Artificers in the Engineers Department from Sep 1777 to Jan 1784
Picken, Robert	4	St. Patrick's	NY	1770, Johnstown, NY
Pitcher, Moses	169 1	E.R. Union	NY NS	1779 ca 1801, Halifax, NS
Pitfield, George	210 21	E.R. Sion	NY NS	1780 1792, Kingston, NS; 1802 Master; d. 1827
Porter, Capt. Richard	GL 14 6	New Oswegatchie		Attended PGL NY 1794 Joined, PGL Quebec 1796 Master; Kingston, Upper Canada
Powell, Abraham	2 19	St. George St. George	NY NB	1789 Maugerville, NB
Pownal, Cpt. Samuel	213	E.R.	NY	1782; Royal Artillery
Prevost, Augustin(e)	1 4	Union St. Patrick's	NY NY	1766 1767 Joined, Johnstown, NY; m. Susannah, daughter of George Croghan
Price, Thomas	210	E.R.	NY	1780
Reynolds, Broughton	210	E.R.	NY	1780
Rigby, William	169	E.R.	NY	1781; 1783, Shelburne, NS; 1788, New York
Roberts, Lt. Benjamin	4	St. Patrick's	NY	1766, Johnstown, NY
Robinson, Col. Beverly	210 20	E.R.	NY NB	1780 1789 Joined Lodge at Fredericton, NB
Robison, Capt. Thomas	1	Union (Zion)	MI	1767, Detroit, MI; d. 1808 Kingston, Upper Canada
Rochat, Lt. J. P.	1	Union (Zion)	NY	1767, Albany, NY; 60th Regiment; [Jean Paul?]; Deputy Inspector General for Scotland. In 1776 the 1st battalion of the 60th was employed in quelling a rebellion in Jamaica. In the same year a commission was granted by "Augusto Prevost, Captain 60th Rifles?" to J. P. Rochat, to establish the Rite of Perfection in Scotland, and which was afterwards to form the basis of its constitution." At the period this occurred, another <i>Augustine</i> Prevost [q.v.] was "Captain Lieutenant and Captain"—a singular rank, of which there is now no equivalent—in the 60th Foot. This officer joined the regiment as Adjutant, 25 Jun 1771, became Captain Lieutenant, 20 Sep 1775, and Captain, 12 Nov 1776, retiring in 1784. There was also in 1776 a Lieutenant J. P. Rochat in the 60th, whose commission bore date 30 Sep 1775.
Rogers, Maj. Robert	1	Zion	MI	My lodge, Zion of detroit, founded in 1764 with a cadre of the 60 Regiment of Foot, along with Rogers Rangers, still has entires of Israel Putnam and Robert Rogers, visiting the Lodge. Per John R. Snider, Master, Zion Lodge No. 1, in Detroit
Ross, Stewart	169	E.R.	NY	1781; 1778, Cmdr, Priv. Pollux; 1781, Master Sloop Neptune
Ruckel, Jasper	210 17 22	E.R. Hiram Solomon's	NY NB NB	1780 1785, Saint John, NB 1792 Joined, Fredericton; 1794, 1800-01, Master; d. 1815, NY
Ryan, Cornelius	210	E.R.	NY	1780 b. New York; Loyal Associators; 1778, 1778, visitor Tun Lodge No. 5, Philadelphia, PA; 1783, Shelburne, NB
Ryerse, Samuel [Ryerson]	169 2 19	E.R. St. George St. George	NY NY NB	1782 1782 Charter Member and Master 1789, Maugerville, NB; 1782-91 Master; d. 1812 Woodhouse, UC
Ryerson, Joseph	2 19	St. George St. George	NY NB	1788, Junior Warden Maugerville, NB; 1790 JW; 1793 SW; d. 1734, Victoria, Canada

Name	No.	Lodge Name		Notes
St. Leger, Col. Barry				1778 Joined St. Andrew's Lodge No. 2 PGL, Quebec
Sanxay, John	210	E.R.	NY	1780
	10	Hiram	NS	1785, Shelburne, NS
	10	Trinity	NY	1790 New York; Petitioned G. Steward's Lodge for relief. 1795 Petitioner
Savage, Abraham	GL		NY	1767 Grand Secretary, PGL, New York; 1771-72 Grand Junior Warden, PGL, New York; 1773-74 Senior Grand Warden, PGL, New York; 1773 Deputy Grand Master, PGL, New York [see biographical information below . . .]
Schiefflin, Jacob [aka Schieffelin]	169	E.R.	NY	1781
	4	St. Peter's		1782, Visitor, PGL Montreal, Quebec
Schmall, Johannes Wilhemus von der	4	St. John's	NY	1782 Initiated, PGL NY
Schoenewolff, Charles	210	E.R.	NY	1782 b. 1760 Germany; Regiment Landgrave [Landgraf] of Hessian Corps; 1783 Parr Town, NB; d. 1830
Selkrig, Alexander	169	E.R.	NY	1776
Sherwood, Justus	14	New Oswegatchie		1787 Junior Warden, PGL Quebec
Sherwood, Thomas	7	New Oswegatchie	NY	1787 PGL NY
	14	New Oswegatchie		PGL Quebec; 1799 Master
Simonson, John	2	St. George	NY	1788 Senior Warden
	19	St. George	NB	1812, Maugerville, NB
Smith, Daniel	2	St. George	NY	1789
	19	St. George	NB	1780 Third Degree, Maugerville, NB; 1795 Demitted; Rejoined; 1800 Demitted; d. 1834
Smith, John	2	St. George	NY	1789; Carpenter, Gagetown
	19	St. George	NB	Maugerville, NB
Smith, Thomas	169	E.R.	NY	
	19	St. George	NB	1794 Joined, Maugerville, NB; 1798 Junior Warden
Smyth, Thomas	14	New Osegatchie		1787, Joined PGL Quebec
Sorrell, William	169	E.R.	NY	1782
	2	St. George	NY	1783 Charter Member and Secretary; entered the service of the King, 24 Dec 1776, when he was commissioned quarter-master of the Fourth Battalion. He was also commissioned an ensign and quartermaster of the Third Battalion, 31 Jul 1779, and so continued until peace was announced. He was a prisoner of war in Philadelphia, 28 Aug 1779, and 12 Feb 1780.
Stockton, Andrew H.	2	St. George	NY	1783
Stokes, James	213	E.R.	NY	1781; Master
	10	Hiram	NS	1785 Master, Shelburne, NS; d. 1786
Stone, Joel	210	E.R.	NY	1780; 1783, Montreal
Strachan, James	169	E.R.	NY	1782; 1783, Shelburne, NS
Street, Samuel Denny	2	St. George	NY	1788; 1788-89 Secretary
	19	St. George	NB	1791 Master, Maugerville, NB; 1793 Demitted
Suter, John	169	E.R.	NY	1782
	13	E.R.		Deptford, England; 1796, Halifax, NS; 1796 Lost at sea.
Taylor, Nathaniel	210	E.R.	NY	1760
	4	Jerusalem	NY	Joined; d. 1805
Templeton, Oliver	169	E.R.	NY	1782
	8	Union	NY	1783 Senior Warden
	GL		NY	1783 Grand Deacon; d. 1792, New York
Ten Broeck, Lt. Peter				see Van Broeck
Thomas, Charles	169	E.R.	NY	1788
		Trinity	NS	1788 Petitioner, Annapolis Royal, NS; d. ca 1818 Saint John, NB
Thompson, Ens. John	4	Trinity	NY	1761 Master; New Jersey Volunteers
	169	E.R.	NY	1781 Joined
Tice, Capt. Gilbert	4	St. Patrick's	NY	1766
Tongue, William	2	St. John's	NY	1766
Tracy, Andrew Hodges	1	Union	NY	1778
Tucker, Thomas	169	E.R.	NY	1783 Healed and Joined; 1784 Senior Warden
	266	St. George		1800, S.C. Bermuda
Turnbull, Ens. Alex.	3	Sion	NY	1783 Junior Warden; 1787 Master, Halifax, NS
Tyler, Jacob	2	St. John's	NY	1781 Secretary; School Teacher
Underhill, Nathaniel	2	St. George	NY	1789
	19	St. George	NB	Maugerville, NB; d. ca 1807, Fredericton, NB
Upham, James	2	St. George	NY	1789
	19	St. George	NB	1790-91 Secretary, Maugerville, NB; 1791 Demitted; d. 1818

Name	No.	Lodge Name		Notes
Van Allen, William	2 19	St. George St. George	NY NB	1789; b. ca 1744; 1776 New Jersey Volunteers Maugerville, NB; 1783 River Saint John
Van Broecke, Lt. Peter [aka Ten Broeck]	4	St. Patrick's	NY	1771, Johnstown, NY; King's Rangers; 1783 Niagara
Van Buskirk, Abraham	169 2	E.R. St. George	NY NY	1782 1782, Charter Member
Van Buskirk, John	169 2	E.R. St. George	NY NY	1782 1782, Charter Member
Van Horne, Gabriel	2 19 22	St. George St. George Solomon's	NY NB NB	1789 Joined Maugerville, NB 1801 Master, Fredericton, NB; d. 1815
Van Norden, John	169 2 13 155 266 307	E.R. St. George Winsor E.R. St. George St. George E. R.	NY NY NS NS	1782 1782 1788 Joined; 1792 Master 1795, Halifax, NS 1797, Chartered Member; Scottish Constitution ; 1800-01 Master 1800, Bermuda; 1801 Master; d. 1823 Bermuda
Van Nostrand, John	2 19	St. George St. George	NY NB	1789 Maugerville, NB
Vanderbeak, Abraham [aka Vanderbeck]	2 19	St. George St. George	NY NB	1789 Maugerville, NS; 1791 Treasurer; d. 1798, Fredericton, NB
Wach, Henry Frederick	213 6	E.R. Concordia	NY NY	1782 1783, Junior Warden, PGL NY There could easily be different spelling for this Brother. He was in the Battalion Minnegerode, Hessian Corps.
Wall, Edward	4	St. Patrick's	NY	Raised 6 Sep 1770, Johnstown, NY
Wall, Patrick	169 3	E.R. Parr	NY NS	1776 1784-85 Master, Sherburne, NS
Wallace, James	169 211	E.R. E.R.	NY NS	1779 1786 Visitor, Halifax, NS
Walter, Rev. William	169 GL GL	E.R.	NY NY NY	1779 1779 Provincial Grand Master of New York 1781-83 Grand Master, Grand Lodge of New York
Ward, Benjamin	2 19	St. George St. George	NY NB	1789 Maugerville, NB
Warden, George	169 3	E.R. Parr	NY NS	1779; 1782 Junior Warden; 1782 Senior Warden 1785 Joined, Shelburne, NS
Waterbury, Peter C.	3	St. Andrew's	NY	1793; b. ca 1760 America; 1783, Saint John, NB; 1792, New York. d. 1807 New York
Wattleworth, William	210 17	E.R. Hiram	NY NB	1785 1785 Joined, PGL, Parr Town (Saint John), NB
White, Capt. Gideon	169 3	E.R. Parr	NY NB	1779 1784, Shelburne, NS; d. 1833
Whiting, Thomas	210	E.R.	NY	1782; 1783, Shelburne, NS
Wilson, Archibald	169	E.R.	NY	1776; 1775 Halifax, NS
Wirlin, Robert	210	E.R.	NY	1782; Priv. Tryal; 1786, Shelburne, NS Belfast Presbytry ordain'd Mr Robert Wirlin, March 8th, to the Company of the Ship called the <i>Revival</i> , of London ( <i>alias</i> <i>Caledonia</i> ); have entred Mr Michael Bruce on second Tryalls
Woolett, Richard	GL 441		NY	1781 Grand Pursuivant, Grand Lodge NY 1782 Past Master, Lodge in the 38th Regiment. No. 441, Irish Constitutions; Senior Warden; 1783 Resigned.
Wright, Capt. Samuel	14	New Oswegatchie		1787 PGL Quebec
Young, Francis	210 17	E.R. Hiram	NY NB	1780; Watchmaker; wife Rebecca 1784 Saint John, NB

<http://familytreemaker.genealogy.com/users/r/o/b/Eileen-M-Robinson/WEBSITE-0001/UHP-0006.html>

In November 1789, Lord Dorchester requested the Council at Quebec "to put a mark of honour upon the families who adhered to the Unity of the Empire and joined the Royal Standard in America before the treaty of separation in the year 1783." The Council concurred, and thereafter "all Loyalists were to be distinguished by the letters U.E. affixed to their names, alluding to their great principle "The Unity Empire". A register of the U.E. Loyalists was ordered to be kept, and for twenty years names were added to this list. The distinction, according to "The Report of the Bureau of Archives for the Province of Ontario. published in 1904, was not assumed by the emigrants. The British Government undertook the task of compensating them for losses, or at least to restore to some extent their lost fortunes, through the formation in July 1783, of a commission appointed by the British Parliament to hear and adjust such claims.

<http://www.uelac.org/PDF/loyalist.pdf>

## WHO WERE THE LOYALISTS?

The Loyalists came from every class and walk of life. Some depended on the Crown for their livelihood and status and had considerable wealth and property. Many were farmers and craftsmen. There were clerks and clergymen, lawyers and laborers, soldiers and slaves, Native Americans, college graduates, and people who could not write their own names. Recent immigrants from Europe also tended to support the Crown.

They had little in common but their opposition to the revolution. Their reasons for becoming Loyalists were as varied as their backgrounds. Some had strong ties with Britain: others had simply supported what turned out to be the losing side. Local incidents, fear of change, self-interest, political principles, emotional bonds - one or any combination of these influenced their decision to remain loyal to the Crown. The common thread that linked these diverse groups was a distrust of too much democracy which they believed resulted in mob rule and an accompanying breakdown of law and order. The Reverend Mather Byles mused, "Which is better - to be ruled by one tyrant three thousand miles away or by three thousand tyrants one mile away?"

Loyalists believed that the British connection guaranteed them a more secure and prosperous life than republicanism would. Historians estimate that ten to fifteen per cent of the population of the Thirteen Colonies - some 250,000 people - opposed the revolution; some passively, others by speaking out, spying, or fighting against the rebels.

Because of their political convictions, Loyalists who remained in the Thirteen Colonies during the revolution were branded as traitors and hounded by their Patriot (rebel) neighbours. Such an incident occurred in 1775:

*At Quibbleton, New Jersey, Thomas Randolph, cooper, who (as the Patriots said) had publicly proved himself an enemy to his country, by reviling and using his utmost endeavours to oppose the proceedings of the continental and provincial conventions... was ordered to be stripped naked, well coated with tar and feathers, and carried on a wagon publicly around the town - which punishment was accordingly inflicted. As soon as he became duly sensible of his offense, for which he earnestly begged pardon, and promised to atone, as far as he was able, by contrary behaviour for the future, he was released and suffered to return to his house, in less than half an hour.*

Patriot authorities punished Loyalists who spoke their views too loudly by stripping them of their property and goods and banishing them on pain of death should they ever return. They coerced others into silence with threats. Throughout the Thirteen Colonies that were under Patriot control, Loyalists could not vote, sell land, sue debtors, or work as lawyers, doctors, or schoolteachers. To be fair, in Loyalist controlled areas, supporters of the Revolution met with similar treatment at the hands of British authorities.

Approximately 70,000 Loyalists fled the Thirteen Colonies. Of these, roughly 50,000 went to the British North American Colonies of Quebec and Nova Scotia. For some, exile began as early as 1775 when "committees of safety" throughout the Thirteen Colonies began to harass British sympathizers. Other responded by forming Loyalist regiments: The King's Royal Regiment of New York, Skinner's New Jersey Volunteers, The Pennsylvania and Maryland Loyalists, Butler's Rangers, Rogers' Rangers and Jessup's Corps were the best known of some 50 Loyalist regiments that campaigned actively during the war.

The signing of the Treaty of Paris (1783), which recognized the independence of the United States, was the final blow for the Loyalists. Faced with further mistreatment and the hostility of their countrymen, and wishing to live as British subjects, Loyalists who had remained in the Thirteen Colonies during the war now were faced with exile.

Those who wished to in North America had two choices; Nova Scotia (Maritimes) or Quebec (Ontario-Quebec).

## EXODUS TO AN UNKNOWN LAND

Fleeing in panic and confusion, forced to leave behind most of their possessions and burdened with the prospect of building a new life in a new land, the Loyalists faced unpromising beginnings. The lands they were to settle were isolated, forbidding and wild.

"It is, I think, the roughest land I ever saw... But this is to be the city, they say... We are all ordered to land tomorrow and not a shelter to go under", Sarah Frost, a Loyalist from New York wrote in her diary as she contemplated the land that she and her husband were about to settle.

In addition to the anguish of defeat and the trauma of exile, Loyalists had to face isolation and feelings of helplessness. The grandmother of Sir Leonard Tilley, one of the fathers of Confederation, expressed what many Loyalists felt when she wrote:

*I climbed to the top of Chipman's Hill (Saint John) and watched the sails in the distance, and such a feeling of loneliness came over me that though I had not shed a tear through all the war, I sat down on the damp moss with my baby on my lap and cried bitterly.*

Shortages, harsh living conditions, and worry plagued the Loyalists in the hastily erected refugee camps. Many had to live in tents during the first winter. The wife of a soldier on the Saint John River wrote:

*We pitched our tents in the shelter of the woods and tried to cover them with spruce boughs. We used stones for fireplaces. Our tents had no floors but the ground... how we lived through that winter, I barely know...*

Many didn't live through the first winter; many left with the relief fleets when they set sail the next spring. Those who did survive had to deal with delays in completing land surveys and shortages of tools and provision. But the Loyalists' determination and resourcefulness assured the ultimate success of many of the new settlements.

## NOVA SCOTIA

In the spring of 1776 the first shipload of Loyalists left the Thirteen Colonies for Nova Scotia. The British government gave them free passage and permitted them to take necessary articles with them. By 1783 there were about 50,000 Loyalist leaders and refugees

living in New York. Although the peace treaty signed that year promised them safety, the Loyalists heard that the Patriot victory had increased persecution. Therefore, up to 30,000 decided to leave for Nova Scotia. Many of the settlers were members of disbanded Loyalist regiments. Colonel Edward Winslow who came from New England was an aristocrat. There were representatives of such minority groups as Dutch, Huguenots and Quakers, and a number of Loyalists brought slaves with them.

-----

### From America to Canada

<http://www.uelac.org/Loyalist-Ships/Loyalist-Ships.php>

Many Loyalists came to Canada by ship, especially those who settled in the Maritime provinces and, to a lesser extent, in Quebec. When the terms of peace became known, tens of thousands of the Loyalists shook the dust of their ungrateful country from their feet, never to return. The party sailed from New York, in nine transport ships, on October 19, 1782, and arrived a few days later at Annapolis Royal.

On April 26, 1783, the first or 'spring' fleet set sail. It had on board no less than seven thousand persons, men, women, children, and servants. Half of these went to the mouth of the river St John, and about half to Port Roseway, at the south-west end of the Nova Scotian peninsula. All summer and autumn the ships kept plying to and fro.

In June, the 'summer fleet' brought about 2,500 colonists to St John River, Annapolis, Port Roseway, and Fort Cumberland. By August 23 John Parr, the governor of Nova Scotia, wrote that 'upward of 12,000 souls have already arrived from New York,' and that as many more were expected. By the end of September he estimated that 18,000 had arrived, and stated that 10,000 more were still to come. By the end of the year he computed the total immigration to have amounted to 30,000. As late as January 15, 1784, the refugees were still arriving.

The following, regarding Lodge No. 210 E.R., is illustrative of some of difficulties arising at the time of the early formation of Lodges and the new Provincial Grand Lodge of New York in view of the flight of the British from New York:

**Washington Lodge, No. 21**, F. & A.M., and some of its members, by Robert W. Reid (M.D.)

[http://books.google.com/books?id=PkEuAAAAYAAJ&dq=%22isaac+collins%22+%22master%22&source=qbs\\_navlinks\\_s](http://books.google.com/books?id=PkEuAAAAYAAJ&dq=%22isaac+collins%22+%22master%22&source=qbs_navlinks_s)

On February 20, 1779, the Grand Lodge of England (Ancients) granted a charter to certain brethren to hold a Lodge of Free and Accepted Masons in the City of New York, which charter appears on the Registry of that Grand body as Lodge No. 210.

The earliest membership of this Lodge consisted in great part, if not entirely, of English (British) officials and Tory sympathizers—the city being in the hands of the British troops at that time.

As to the individual life of this Lodge, we know little, for the minute books, etc., have disappeared, but, from what records we have, we know that it was an active Lodge and took a very important part in the organization of the Provincial Grand Lodge and its successor, the Grand Lodge of the State of New York. The first Junior Grand Warden and the first Grand Treasurer were chosen from this Lodge.

The year 1783 saw many changes in the Grand and Subordinate Lodges, owing to the approaching evacuation of the city by the British soldiers and those English sympathizers who had taken advantage of the offer of homes in Nova Scotia presented by the English Government.

Wor. Bro. Joshua Watson, the Master of Lodge No. 210, left for Nova Scotia, and we read in the minutes of the Grand Lodge for June 19, 1783, "The Grand Lodge being convened in consequence of a memorial from Bro. Richard Jenkins, Senior Warden of Lodge No. 210, and in the absence of Bro. Joshua Watson, Master of said Lodge, in behalf of himself and sixteen brethren, members of said Lodge, representing that **Bro. Isaac Collins** [q.v.], with some other brethren belonging to said Lodge, are using their utmost endeavors to remove the Warrant by which the said Lodge is established in this city, to St. Johns in Nova Scotia, and praying that this Grand Lodge will take the same into their serious consideration."

After a careful consideration of the matter, the Grand Lodge decided unanimously that the charter and jewels of Lodge No. 210 should remain in New York City.

At the end of the year 1783, there remained only Lodges Nos. 169, 210 and 212 of those which organized the Grand Lodge, and of these No. 210 is the only one represented in the Grand Lodge today. (The present Trinity Lodge No. 12, which has wandered from the traditions of its ancestry and become German in sentiment and language, and Washington Lodge No. 21, constituted old No. 210.)

In 1786 the competency of the jurisdiction of the Grand Lodge of New York came under question. Bro. Harrison of Lodge No. 210 informed the Grand Lodge that his Lodge had voted that no dues should be paid to the Grand Lodge of this State in consequence of receipt of letters from the Grand Lodge of England requesting them to pay up their dues.

The New York Grand Lodge announced that no Lodge can exist in this State other than under the jurisdiction of this Grand Lodge. This opened the question of the propriety of holding the Grand Lodge under the warrant granted by the Grand Lodge of England (Ancients). In 1781 a committee was appointed to consider the subject and make a report. They reported as follows: That the Grand Lodge of this State is established according to the ancient and universal usages of Masonry upon a constitution formed by the representatives of the regular Lodges, convened under a legal warrant from the Grand Lodge of England, dated the fifth day of September, in the year of Masonry five thousand seven hundred and eighty-one, the Most Noble Prince John the Third, duke of Atholl, being the then Grand Master. And your committee begs leave to report that, in their opinion, nothing is necessary or essential in the future proceeding of the Grand Lodge upon the subject-matter referred to them, but that a committee be appointed to prepare

a draft of the style of Warrant to be hereafter granted by the Grand Lodge conformable to the said constitution. All of which is, nevertheless, most respectfully submitted to the wisdom of the Most Worshipful Grand Lodge.

This may be called our Masonic Declaration of Independence.

**Lodge No. 210**, sincerely doubting the "regularity" of these actions, parleyed, stating that it was in daily expectation of receiving letters from England to solve some doubt about the jurisdiction of the Grand Lodge of England over the Grand Lodge of this State. What instructions the Lodge received from England we do not know, but Lodge No. 210, on February 27, 1788, having been threatened with suspension by the Grand Lodge of this State, informed that body that it was determined in future to conform in every respect to the regulations of the Grand Lodge of this State and that it had renounced every idea of foreign jurisdiction, etc.

In 1789 the Lodges in the city were renumbered, and Lodge No. 210 became No. 4. During this year also some difficulties or differences between the members of this Lodge had reached such a state as to attract the attention of the Deputy Grand Master and the Grand Lodge. The Worshipful Master, Bro. Thomas Thomas, had turned the charter into the hands of the Deputy Grand Master and he and several of the members presented a petition praying that the Grand Lodge would cancel the old Warrant and issue a new one under the title and to the persons named in said petition.

The Grand Lodge appointed a committee to investigate the matter, who reported that they regretted that they found the Lodge divided into two parties, having complaints against each other of such a nature as to totally exclude all hope of their reconciliation and meeting with each other as they ought to do. They therefore saw no recourse but to either advise a total dissolution of the Lodge or to renew the Warrant to one of the parties. They preferred the latter course, and therefore recommended that each side present a petition for renewal to the Grand Lodge. The brethren accordingly presented their several petitions, Bro. Harrison having been appointed head of one faction and Bro. Delaney head of the other. The report also stated that, from what the committee had seen and from the information they had been able to gain in regard to the character of the brethren composing the two parties, they were decidedly of the opinion that the interest and honor of Masonry would be most promoted by granting the Warrant to Bro. Harrison and his associates.

Acting upon this report, the Grand Lodge passed a resolution authorizing the immediate dissolution of Lodge No. 210, and granting a Warrant to Bro. Harrison and his associates, under the title of "Jerusalem," as requested in their petition, and with the rank which No. 210 formerly held. It was also stated that the Warrant be granted free from expense, with the exception of the Secretary's fee; and that the brethren elect their officers and send a report of the same to the Grand Secretary.

Bro. Delaney and his associates were subsequently denied a Warrant.

**Jerusalem Lodge No. 4** was now launched (Dec. 2, 1789) on its career, which was to be a stormy one. We know very little about the Lodge except its troubles and that it was regularly represented in the Grand Steward's and Grand Lodge. The trouble reached such a height that the Deputy Grand Master, on July 16, 1794, called a special session of the Grand Lodge to consider the dissension and irregularities existing among the members of Jerusalem Lodge. Strong efforts were made to heal the differences between the two factions, one headed by Wor.'. Bro. Rollinson, the Master, and the other by Wor.'. Bro. Harrison, but without success. After months of discussion and special meetings, it was finally decided (March 4, 1795) to cancel the charter of Jerusalem Lodge No. 4 and to grant to each of the parties a new Charter. Wor.'. Bro. Harrison's faction received Charter "Trinity" No. 10, and Wor.'. Bro. Rollinson's faction was assigned Charter "Phoenix" No. n.

It was also resolved, as the opinion of the Grand Lodge, that the property of the late Jerusalem Lodge, in the possession of the Grand Secretary, should be equally divided between the Lodges so proposed to be established.

Phoenix Lodge was now started on a career which seemed to indicate great things for the future. Candidates were numerous and they were men of brains and ability, many of their names adorning the pages of our City's history.

An interesting fact, which may be noted in passing, is that the first candidate introduced in Phoenix Lodge was Mordecai Myers, who subsequently filled such an important place in our own Lodge. Our first Master, Alexander S. Gordon, was also one of the earliest candidates, and from the first took an active part in the Lodge's affairs.

But some misunderstanding arose among the members and before it reached a serious state they decided to separate.

So, at a special communication of the Lodge held on March 4, 1800, the following resolution was passed: "That in consequence of some misunderstandings which at present exist, and for the benefit and harmony of the Institution of Masonry in general, the members of this Lodge consent to a division, and that the Grand Lodge be petitioned for that purpose, which petition shall be signed by the Members who wish to separate, and by the Master, Wardens and Secretary recommending the same."

In the division, the larger faction sought the new Charter, leaving the smaller party in possession of the old one (Phoenix No. 11).

It would be interesting to know the cause or causes which created this lack of harmony in these bodies. As the records are lost, we can but surmise. It is possible and even probable that they were the outgrowth of changed social conditions and the formation of political parties in a new country. At such times, feelings are apt to run high and lead to extravagance and bitterness in speech and action.

Remembering the Tory origin of Lodge No. 210, with the evacuation of the city and country by the British, it is to be expected that this Lodge must shortly either cease to exist or admit members of contrary sentiments. Again, in the establishment of a *new* government, parties are formed and reformed with a violence of sentiment sufficient to break the most sacred ties. An illustration may be found in the history of Washington Lodge No. 21 during the year 1802. And it is more than possible that the division in Phoenix Lodge No. 11 in 1800 was also of such a nature, for the withdrawing members were unanimous in their political sentiments at that time and were actively engaged in propagating the same.

## WASHINGTON LODGE No. 21

On March 5, 1800, a Petition was presented to the Grand Lodge of New York from several members of Phoenix Lodge [No. 11], requesting permission to withdraw and form a Lodge under the jurisdiction of the Grand Lodge of the State of New York under the distinctive title of Washington Lodge. This Petition was supported by a recommendation of said Phoenix Lodge passed by a unanimous resolution and signed by the Master, Senior and Junior Wardens, and countersigned by the Secretary. After some consideration it was granted unanimously.

Such is the record appearing on the minutes of the Grand Lodge for the above date, recording for all generations the appearing of a new "Light" in the Masonic firmament. "Long may it shine." Several times has its light been dimmed by the clouds of adversity only to appear again the brighter for its experiences.

-----

## St. George's Lodge No. 2, New York and St. George's Lodge No. 19, Maugerville, New Brunswick.

The first trace of Masonic activity in New Brunswick dates from 29 Jan 1783. That year, the Provincial Grand Lodge of New York granted a warrant to **Samuel Ryerse** and others to form **St. George's Lodge No. 2**, in the 3rd Battalion of the New Jersey Volunteers. The warrant was signed by [Rev.] **William Walter** [q.v.], Grand Master, chaplain of that regiment. The Lodge was located at Maugerville. In 1788 the lodge received a warrant from the Provincial Grand Lodge of Nova Scotia, as [St. George's Lodge] **No. 19**. It conferred the Mark and Royal Arch, as well as the Craft degrees. [ref. - A History of the Royal Arch – Part Two, by Everett R. Turnbull and Ray V. Denslow].

On 7 Aug 1789 an authorization was given by J. Parr, Grand Master, signed by J. Peters, Grand Secretary, at Halifax, to **Rev. John Beardsley** [q.v.] as Deputy Grand Master, and others, to open and hold a Grand Lodge and solemnly constitute and install **Samuel Ryerse** [q.v.] Master, **Abraham de Peyster** [q.v.] Senior Warden, and **Caleb Mallery** [q.v.] Junior Warden of St. George's Lodge No. 19 at the house of Brother **Nathaniel Underhill** [q.v.] in the township of Maugerville in the County of Sunbury, New Brunswick. [ref. - History of Freemasonry, by Albert Gallatin Mackey, page 1931]

-----

## Biographical Sketches

<http://www.nbgs.ca/firstfamilies/FAMILY-A-2006.pdf>

**Cornelius Ackerman** b. c1754 probably in New Jersey, died 21 Dec 1846 at Victoria, Carleton County: came to NB in 1783 as a Loyalist and first settled at Fredericton in York County, then Avondale, Wilmot Parish, Carleton County: m. **Frances Lawrence** d/o Col. **Richard Lawrence**:

Children mentioned were:

- 1) **Elsie** or **Ann Ackerman** born c1788, died 8 Sep 1846, m. **Caleb B. Phillips** of New York State: had children:
- 2) **Mary Elizabeth Ackerman** m. **John Stevens** and had children:
- 3) **Frances Ackerman** married as his second wife, **John B. Payne**:

Source: **MC80/145** Louise Hill's *Fredericton, New Brunswick, British North America*, page 56: see also **MC1396** George Hayward genealogical collection, MS1B  
*The Hayward collection*, A014, 2 pages.

<http://news.rootsweb.com/th/read/ACKERMAN/1999-11/0942169776>

Cornelius Ackerman (Johannes3, Abraham2, David1), b. ca 1748 at Paramus, NJ; d. 21 Dec 1846 at Victoria, Wakefield (Carleton County) NB; m1. Elizabeth Blauvelt (1750-1782?), d/o Johannes G. Blauvelt and Annetje Quackenbush; m2. ca 1786, Frances (Fanny) Lawrence Vanderbilt (1758-1822), d/o Colonel Richard Lawrence of Richmond, Staten Island, NY. Cornelius enlisted in the 3rd New Jersey Volunteers (Loyalist) after the start of the American Revolution, and served as a Sergeant in the Third Battalion under Captain Samuel Ryerson. He and his cousin Abraham Vanderbeck came to Fredericton, New Brunswick in the fall of 1783, and lived in a tent through that first winter. They were owners there of the Golden Ball Inn.

Children of Cornelius and Elizabeth:

- i. Johannes Ackerman, b. 15 Sep 1771.
- ii. Laurens Ackerman, b. 28 Aug 1774.

Children of Cornelius and Frances:

- i. Elsy Ann Ackerman, b. 1788 in New Brunswick; d. 19 Sep 1846; m. Caleb Phillips, b. ca 1820
- ii. Frances Ackerman, b. 1789 in New Brunswick, d. 19 Apr 1840; m. Capt. John B. Payne, b. ca 1785.12
- iii. Mary Elizabeth Ackerman, b 1796 in New Brunswick, d. 2 Dec 1881; m. John Stevens, b ca 1790 carpenter, of Fredericton, N.B.

[http://www.archive.org/stream/cihm\\_00329/cihm\\_00329\\_djvu.txt](http://www.archive.org/stream/cihm_00329/cihm_00329_djvu.txt)

HIRAM YORK LODGE, No. 23, FREDERICTON.

Worked under a warrant granted to "Rev. Walter Price, W. M., William Fowler, S. W., and Stephen Jarvis, J. W., to meet at the house of **Cornelius Ackerman** or elsewhere in the township of Fredericton, New Brunswick, on the second Thursday in each calendar month." It was dated at Halifax 6th March, 1793, and signed by Richard Bulkeley, G. M., Duncan Clark, D. G. M., James Clarke, S. G. W., Jonathan Sterns, J. G. W., and Joseph Peters, G. S.

The petition for the warrant was recommended by Lodge No. 643, registry of the grand lodge of Ireland, held in His Majesty's Sixth regiment of foot, then stationed at Fredericton.

The lodge was regularly constituted "under a deputation" issued by the Provincial Grand Master at Halifax, and the proceedings reported to the provincial Grand Lodge at a communication held at Halifax 9 Feb 1794. It had a short career, however, judged by a report under date 9 Aug 1800, addressed to the Provincial Grand Secretary, setting forth that "there were not sufficient members remaining to work the lodge in consequence of the removal of the New Brunswick regiment to Saint John," and he added that "they had not elected officers for that year." From these statements it is reasonable to suppose that the lodge ceased to exist at that time, i.e. A. D. 1800. Although not strictly a military lodge, its membership was almost wholly drawn from the military ranks.

"Biographical sketches of loyalists of the American Revolution," Volume 1, by Lorenzo Sabine page 218.

[http://books.google.com/books?id=QjUNAAAIAAJ&printsec=frontcover&dq=%22Biographical+Sketches+of+Loyalists+of+the+American+Revolution%22&source=bl&ots=pivfEJIWAr&sig=2z5VU\\_La5arctPN5TlwpkFCsYog&hl=en&ei=kaxeTNCjD8T48Ab1rcTHDQ&sa=X&oi=book\\_result&ct=result&resnum=1&ved=0CBIQ6AEwAA#v=onepage&q=beach&f=false](http://books.google.com/books?id=QjUNAAAIAAJ&printsec=frontcover&dq=%22Biographical+Sketches+of+Loyalists+of+the+American+Revolution%22&source=bl&ots=pivfEJIWAr&sig=2z5VU_La5arctPN5TlwpkFCsYog&hl=en&ei=kaxeTNCjD8T48Ab1rcTHDQ&sa=X&oi=book_result&ct=result&resnum=1&ved=0CBIQ6AEwAA#v=onepage&q=beach&f=false)

**Rev. Abraham Beach, D. D.** Episcopal minister. He was born in Cheshire, Connecticut, in 1740, and graduated at Yale College in 1757. He went to England for ordination in 1767, and was appointed missionary at New Brunswick, and Piscataqua, New Jersey. In July, 1776, he was told that unless he omitted prayers for the King and Royal Family, he must discontinue service on the Sabbath. As he would not consent to this condition, he shut the churches in which he officiated. In a few months, however, worship was resumed in one of them. Early in 1777 he said: "My present condition is truly distressing, being situated about a quarter of a mile beyond the picket-guard of the King's troops. Parties of Washington's army are every day skulking about me. A few days ago, they drove off my cattle, horses and sheep ; and since I sat down to write this letter, about fifty of them surrounded my house, and fired from thence on the out-sentry of the Hessians." &c. Until the peace, he continued in his perilous position, but, "dispensing spiritual consolation alike to Whigs and Tories." In 1783 he was appointed temporary missionary at Amboy; and in 1784, assistant minister of Trinity Church, New York. After twenty-nine years' duty, and in 1813, he resigned ; when the Vestry, " in consideration of his very long and faithful services in the church, as one of its most faithful pastors, granted him an annuity of £1500 for life, secured by bond, under seal of the Corporation." He retired to his farm on the Raritan River, where he passed the remainder of his life. He died in 1828, at the age of eighty eight. His wife Ann, daughter and sole heiress of Evert Van Winkle, one of the original Dutch settlers of New Jersey, died in 1808. "In his intercourse with society, no man could be more frank or more free from all guile, while his dignified person, expressive countenance, and lively feelings, commanded the respect and affection of all who knew him."



ALR, p. 215:

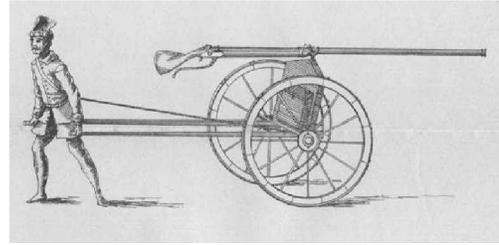
b. 1740, Cheshire, CT; d. 1828, Raritan, New York; Initiated St. John's Lodge No. 4, Middletown, CT; Master 1776; 1767 to England for ordination; **1785, Grand Chaplain, Grand Lodge of New York.**



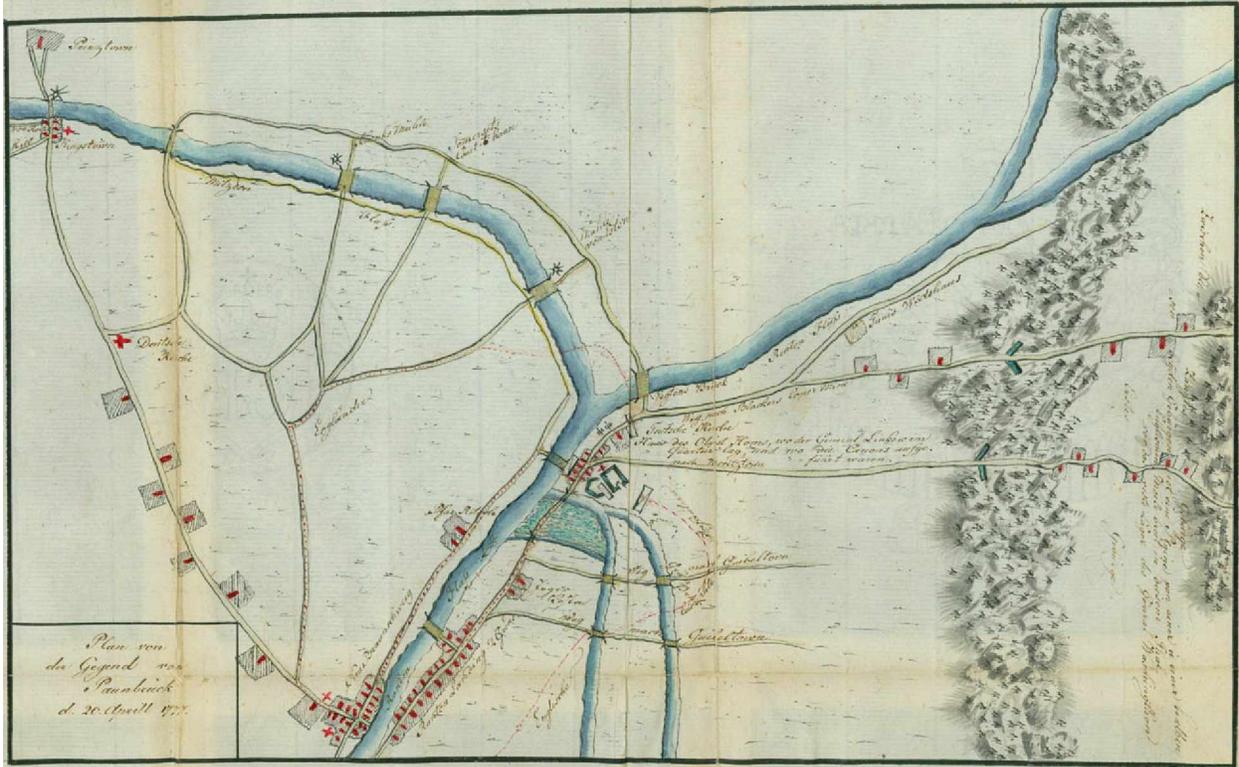
*Plan of the Area between Raritan Landing and Bound Brook Where the Two Jaeger Companies Have Been Posted. From the Beginning of the Year until 14 June 1777*

This plan shows the jaeger pickets on the left bank of the Raritan River below Bound Brook. The small sketch in the upper left-hand corner represents Reverend Abraham Beach's house and barn or granary. The inscription under the house and barn reads: "**Pastor Beach's** house ("Pfar Ritsche"), and barn, into which the rebels sneaked and fired at my quarters." Ewald drove the Americans out of the barn with an amusette. This plan was probably drawn by Lieutenant Carl Moritz von Donop, 1st Jaeger Company.

Hessian Amulette 1740's >  
<http://www.jaegekorp.org/amulette.html>



<http://www.bloomu.edu/library/Archives/Maps/map059.htm>



This plan shows the four routes of the attack on Bound Brook on April 13, 1777. New Brunswick, NJ, is located in the lower left of the plan, across from Raritan Landing. Ewald's advanced guard of General Grant's column attacked on the road over the causeway near the morass or open shaded section above Raritan Landing. Across the river from the morass is the house of the **Reverend Abraham Beach** ("Pfar Ritsche"), pastor of Christ Church in New Brunswick, NJ. [enlarge map to 200% to view detail]

<http://famousamericans.net/abrahambeach/>

Abraham Beach, clergyman, born in Cheshire, CT, 9 Sep 1740; died near New Brunswick, NJ, 14 Sep 1828. He was graduated at Yale in 1757 with the honors of the valedictory, became a convert to the Episcopal faith, and studied theology under Dr. Samuel Johnson and his relative, John Beach. In 1767 he went to England, and there received ordination to the priesthood. He was appointed missionary to New Brunswick, and entered upon his work in September 1767. During the revolutionary war his position between the two armies was exceedingly embarrassing. In consequence his Church was closed, and he did not officiate until Dec 1781, when, in accordance with the suggestions of the archbishop of Canterbury, it became permissible to conduct public worship with the omission of the prayers for the king and parliament. In 1784 he became the assistant minister of Trinity Church in New York, and continued an active worker in the diocese of New York until 1813. He was on many occasions a delegate to the general conventions, and in 1801, 1804, and 1810 was president of the house of lay and clerical delegates. Of Rutgers College, established in 1770 at New Brunswick, he was an early trustee. In 1786 he was elected a regent of the University of the state of New York, and in 1787 a trustee of Columbia College, from which institution he received the honorary degree of D.D. in 1789. He was likewise actively associated with many of the benevolent institutions of New York. Subsequent to his resignation from Trinity parish he retired to his farm on Raritan River, near New Brunswick, where he resided until his death. His only publications were sermons.

ABRAHAM BEACH (*ELNATHAN<sup>3</sup>, ISAAC<sup>2</sup>, JOHN<sup>1</sup>*) was b. 29 Aug 1740; d. 14 Sep 1828 in New Brunswick, NJ; m. ANN VAN WINKLE 1770; graduated from Yale College in 1757 and studied for the ministry under his uncle, Rev. John Beach(3) Isaac(2) John(1), of Newton, CT.

Children:

- i. CORNELIA BEACH.
- ii. ANN BEACH, d. Abt. 1825.
- iii. BEACH.
- iv. HANNAH BEACH, m. ELIJAH RATTOONE, minister and president of a college at Charleston, South Carolina.

-----

Ibid. page 222

**Rev. John Beardsley**, of Poughkeepsie, New York. Episcopal minister. He was born in Stratford [Ripon], Connecticut, in 1732. He entered Yale College, but did not graduate; King's (now Columbia) College, New York, however, conferred the degrees of A. B. and A. M. He went to England for ordination, and returned early in 1762. In addition to the performance of his parochial duties at Poughkeepsie, he officiated a part of the time at Fishkill. At the beginning of the war he refused to take the oath of allegiance to Congress, and suffered indignities in consequence. In the end, his property was seized, and poor and even destitute, he and his family took refuge in New York. In 1778, he was appointed chaplain in the Loyal American Regiment, commanded by Beverley Robinson, who had been a chief supporter of the Episcopal Church at Fishkill. At the peace, Mr. Beardsley accompanied his regiment to New Brunswick. After many deprivations and sufferings, he was settled over the parish in Maugerville, on the river St. John, and remained there more than seventeen years. His pastoral relations were dissolved in consequence of his infirmities. He retired to Kingston in that Province, on the half-pay of a chaplain, and died there in 1810. He had four daughters. The eldest married a German officer who, some years after the peace of 1783, returned with his wife and children to his native land. His son John died at Woodstock, New Brunswick, in 1852. His youngest son, Hon. Bartholomew Crannel Beardsley, who died in Canada West, in 1855, was Chief Judge of the Court of Common Pleas, and a member of the House of Assembly of New Brunswick. His grandson, H. H. Beardsley, of Woodstock, is (1852) a counselor at law, and a member of the Assembly.

ALR, p. 215:

b. 1732, Ripon, CT; d. ca 1809; 1761, England; Groton and Norwich, CT; 1766 Poughkeepsie, NY; 1776, New York; 1778, Chaplain, Royal American Regiment; **1780 No. 210 E.R. (A), New York; 1781, No. 169 E.R. (A), New York; 1781-83, JGW, New York;** 1784, Parr Town, NB; 1784, Hiram Lodge, Saint John, NB, No. 17 NS; 1785, Maugerville, NB; 1785, St. George's Lodge No. 2, NY; 1789, St. George's No. 19, NS; Saint John, NB; 1793, Hiram York Lodge No. 23, NS; 1794, Chaplain, King's New Brunswick Regiment.

[http://www.biographi.ca/009004-119.01-e.php?&id\\_nbr=2254&interval=25&PHPSESSID=d951n83t9lbi9rrmdaajio34b7](http://www.biographi.ca/009004-119.01-e.php?&id_nbr=2254&interval=25&PHPSESSID=d951n83t9lbi9rrmdaajio34b7)

**John Beardsley (Beardslee)**, Church of England clergyman; b. 23 Ap 1732 in Ripton (Shelton), CT, son of John Beardsley, a farmer and land surveyor, and Keziah Wheeler; d. 23 Aug 1809 in Kingston, N.B.

John Beardsley was baptized by the Reverend Samuel Johnson, afterwards president of King's College (Columbia University), but nothing further is known of his early life until 1758, when he entered Yale College. He left Yale after two years, because of anti-Anglican sentiment there, and then continued his studies at King's under Johnson. He would have graduated with his classmates in 1761 had he not departed before commencement to seek ordination in England. Sharing both the spring voyage and its purpose was Samuel ANDREWS, later missionary at St Andrews, N.B. Among those who recommended Beardsley for holy orders was his future father-in-law, the Reverend Ebenezer Punderson, who described him as "a Person of an Unspotted Character & of an Excellent Temper & Disposition, Sound in his Principles of Religion, Firmly Attach'd to our most excellent Ch[urc]h." Beardsley was ordained deacon on 6 Aug 1761, and raised to the priesthood by the archbishop of Canterbury 17 days later. The degree of *ab honoris causa* was conferred by King's College in 1761 and the degree of AM in 1768.

Beardsley began his ministry as missionary of the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel at Groton and Norwich, CT, where he arrived early in 1762. The inhabitants of Groton were apparently lax in fulfilling their obligations towards him, however, and he eventually asked to be transferred. Late in 1766 he removed to Poughkeepsie in Dutchess County, NY, an area he had earlier served from Groton. "I shall . . . take Care that they pay the poor Man his Salary," Dr Samuel Auchmuty of New York informed the SPG. "He is not very bright, but is honest and industrious in his calling. . . ." Beardsley's parish was a scattered one, in which he claimed to ride 3,000 miles a year in the performance of his duties. His devotion and physical exertions resulted in the building of Trinity Church at Fishkill and Christ Church in Poughkeepsie.

Beardsley opposed the revolutionary movement and as a result suffered "repeated insults" and many misadventures before finally taking refuge in New York City late in 1777. He and his family were allowed to take away with them only "their wearing apparel and necessary bedding and provisions for their passage, and no other goods or effects whatsoever." The following year **Colonel Beverley Robinson [q.v.]**, one of his former parishioners and a prominent Freemason [1780, Lodge No. 210 E.R., New York], asked him to act as chaplain of the Loyal American Regiment, and his name appears on the muster-rolls of this unit, which saw service in New York, New Jersey, Pennsylvania, and the south. Some time during 1779 or early 1780 Beardsley himself became a member of the Masonic fraternity\*, and by 1781, when a Provincial Grand Lodge was organized in New York, he was the unanimous choice for the office of **Junior Grand Warden**. He remained active until 1783, when he resigned his office on deciding to leave New York. On 8 March of that year, before his departure, Beardsley joined 17 other clergymen in preparing "A Plan of Religious and Literary Institution for the province of Nova Scotia," which was the origin of King's College, opened as a grammar school at Windsor, N.S., in 1788 and now situated in Halifax.

\* He was initiated in Antients Lodge No. 210 in New York City in 1779 or 1780

In the summer of 1783 Beardsley followed many of his former parishioners to Partrtown (Saint John, N.B.). At his own suggestion he became an itinerant minister, visiting settlers on both sides of the Saint John River as far as St Anne's Point (Fredericton). He also assisted James Sayre in the new communities at the river's mouth. When the rector of Maugerville, John Sayre, died in 1784, Beardsley received a unanimous call to remove there. Christ Church in Maugerville stands as a monument to his labors in the settlement. His letters to the SPG reveal that he was active as well in ministering to nearby communities, particularly Burton. While in Partrtown Beardsley had been invited to become master of **Hiram Lodge No. 17**, the first Masonic body in New Brunswick, and in Maugerville he was an active member of **St. George's Lodge No. 19**, of which Samuel RYERSE was the first master. In 1793 Beardsley was appointed chaplain of the King's New Brunswick Regiment.

By the time Beardsley was established in Maugerville he had already been married several times. His first marriage, to Sylvia Punderson, likely took place in 1763 or earlier, since on 26 Sep 1764 he informed the SPG of the existence of a wife and child. Sylvia died some time after Feb 1771, when twins were born to them, and Beardsley seems then to have married Catharine Brooks,

who died in Poughkeepsie on 5 Feb 1774. Shortly thereafter he took as his wife Gertrude Crannell. Whether Gertrude accompanied him to New Brunswick is not known: by a deed registered on 10 Jun 1786 Beardsley and "Anna, my wife" transferred a town lot in Saint John, but no other evidence of "Anna" has been found. Around 1792 Beardsley and his then wife separated, and Mrs. Beardsley departed for New York. On 28 Oct 1798 he was married again, to Mrs. Mary Quain of Saint John, apparently believing that his former wife had died in the United States. When it became clear that she was in fact still living, "people in general were much scandalized, and . . . his congregation were so much offended as to declare they would no longer adhere to or attend him." An "astonished and distressed" Bishop Charles Inglis instituted an investigation into the matter, and the inquiring clergymen concluded that Beardsley had not been justified in remarrying. Inglis himself found "no proof of prudence or consideration" in Beardsley's having trusted to unsubstantiated rumors about his wife's death or in his having continued to "cohabit" with Mrs. Quain once it had become clear that his former wife was still alive: "What must the world think of a man who has two wives alive at the same time, and no divorce from either of them? And what must be thought of a clergyman who is in this predicament?" Though Beardsley seems initially to have complied with the bishop's instruction to separate from Mrs. Quain, this situation apparently did not endure. His resignation was accepted in 1801 on the grounds that "his late, & present conduct utterly disqualifies him for a Missionary." The incident had caused some anguish to missionaries and to Inglis, who held him in high regard. "His conduct," the bishop had concluded, "was rather marked by weakness and dotage than depravity."

How many children Beardsley and his wives had is not known. Though the twins appear to be the only children of his marriage to Sylvia Punderson found in church registers, he was said in 1768 to have had a large family. Ten years later, after his arrival in New York, he noted that his family was 12 in number, five of whom were under the age of seven. One son, John Davis, served for a time as schoolmaster at Maugerville. It was apparently he who in 1798 refused an invitation to take holy orders because no government allowance was attached to his proposed mission at Prince William, a decision which, it was reported, "very much disgusted his worthy Father." Another son, Bartholomew Crannell\*, became a prominent lawyer and judge. The distinguished historian William Odber Raymond\* was a great-great-grandson.

In 1807 Lieutenant Governor Thomas Carleton was able to arrange half pay as a military chaplain for "poor Beardsley," who at some point after his resignation went to live with his daughter Hannah Dibblee in Kingston; there he died on 23 Aug 1809, the 48th anniversary of his ordination, and was buried under the chancel of Trinity Church. Though he is sometimes referred to as the Reverend Dr. Beardsley, no evidence of a doctoral degree has been found. In 1916 the Grand Lodge of Free and Accepted Masons of New Brunswick erected a brass tablet to his memory in Trinity Church, and in 1967 the same institution, to mark its centennial, established the John Beardsley Medal as the highest honor for distinguished service to freemasonry in New Brunswick. By this means the loyalist clergyman and father of freemasonry in New Brunswick is remembered today.

<http://www.uelac.org/Loyalist-Info/extras/Beardsley-John/John-Beardsley-Biography.php>

**Reverend John Beardsley**, b. 23 Apr 1732 at Ripton (now Huntington), CT, d. 23 Apr 1810 at Kingston, King's, New Brunswick, just 78 years of age to the day. Graduated from King's (now Columbia) College, New York with the degree B.A. in 1761. His first public services were as a Lay Reader, when he "read prayers and sermons to very good acceptance". Rev. Dr. Punderson (father of Sylvia Punderson, his first wife) recommended him to the "Society for the propagation of the Gospel in Foreign Parts," organized in 1711, and the successor of one organized in 1711, and the successor of one organized in 1648 to extend the Gospel in New England, as a person suitable for missionary work. In the spring of 1761 he, with two others, sailed for England to secure ordination.

Immediately after his return he was appointed missionary at Norwich and Groton, a position which he filled satisfactorily for five years. October 26, 1766, he was transferred, by his own request, to Poughkeepsie, New York, which parish had been organized on the 23 instant, previous, and was incorporated by Royal Charter March 9, 1773. In addition to Christ Church, Poughkeepsie, he had charge of Trinity Church, Fishkill. He remained there over eleven years.

Upon the outbreak of the American Revolution, he deemed it his duty to remain loyal to the King of England, as he had sworn allegiance at the time of his ordination. Shortly after, the Committee of Safety arrested him as a Tory and confiscated his property. He, with his family, took refuge in New York City December 16, 1777. The following year he resided on Long Island.

**Colonel Beverley Robinson** [Sr.], a prominent Loyalist, had been his parishioner at Fishkill, and upon his raising the "Loyal American Regiment for the King's service," the Rev. John Beardsley, on April 1778 was appointed Chaplain of the regiment. He shared its fortunes during the war, and at the close accompanied it to New Brunswick.

On the 19th of April, 1783, the transport "Union" sailed from New York City with 209 Loyalists on board, and landed May 10 - 14 days later - on the rugged rocks where the city of St. John, New Brunswick, now is sited.

He was the first clergyman of any denomination to minister, spiritually, to the needs of those "exiles". He did not confine his labors to this one locality, but, on foot and in canoes, he went wherever settlers had gone, doing the work of a godly pastor. He was Chaplain of the "King's New Brunswick Regiment" from 1793 to 1802, and during his natural life received a Chaplain's half pay from the British Government.

He was an enthusiastic Mason and organized the first Masonic Lodge in New Brunswick, of which he was the Worthy Master.

In July, 1805, he visited his old missions at Poughkeepsie and Fishkill, and probably his numerous relatives in New Jersey.

The Grand Historian's Notebook: by R:W: Bro. David "Bud" Gillrie: Right Worshipful Brother The REVEREND JOHN BEARDSLEY:

By 1772 in the Thirteen Colonies it is estimated there were about 100 Masonic lodges, and there may have been a Masonic membership of 2,000 to 10,000, of a population of around 2,000,000.

The American Revolution was also a civil war and possibly one-third of the colonists were opposed to the Declaration of Independence, these were the so-called Loyalists or Tories. After this strife they were scattered: some to England, to the West Indies, with at least 42,000 moving into exile in Canada; 35,000 to the Maritimes, 1,000 to Lower Canada and 6,000 to Upper

Canada. Some of them were Masons. One Masonic Historian tracked all known Loyalist Masons he could find and had a total of 236 names who settled in the Maritimes. Proportionately the same as there were in the Colonies.

Amongst these Loyalists was The Reverend John Beardsley.

In 1776, the time of the American revolution, a Judge Henry Vanderburgh was a Justice of the Interior Court and Warden of Christ Church, Poughkeepsie, New York. The minister of his church was the Reverend John Beardsley, a native of Connecticut, educated at Yale and Columbia.

The Reverend Beardsley is recorded in the Minutes of the Masonic Lodge at Poughkeepsie as having preached the St John's Day Sermon in 1771, 1772 and 1774. On one occasion the brethren formally passed a vote of thanks and presented him with a large folio Bible.

The Reverend Mr. Beardsley was opposed to the Revolution and received "repeated insults" from those who supported it. His church services were suspended on 13 July 1776. When he persisted in his refusal to take the Oath of Allegiance to the State, he was confined to his farm, being permitted only "to go and visit the sick & Baptize Infants where requested."

In his trouble, Beardsley was associated with Judge Henry Vanderburgh mentioned above. Early in December 1777, the Commission for Detecting and Defeating Conspiracies in New York reported that the more radical revolutionaries might actually inflict physical harm on Mr. Beardsley and Mr. Vanderburgh, and they therefore requested permission to send them through the lines to New York, which was in British hands. Finally, on December 13, the Governor of New York granted permission for the Reverend John Beardsley and his family and for Mr. Henry Vanderburgh and his family, "with their wearing apparel and necessary bedding for the Family and Provisions for their Passage" to go down the Hudson to the city in a sloop-of-war under a flag of truce.

In June 1778, in New York, Beardsley became Chaplain of the newly organized Loyal American regiment. Soon afterwards he was initiated into a Masonic Lodge in New York. In 1781, when a new Provincial Grand Lodge was formed, Brother Beardsley was unanimously chosen Junior Grand Warden, an office which he filled until the Loyalists left the city in 1783. Before the departure, he and seventeen other clergymen met together and signed a "Plan of Religious and Literary Institution for the Province of Nova Scotia." This eventually led to the foundation of the University of King's College, Halifax.

The first clergyman who officiated at Saint John was the Rev. John Beardsley. He came with the Loyalists and succeeded the Rev. John Sayre at Maugerville (1784). Between the date of Mr. Beardsley's departure and the arrival of Mr. Cooke in September, 1785, St. John was without a clergyman and the ministrations of religion suffered in consequence.

Together with many Loyalists Reverend John Beardsley (aged 51) and Judge Henry Vanderburgh (age 66) gave up everything; they lost their homes and property, and went into exile, settling in the unoccupied part of what is now New Brunswick. Beardsley was "the first clergyman of any denomination to minister to the spiritual needs of the exiles." On 9 March 1784, the Masons invited him to become the first Master of the earliest lodge formed under local authority in this part of the province. The Lodge being Hiram Lodge No 17, which was formed under the jurisdiction of the Second Provincial Grand Lodge of Nova Scotia.

He built the first church to be consecrated in the province. He continued active in Masonic affairs as late as 1803, when he preached the St John's Day sermon on the text Hebrews 13:1, "Let brotherly love continue". He died in 1809.

Beardsley is regarded as the Founder of Freemasonry in the Province of New Brunswick. In 1916 the Grand Lodge of New Brunswick unveiled a brass memorial tablet to his memory in the church where he is buried, and in 1968, it instituted the Reverend John Beardsley Medalion, awarded every year for outstanding contributions to the Grand Lodge and to the advancement of Freemasonry.

The Rev. John Beardsley Medallion was introduced to the Grand Lodge of New Brunswick and is considered the highest recognition Grand Lodge of New Brunswick may give to a brother of the jurisdiction, though there have been presentations made outside the fold.

The following Church Records reporting on the claim of Reverend John Beardsley to loss and claim commission advancing his claim for recompense of losses suffered for being a 'Loyalist'. Great Britain, Public Record Office, Audit Office, Class 13, Volume 21, folios 20-21.

#### **Memorial of John Beardsley**

To the Honorable Thomas Dundas and Jeremiah Pemberton Esquires, two of the Commissioners appointed by Act of Parliament for enquiring into the losses and Services of the American Loyalists.

The Memorial of John Beardsley, late of Poughkeepsie in the County of Dutches and Province of New York Clerk, but now of the Township of Maugerville in the County of Sunbury and Province of New Brunswick.

Humbly Sheweth,

That your Memorialist previous to the late unhappy War in America was Rector of the Parish of Poughkeepsie Dutches County Province of New York.

That his early and steady Attachment to his Majesty's Person and Government in opposition to the measures of the American Congress soon rendered him Obnoxious to the aiders and abettors thereof, and was by the usurped authority of their Leaders made Prisoner at different periods in the year 1776 and 1777 and otherwise with his Family cruelly insulted, and finally in the Month of December 1777 was by an Order of the said Usurped powers Banished with his Family into the City of New York, then Garrisoned by his Majesty's Troops, and was suffered only to bring in with him his Library and his Family's wearing Apparel and Bedding leaving behind him a Considerable Real and Personal Estate which together with his Professional Losses and Annual Income of his Real Estate is Contained in the Schedule hereunto Annexed.

That in the Month of April 1778 your Memorialist received from His Excellency Sir Henry Clinton then Commander in Chief of his Majesty's Forces in America the appointment of Chaplain in his Majesty's Loyal American Regiment.

Continued doing duty as Chaplain with said Regiment until the Evacuation of New York in the Summer of the year 1783, when he removed with his Family to that part of the Province of Nova Scotia which by the late division is in the Province of New Brunswick.

That the Real and Personal Estate of your Memorialist as stated in the Schedule hereunto annexed has been Confiscated by an Act of the Legislature of the State of New York, and the Real Estate located upon and the Personal Estate sold, and the Sallary which your Memorialist had received from his Parish has been withheld since the 25th December 1775, as well as the Annual Rent of the Glebe or Church Farm which he lived on, since the time of his Banishment.

Your Memorialist therefore prays that his Case may be taken into your Consideration, in order that your Memorialist may be enabled, under your Report, to receive such aid or relief as his Losses and Services may be found to deserve.

'John Beardsley'  
Maugerville (New Burnswick)  
28th January 1786.

### The Loyal American Regiment

This corps was raised almost entirely by the efforts of Colonel Beverley Robinson, a wealthy citizen of Dutchess County on the Hudson River. Its officers and men were nearly all natives of the Province of New York. A few months after its organization the regiment took part in the expedition of Sir Henry Clinton against Forts Clinton and Montgomery. The loyal Americans, though little more than raw recruits, formed a part of the column that stormed and captured Fort Montgomery. After their return to New York they formed part of the garrison there.

They took part in the campaign in Pennsylvania and assisted in the capture of Stoney Point on the Hudson River May 30th, 1779. Afterwards they were engaged in the campaign in the south under Lord Cornwallis. They suffered very heavily at the disastrous battle of King's Mountain where a band of the loyalist troops, out numbered by their enemies and surrounded on all sides, were obliged to surrender.

Col. Robinson had, as his Lieutenant Colonel, **his son Beverly Robinson** and others of his sons were officers in the king's service in one or other of the provincial corps. Thomas Barclay was major and **Rev. John Beardsley** rector of Poughkeepsie on the Hudson was chaplain. At the close of the war part of the Loyal American Regiment went to Nova Scotia and the remainder settled on the St. John River in New Brunswick.

Col. Beverley Robinson died in England. **His son, Lieut Col. [Beverly] Robinson** at the peace went with other loyalists to Shelburne but afterwards removed to New Brunswick and settled at Nashwaaksis in the parish of Douglas where his descendants still reside. Many of the officers and men of this corps who settled in the province made their influence felt in their respective communities. **Rev. John Beardsley** was rector of Maugerville. He was the ancestor of the Beardsleys of Woodstock. **Dr. Peter Huggeford** [q.v.], a surgeon of the corps, was in early days a leading physician at St. John. Captain Christopher Hatch was a magistrate and colonel of militia at St. Andrews where he died in 1819 aged 75 years. Capt. Lemuel Wilmot, grandfather of the late Lieutenant Governor L. A. Wilmot, settled near Fredericton. **Lieut. Anthony Allaire** [q.v.] settled at Douglas, York County, where he died in 1839 aged 84 years; his diary which he kept during the southern campaign has been lately published by Dr. Lyman Draper in his book on "King's Mountain and its heroes."

The name of **Reverend John Beardsley** appears many times in the Legislative Papers of the Province of New Brunswick requesting the formalization of Masonic Lodges throughout the Province.

-----

[http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Azor\\_Betts](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Azor_Betts)

**Azor Betts** (13 September 1740 – 14 September 1809) was an English doctor who began his practice in the Province of New York before the Revolutionary War. His staunch defense of smallpox inoculation and support of the Loyalist cause led to his arrest and eventual departure to Canada. Azor was born 13 Sep 1740 in Norwalk, CT, the son of Nathan Betts and Mary Belden. He married Gloriana Purdy in 1765 in Rye, NY, and practiced medicine in New York City prior to the Revolutionary War.

The events of 1776 that began open hostility between the Continental Army and the British Army in America were tempered by outbreaks of smallpox that began the year previous. General George Washington of the Continentals ordered on May 20, 1776 that no man in his army be inoculated with smallpox, or face serious punishment. Doctor Betts first administered smallpox to members of the Continental Army mere days after the order was given, and was placed under arrest by local authorities. Testimony during a hearing on the matter before the New York Committee of Safety on May 26, 1776 was given by both Doctor Foster representing the prosecution and Dr. Betts in his defense. Doctor Foster testified that:

*"...information was given to General Putnam, that several persons had been inoculated, at the house of one Fisher, in Stone Street, contrary to a resolve of the Provincial Congress of this Colony, he the examinant (agreeable to General Putnam's order) immediately went to the house of the above mentioned Fisher, where he discovered Lt. Colonel Moulton, Capt. Parks, Doctor Hart, and Lieutenant Brown had been inoculated by Doctor Azor Betts."*

In his defense, Dr. Betts told the Committee that *"he had been repeatedly applied to by the officers of the Continental Army to inoculate them, that he refused, but being overpersuaded he at last inoculated the persons above mentioned."*

As a reaction to the news that Dr. Betts had performed these inoculations in New York, Washington immediately drew up another order, this time spelling out the punishment for any soldier caught being inoculated with smallpox:

*"The General presents his Compliments to the Honorable The Provincial Congress, and General Committee, is much obliged to them, for their Care, in endeavoring to prevent the spreading of the Small-pox (by Inoculation or any other way) in this City, or in the Continental Army, which might prove fatal to the army, if allowed of, at this critical time, when there is reason to expect they may soon be called to action; and orders that the Officers take the strictest care, to examine into the state of their respective Corps, and thereby prevent Inoculation amongst them; which, if any Soldier should presume upon, he must expect the severest punishment.*

*Any Officer in the Continental Army, who shall suffer himself to be inoculated, will be cashiered and turned out of the army, and have his name published in the News papers throughout the Continent, as an Enemy and Traitor to his Country.*

*Upon the first appearance of any eruption, the Officer discovering of it in any Soldiers, is to give information to the Regimental Surgeon, and the Surgeon make report of the same, to the Director General of the hospital.*

Jailed again for more smallpox inoculations, Doctor Betts became an open Loyalist, serving as both a Captain-Lieutenant in the Kings American Regiment and also as a surgeon for the Queen's Rangers. In May of 1783, Doctor Betts left America for good, making his home in Kingston, New Brunswick.

Soon after arriving in Kingston, Doctor Betts created isolation wards for those infected with smallpox. He continued this practice, and when the smallpox vaccine was introduced in 1802, he inoculated local citizens free of charge. Doctor Betts died of consumption in Digby, Nova Scotia in 1809, one day after his 69th birthday. He is buried in the cemetery of the Trinity Anglican Church there.

Children:

i. Samuel <b>Betts</b>	b. ca 1766	v. Hiram <b>Betts</b>	b. 1773	ix. Lewis St. John <b>Betts</b>	b. 1784
ii. Elizabeth <b>Betts</b>	b. 1767	vi. Gabriel Purdy <b>Betts</b>	b. 1775	x. Solomon <b>Betts</b>	b. 1786
iii. Sarah <b>Betts</b>	b. 1768	vii. James Oliver <b>Betts</b>	b. 1778	xi. Fanny <b>Betts</b>	b. ca 1788
iv. Charlotte <b>Betts</b>	b. 1770	viii. Bethiah <b>Betts</b>	b. 1781	xii. Jane G <b>Betts</b>	b. ca 1790

<http://www.uelac.org/Loyalist-Trails/2008/Loyalist-Trails-2008.php?issue=200807>

With a smallpox epidemic raging through the colonies, Dr. Azor Betts' skill in giving inoculations would have kept him busy enough during the war. However, the New Yorker's loyalty to King George III numbered him among "the first persecuted" and he was "continually harassed" in the opening years of the war. Rebels eventually arrested Dr. Betts for "carrying intelligence" to the British. While the loyalist doctor was in prison, patriots broke into his home, stealing books, medicine and furniture. Following banishment by the rebels, Betts snuck back to New York, and was imprisoned a second time. The loyalist doctor would have been executed as a traitor had the British not marched into New York and seized the city just in the nick time. A free man once more, Betts became the staff doctor for General Howe's Queen's Rangers and later recruited men for the King's American Rangers. In the last 18 months of the revolution, the loyalist surgeon tended the wounded at the British garrison in Morrisina.

Dr. Betts, his wife Gloriany, and their children left New York in the spring of 1783, settling with other loyalists in Kingston, New Brunswick. Later the doctor moved his practice across the Bay of Fundy to Digby, Nova Scotia -- another loyalist settlement. Betts died there in 1810. Five years later Gloriany died and was buried in Saint John's loyalist burial ground, leaving nine children to mourn her passing.

-----

**Ephraim Betts** – St. George's Lodge No. 2, NY; DeLancey's; 1789, Fredericton, NB; 1792. Solomon's Lodge No. 22, NB. He was the first to settle on the upper Miramichi in 1795

"History of St. John's lodge, F. & A.M. of Saint John, New Brunswick," by William Franklin Bunting, page 299.

[http://books.google.com/books?id=1js9AAAAIAAJ&pg=PA296&dq=%22beverly+robinson%22+%22new+Brunswick%22&hl=en&ei=hhtgTLzTJslL68Ab2yL3EDQ&sa=X&oi=book\\_result&ct=result&resnum=6&ved=0CEkQ6AEwBQ#v=onepage&q=%22beverly%20robinson%22%20%22new%20Brunswick%22&f=false](http://books.google.com/books?id=1js9AAAAIAAJ&pg=PA296&dq=%22beverly+robinson%22+%22new+Brunswick%22&hl=en&ei=hhtgTLzTJslL68Ab2yL3EDQ&sa=X&oi=book_result&ct=result&resnum=6&ved=0CEkQ6AEwBQ#v=onepage&q=%22beverly%20robinson%22%20%22new%20Brunswick%22&f=false)

SOLOMON'S LODGE, No. 22, FREDERICTON.

Was held under a warrant granted to "**Ephraim Betts, W. M.**, John Gibson, S. W., and George Everitt, J. W., to meet at the house of Brother **Ephraim Betts**, or elsewhere in the township of [St. Ann's] Fredericton, province of New Brunswick, on the first Tuesday after the full moon in each calendar month." It was dated at Halifax 15th August, 1792, and signed by Richard Bulkeley, G. M., Duncan Clark, D. G. M., James Clarke, 6. G. W., Jonathan Sterns, J. G. W., and Joseph Peters, G. S. It was formally constituted and its officers installed 3rd October, 1792. The mark master and past master's degrees were conferred by this lodge at its ordinary meetings, and Mount Moriah, Royal Arch Chapter, was held under the authority of its warrant.

The last record of the lodge is dated 25th November, 1828, although there were one or two meetings held subsequently and the minutes taken by the secretary upon loose sheets, which were lost however before being transcribed. The business at these meetings was unimportant, and as "the warrant was pronounced insufficient" by the United Grand Lodge of England, the lodge ceased its labors in the early part of A. D 1829.

-----

**William Black** – 1781, Lodge No. 169 E.R. (A), New York; Loyal American Associators; Loyal North British Volunteers; 1783, Shelburne, NS; 1785, joined Parr Lodge No. 3, NS.

**Parr Lodge No. 3**, Nova Scotia, was instituted by the Rev. William Walter, Provincial Grand Master of New York in 1784. It was composed largely of members of Lodge No. 169, of New York.

-----



-----

**Rev. Joshua Bloomer, D.D.** – 1763, Secy St. John's Lodge No. 2, New York; b. 1758; First Graduate of King's College (now Columbia); 1765-69, England; 1769, New York; d. 1790,

<http://familytreemaker.genealogy.com/users/g/a/g/Anthony-Gagliani-MA/GENE3-0017.html>

Gilbert Bloomer, b. 1702 in Rye, NY; d. 10 Sep 1784 in Rye, NY, was the son of Robert Bloomer and Elizabeth Sutton. He married 1730 Phebe Sherwood, b. 1711 in Rye, NY; died 1740, d/o Joseph Sherwood and Elizabeth Bloomer.

Children:

- i. Gilbert Bloomer, b. 1730; married Rachel Barton; died Unknown.
- ii. Mary Bloomer, b. 1733 North Castle, NY; married Jonathan Ogden Abt. 1766 in Westchester County, NY.
- iii. **Rev. Joshua Bloomer**, b. 1735 Rye, NY; died 23 Jun 1790 in Jamaica, NY. Joshua Bloomer was the very first name to appear in the catalogue of graduates of Kings College in 1758 (now Columbia University). In 1759 he was a captain in the provisional force raised to go against the French in Canada. He also served with distinction as a major siege of Louisburg in 1760. In 1764 he owned land on Cockroft Patent and in 1765 he went to England and studied for the ministry. Joshua returned to New York and became the Anglican Rector of Jamaica, Long Island.

-----

### **Richard Bonsall**

[http://books.google.com/books?id=1js9AAAAAYAAJ&pg=PR11&lpg=PR11&dq=%22hiram+lodge+no.+17%22&source=bl&ots=W17G A3n2IU&sig=Ha-Q5CsQmlqXV0HHTHL1ffM\\_Pyc&hl=en&ei=J5I9TPDXFYKCIafM2JjsCw&sa=X&oi=book\\_result&ct=result&resnum=2&sqi=2&ved=0CBkQ6AEwAQ#v=snippet&q=%22new%20york%22&f=false](http://books.google.com/books?id=1js9AAAAAYAAJ&pg=PR11&lpg=PR11&dq=%22hiram+lodge+no.+17%22&source=bl&ots=W17G A3n2IU&sig=Ha-Q5CsQmlqXV0HHTHL1ffM_Pyc&hl=en&ei=J5I9TPDXFYKCIafM2JjsCw&sa=X&oi=book_result&ct=result&resnum=2&sqi=2&ved=0CBkQ6AEwAQ#v=snippet&q=%22new%20york%22&f=false) page 54.

25 Feb1814 - The lodge assembled and buried with masonic ceremony the remains of W. Bro. Richard Bonsai, who died on the 22nd instant, aged seventy-four years. Bro. Bonsall received the degrees of freemasonry in New York previous to coming to New Brunswick with the loyalists. He was one of the charter members and a worshipful master of old Hiram Lodge, No. 17, and one of the founders of Carleton Royal Arch Chapter. Bro. James Sydney Kaye, a great grandson, was a member and past senior warden of St. John's Lodge.

[http://books.google.com/books?id=SkULAAAYAAJ&pg=PA123&dq=%22richard+bonsall%22+%22new+brunswick%22&hl=en&ei=xKF9TOnkCoG78gbeofiQBw&sa=X&oi=book\\_result&ct=result&resnum=5&ved=0CD8Q6AEwBA#v=onepage&q=%22richard%20bonsall%22%20%22new%20brunswick%22&f=false](http://books.google.com/books?id=SkULAAAYAAJ&pg=PA123&dq=%22richard+bonsall%22+%22new+brunswick%22&hl=en&ei=xKF9TOnkCoG78gbeofiQBw&sa=X&oi=book_result&ct=result&resnum=5&ved=0CD8Q6AEwBA#v=onepage&q=%22richard%20bonsall%22%20%22new%20brunswick%22&f=false) page 123.

Richard Bonsall (1732-1806) was a younger brother to Sir Thomas Bonsall, with whom he was associated as a mining engineer at Aberystwyth. Emigrated in 1769. Landed at Philadelphia, proceeded to New York City, and upon the evacuation of the British there, went to St. John, New Brunswick, in 1783. Was one of the original grantees of the City, first foreman of a grand jury in the county, and first master mason of the first masonic lodge. Married Mary, dau. of Samuel Smith, Huntington, Long Island. Had issue, George (d. 1783), whose daughter, Anne Elizabeth, married James J. Kaye, Q.C., of St. Jolxn, and was mother of Georgianna, married to Lucius C. Allison.

[http://books.google.com/books?id=vZBvZcbSARKC&pg=PA237&lpg=PA237&dq=%22sir+thomas+bonsall%22&source=bl&ots=LCG CMXhfFR&sig=E TnTHFQ0WHZWro0W3DyeXT7c6ms&hl=en&ei=NaV9TMTwDIOCIafk2oCpBQ&sa=X&oi=book\\_result&ct=result&resnum=10&ved=0CDkQ6AEwCTqU#v=onepage&q=%22sir%20thomas%20bonsall%22&f=false](http://books.google.com/books?id=vZBvZcbSARKC&pg=PA237&lpg=PA237&dq=%22sir+thomas+bonsall%22&source=bl&ots=LCG CMXhfFR&sig=E TnTHFQ0WHZWro0W3DyeXT7c6ms&hl=en&ei=NaV9TMTwDIOCIafk2oCpBQ&sa=X&oi=book_result&ct=result&resnum=10&ved=0CDkQ6AEwCTqU#v=onepage&q=%22sir%20thomas%20bonsall%22&f=false) page 237.

He was a native a Wales, and a brother of Sir Thomas Bonsall [died 24 May 1808, aged 67 years]. He commenced the study of medicine, but abandoned it. In consequence of a disagreement with Sir Thomas, he emigrated to New York some years prior to the Revolution, where he remained until the close of hostilities. In 1783 he went to St. John, and was a grantee of that city. He died there in 1814, aged 72. His wife, Miss Smith, was of Long Island. Six children survived him.

-----

### **Elijah Bottum (Bothum) -**

"The history of freemasonry in Canada, from its ..., " Volume 1, Part 1, by John Ross Robertson, page 286.

**Elijah Bottum** – 1787, joined **New Oswegatchie Lodge No. 14**, P.G.L. Quebec.

[http://books.google.com/books?id=sxprqtvjLF0C&pg=PA292&lpg=PA292&dq=%22elijah+bottum%22&source=bl&ots=8UQB4hw9nD&sig=M4e1y9-yvFireJTvw1MCnfcRd\\_HI&hl=en&ei=j9ZhTOWoCIK49gTdpNzLCw&sa=X&oi=book\\_result&ct=result&resnum=5&ved=0CCQQ6AEwBA#v=onepage&q=%22elijah%20bottum%22&f=false](http://books.google.com/books?id=sxprqtvjLF0C&pg=PA292&lpg=PA292&dq=%22elijah+bottum%22&source=bl&ots=8UQB4hw9nD&sig=M4e1y9-yvFireJTvw1MCnfcRd_HI&hl=en&ei=j9ZhTOWoCIK49gTdpNzLCw&sa=X&oi=book_result&ct=result&resnum=5&ved=0CCQQ6AEwBA#v=onepage&q=%22elijah%20bottum%22&f=false) page 286.

It has been proved that the New Oswegatchie lodge was duly warranted as No. 7, NY, that it must have worked at Ogdensburg from the date of its warranting until 1787, when it was transferred to the north side of the St. Lawrence river, probably by some of its members in the loyal American regiment, who settled in that part of Canada. It is well, however, to trace its history from 1787. In his Records, Lane gives "New Oswegatchie, Canada," with 1786 as the date of its warrant, with the No. 520 until 1792, when it became No. 429. The warrant was erased from the English list in 1813.

Considerable research gives clearly the connection of this lodge with Canada. It must have met under the original American warrant in the "Loyal American Regiment" at Fort Oswegatchie, which in 1787 was in the possession of the British [as was much of the north western part of what is now New York State]. The minute book, which has been preserved, does not contain the records of any meetings of the lodge prior to 1787, so that the earlier records from 1783-86 must have been lost, perhaps in the archives of some of the old lodges in the State of New York. In 1787 the lodge was transferred to Canada. The statement in Lane's Records

assuredly came from information received from the Provincial Grand Lodge at Quebec. The first record of the lodge on the official list of Quebec is in a return sent 23rd October, 1787, to the Grand Lodge of England (Moderns).

----

From the Minutes:

"Elizabethtown, December 11th, 1787, 6 o'clock P.M. The Lodge was opened in due form at the house of Joseph White, Esq., and proceeded, 1st. to the Initiation of Lt. Alex. Campbell. 2nd. Gave an entered apprentice's Lecture. 3rd. Closed the Lodge, and adjourned to 8 o'clock. 8 o'clock opened a Master's Lodge.

"Present,— The Wpfl. John Jones, Esq., Master, Br. William Buell, Senr. Warden, Br. Justus Sherwood, Junr. Warden, and acting Secty, Br. David Breakenridge, acting Tyler, Br. Thomas Sherwood, **Br. George Campbell. Br. Elijah Bottum**, Br. Samuel Wright. Proceeded to choose the officers of the Lodge for the ensuing year; Made choice unanimously of the Wpfl John Jones, Esq., Master, of Br. William Buell, Senr. Warden, Br. Justus Sherwood, Junr. Warden, Br. David Breakenridge, Secretary. **Br. Elijah Bottum, Treasurer**, Br. Caleb Closson, Senr. Deacon, Br. **Geo. Campbell, Junr. Deacon**.

"Lodge closed at 9 o'clock, and adjourned to the 27th inst., at this house to celebrate the Festival of St. John."

This meeting was held at the house of Joseph White, concession 4, lot 30, all, 200 acres, township of Augusta, patented 17th May, 1802. A new name appears in the minutes of this meeting, **Bro. Elijah Bottum**. He was a military man and a captain. Governor Simcoe arrived in Upper Canada in 1792, and, on his leaving Brockville for the west, the loyal provincial corps assembled at the inn of Johnstown, and toasted success to the Governor in his mission. **Capt. Bottum** was one of the jolly crowd, and a report of the meeting says:

"**Captain Elijah Bottum**. a large portly person, having at his side a formidable, basket-hilted claymore, then addressed them in brief, military phrase, and gave one of the old war slogans."

**Bro. Bottum** resided on concession 1, lot 27, E. 1-2, 130 acres, township of Augusta, patented May 17th, 1802. In 1813 **Bro. Bottum** was one of the town and church wardens of Augusta.

"Elizabethtown, St. John's Day. Lodge assembled by adjournment, and opened in due form at 10 o'clock A.M. Present, Wpfl John Jones, Esq., Master, Br. Wm. Buell, Senr. Warden, Br. Justus Sherwood, Junr. Warden, and Br. David Breakenridge, Secretary, **Br. Elijah Bottum, Treasurer** . . .

"Elizabethtown, 8th Jany, 1788. An entered Prentice's Lodge . . . Business being completed, the Lodge was closed in brotherly and Br. David Breakenridge, Secty, **Br. Elijah Bottum, Treasurer**, Br. Caleb harmony at 9 o'clock." . . .

"Elizabethtown. March nth, 1788. The Lodge opened in due form on the first step of Masonry. Present. . . **Br. Elijah Bottum, Treasurer**, Br. Bartw. Carley, Br. Bemslee Buell, Tyler. . . .

"April 8th, 1788. 7 o'clock P.M. opened an enteredly Prentice's Lodge in Due form. Present. . . **Br. Elijah Bottum, Treasurer**, Br. Thos. Sherwood, Br. Caleb Clauson, Br. Alex Campbell, Br. Bemslee Buell. Br. Bar. Carley. . . .

"The Second Tuesday in May. 1788, 6 o'clock P.M. Opened an Enteredly Prentice's Lodge in due form. . . . Proceeded to business. Made choice unanimously of Br. Wm. Buell, Master for the ensuing six months . . . **Brs Elijah Bottum & Caleb Clausen. Stewards** . . .

"The second Tuesday in June, 1788, 8 o'clock P.M. Opened an end'ly Prentice's . . . Present . . . **Br. Elijah Bottum**, . . .

"An Enteredly Prentice's Lodge opened in due form. The second Tuesday in July, 1788, 6 o'clock, P.M. Present . . . **Bro. Elijah Bottum, J. Warden, Pro tem**. . . 9 o'clock closed the Lodge in due form and in harmony."

"August 12th, 1788, 6 o'clock, P.M. Lodge opened upon the first step of Masonry in due Form. Present . . . **Br. E. Bottum, acting Senr. Warden**. . . ."

"October, 14th, 1788, 7 o'clock P.M. Opened an Enteredly Prentice's . . . Present . . . **Br. Elijah Bottum, Treasurer** . . .

"December 9th, 1788, at 6 o'clock P M , opened an Enteredly Prentice's Lodge . . . Present . . . **Br. Thos Sherwood, & Br. Elijah Bottum, Wardens, Pro tem** . . . Proceeded to choose the officers of the Lodge for the ensuing six months. . . . **Br. Elijah Bottum, Junr. Warden** . . .

"December 27th, 1788. at 12 o'clock the Lodge assembled to commemorate the Festival of St. John, the Evangelist, and opened on the first step of Masonry. Proceeded to business. Install'd Br. Justus Sherwood as Master for the ensuing six months. **Br. Thos. Sherwood. & Bro. Elijah Bottum, Wardens** . . ." . . .

"Tuesday, 10th March, 1789. 7 o'clock P.M. Opened an Enteredly Prentice's Lodge . . . **Br. Elijah Bottum, acting Senr. Warden** . .

"April 14th, 1789, 7 o'clock P.M. Opened an Enteredly Prentice's *Lodge* . . . Present. . . **Br. Elijah Bottum, & Bro. Z. Phillips, acting Wardens** . . .

"June 9th, 1789. to o'clock P.M. opened an Enteredly Prentice Lodge. Present, . . . **Br. E. Bottum, Junr. Warden** . . . Then proceeded to ballot for the Officers for the ensuing six months—made choice of . . . **Br. Elijah Bottum. Senr. Warden** . . .

"Wednesday, 24th June, 1789. St. John's Day. An Enteredly Prentice's Lodge opened . . . Present. . . **Br Fliiah Bottum. & Br Caleb Clauson. Wardens** . . ." . . .

"Tuesday, 7 o'clock P.M. 14th July, 1789. An Enteredly Prentices Lodge opened . . . Present . . . **Br. Bottum, Senr. Warden** . . .

The meeting does not contain any account of the installation, which possibly took place on St. John's day.

"Tuesday. 7 o'clock P.M. August nth, 1789. An Enteredly Prentice's Lodge . . . Present . . . **Br. Elijah Bottum, Senr. Warden . . .**

"Tuesday. 8th Sep 1789, 7 o'Clock P.M. An Enteredly Prentices Lodge opened . . . Present . . . **Br. Elijah Bottuin. Senr. & Br. Caleb Clauson, Junr. Warden . . .**

. . . 17th Thursday evening at 7 o'clock. P M Opened an Enteredly Prentice's Lodge . . . Present . . . **Br. Elijah Bottum, Senr. and Br. Caleb Clauson, Junr. Warden . . .**" . . .

"Decemr. 8th, 1789, Tuesday Evening, 7 o'clock P.M. Opened an Enteredly Prentice Lodge . . . Present . . . **Br. Elijah Bottum, Senr. and Br. Caleb Clauson, Junr. Warden . . .** Then proceeded to the Election of officers for the ensuing six months. Made choice of **Br. Elijah Bottum, Master . . .** Then Made choice of Bros. John Jones, Thos. Sherwood, **Elijah Bottum**, Ziba Phillips, and Asa Starkweather as a committee to revise the bylaws. . . ."

"December 22nd., 1789, at 10 o'clock A.M. Opened an Entered Prentice's Lodge . . . Present . . . **Br. Elijah Bottum, Master . . .**

"Tuesday, 12th of Jan 1790. 7 o'clock P.M., opened an enteredly Prentice's Lodge . . . Present, **Wpful Elijah Bottum, Master . . .**

Non-attendance at the lodge was, in the early days, inexcusable. Therefore, when brethren neglected their duties they were summoned, and, when through business or length of distance from the lodge they were unable to attend, they had to be excused in due and proper form.

"Tuesday, 9th Feb 1790. 7 o'clock P.M. Opened an Enteredly Prentice's Lodge . . . Voted that Bro. Secty. Make a return of the proceedings and forward it, together with all arrears due to the Grand Lodge, as also a letter **requesting to be numbered upon the Warrant of Establishment for this Lodge . . .**"

This reference to the Grand Lodge at Quebec has already been alluded to . . .

"Tuesday. 13th of April. 1790, 7 o'clock P.M. An Enteredly Prentice's Lodge opened . . . Present, **Wppl Elijah Bottum, Master . . .**

"Tuesday evening, 7 o'clock, 11th of May, 1790. An Enteredly Apprentice's Lodge opened . . . Present, the **Rt. Wppl Elijah Bottum, Master . . .**

"Tuesday, 7 o'clock P.M. 8th of June, 1790. An Enteredly Apprentice's Lodge . . . Present, the **Wpfi Elijah Bottum. Master . . .** Proceeded to business Choice of officers for the ensuing six months . . .

.

"July 13th. 1790. Tuesday evening. 7 o'clock. An Enteredly Apprentice's Lodge opened . . . Present. **Rt. Wppl Elijah Bottum. Master . . .** voted that Br. . . . **Elijah Bottum . . .** be a committee to revise the by-laws. . . ."

"Tuesday. 7 o'clock P.M. 10th August. 1790. Opened an entered Apprentice's Lodge . . . Present . . . **Br. Elijah Bottum. Past Master . . .**" . . .

"October 12th. 1790, 7 o'clock on Tuesday. P.M. An Entered Apprentice's Lodge opened . . . Present. **Bro. Elijah Bottum, P.M. . . .**"

"Tuesday. M<sup>th</sup> of December. 17<xi. at 7 o'clock PM. An Entered Apprentice's Lodge . . . Present **Br. Eh. Bottum, P.M. . .** Voted that . . . **Elijah Bottum, & Asa Starkweather** shall be a committee to revise the by-laws and examine the Treasurer's accounts. " . . .

"Monday, Dec. 27th, 1790. St. John Evangelist Day. 11 o'clock A.M. opened an Entered Apprentice's Lodge . . . Present . . . **Br. E. Bottum. P.M. . . .**" . . .

"Tuesday, Jan. 11th, A.D. 1791. 6 o'clock P.M. An Entered Apprentice's Lodge opened . . . Present . . . **Br. E. Bottum . . .**" . . .

"June 14th, 1791, 6 o'clock P.M. Opened an Entered Apprentice's Lodge . . . Present . . . **Br. E. Bottum, P.M. . . .**" . . .

"June 24th, 1791, 10 o'clock A.M. . . . the Festival of St. John B. P . . . Present . . . **Elijah Bottum, Past Master . . .**" . . .

"Sept. 13th, 1791, 7 o'clock, P.M. Opened an Entered Apprentice's Lodge . . . Present . . . **Br. Elijah Bottum. Past Master . . .**" . . .

A local history of Sussex lodge, Brockville, states that the warrant of New Oswegatchie was cancelled in 1790, and that a new warrant was issued for "Harmony lodge, No. 2." This statement does not seem to be borne out by the facts presented. New Oswegatchie met until September of 1791, and the last records certainly contain no hint of a discontinuance of the work. It is probable that the lodge continued to meet as Harmony, No. 2. until the advent of the Jarvis warrants in 1794, and then became No. 13 of the county of Leeds on the register of the Provincial Grand Lodge of Upper Canada under R. W. Bro. Wm. Jarvis. As has already been stated the minutes of No. 13, from 1799, are contained in the same minute book as those of No. 7, and the cash account of "Harmony lodge." The history of No. 13 is given with those of the first Provincial Grand Lodge of Upper Canada.

The following is a list of the members of New Oswegatchie lodge:

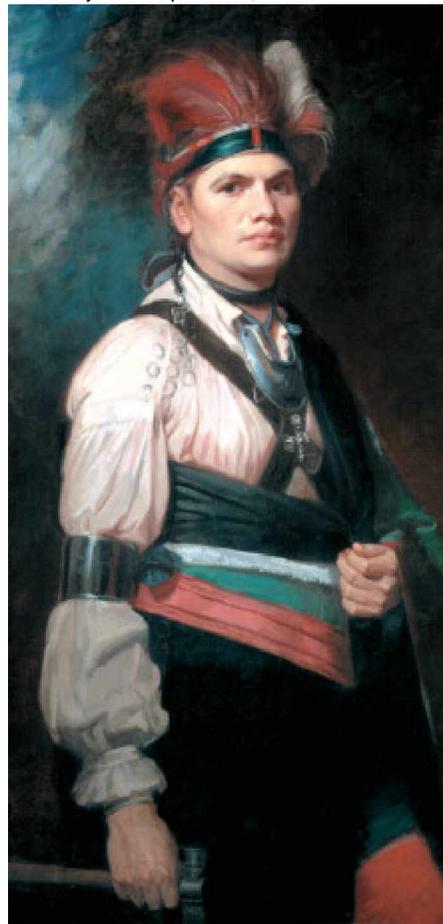
**Buell, William**; Brackenridge, David: **Bottum, Elijah**; Buell, Bemsley; Clausen, Caleb: **Campbell, George**; Carley, Bartholomew; Caswell. Lemuel; Cross. Henry; Dunham. Daniel; Hillyer. Nathaniel; Jones. John; McArthur. Jeremiah; Phillips. Ziba; Sherwood. Thomas; Sherwood. Justus; Smith; Thomas; Scott. Francis; Starkweather, Asa; Samson. William; Wright, Samuel; White. John; Wilson, Samuel; Warn. William.

-----

## Joseph Brant –

<http://www.mqmagazine.co.uk/issue-23/p-33.php>

The story of Joseph Brant, the Mohawk American Indian who fought for the Loyalists during the American War of Independence has been retold by the Iroquois peoples of the Six Nations and American Freemasons for centuries, and today Brant is featured in many Masonic Histories and is the topic of many websites.



The story that is the most endearing is how Brant, a Mohawk chief, witnessed an American prisoner give a Masonic sign and spared the life of his fellow Mason.

This action went down in history, and Brant became the embodiment of the 'noble savage' to Victorian England.

This article will explain the events leading up to this event, and how Brant, in death, created even more controversy as the legends of his life grew and expanded.

Brant was born in 1742 in the area around the banks of the Ohio River. His Indian name was Thayendanegea, meaning 'he places two bets' and as a child he was educated at Moor's Charity School for Indians in Lebanon, Connecticut, where he learned English and European History. He became a favourite of Sir William Johnson, who had taken Brant's sister Molly as a mistress, although they were married later after Johnson's wife died. Johnson was the British Superintendent for Northern Indian Affairs, and became close to the Mohawk people, and enlisted their allegiance in the French and Indian War of 1754-1763, with a young Brant taking up arms for the British.

After the war, Brant found himself working as an interpreter for Johnson. He had worked as an interpreter before the war and converted to Christianity, a religion which he embraced. He translated the Prayer Book and the Gospel of Mark into the Mohawk language, other translations included the Acts of the Apostles and a short history of the Bible.

Around 1775, after being appointed secretary to Sir William's successor, Guy Johnson, Brant received a Captain's commission in the British Army and set off for England, where he became a Freemason and confirmed his attachment to the British Crown.

Brant was **raised in Hiram's Cliftonian Lodge No. 814 in London**, early in 1776, although his association with the Johnson family may have been an influence in his links to Freemasonry. Guy Johnson, whose family had Masonic links, had accompanied Brant on his visit to England. Hiram's Cliftonian Lodge had been founded in 1771, and during Brant's visit to the Lodge, it had met at the Falcon in Princes Street, Soho. The Lodge was erased in 1782. Brant's Masonic apron was, according to legend, personally presented to him by George III.

On his return to America, Brant became a key figure in securing the loyalty of other Iroquois tribes in fighting for the British against the 'rebels', and it was during the war that Joseph Brant entered into Masonic legend. After the surrender of the

'rebel' forces at the Battle of the Cedars on the St. Lawrence River in 1776, Brant famously saved the life of a certain Captain John McKinstry, a member of **Hudson Lodge No.13** of New York, who was about to be burned at the stake.

McKinstry, remembering that Brant was a Freemason, gave to him the Masonic sign of appeal which Brant recognized, an action which secured McKinstry's release and subsequent good treatment. McKinstry and Brant remained friends for life, and in **1805 he and Brant together visited the Masonic Lodge in Hudson**, New York, where Brant was given an excellent reception. Brant's portrait now hangs in the Lodge.

Another story relating to Brant during the war has another 'rebel' captive named Lieutenant Boyd giving Brant a Masonic sign, which secured him a reprieve from execution. However, on this occasion, Brant left his Masonic captive in the care of the British, who subsequently had Boyd tortured and executed.

After the war, Brant removed himself with his tribe to Canada, establishing the Grand River Reservation for the Mohawk Indians. He became **affiliated with Lodge No. 11 at the Mohawk village at Grand River of which he was the first Master and he later affiliated with Barton Lodge No.10 at Hamilton, Ontario**. Brant returned to England in 1785 in an attempt to settle legal disputes on the Reservation lands, where he was again well received by George III and the Prince of Wales.

After Brant's death in 1807, his legend continued to develop, with numerous accounts of his life and his death being written. One such account lengthily entitled *The Life of Captain Joseph Brant with An Account of his Re-interment at Mohawk, 1850*, and of the Corner Stone Ceremony in the Erection of the Brant Memorial, 1886, celebrated Brant's achievements and detailed that a certain Jonathan Maynard had also been saved by Brant during the war.

Like McKinstry, Maynard, who later became a member of the Senate of Massachusetts, had been saved at the last minute by Brant, who had recognised him giving a Masonic sign. Brant's remains were re-interred in 1850 with an Indian relay, where a number of warriors took turn in carrying his remains to the chapel of the Mohawks, located in Brant's Mohawk village, which is now part of the city of Brantford. Many local Freemasons were present, and his tomb was restored with an inscription paid for by them.

The legend of Brant saving his fellow Masons was examined by Albert C. Mackey in his *Encyclopedia of Freemasonry* in which he referred to a book entitled *Indian Masonry* by a certain Brother Robert C. Wright. In the book, Wright states that 'signs given by the Indians could easily be mistaken for Masonic signs by an enthusiastic Freemason'.

Using Wright's claims that the Indians used similar Masonic signs or gestures within their culture, and these were mistaken by over enthusiastic Freemasons, Mackey was putting forward an argument that the stories of encounters with 'Masonic' Indians were perhaps in doubt.

Mackey then put forward the question 'is the Indian a Freemason' before examining a number of historically Native American Indians who were Freemasons, including Joseph Brant and General Eli S. Parker, the Seneca Chief who fought in the American Civil War. Mackey concluded:

'Thus from primitive and ancient rites akin to Freemasonry, which had their origin in the shadows of the distant past, the American Indian is graduating into Free and Accepted Masonry as it has been taught to us. It is an instructive example of the universality of human belief in fraternity, morality and immortality'.

Mackey presented that the Indians, in recognising the universal ethos of Freemasonry within their own culture, were drawn to the Craft. Thus an understanding into Brant's moralistic approach to fellow Freemasons who were prisoners during the war was being sought, his actions fascinating Masonic historians well into the twentieth century.

Brant became a symbol for Freemasonry, his story being used as a metaphor for the Masonic bond, a bond which became greater than the bond of serving one's country during wartime. Brant also came to represent a respect for the Native American Indian during a time when the US was promoting the 'manifest destiny', an ethos which the United States government saw as God's right for them to settle the Indian lands of the west.

Brant's myth even exceeded the traditional Victorian image of the 'noble savage', his meeting of other Freemasons while visiting London such as the writer James Boswell and Masonic members of the Hanoverian Household such as the Prince of Wales compounded this. Brant once said:

'My principle is founded on justice, and justice is all I wish for', a statement which certainly conveyed his moralistic and Masonic ethos.

-----

**Captain Oliver Bourdett** - b. 1732, d. 29 Jan 1806, m. Catherine \_\_\_\_, b. 1739, d. 11 May 1813 in Halifax, NS: came from New York to New Brunswick in 1783 as Loyalists: settled in Saint John.

1782, **Grand Steward**, Grand Lodge of New York; 1783, Lodge No. 210 E.R. (A), New York; Wagon Master General; 1783, River Saint John, New Brunswick; 1784, Hiram Lodge No. 17, Nova Scotia; Saint John, New Brunswick; 1785 Master; 1791, Secretary; 1791, Junior Warden; 1796, Expelled; 1802, St. John's Lodge No. 29, NS; Saint John, NB; d. 1806, Saint John, NB.

<http://archiver.rootsweb.ancestry.com/th/read/NewBrunswick/2005-12/1135049672>

Captain of the "*Tartar*." Sailed with the 12th Militia Co. of Refugee Loyalists. It may be that the HMS *Tartar* sailed from NYC in 1783 (or 1784) and landed in St. John, New Brunswick late in the year.

[http://books.google.com/books?id=4govAAAAYAAJ&pg=PA30&dq=%22oliver+bourdett%22&hl=en&ei=6BlITMjEF4P58Aailvi6Cq&sa=X&oi=book\\_result&ct=result&resnum=1&ved=0CCUQ6AEwAA#v=onepage&q=%22oliver%20bourdett%22&f=false](http://books.google.com/books?id=4govAAAAYAAJ&pg=PA30&dq=%22oliver+bourdett%22&hl=en&ei=6BlITMjEF4P58Aailvi6Cq&sa=X&oi=book_result&ct=result&resnum=1&ved=0CCUQ6AEwAA#v=onepage&q=%22oliver%20bourdett%22&f=false) page 30.

It is a little remarkable that scarcely any of our local historians have made any mention of the arrival of the June fleet with its important contingent of some 1,500 Loyalists. The names of the vessels composing the May fleet have often appeared in print, and their arrival at St. John is annually commemorated: the coming of the 'fall fleet' also is frequently and familiarly referred to; but the arrival of the June fleet appears to have been generally overlooked.

The fleet consisted of thirteen ships and two brigs with a frigate as convoy. Among the vessels were the *Bridgewater*, (Capt. Adnet), *Two Sisters*, (Capt. Brown), *Hopewell*, *Symmetry*, *Generous Friends*, *Thames*, *Amity's Production*, *Tartar*, *Duchess of Gordon*, *Littledale*, *William and Mary*, and *Free Briton*. The Loyalists on board were enrolled in seventeen companies, commanded respectively by Joseph Clarke, Sylvanus Whitney, Joseph Gorham, Henry Thomas, John Forrester, Thomas Elms, John Cock, James Hoyt, Christopher Benson, Joseph Forrester, Thomas Welch, **Oliver Bourdett**, Asher Dunham, Abra. Camp, Peter Berton, Richard Hill and Moses Pitcher.

The minute details connected with the voyage of the June fleet are preserved in the diary kept by a lady who was a passenger in the ship *Two Sisters* [See diary of Sarah Frost in Kingston and the Loyalists of 1783.] She gives a graphic description of the discomforts of a rough passage in an overcrowded vessel, during which, to add to their miseries, an epidemic of measles broke out among the children.

-----

**Rev. John Bowden** – b. 7 Jan 1751; d. Ballston Spa, NY, 31 Jul 1817; clergyman. Assistant minister of Trinity Church, NY, 1774; Rector of St. Paul's Church, Norwalk, CT, 1784-1789.

1782, Lodge No. 210 E.R. (A), New York; 1775, Norwalk, CT; 1777, New York; 1778, Chaplain, De Lancey's; 1783, Norwalk, CT; St. Croix, West Indies; 17785, Stratford, CT; 1801 Professor, Columbia; d. 1817, Ballston Spa, NY.

[http://books.google.com/books?id=WQke9CJBzhAC&pg=PA355&dq=%22john+bowden%22+%22ballston%22&hl=en&ei=xsNiTIrdMYG0IQfm-cS-Cw&sa=X&oi=book\\_result&ct=result&resnum=1&ved=0CCqQ6AEwAA#v=onepage&q=%22john%20bowden%22%20%22ballston%22&f=false](http://books.google.com/books?id=WQke9CJBzhAC&pg=PA355&dq=%22john+bowden%22+%22ballston%22&hl=en&ei=xsNiTIrdMYG0IQfm-cS-Cw&sa=X&oi=book_result&ct=result&resnum=1&ved=0CCqQ6AEwAA#v=onepage&q=%22john%20bowden%22%20%22ballston%22&f=false) page 355.

**John Bowden**, clergyman and author, was born in Ireland, in 1751, and died in Ballston Spa, New York, in 1817. He was rector of the church in Norwalk, Connecticut, and principal of the Episcopal Academy, at Cheshire. In October, 1796, Mr. Bowden was unanimously elected Bishop of Connecticut, but declined the position on account of the weak state of his health. In April, 1802, he became professor of rhetoric and moral philosophy at Columbia College, from which, in 1797, he had received the degree of S.T.D. He wrote, among a considerable number of works, *The Apostolic Origin of Episcopacy* (2 vols., New York, 1808).

[http://books.google.com/books?id=cjVKAAMAAAJ&pg=PA10&dq=%22john+bowden%22+%22ballston%22&hl=en&ei=xsNiTlrdMYG0IQfm-cS-Cw&sa=X&oi=book\\_result&ct=result&resnum=3&ved=0CDYQ6AEwAg#v=onepage&q=%22john%20bowden%22%20%22ballston%22&f=false](http://books.google.com/books?id=cjVKAAMAAAJ&pg=PA10&dq=%22john+bowden%22+%22ballston%22&hl=en&ei=xsNiTlrdMYG0IQfm-cS-Cw&sa=X&oi=book_result&ct=result&resnum=3&ved=0CDYQ6AEwAg#v=onepage&q=%22john%20bowden%22%20%22ballston%22&f=false) page 9.

In 1774 the **Rev. John Bowden** was called at a salary of £85 per annum to the rectorship, and the parish was fortunate enough to secure the acceptance of the call. Dr. Bowden was not a half-learned writer, neither a speaker whose flow of words was in advance of a flow of thought, but a man of rare parts, and even at the age of thirty-five a ripe scholar. He was accomplished in morals and philosophy as well as theology, and the pulpit under his occupancy of it was the vehicle of vivid expositions of truth. At the same time, while he was of striking intellect, yet was he gifted with a remarkable share of common sense, and into no better hands could the parish have committed its new enterprise. Within a few months after his arrival the vote was passed to build of the dimensions of the former church, and a committee of nine appointed and allowed eighteen days wherein to report. The work was pushed; two were added to the committee, and although it was winter yet the forests must have been searched and sills, posts, joists and plates selected and hewn and drawn, as the action of March 28th, that coming spring, ran "that the carpenters begin the framing of the church on Monday next, the weather permitting." Dr. Bowden saw the structure, a goodly one for the day, completed and consecrated.

He saw set out these trees which to-day wave so proudly over the spot; and he remained here, not in the indulgence of lettered tastes which to no man of that time would have been more of a delight, but in planting and preaching and ministering and laboring, until 1789, in the autumn of which year, worn and in need of rest, he sailed for the island of St. Croix, and upon his return to this country opened at Stratford a school for boys which he continued until 1796, when he was called to the principalship of the Episcopal Academy in Cheshire, which office he immediately accepted. In October following he was unanimously elected Bishop of Connecticut; but on account of impaired health he declined the high honor and remained in Cheshire until 1802, when he accepted the chair of moral philosophy and belles lettres offered him by the faculty of Columbia College. This position was congenial to him and he filled it until compelled by infirmity to surrender it, and the life story of the first rector of the first church consecrated by Bishop Seabury in this country, is epitomised in the latin epitaph of a gently raised tablet which stands in the quiet cemetery of Ballston, Saratoga county, New York, and which reads: "The Trustees of Columbia College, New York, set up this marble, sacred to the memory of John Bowden, D. D., professor of moral philosophy and polite literature in the said college. By birth he was an Irishman, by training an American, in benevolence a citizen of the whole world. From the first a son and strenuous defender of the Church of England, its truly catholic faith he taught, inculcated, expounded, declared in his writings, adorned in his life. Having diligently performed his collegiate offices, honored, or rather loved by all, at length, worn out by years and labors, he departed this life at the age of 66 years, on the last day of July, in the year of redemption 1817."

REV. JOHN BOWDEN, D. D. Of New York. Was born in Ireland in 1751. Graduated at King's (Columbia) College in 1772. Was ordained in 1774, and the same year was settled as Assistant Rector of Trinity Church, New York. Soon after the beginning of hostilities he retired to Norwalk, Connecticut, but returned to New York when the British obtained possession of the city. Informed that harm was intended him, he fled to Long Island at night, where he occasionally assisted the Rector of the Episcopal Church of Jamaica. In 1784 he accepted the Rectorship of the Church at Norwalk. In 1789 he took charge of a small parish in the West Indies. In 1801 he was elected Professor of Moral Philosophy, Belles-lettres and Logic in Columbia College. He died at Ballston Spa in 1817, aged sixty-five. His wife, Mary Jervis, bore him three sons, one of whom, James J., graduated at Columbia College in 1813, was Rector of St. Mary's Parish, St. Mary's County, Maryland, and died at the age of twenty-six.

Author of: "The essentials of ordination stated in a letter to a friend on the subject ...," by John Bowden. 1812, which may be read at: [http://books.google.com/books?id=NKNBAAAAYAAJ&pg=PA22&lpg=PA22&dq=%22john+bowden%22+%22columbia+college%22&source=bl&ots=p41BGwf0R5&sig=cYh93TEEP8ey6xQZwmxzrSSrQ&hl=en&ei=KchiTN6-GoG88gaGq-SVCQ&sa=X&oi=book\\_result&ct=result&resnum=1&ved=0CBIQ6AEwAA#v=onepage&q&f=false](http://books.google.com/books?id=NKNBAAAAYAAJ&pg=PA22&lpg=PA22&dq=%22john+bowden%22+%22columbia+college%22&source=bl&ots=p41BGwf0R5&sig=cYh93TEEP8ey6xQZwmxzrSSrQ&hl=en&ei=KchiTN6-GoG88gaGq-SVCQ&sa=X&oi=book_result&ct=result&resnum=1&ved=0CBIQ6AEwAA#v=onepage&q&f=false)

-----

ALR, page 216:

**Charles John Brannan [Brannon]** – 1780, St. John's Lodge No. 2, New York; Innkeeper [?]. He was in the King's service during the war, and at its close went to St. John, New Brunswick. He removed from that city to Fredericton in 1785, and continued there until his decease in 1828, at the age of eighty-one.

-----

**Ebenezer Briggs** - 1788, St. George's Lodge No. 2, New York; Shipwright, Lloyd's Neck, NY; 1783, Sheffield, NB; 1789, St. George's Lodge No. 19, NS; Maugeville, NB; d. ca 1807.

<http://oldsaintjohn.com/eben.htm>

Ebenezer Briggs b. 15 Nov 1758 (extrapolating back the age on the tombstone) at Freetown, Bristol, MA; d. 28 Mar 1807 aged 48 yrs 4 mos 13 days at Sheffield, NB; bur. at the Babbitt Cemetery or Jacksonville Community Cemetery in Lower Burton, Queens County, his estate being administrated by his wife and his brother Abiel Briggs.

Ebenezer was Loyal to the British in the Revolutionary War serving as a soldier. He arrived in NB with the Spring Fleet in 1783 with a wife and one child under 10. He was settled in Sheffield, NB by 1786 and it was after his death that his family received the formal papers certifying his 300 acre free grant on 1819/07/08. He married 3 Sep 1781 by the Rev. Joshua Hart of Smithtown, Long Island, Diadema/Diodamy Chase b. ca 1767 at Freetown, Bristol, MA, d 1822 at Queens County, NB, d/o James P. Chase and Elizabeth Douglas and a descendant of William Chase who came to New England on the Arabella with the first governor of Massachusetts, John Winthrop, in 1630.

After Ebenezer's death, the widow and children moved to Grand Lake and settled at Whites Cove. [St John Daily Sun 25 Jan 1893 from Daniel F. Johnson : Volume 89 Number 2075: ... In the early settlement of this country Eben Briggs and Abial Briggs located as what is now known as Sheffield (Sunbury Co.) N.B. Both of them were married before they came to this country and perhaps the former had the shortest courtship on record. Having gone to a Quaker meeting, he and his future wife were married by the preacher at the close of the meeting. These men settled near Loader place, so called. As their families with the other settlers increased, the school teacher became a necessity and one John Palmer's services were called into requisition, who in his humble way 'taught the young idea how to shoot'. At this time it was not unusual to see a troop of horses on Sunday mounted by people of both sexes going to Maugerville to attend divine service. If the like could be seen in this day, it would astonish the natives... Eben remained in Sheffield until a family of ten children were born, when he sickened and was called away, leaving his widow to care for the large family. The freshets had so often interfered with the progress of people that many determined to leave the low intervale land for higher ground, where the water would not interfere with the progress of cultivation. Abial removed to the Washademoak and there by farming and ship building, made a competency for his family. Eben's widow with ten children moved to Grand Lake (Queens Co.) and settled at White's Cove. Here she began the struggle for life anew, assisted as best they could by her two sons, Eben and Hiram Briggs. . .

Ebenezer and and Diadema had children:

- i. Lemuel or Samuel Briggs b. 1 Jan 1782 in NY; d. 30 May 1783 scant days after arriving by ship at St John, NB, after the Spring Fleet landed at St John, NB making him the first, or one of the first, Loyalists to die in the new country
- ii. Olive Briggs b. 26 Oct 1783 in Sheffield, NB; d. 10 Feb 1865 at Sussex, NB; m. 4 Jan 1804 at Sheffield, Sunbury, NB, William Lawson b. 1778, d. 27 Aug 1854 at Sussex Vale, Kings, NB, settled at Musquash Island, Queens County; 11 children.
- iii. Diadema/Diadamy Briggs b. 26 Dec 1785 in Sheffield, NB, d. 10 Sep 1867; m. Israel Lawson, b 1782, d. 6 Feb 1855, an innkeeper in Saint John and a sea captain, they settled in Saint John and they had children.
- iv. Elizabeth Briggs b. 4 Dec 1787; m1. 17 Apr 1810, John Lawson Jr b 1784 and had children; m2. Duncan Cameron.
- v. Sophia Briggs, of Sheffield, b. 23 Nov 1789; d 6 Jul 1848; m1. 22 Jun 1807 at Sunbury County, NB, John Drost, of Lancaster Parish, St John, NB, a sea captain, b. 1785; d. bef. 22 Feb 1815 , had 4 children; m2. John Ford.
- vi. Mary Ann Briggs b. 22 Jan 1792; d. 1863; m. 5 Mar 1811 at Gagetown, John Williams, b. 1788 Gagetown, Queens, NB; d. there 6 Apr 1880 (s/o Reuben Williams and Mary (Maria) Vantassel) settled near Gagetown and had children.
- vii. Ebenezer Briggs b. 1795; d. 6 May 1881 at Briggs Corner, NB; bur. Briggs Corner Cemetery, Queens County, NB; m. 4 Aug 1819 at Gagetown, Mary McGregor b. 1801 (d/o Daniel McGregor and Hester Moss), d. 10 Jan 1862 aged 61 buried with husband. They settled at Salmon River, Queens County, petitioned 10 Jun 1841 for 130 ac. of land on the Little Fork Stream, Salmon Creek, Queens Co. saying he is a poor man with a large family and asks for relief, (may have married second Mrs. Elizabeth Briggs 1871 census) and they had children.
- viii. Mehitable/Hetty Briggs b. 1805 (71 Census); d. 26 Oct 1893 at Centreville, Carleton, NB, and had children.
- x. Hiram Briggs b. 1796; d. 1858; m. 19 May 1816 Susan White b. 1798; settled at Salmon River, Queens County by 1840 and had children.
- xi. Permassa Briggs b. 1798; d. 26 Jan 1870; bur. St Luke's Cemetery, Queens County, NB; m. 4 Jan 1815 Jacob Fowler Wiggins b. 28 Apr 1797; d. 18 Aug 1859 settled at Grand Lake, Waterborough Parish, Queens, NB and had all their children there.
- xii. Catherine/Katie Briggs b. 1803; m. 1 Jan 1824 Henry McFarlane b. 1800; settled on Grand Lake at Scotchtown, NB and they had children.

-----

**John Studholme Brownrigg** – 1775, Boston; 1781, New York; 1781, Lodge in the 38th Regiment, No. 441, Irish Constitution; 1781-83, Grand Senior Warden, GL of New York; 1783, Deputy Grand Master, GL of New York; 1783, Nova Scotia; 1784, joined Lodge No. 169 E.R. (A), New York; 1784, joined Lodge No. 210 E.R. (A), New York; 1785, visitor to Lodge No. 211 E.R. (A). Halifax, Nova Scotia.

Henry Brownrigg of Rockingham – 1793; m. Mary Alcock - 1819  
2 JOHN STUDHOLME Brownrigg 1754 – 1787; m. Lydia Eames – 1792

<http://thepeerage.com/p18471.htm>

**Henry Brownrigg** d. 4 Dec 1793, son of [John Brownrigg](#) and [Mary Studholme](#); m. 5 Oct 1753 [Mary Alcock](#), daughter of [Michael Alcock](#), Henry Brownrigg lived at [Rockingham, County Wicklow, Ireland](#).

Children:

- i. [General Thomas Brownrigg](#) d. May 1826; m. [Anne Shearman](#), d/o [Robert Shearman](#), on 16 July 1794
- ii. [John Studholme Brownrigg](#) d. 1787; gained the rank of officer in the service of the British Army.

Children of John Studholme Brownrigg:

1. [Henry Fox Brownrigg](#) d. 1807
2. [Captain William Crosbie Brownrigg](#) d. 1805
3. [John Studholme Brownrigg](#) b. 1786

iii. [General Sir Robert Brownrigg, 1st Bt.](#) b. 08 Feb 1758, d. 27 May 1833; m1. 8 Apr 1783 [Elizabeth Catherine Lewis](#), d/o [William Lewis](#); m2. 27 Jun 1818 [Sophia Bissett](#), d/o [Reverend Alexander Bissett](#), General Sir Robert Brownrigg, 1st Bt. gained the rank of Colonel in the service of the 9th Foot. He held the office of Governor of Landguard Fort. He held the office of Governor of Ceylon in 1812. He was created *1st Baronet Brownrigg [U.K.]* on 9 Mar 1816. He was invested as a Knight Grand Cross, Order of the Bath (G.C.B.).

Children of General Sir Robert Brownrigg and [Elizabeth Catherine Lewis](#)

1. [Katherine Brownrigg](#) d. 01 Aug 1834
2. [Lt-Col. Robert James Brownrigg](#) b. 23 Dec 1790

Year	Grand Master.	Dep. Grand Master.	Sen. Grand Warden.	Jun. Grand Warden.	Grand Treasurer.	Grand Secretary.
1781	William Walter		J. Studholme Brownrigg	John Beardsley		
1782	William Walter	James McCuen	J. Studholme Brownrigg	John Beardsley	Joshua Watson	William Cook
1783	William Walter	*James McCuen	*J. Studholme Brownrigg	*John Beardsley	*Joshua Watson	*William Cook
	William Cook	Archibald Cunningham	Patrick McDavitt	William Cook	Samuel Kerr	James Clark
1784	*William Cook	Samuel Kerr	*Patrick McDavitt	James Bailder	Daniel McCormick	Jos. Lawrence & Jas. Giles
1785	Robert R. Livingston		Peter W. Yates	James Bailder	Daniel McCormick	

John **Studholme Brownrigg**, Lieut. HM 38th Regiment, whose brother, General Sir Robert Brownrigg, GCB, was Governor of Ceylon. General John **Studholme Brownrigg**, CB, who served in the Crimea, was a son of Mr. JS Brownrigg,

[http://books.google.com/books?id=IzSAAAAMAAJ&pg=PA379&dq=%22studholme+brownrigg%22&hl=en&ei=qtZ7TLGGDsH78AbMwamiBw&sa=X&oi=book\\_result&ct=result&resnum=9&ved=0CE4Q6AEwCDg8#v=onepage&q=%22studholme%20brownrigg%22&f=false](http://books.google.com/books?id=IzSAAAAMAAJ&pg=PA379&dq=%22studholme+brownrigg%22&hl=en&ei=qtZ7TLGGDsH78AbMwamiBw&sa=X&oi=book_result&ct=result&resnum=9&ved=0CE4Q6AEwCDg8#v=onepage&q=%22studholme%20brownrigg%22&f=false) page 379.

1775, June 21. "Camp on the Heights of Charles Town."—**Studholme Brownrigg, Ensign 38th Regt.**, to Lieutenant-General Hodgson. (Copy Extract). "The 17th inst., about 11 o'clock, under the command of Major-General Howe, we came from Boston to the opposite shore of

EARL OF Charles Town, in boats, to attack and take possession of the heights DABMSSCTHS surrounding it, on which were two redoubts, one a very large and —>° strong one lately made by the rebels and manned with three thousand men and two pieces of cannon ; three pieces more were very advantageously planted behind a fence on a flat to the tight of the rear of the redoubt; on our disembarkation the battalions formed in two lines, and the corps of Light Infantry and Grenadiers flanked to the right and left. A strong breastwork ran down the hill from the redoubt, on our right the cannon played and we advanced slowly up the hill. Two frigates that lay to the left of the town of Charles Town kept up a fire on the redoubt, as did a battery of 24 pounders from Copse .Hill in Boston, but made no breach in it, as the rampart was very thick.

When we got within about five or six hundred paces they gave us a very heavy fire of cannon and small arms for about ten minutes which we received without firing a shot, but it being repeated with the greatest vigour we were obliged to retreat about twenty paces, hut immediately rallied and carried the redoubt by storm. Our loss indeed has been very considerable several officers killed and wounded, about 200 privates killed and 400 wounded, but we are a little reconciled to it by being fully convinced that the loss of the rebels is as great if not greater. When the first redoubt was taken, the second, which was about half a mile further, made little or no resistance ; near 100 of the rebels are taken prisoners. We are now encamped and have thrown up a strong entrenchment and two redoubts in our front. It is a pity our numbers would not permit our going on to Cambridge that day, as it is the strongest hold they have in the Province, and where they have almost all their artillery. The town of Charlestown was burnt by carcasses from Copse Hill battery during the action. The rebels have now retreated to a hill about two miles from us, where they are entrenching themselves. I have enclosed you the disposition of the troops on that day as well as I could recollect it, by which you will judge of General Howe's great abilities."

[http://www.phoenixmasonry.org/goulds\\_history\\_volume\\_6.htm](http://www.phoenixmasonry.org/goulds_history_volume_6.htm)

Lodge No. 169 saw that with so many other Lodges present a Grand Lodge might be started. Consequently it called a meeting to which a number of the other Lodges were invited. On January 23, 1781, the called Assembly met as a Grand Lodge "in ample form." Bro. McCuen (McEwen) presided. William Walter was elected Grand Master by unanimous vote. For Wardens the Rev. John Beardsley, a native of Connecticut and a Yale man, and John Studholme Brownrigg [of Lodge No. 441], ensign of the 38th Regiment, were chosen. The London " Grand Lodge of Ancient York Masons," presided over by the Duke of Atholl, Grand Master, issued a Provincial Grand Lodge Warrant to Lodge No. 169 under date of September 5, 1781. Since ocean travel was hazardous in those days, and they were willing to entrust the Warrant only to a ship sailing under convoy, it was not received in New York until late in 1782.

The evacuation of New York by the British had been decided upon. That explains why nearly all the principal Grand Officers of 1781 had vacated their Offices and departed for Nova Scotia before the end of 1783. At about this time the Rev. John Beardsley was succeeded by William Cook, Master of Lodge No. 210, as junior Grand Warden. Patrick McDavitt, a prominent New York merchant, Master of Lodge No. 169, succeeded John S. Brownrigg as Senior Grand Warden. Samuel Kerr, a retired merchant, followed Archibald Cunningham as Deputy Grand Master.

In a Grand Lodge of Emergency held on September 19, 1783, when the Rev. William Walter took affectionate leave of his New York Brethren to proceed with his family to Nova Scotia, it was " resolved that the Grand Warrant, by which this Lodge is established in the Province of New York should be left and remain in the care of such brethren as may hereafter be appointed to succeed the present Grand Officers, the most of whom being under necessity of leaving New York upon the removal of His Majesty's troops." There were present at this Grand Lodge of Emergency the Masters and Warrants of Lodges No. 169, No. 210, No. 212, No. 213, No. 441, No. 487, No. 4, and No. 6.

William Cook, Deputy Register of the Court of Chancery in New York, had taken over the Grand Mastership only temporarily. An agreement had been formed between him and William Walter as to who the first Grand Master of the independent Grand Lodge of the " State " of New York should be. Accordingly, at a Communication held on February 4, 1784, William Cook resigned and nominated the Hon. Robert R. Livingston for the Office of Grand Master. The nomination was greeted with enthusiasm, upheld by unanimous vote, and the new Grand Master was Installed by proxy. A letter preserved in the archives of the Grand Lodge of New York indicates that the great Chancellor would have been present in person if he possibly could have done so.

Upon the return of Grand Master Vrooman from his visit to the United Grand Lodge of England, ca 1889-91, he brought back facsimiles of Records relating to the connections of both the "Modern" and "Antient" English Grand Lodges with the Grand Lodge of New York. Among other treasures he brought back was a large water-color portrait of John Studholme Brownrigg, the first junior Grand Warden of the Grand Lodge of New York. This had been painted by the Rev. John Studholme Brownrigg, M.A., a descendant.

-----

Richard Fleetwood Brownrigg –

[http://atlanticportal.hil.unb.ca/acva/en/winslow/letters/search/text.php?d=844&rn=d&hdr=0&lb=1&bg=0&qs=browse.php%3Fbf%3Ddates%26p\\_id%3D1%26dc%3D1780%26yr%3D1785%26mo%3D6&pg=1](http://atlanticportal.hil.unb.ca/acva/en/winslow/letters/search/text.php?d=844&rn=d&hdr=0&lb=1&bg=0&qs=browse.php%3Fbf%3Ddates%26p_id%3D1%26dc%3D1780%26yr%3D1785%26mo%3D6&pg=1)

Miramichi, 29<sup>th</sup> June, 1785.

Sir

I make bold to Write to You, as I have not the honor of being known to His Excellency, to request that You will be so good, to have me included in the Grant of Lands on this River.

I arrived here the 12<sup>th</sup> inst. and have opened a Store, for the present, at a M<sup>r</sup> Mark Delesdernier's – where I must remain until I get an House of my own. He informs me, that M<sup>r</sup> Micheaux ( a Surveyor) has been here and laid out the Land, in Two Hundred Acre Lotts; whereby, there are Two Lotts become vacant, between M<sup>r</sup> Frederick Delesdernier, and William Drisdell; but one of them is without Water. About the centre of these Two Lotts, are the Loggs of an Hutt, which I am getting covered, for a Store; opposite to which, Have put down a salmon Nett, to try, what success I shall have, as a fisherman.

As one of these Lotts, is without Water, and neither of them, Fishing Places; I hope, with Your assistance, to have a Grant of both; by which, shall be enabled to make a tolerable Farm there, in time. Your compliance with this request, will confer a lasting obligation on me.

A melancholy accident happened here, last Monday Afternoon; An old Man, named John Fitzgerald, went out, to set a Nett, and was Drowned. He fell out of a Canoe. He was found, Yesterday.

I should think it very necessary, to have a Coroner here, as several People have been drowned, and no one, to enquire, how.

If there is not any one here, or coming here, that His Excellency would choose to appoint. I, for the benefit of the Public, offer my services; though, as I am a {*Damage: Justice of the Peace for the County of*} Halifax, I know not, but I may be derogating from that Appointment.

I hope M<sup>rs</sup> and the Miss Winslows, with Your Niece, and Miss Murray, are safe arrived at S<sup>t</sup> Johns; be so obliging, to present my best respects to them, and I have the Honor to be Sir,

Your most obedient  
very humble Servant.

RF Brownrigg

P.S, I shall not sign myself Captain, now I am turned Merchant; but I beg leave to remind You, that Captain White, and myself, served in the same Regiment.

{*Appears vertically on page*} M<sup>r</sup>. Brownrigg. Mirimichi 29 June 1785.

-----

**William Buell** – 1787, New Oswegatchie Lodge No. 14, P.G.L. Quebec; King's Rangers; 1175, Montreal; 1781, Charter member of St. James Lodge No. 14, P.G.L., Quebec; 1787, Senior Warder; d.1832, Brockville, Upper Canada.

[http://books.google.com/books?id=sxprqtylF0C&pg=PA292&lpg=PA292&dq=%22elijah+bottum%22&source=bl&ots=8UQB4hw9nD&sig=M4e1y9-yFireJTvw1MCnfcRd\\_HI&hl=en&ei=j9ZhTOWoCIK49gTdpNzLCw&sa=X&oi=book\\_result&ct=result&resnum=5&ved=0CCQQ6AEwBA#v=onepage&q=%22elijah%20bottum%22&f=false](http://books.google.com/books?id=sxprqtylF0C&pg=PA292&lpg=PA292&dq=%22elijah+bottum%22&source=bl&ots=8UQB4hw9nD&sig=M4e1y9-yFireJTvw1MCnfcRd_HI&hl=en&ei=j9ZhTOWoCIK49gTdpNzLCw&sa=X&oi=book_result&ct=result&resnum=5&ved=0CCQQ6AEwBA#v=onepage&q=%22elijah%20bottum%22&f=false)

Lieut. William Buell was the ancestor of the Buell family, the father of the late Bro. Col. Win. Buell of Brockville. He was born in Hebron, Conn., on the 5th October. 1751. When the war broke out he made his way to Montreal and received a commission in the King's Rangers. He was a member of the early lodges at Brockville and died there in 1832. His son, the late Bro. William Buell, died in February, 1894, and was also a member of the Craft there.

<http://www.biographi.ca/009004-119.01-e.php?Bioid=36895>

**William Buell**, miller, JP, and politician; b. 5 Oct. 1751 in Hebron (Marlborough), CT, son of Timothy Buell and Mercy Peters; m1. 10 Mar 1782 Martha Naughton (Norton), and they had ten children; m2. 31 Mar 1827 Margaret Barnard, née Berkley, and they had one child; d. 8 Aug 1832 in Brockville, Upper Canada.

William Buell was a member of a moderately influential family which lived for several generations in Hebron. In the early 1770s Timothy Buell moved to Fort Ann on the Hudson River in New York. When the American revolution broke out, he initially refused to take sides and, when his family was persecuted for his neutrality, he went to Charlotte (Washington) County on Lake Ontario. William Buell, a cooper like his father, supported the British and moved to Montreal shortly after the start of the revolution. He held the rank of assistant quartermaster in Major-General John Burgoyne's army when it surrendered at Saratoga (Schuylerville, N.Y.) on 17 Oct. 1777. Subsequently Buell joined Robert Rogers's King's Rangers, raised in 1779, as an ensign; he was later promoted lieutenant. During the war, he also served as a courier and was captured twice, although in both instances he escaped. The unit was disbanded in 1783 and Buell went on half pay.

Following the revolution, Buell was joined by the remainder of his family, then in New York, and located briefly at Lachine, Que. In 1784 he moved to Township No.8 (Elizabethtown) in western Quebec and claimed 505 acres on the bay shore where Brockville ultimately emerged. There he built the first house in the vicinity. That same year he was rejoined by members of his family;

eventually his father, brothers, and sisters all owned land in the same area. Buell, in 1793, also added 1,200 acres of land, to which he was entitled for military service, in Oxford Township near present-day Kemptville.

William Buell farmed the land in the Brockville area and during the 1790s opened a mill. He also became involved in a series of quarrels with the families of Justus Sherwood and Daniel Jones, both settled in the same area and both competing for economic and political influence. The three families, easily the most prominent in the locality, could not even decide on a name for their community, which was usually known as Elizabethtown but was dubbed "Snarlington" because of the acrimonious debates. Finally, in 1812, the issue was resolved and the name Brockville was chosen.

William Buell was commissioned justice of the peace for the Lunenburg District on 24 Jul 1788 and for the Midland District on 15 Jul 1796. In 1800 he was elected to the House of Assembly representing Leeds County. He did not attend the assembly frequently, however; he missed the sessions of 1802 and 1803 altogether, and arrived late and left early in 1804. His voting record tended to be against the administration, thereby starting a reform tendency that would be continued by later generations of Buells.

Buell contributed significantly to the development of early Brockville. About 1809 he opened the first school, taught by Joseph Pyle, in his home, where it remained for several years. In 1811 he subdivided his land and by 1820 most of the approximately 60 houses in Brockville were located on his property. Out of a sense of public duty and a desire to attract development near his holdings, Buell donated land for the court-house, and the Presbyterian, Baptist, Methodist, and Roman Catholic churches. In 1820 he built the first stone house in Brockville, an impressive home in the centre of the village.

In 1823 Buell helped his son William\* to purchase the *Brockville Recorder*, a newspaper that became an important organ of reform in eastern Upper Canada, and a financial success for the family. During the 1820s he spent most of his time attending to his mill or working on a farm north of the village, owned by his son William. Rather remarkably he fathered his last child in 1828 when he was more than 75 years of age. He died from cholera during the epidemic of 1832.

-----

**Col. John Butler** – b. 1726, New London, CT; 1766, Initiated in Union Lodge No. 1, Albany, NY; Charter member and Secretary of St. Patrick's Lodge No. 4, Johnstown; Charter member St. John's Lodge No. 19, P.G.L. Quebec, Niagara; 1795, Senior Grand Warden, P.G.L. Upper Canada; 1795, Charter member St. John's Lodge of Friendship No. 2, P.G.L. Lower Canada; Deputy Superintendent of Indian Affairs; Butler's Rangers; d. 1796.

[http://books.google.com/books?id=sxprqtvjLF0C&pg=PA473&dq=%22robert+hamilton%22+%22grand+master%22&output=text#\\_tq=op](http://books.google.com/books?id=sxprqtvjLF0C&pg=PA473&dq=%22robert+hamilton%22+%22grand+master%22&output=text#_tq=op) page 470.



R. W. BRO. COL. BUTLER

The Grand Senior Warden was Lieut. Col. John Butler, who was a charter member of St. John's Lodge of Friendship No. 2. He was born in New London, province of Connecticut, in 1728. His life was spent in the service of the crown. In the war with France for the conquest of Canada he distinguished himself at the battle of Lake George on the 8th September, 1755. and was present at the attack on Ticonderoga and the capture of Fort Frontenac, and also at the siege and capitulation of Fort Niagara, 25th July, 1759..

When Gen. Prideaux was killed Sir Wm. Johnson took command of the whole force, and the conduct of the Indians devolved on Butler. He greatly distinguished himself in the defeat of a relieving force. He accompanied Gen. Amherst against Montreal. During Pontiac's war he was active in restraining the Six Nations from taking part. Owing to his knowledge of Indian languages he was retained in the service when the department was reduced at the end of that war. In 1775 he accompanied Col. Guy Johnson to Montreal, and was sent by Sir Guy Carleton to Fort Niagara to take charge of the department there. In 1777 he was present at the siege of Fort Stanwix. He then raised the battalion known as "Butler's Rangers."

During the war his wife was taken prisoner and was exchanged for the wife of a Whig colonel, named Campbell. In 1778 he took and destroyed eight forts in the Susquehanna valley near Wyoming, and defeated a large force of Americans in a pitched battle. In the same year he built a row of log barracks at Niagara, on the Canadian side of the river, which was gradually enlarged as his corps increased in numbers. These buildings were known as the Rangers' barracks, and are still standing. During the years 1779-80-81 and '82 his corps was engaged in many successful expeditions. After peace he was appointed deputy superintendent of the Indians and justice of the district court, and enjoyed a salary of £500 sterling, and a pension of £200, with a grant of land for himself and family.

Col. Butler was one of the founders and the first patron of the present parish of St. Mark's in Niagara or Newark, as it was then called. He died at Niagara, May 1796, and his remains were interred in the vault in the family burying-ground near the town. The Butler farm, which includes the burying-ground, is the first after passing the town line on the stone road to St. Catharines.

In the register of deaths in the church, in the handwriting of the Rev. Robert Addison, is the entry in the year 1796, " May 15th. Col. John Butler, of the Rangers, buried (my patron)." A tablet is erected to his memory in the church. It reads that Col. Butler was "Born in New London. Province of Connecticut, 1728. Died at Niagara. May 1796, and is interred in the family burying-ground near this town."

In Mrs. Simcoe's diary is the following brief entry: "Navy Hall. 15th May, 1796. Whit Sunday. Coll. Butler buried."

[http://www.biographi.ca/009004-119.01-e.php?&id\\_nbr=1785&interval=20&&PHPSESSID=2bu6tlhvs5aae7i837839qo8k7](http://www.biographi.ca/009004-119.01-e.php?&id_nbr=1785&interval=20&&PHPSESSID=2bu6tlhvs5aae7i837839qo8k7)

**John Butler**, army officer, office-holder, and Indian agent; baptized 28 Apr 1728 at New London, CT, son of Walter Butler and Deborah Ely, *née* Dennison; m. Catalyntje Bradt (Catharine Bratt) about 1752, and they had four sons and one daughter who survived infancy; d. 13 May 1796 at Newark (Niagara-on-the-Lake, Ont.).

Virtually nothing is known of John Butler's youth. It seems clear, though, that he began his association with the frontier and the Six Nations at an early age. His father, a captain in the British army, brought his family to the Mohawk valley of New York about 1742, and three years later John was at Oswego (Chouauguen) with him. Walter Butler was apparently on close terms with William JOHNSON and it is quite possible that John received some of his early training in dealing with the Indians from him. Certainly Johnson became impressed with Butler's abilities in Indian languages and diplomacy. In May 1755 he brought him as an interpreter to the great council at Mount Johnson (near Amsterdam, NY); the same year, when Johnson was given command of the colonial expedition against Fort Saint-Frédéric (near Crown Point, NY), he appointed Butler a lieutenant over the Indians, a loosely defined position which involved some nominal leadership. Butler continued to serve in this capacity throughout the Seven Years' War, reaching the rank of captain. He was with James Abercromby at the attack on Fort Carillon (Ticonderoga, NY) and with John BRADSTREET at the capture of Fort Frontenac (Kingston, Ont.) in 1758. The next year he was second in command of the Indians when Johnson took Fort Niagara (near Youngstown, NY), and in 1760 he held the same post in Amherst's force advancing on Montreal.

After the war Butler continued to work under Johnson in the Indian department, appearing as an interpreter at councils with the Indians during the 1760s. He settled his family at Butlersbury (near Johnstown, NY), the estate his father had left him, and was appointed a justice of the peace. In the early 1770s he apparently retired from the Indian department to devote himself to his growing properties. When Tryon County was established in 1772 he was appointed a justice of the Court of Quarter Sessions and lieutenant-colonel of the militia regiment commanded by Guy Johnson. Sir William died in 1774 and Guy became Indian superintendent; Butler was again appointed an interpreter.

At the outbreak of the Revolutionary War in 1775 Butler, together with other Mohawk valley loyalists including his sons Thomas and WALTER, and Guy Johnson, left to join the British forces in Canada. Butler's wife and other children were interned by the rebels the following year and he did not see them again until an exchange was arranged in 1780. In Montreal, Johnson proposed to Governor Guy Carleton that the Six Nations and the Indians of Canada be used to put down the rebellion in the "back settlements" of western New York and Pennsylvania. Carleton, however, refused to use them other than as scouts and in defense. Faced with this refusal, and aware of the arrival of Major John CAMPBELL with a commission as agent for Indian affairs in Quebec, Johnson and Christian Daniel CLAUS decided to carry their case to Britain and left in November 1775. Butler remained as acting superintendent of the Six Nations and, with American forces threatening Canada, was sent to Fort Niagara. His instructions were to do all he could to keep the Six Nations out of the fighting but loyal to Britain, since the British considered the Iroquois to be allies. Although the inclination of the Indians, particularly those who were under the influence of **Samuel Kirkland**, a New Light missionary from Connecticut, was to sign pacts of neutrality with the rebels, Butler had considerable success in maintaining their alliance with Britain. During the following year and a half he established a network of agents among the tribes from the Mohawk River to the Mississippi, which became a valuable source of intelligence for the British and an aid to loyalists fleeing to Canada. In the early summer of 1776 Butler also raised and dispatched a party of loyalists and Indians to aid in the expulsion of the American forces from Canada.

In 1777 the British government decided that its Indian allies should be used offensively against the rebels, and in May Butler was ordered to collect as large a force as possible from among the Six Nations and to join Lieutenant-Colonel Barrimore Matthew ST Leger's expedition at Oswego for an attack against Fort Stanwix (Rome, NY). Although Butler had only a month to accomplish this task, he succeeded in persuading 350 Indians, mostly Senecas, to accompany the expedition. By this time he had received a regular appointment as deputy superintendent of the Six Nations from Guy Johnson, who had arrived in New York in 1776. Nevertheless, at the beginning of the expedition Claus arrived with a commission as superintendent of all Indians employed on it. Butler was intensely disappointed at this supersession, but there is no indication that it affected his conduct towards Claus. Butler was present at the victory of Oriskany, near Fort Stanwix, on 6 Aug 1777, where the Indians and some unorganized loyalist rangers bore the brunt of the fighting and casualties. At the end of the St Leger expedition Butler travelled to Quebec. In September Carleton commissioned him to raise a corps of provincial rangers from among frontier loyalists who had fled to Fort Niagara. Promoted major commandant, Butler was assigned Niagara as his permanent base. His first orders called for him to join Burgoyne's expedition, but it ended in disaster before he had even begun to recruit.

The following year, with recruiting now well under way, Butler's Rangers and a force of Indians led by KaieñĀkwahtoñ and KaiūtwhĀkū (Cornplanter) undertook their first expedition against the American frontier settlements, the extraordinarily successful raid of 3–4 July on the Wyoming Valley, PA. Ill health forced Butler to spend the rest of 1778 at Niagara but in November his son Walter led the well-known raid against Cherry Valley (NY). The enormous effect of these and other raids that year and early the next may be gauged by the fact that Congress was forced by public pressure in 1779 to divert to the frontier an army of several thousand men, many of them regulars, under Major-General John Sullivan. Its objectives were to destroy the settlements and lands of the Six Nations allied to the British and to capture as many prisoners as possible. The American campaign did indeed throw the British and Indians on the defensive and Butler, with a force of several hundred men, was defeated at Newtown (near Elmira, NY) on 29 August. The Americans then devastated the Indian villages of the Finger Lakes region. Thousands of Indians were forced to turn to the British for subsistence, but the base at Niagara remained and in 1780 the rangers and Indians were back at their work. In the following years Butler's Rangers extended their operations. A company was assigned to the posts at Oswegatchie (Ogdensburg, NY) and Detroit, and from all bases rangers and Indians carried out almost continuous harassing operations against the whole frontier from the Hudson River to Kentucky.

The Butlers and the war they waged have been condemned by generations of American historians as "treacherous," "barbarous," and "diabolically wicked and cruel. But there is little basis in fact for these charges. Frontier warfare was always cruel, and there is no evidence that the Butlers made it more so and some to support the contention of a few historians that they acted with all the

humanity the situation would allow. Condemnations have usually been based on the assumption that the Butlers' raids were motivated by hate and by a desire for revenge. The operations of the rangers, however, had the important objectives of denying supplies to the Continental Army and of drawing off as many American troops as possible from seaboard operations. That these aims were achieved is indicated in part by the Sullivan campaign and also by the fact that Tryon County's prewar population of approximately 10,000 had been reduced, by an exodus away from the threatened area, to 3,500 by 1783.

Butler's interests during the revolution were not exclusively military. As early as 1776, by using his influence as deputy superintendent over the Indian trade, he managed to monopolize the trade with the loyalists at Fort Niagara as well as the lucrative Indian department trade for himself and Richard Pollard, a merchant at the fort, and later for Thomas Robinson, Pollard's successor. This monopoly was, however, broken in 1779 when Guy Johnson assumed control of Six Nations affairs and was replaced by one operating in Johnson's interest.

Butler was closely involved in the first settlement on the Canadian side of the Niagara River. Early in the war he sited the ranger barracks opposite the fort. In 1779, when Governor Haldimand decided to encourage agriculture in the neighborhood of the fort as a means of reducing the garrison's dependence on supplies from Montreal, he assigned Butler the task of finding appropriate people from among the loyalist refugees. Butler found in this responsibility an opportunity both to impress Haldimand with his competence and to establish himself as leader and source of patronage for the Niagara loyalists. By the end of the war he had settled a number of families opposite the fort, and some of his favorites on the best lots. Indeed, the first name of the new settlement was Butlersbury. When Butler's Rangers was disbanded in June 1784, Butler and his family and a large part of his corps settled there. From this settlement grew the town of Newark, and Butler remained one of the town's most prominent citizens until his death.

The end of the revolution had also brought Butler ill fortune. His property in New York had been confiscated in 1779, and, although he received half pay as a lieutenant-colonel and a 500-acre land grant, the loyalist claims commission refused to recognize many of his claims to Indian lands. In addition, the money he made during the war was lost, apparently in a speculation in Indian goods. In an attempt to reverse this trend, he travelled to Quebec and England in 1784 and 1785 but was unsuccessful in obtaining for his sons the concession giving exclusive use of the Niagara portage route and for himself the higher salary he desired.

Butler also played a prominent part in the local affairs of the Niagara region. He was appointed a justice of the Court of Common Pleas and a member of the district land board when the District of Nassau was established in 1788, and he also became lieutenant-colonel of the Nassau militia, and, at a later date, colonel of the Lincoln County militia. Sir John Johnson was, however, able to use his influence to prevent Butler or any of his rangers from receiving important offices when the province of Upper Canada was formed in 1792. Similarly, Butler did not rise further in the Indian department. He tried to recoup his family's fortunes through an illegal attempt to supply trade goods to the Indian department involving his son Andrew, his nephew Walter Butler Sheehan, and Samuel Street, a Niagara merchant. Butler also used his prestige as an Indian superintendent to cooperate with some Americans in a speculation involving Iroquois lands in New York state. When both these ventures failed, Butler turned to farming, milling, and land speculation, but he had only mediocre success.

As deputy superintendent of the Six Nations, Butler played a large part in the purchase of much of southwestern Ontario, including the Grand River lands, from the Mississaugas [WABAKININE]. He had a significant role in the diplomatic and military maneuvering with the Americans and Indians in the years before the evacuation of the border posts in 1796. In 1792 the American government sought to arrange a treaty with the Indians of the old northwest. Butler attended the unsuccessful conference at Lower Sandusky (Ohio) the following year, and with Joseph Brant [Thayendanega] and the Six Nations opposed the intransigent position taken by the western Indians and Alexander MCKEE that the boundary between American and Indian territory be no farther west than the Ohio River. It was to be Butler's last significant public service. During the conference his health failed and he never fully regained it. Although he remained a valuable adviser to the government of Upper Canada, by late 1795 Lieutenant Governor Simcoe regretfully considered removing him from his Indian department position because of his growing infirmities.

John Butler was one of the great figures in European-Indian relations in North America. His influence with the Indians was clearly based upon their trust of him. The success he had in keeping most of the Six Nations out of the fighting but attached to the British cause during the first two years of the revolution speaks to his influence, as does the fact that to him fell most of the burden of explaining to the Indians the British concession of the western lands in 1783. The greatest tribute probably came from **Joseph Brant**, who said at an Indian funeral ceremony for Butler that he "was the last that remained of those that acted with that great man the late Sir William Johnson, whose steps he followed and our Loss is the greater, as there are none remaining who understand our manners and customs as well as he did."

Butler's relations with the Johnson clan have been the subject of some speculation. He was part of the group closest to Sir William in the 1760s, and the suggestion has been made that when he apparently left his position in the Indian department about 1771 it was because of a falling out with Sir William. The more probable reason for his departure was Sir William's decision to give the limited number of deputy appointments in the department to relatives, such as Claus and Guy Johnson, his sons-in-law, and John Dease, his nephew. Butler, seeing little opportunity for his own advancement, probably chose to devote himself to the development of his estate. There is no evidence, however, of animosity in the break. When Johnson drew up his will in early 1774 he named Butler as one of his executors and a guardian of his children by Mary Brant [KONWATSIAËTSIAËNNI]. Nor would Butler have received his various civil and military appointments in Tryon County without Johnson's approval. Indeed Butler, who later selected two of his own sons to be officers in the first company of his rangers, probably understood Johnson's motives completely.

The difficulties with the Johnson group appear to have been instead with Guy and Claus in Canada. Their departure for Britain in late 1775 in the face of the American invasion was considered by Carleton to be akin to desertion. This action, and Butler's obvious competence in dealing with the Indians, put him in great favor with both Carleton and Haldimand. Once Johnson and Claus returned to Canada they saw Butler as a threat to their positions and sought to undermine his reputation, but they were ultimately unsuccessful. Carleton retained him as agent at Niagara and commissioned him to raise the rangers despite Claus' derogatory letters, and Haldimand, not by chance, promoted him lieutenant-colonel in 1779, just when Guy Johnson arrived back in Canada. A short time later Haldimand intervened to prevent Johnson from removing Butler as agent at Niagara. Carleton's and Haldimand's support of Butler, however, was not merely a function of their dislike of Claus and Johnson. Both governors were clearly convinced

that Butler was the most competent man for the job and probably appreciated his loyalty and deep sense of duty; Carleton later described him as "very modest and shy."

----

**John Butler** of Tryon, now Montgomery, County, NY. Before the war, Colonel Butler was in close official connection with Sir William, Sir John, and Colonel Guy Johnson, and followed their political fortunes. At the breaking out of hostilities, he commanded a regiment of New York militia, and entered at once into the military service of the Crown. During the war his wife was taken prisoner, and exchanged for the wife of the Whig Colonel Campbell. The deeds of rapine, of murder, of hellish hue, which were perpetrated by Butler's corps, cannot be related here. It is sufficient, for the purpose of these Notes, to say, that he commanded the sixteen hundred incarnate fiends who desolated Wyoming. I feel quite willing to allow, that history has recorded barbarities which were not committed. But though Butler did not permit or directly authorize women to be driven into the forest, where they became mothers, and where their infants were eaten by wild beasts, and though captive officers may not have been held upon fires with pitchforks until they were burned to death, sufficient remains undoubted, to stamp his conduct with the deepest, darkest, most damning guilt. The human mind can hardly frame an argument which shall clear the fame of Butler from obloquy and reproach. To admit even as a solved question, that the Loyalists were in the right, and that they were bound by the clearest rules of duty to bear arms in defense of lawful and existing institutions, and to put down the rebellion, will do Butler no good. For, whatever the force of such a plea in the minds of those who urge it, *he was still bound to observe the laws of civilized warfare.*

That he, and he alone, will be regarded by posterity as the real and responsible actor in the business and slaughter at Wyoming, may be considered, perhaps, as certain. The chieftain Brant was, for a time, held accountable, but the better information of later years transfers the guilt from the savage to the man of Saxon blood. There was nothing for which the Mohawk's family labored more earnestly than to show that their renowned head was not implicated in this bloody tragedy, and that the accounts of historians, and the enormities recounted in Campbell's verse, as far as they relate to him, are untrue. It has been said very commonly, that the Colonel Butler who was of the Whig force at Wyoming, and Colonel John, were kinsmen; but this, too, has been contradicted. The late Edward D. Griffin, — a youth, a writer, and a poet of rare promise, — and a grandson of the former, denied the relationship.

Colonel John Butler was richly rewarded for his services. Succeeding, in part, to the agency of Indian Affairs — long held by the Johnsons — he enjoyed, about the year 1796, a salary of £500 sterling per annum, and a pension as a military officer of £200 more. Previously, he had received a grant of five hundred acres of land, and a similar provision for his children. His home, after the war, was in Upper Canada. He was attainted during the contest, by the Act of New York, and his property confiscated. He lived before the Revolution in the present town of Mohawk. His dwelling was of one story, with two windows in front, and a door in the centre. It was standing in 1842, and was then owned and occupied by Mr. Wilson. The site is pleasant and commanding, and overlooks the valley of the Mohawk.

-----

#### **Captain Edward Byrn(e) –**

[http://books.google.com/books?id=xncBD7lvRGEC&pg=PA945&lpg=PA945&dq=%22zion+lodge+no.+10%22+%22byrne%22&source=bl&ots=YrOk488R44&sig=c7aWgcwBeM2E-2h3KgAAtoMPJw8&hl=en&ei=URB\\_TPK8EoL6lwe754kj&sa=X&oi=book\\_result&ct=result&resnum=1&ved=0CBsQ6AEwAA#v=onepage&q=%22zion%20lodge%20no.%2010%22%20%22byrne%22&f=false](http://books.google.com/books?id=xncBD7lvRGEC&pg=PA945&lpg=PA945&dq=%22zion+lodge+no.+10%22+%22byrne%22&source=bl&ots=YrOk488R44&sig=c7aWgcwBeM2E-2h3KgAAtoMPJw8&hl=en&ei=URB_TPK8EoL6lwe754kj&sa=X&oi=book_result&ct=result&resnum=1&ved=0CBsQ6AEwAA#v=onepage&q=%22zion%20lodge%20no.%2010%22%20%22byrne%22&f=false) page 945.

Documentary evidence displayed in the 1937 proceedings of Ireland's Lodge of Research shows that a Royal Arch Mason was in Detroit in 1794, and was Senior Warden of the newly organized Zion Lodge No. 10, established 7 Sep of that year, by the Provincial Grand Lodge of Quebec. That Senior Warden was Edward Byrn (Byrne), who was made a Freemason in New York, 18 Jul 1781. At the close of the Revolutionary War he returned to England with his Battalion (4th Battalion, Royal Regiment of Artillery), and at Woolwich, England, was made a Royal Arch Excellent Mason in a Chapter, and a Knight Templar in an Encampment, held under the sanction of Warrant No. 9, E.R. A.Y.N. (now Albion No. 21, Q.R.

Byrn served as Master in 1789, and is later recorded as a Past Master, presiding at the Lodges first meeting held at Quebec in 1790. The certificates of Byrn's admission as a Royal Arch Mason and Knight Templar are, according to the Irish Lodge of Research, in the possession of Carlow Lodge No. 116, of Carlow, Ireland. An interesting side-light shows that Byrn acted as Grand Senior Deacon, 22 Jun 1795, when His Royal Highness, Prince Edward, was installed as Provincial Grand Master of Quebec.

---

A Lodge was organized by the Grand Secretary, James Davidson, under authority of Thos. Ainslie, of Quebec, Deputy Grand Master. The warrant was dated September 7. 1794, and authorized James Donaldson as Master Mason, **Edward Byrn as Senior Warden**, and Findley Campbell as Junior Warden, to hold a Lodge "in the City of Detroit, in Upper Canada " on the first Monday of every calendar month. The Lodge thus authorized was duly established on December 19 at the house of James Donaldson, and was known as Zion Lodge No. 10. It was in existence as late-as December 28, 1801.

See further of Zion Lodge No. 10 and Brother Byrn(e) at **Appendix V.**

-----

ROSTER OF SAINT ANDREW'S SOCIETY OF THE STATE OF NEW YORK WITH BIOGRAPHICAL DATA, Part I, FROM ITS ORGANIZATION TO THE END OF THE AMERICAN REVOLUTION, 1756-1783  
COMPILED BY William M. MacBean, SECRETARY OF THE SOCIETY. NEW YORK. 1911

[http://www.archive.org/stream/roster01stan/roster01stan\\_djvu.txt](http://www.archive.org/stream/roster01stan/roster01stan_djvu.txt)

**Hon. Daniel Campbell** b. Ireland, 19 Sep 1730. Settled in Schenectady as early as 1754 as a merchant [to trade with the Indians] and acquired great wealth ; was a Judge of Common Pleas for Albany County in 1771 ; attended a Congress of the Six Nations with Sir William Johnson the same year and again in 1774, when he was styled Colonel. The Albany Committee of Safety granted him a

permit in 1775 to go to Canada on business, but in 1776 denied him a permit to forward goods and named him "a dangerous person" in 1777. In late 1778 he took the oath of allegiance and served in the 2nd Albany County Militia. He was a Justice of the Peace in Schenectady. In 1778 practiced law in New York. Was one of the executors of **Sir William Johnson**. Died 16 Aug 1802.

**George Campbell** – 1787, Charter member New Oswegatchie Lodge No. 14, P.G.L. Quebec

[http://books.google.com/books?id=sxprqtyjLF0C&pg=PA292&lpg=PA292&dq=%22elijah+bottum%22&source=bl&ots=8UQB4hw9nD&sig=M4e1y9-yFireJTvw1MCnfcRd\\_HI&hl=en&ei=j9ZhTOWoCIK49gTdpNzLCw&sa=X&oi=book\\_result&ct=result&resnum=5&ved=0CCQQ6AEwBA#v=onepage&q=%22elijah%20bottum%22&f=false](http://books.google.com/books?id=sxprqtyjLF0C&pg=PA292&lpg=PA292&dq=%22elijah+bottum%22&source=bl&ots=8UQB4hw9nD&sig=M4e1y9-yFireJTvw1MCnfcRd_HI&hl=en&ei=j9ZhTOWoCIK49gTdpNzLCw&sa=X&oi=book_result&ct=result&resnum=5&ved=0CCQQ6AEwBA#v=onepage&q=%22elijah%20bottum%22&f=false) page 286.

The **Bro. George Campbell** on the list was a member of the Campbell family, who resided with Alexander Campbell, at concession 3, lot 35, W. 1-2, 100 acres, township of Elizabethtown, patented 4th September, 1800. Bro. Campbell was acting Tyler.

"Tuesday, 7 o'clock P.M. August nth, 1789. An Enteredly Prentice's Lodge opened in due form. Present, the Wpfl. Thomas Sherwood, Esqr., Master, **Br. Elijah Bottum, Senr. Warden, Br. Wm. Buell, Past Master, acting Junr. Warden**, Br. Ziba Phillips, Past Master, Br. B. Carley, Junr. Deacon, Br. Starkweather, acting Secty, Br. John White, acting Tyler, Br. James Jordan, and Br. Henry Larne, attending on business. Visitors. Half past 7 o'clock closed the Enteredly Prentice's Lodge and opened the Fellow Craft's, and Past Brothers Asa Starkweather & John White to the second degree of Masonry. 10 o'clock all the business being completed, closed the Lodge upon the second step of Masonry in due form and brotherly harmony until the second Tuesday in September Next."

The postscript is often the most important part of a letter. It is certainly the most interesting part of these minutes:

N.B. Before the above Lodge. August 11th, 1789. was closed, it was unanimously ordered that **Br. Geo. Campbell** should stand suspended till he shall appear and give satisfactory reasons for his non-attention this evening, pay his arrears due to this Lodge, and answer to the complaints brought against him by Brs. Ziba Phillips, James Jordan & Henry Larne."

The brethren at this meeting determined to discipline **Bro. George Campbell** for non-attendance and non-payment of dues, and for non-fulfilment of his financial obligations. In these days lodges discharged the functions of a court for the settlement of business disputes. This primitive custom has fallen into a state of "innocuous desuetude," to the great relief of lodges, for they would have to meet oftener than once a month if they proposed to adhere to this one of the ancient landmarks, and attempt the work so faithfully performed by many of our brethren who occupy seats in courts established to deal with the question of mine and thine.

One scarcely can realize in these days of modern enlightenment the position of brethren who were called upon not only to practice the art and uphold the principles of Masonry, but also to play the part of jury, advocate, and judge, giving a just deliverance on what they had well and truly tried.

The following minute is of decided interest, and reveals a state of business morality which is commendable, in that all brethren must keep close to the lines of their obligation.

"Tuesday. 8th Sep 1789, 7 o'Clock P.M. An Enteredly Prentices Lodge opened in due form. Present, the Wpfl. Thomas Sherwood, Esqr.. Master, Brs. John Jones. Justus Sherwood, Z. Phillips, past-masters, **Br. Elijah Bottum. Senr.** & Br. Caleb Clauson, Junr. Warden, Br. Alex. Campbell. Treasurer. Br. Saml, Wright. Br. Banhol'w. Carley. **Br. Geo. Campbell**, Br Bemslee Buell. Tyler. Br. Danl Dunham. Br. Asa Starkweather. Br. John White. The Fellow Crafts and prentices being desired to withdraw, a Master Mason's Lodge was opened, and **Br. George Campbell** was called before them, having made a satisfactory acknowledgment for not attending Last Lodge Night, agreeable to the summons sent him, he was Called upon to answer the Complaints brought against him by Brothers Ziba Phillips. James Jordan & Henry Larne. Br. Phillips then rose and Declared to the Lodge that he was satisfied with **Br. Campbell**, and desired to withdraw his complaint, which was permitted. Br. Jordan, (a visiting Brother) was called, and alleged that **Br. Geo. Campbell** did clandestinely dispose of a note of £12 5s. belonging to him the said Jordan, without his knowledge. **Br. Campbell** confesses he did take the note, but by Jordan's consent to keep for him, and did dispose of it without his knowledge; which he acknowledges was wrong, but that he did afterwards pay Jordan to his satisfaction Br. Jordan says that **Br. Campbell** has paid him, but since the complaint was made, and that now he is fully satisfied with **Br. Campbell** and considers him as a brother mason and an honest man. Br. Larne, being called, says **Br Campbell** owed him for hay, which was to be paid in flour, at four dollars per hundred weight, which he has not done. Therefore on examining the above charges, the Lodge is unanimously of opinion, that **Br. Campbell** has not behaved with that rectitude and honesty, which becomes a man professing Masonry; and hereby order that he shall pay Br. Larne 7/6, which is his just due, and that he shall clear up the aspersions which Larne says lie cast on him to Wiltse. and pay up Ins arrears due to this Lodge immediately, after which he shall stand suspended six months from this Lodge, commencing this night. At the expiration of this term, if it appears that lie has reformed from the slippery actions which he has been guilty of, he will be permitted to resume his seat as a member in this lodge; o o'clock closed the Master Mason's Lodge. Initiated Mr. Francis Scott; closed the Lodge in due form at 10 o'clock. Justus Sherwood, Secretary."

Four dollars per hundred weight was not an unreasonable price, the more especially as it was a matter of trade and barter, not a cash transaction. **Bro. Campbell**, however, had to pay the penalty, but had another chance for Masonic life when he had "reformed from the slippery actions which he had been guilty of."

The meeting of Tuesday Nth September, 1789, was an important one for **Bro. George Campbell**, and, if the procedure was unique, it answered every purpose. It was a shorter method of disposing of the complaint than bringing it before one of the primitive courts of those days.

"October 13th, 1789. Tuesday Evening, 7 o'clock P.M. Opened an Enteredly Prentice's Lodge in due form. . . . A letter from **Bro. George Campbell**, directed to the Wpfl Master, was read publicly in the open Lodge, recommending Mr. Samuel Wilson as a candidate Deferred acting thereupon till next Lodge Night. Mr. James Morns having made application to be admitted as a visiting

member, the Lodge deputed Brs Thos Sherwood, Ziba Phillips, & Thos. Smyth to confer with the said man, enquire into his character, and make a report to the lodge. 9 o'clock closed the Lodge in due form & harmony"

Nature had evidently made a man who would not be disheartened. In adversity, for **Bro. Campbell** must have written this letter after being disciplined by suspension. However, his recommendation was effective, for on the 8th December Mr. Wilson was accepted and initiated

-----

ALR, page 217:

**Captain Peter Campbell** - 1789, St. George's Lodge No. 2, NY; father of Sarah Campbell, wife of Judge Isaac Allen, was a son of Thomas and Elizabeth Campbell, of Philadelphia. Thomas Campbell was a prosperous merchant of Philadelphia. His son, Capt. Peter Campbell was of Trenton, New Jersey, and was a captain in the New Jersey Volunteers. He had property in Pennsylvania, and was directed by the Executive Council of that State to surrender himself for trial within a specified time, or stand attainted of treason. He settled in New Brunswick at the Peace, received half-pay, and died at Maugerville, in 1822. He was buried at Fredericton.

-----

Ibid.

**William Campbell** – 1782, Master of Lodge No. 169 E.R. (A), New York; b. 1742, Cowal, Argyllshire, Scotland; 1768, of Worcester, MA; Loyal American Associators; Halifax, NS; 1784, joined Lodge No. 211 E.R. (A) Halifax, NS; 1786, Saint John, NB; 1786, joined Hiram Lodge No. 17, NS, Saint John, NB; 1786, joined Cornwallis Lodge No. 15, NS; 1789 rejoined Hiram Lodge No. 17, NS, Saint John, NB; 1784-97, D.G.M NS for NB; 1790 Master, Hiram Lodge No. 17, NS; 1792-1800, S.G.W., NB; 1804, joined St. John Lodge No. 29, Halifax, NS; d. 1823 in Saint John, NS..

In 1775 the Committee of that town appointed to watch and deal with the disaffected, resolved to send him to the Provincial Congress at Watertown, to be disposed of as that body, or the Commander-in-Chief at Cambridge, should think proper; " it being judged highly improper that he should tarry any longer " at Worcester. He was at Boston in 1776, and embarked with the Royal Army at the evacuation. In 1783 he was at New York, and one of the fifty petitioners for lands in Nova Scotia. He went to Halifax in the last mentioned year, where he remained in 1786, when he removed to St. John, New Brunswick. He was Mayor of St. John twenty years, and died in that city in 1823, aged 82. Elizabeth, his widow, died in 1824, at the age of 84. Agnes, his only daughter, died at St. John in 1840, aged 78

[http://books.google.com/books?id=1js9AAAAYAAJ&pg=PA12&lpg=PA12&dq=%22william+campbell%22+%22grand+warden%22&source=bl&ots=W17EE-kYrS&sig=TG4E0m9hMme6GldLh7B0q-D3qDY&hl=en&ei=EYVKTm7dKYH78Abl6bCRCQ&sa=X&oi=book\\_result&ct=result&resnum=2&ved=0CBsQ6AEwAQ#v=onepage&q=%22william%20campbell%22&f=false](http://books.google.com/books?id=1js9AAAAYAAJ&pg=PA12&lpg=PA12&dq=%22william+campbell%22+%22grand+warden%22&source=bl&ots=W17EE-kYrS&sig=TG4E0m9hMme6GldLh7B0q-D3qDY&hl=en&ei=EYVKTm7dKYH78Abl6bCRCQ&sa=X&oi=book_result&ct=result&resnum=2&ved=0CBsQ6AEwAQ#v=onepage&q=%22william%20campbell%22&f=false) page 216.

February 14 [1823] - The rite of Masonic sepulture was conducted by the lodge, assisted by the members of Union Lodge and Carleton R. A. Chapter, over the remains of the late R. W. Bro. William Campbell, Esquire. There was a large attendance of the craft to manifest the great respect and esteem in which the memory of the deceased was held. The cortege was headed by a band of music, a display quite unusual at funerals in those days. Bro. Campbell was deputy grand master, one of the founders of and constituted the lodge under its warrant from the provincial grand lodge of Nova Scotia. . . .

WILLIAM CAMPBELL.

One of the founders of the [St. John] lodge [No. 29] and a distinguished freemason and member of society in his time. Born in Argyllshire, Scotland, A. D. 1742; when quite a young man he came to America and became a resident of Worcester, MA, where he engaged in mercantile pursuits; subsequently removing to New York. When the American Revolution broke out he espoused the cause of the loyalists, and became actively engaged on their side. At the evacuation of New York, in 1783, he went with other loyalists to Halifax, Nova Scotia, and, after remaining there a short time, came to Saint John, where he continued to reside until the time of his death. The freedom of the city was conferred upon him in the year 1795. In the same year he was appointed mayor of the city, which office he filled uninterruptedly until 1816, when he sent in his resignation. After his retirement the common council granted him a pension of one hundred pounds for his honorable and efficient discharge of duty. Took an active part in the organization of Saint Andrew's Society of Saint John in 1798, and was the first vice-president; one of the pioneers of St. Andrew's Kirk and one of its first elders; post master of Saint John several years; a commissioner for taking bail and affidavits in the supreme court; an honorary member of the old Friendly Fire Club; alderman of Sidney ward during a number of years; under the net of assembly, March 5th, 1805, incorporating the Saint John Grammar School, he became one of its first directors.

It is not known whether he received light in freemasonry previous to leaving his native land or after taking up a residence in America. The records of the Grand Lodge of New York show that he was present at a quarterly communication held 5 Dec 1782, as Senior Warden of Lodge No. 169, Ancient York Masons, and at a subsequent meeting he attended as Worshipful Master of that lodge. During his sojourn in Nova Scotia he was W. M. of Temple Lodge, Chedabucto (Guysborough). Under patent dated 11 Feb 1786, granted by His Excellency John Parr, governor and commander-in-chief, and Right Worshipful Grand Master of Nova Scotia, he was appointed "Deputy Grand Master for Nova Scotia and New Brunswick and the masonic jurisdiction thereunto belonging," which important station he held until 1 Oct 1817, when he resigned "in consequence of old age and inability to attend to the duties of the office," and, at his suggestion, R. W. Bro. Thomas Wetmore was appointed in his stead.

The warrant of St. John's Lodge, issued upon his recommendation, was transmitted to him as D. G. M., and under it he constituted the lodge in due form, 5 Apr 1802. He was a Royal Arch Mason, although the chapter in which he received the degrees could not be ascertained. When the Carleton R. A. Chapter was organized at Saint John, A. D. 1805, he was solicited to join, but declined "on account of his advanced years."

The death of this distinguished craftsman and citizen occurred at Saint John, 10 Feb 1823, in the 82nd year of his age. The remains were interred in the old burial ground, near King square, with Masonic ceremonial, by St. John's Lodge, at which there was a band of music, an unusual thing at that time. The whole community mourned his death; his Masonic brethren testifying their feelings of profound grief in a marked degree.

The following expressive tribute to his memory is gleaned from a local newspaper of the period: "On Monday evening, February 10th, between the hours of six and seven o'clock, after a long and painful illness, which he bore with Christian patience and resignation, William Campbell, Esquire, one of the commissioners for taking bail in the supreme court and formerly mayor of this city, in his 82nd year. He was a native of Argyleshire, Scotland, and in the prime of his life emigrated to the colony of Massachusetts, in the then British provinces of North America, where he settled for some years in a mercantile capacity. He afterwards removed to New York, and at the evacuation of that place by the British, went with other loyalists to Halifax, N. S., from which place he came to St. John. In the transaction of business he was uniformly distinguished for honesty of intention and integrity of conduct. In the domestic relations of husband and father he was indulgent, kind and affectionate, and during the long period of more than twenty years in which he discharged the important duties of chief magistrate of this city, he displayed an independence and impartiality of purpose, a firmness and energy of character, together with an assiduous attention to the best interests of the community, which secured for him a large portion of respect, and will be long remembered by the inhabitants of this place. His funeral took place on the 14th February, from his late residence, Prince William street, which was largely and respectably attended. The Worshipful Master and Brethren of St. John's Lodge assembled in a body and preceded the remains to the place of interment, where the beautiful and impressive service of the society was rehearsed after the ceremonial of the church."

In November, 1887, St. John's Lodge, through a committee specially appointed, placed a new monument over the grave of the deceased, to replace the original, which, through lapse of time and the absence of relatives, had become defaced, broken and scattered.

-----

**Richard Cartwright** – b. 1720, London, England; 1742, Albany, NY; Master, Lodge Under Dispensation No. 74, Irish Constitution, Albany, NY; Union Lodge No. 1, Albany, NY; 1784, Cataraqui [now Kingston], Upper Canada; d. there 1795.

<http://www.nysm.nysed.gov/albany/bios/c/ricartwright6508.html>

**Richard Cartwright** was early Albany's most notable innkeeper. Born in London, England about 1720, as a young man he emigrated to America. He first appeared as a frontier trader with Albany as a base of operations. By 1743, he had married Albany native Hannah Beasley - the daughter of an English soldier turned schoolteacher. Most of their eight children were baptized in St. Peters Anglican Church where both parents were prominent members. At the same time, the couple were frequent sponsors at the Albany Dutch Church.

More and more from his Albany home, Cartwright peddled sundries to settlers and shipped out their farm and forest products. He also made wines and benefitted from dealings with the Albany corporation and Sir William Johnson - a long-term patron. Within two decades, the one-time drifter had become a successful and well-connected Albany businessman.

But by the 1760s, Cartwright had opened a tavern on Albany's Southside. It soon became a focal point for English speaking people in the region. The tavern quickly became an inn - widely known as "The King's Arms." It offered boarding and stabling for those in Albany on business or passing through to the post-war frontier. Postal service, land and lottery sales, and a range of other business were conducted across Cartwright's tables. Albany's first Masonic Lodge also met there where Richard Cartwright was the lodge Master. [Union Lodge No. 1, charter dated 21 Feb 1765]

Prominence apparently bred misplaced trust as, by 1770, Cartwright's unfulfilled investments left him "ruined" and facing the prospect of debtors prison. He wrote to Sir William Johnson that "neither extravagance or neglect have brot. this load of misfortune on me." He offered his comfortable new home for sale to satisfy his most "merciless" Manhattan-based creditor. Coupled with personal illness, by the eve of the Revolution Richard Cartwright had suffered a serious reversal of fortune. As storm clouds gathered, he contemplated leaving Albany altogether.

Although the first public meeting of the Albany Committee of Correspondence was held at "The King's Arms," everyone knew that Richard Cartwright considered himself an Englishman and a supporter of the crown. As his tavern became more and more the resort of pro-British personages, he came under scrutiny particularly following an [incident in June 1776](#). By the following May, he had been identified as "suspicious," brought before the committee, and upon refusing to sign a loyalty oath, was threatened with removal to the "Fleet Prison." Although he later relented, his personal sympathies and the emergence of Richard Cartwright, Jr. as an overt Tory, caused him to be banished from Albany after refusing another oath in July 1778.

After having been beaten and bruised and seeing his tavern and home vandalized by the revolutionaries, Cartwright packed four wagons of belongings and, with his family, made his way to Canada. Granted a military pension until the end of the war, Richard Cartwright became a magistrate in Ontario. He later testified that he stayed in Albany until 1778 "for the sole purpose of assisting friends of government and furnishing information to the king's officers."

Despite petitioning for compensation as an American Loyalist, Cartwright never recovered financially and later stated that he and his wife were destitute and living on Governor Haldimand's charity. Richard Cartwright died at Kingston [Cataraqui], Ontario in October 1794 in his seventy-third year.

Anna/Hannah Beasley was born in Albany in 1726, the daughter of schoolteacher John Beasley and widow Lydia Dealy Van Benthuyzen. With her brother, Henry, she grew up in an Albany home that included five siblings from her mother's previous marriage. In August 1778, Hannah left her home and went with her husband and other family members to join the British in Canada. Hanna Cartwright died in September 1795 and was buried in St. Paul's churchyard in Kensington, Ontario.

[http://www.biographi.ca/009004-119.01-e.php?&id\\_nbr=2315&&PHPSESSID=d951n83t9lbi9rrmdaajio34b7](http://www.biographi.ca/009004-119.01-e.php?&id_nbr=2315&&PHPSESSID=d951n83t9lbi9rrmdaajio34b7)

Richard Cartwright [Jr.], businessman, office holder, judge, politician, militia officer, and author; b. 2 Feb 1759 in Albany, NY, son of Richard Cartwright and Joanne Beasley; m. ca 1784 Magdalen Secord in Catarauqui (Kingston, Ont.), and they had eight children; d. 27 Jul 1815 in Kingston, Upper Canada.

**Richard Cartwright [Sr.]** was a native of England who had emigrated to New York in 1742 and his mother was from a "loyal Dutch family." By the early 1770s **Richard Cartwright Sr** had established himself as a pillar of the community in Albany: he owned a successful inn and a valuable tract of land near Cherry Valley; he was also deputy postmaster of Albany and active locally in the Church of England. His prosperity allowed his son [Richard Jr.] to attend private primary and advanced schools where he studied "the classics and higher branches of education," in preparation for a career in the church. Although the outbreak of the American revolution ended young Richard's plans for the ministry, his appetite for learning remained. Despite a badly deformed left eye, he read extensively, wrote lucid and often evocative prose, and trumpeted the virtues of "Reading, Writing, Thinking or Conversing Sensibly." In later years Cartwright – widely read, intelligent, and blessed, it was said, with a photographic memory – was a man of intellectual stature who sometimes overawed his contemporaries in the pioneer community of Upper Canada.

The life of the Cartwright family in New York was totally disrupted by the American revolution. At first **Richard Cartwright Sr** was able to avoid confrontation with the rebels who controlled the Albany region. In 1775 he contributed supplies to the attack on Fort Ticonderoga (near Ticonderoga, NY) led by Ethan Allen and Benedict Arnold, and he also turned over at least two suspicious letters to rebel leaders. But with the Declaration of Independence the older Cartwright felt compelled to withdraw to a more neutral position. His neutrality, however, was challenged in February 1777 when the Albany committee of correspondence seized a letter written by Richard Cartwright Jr. to his sister, **Elizabeth Robison** of Niagara (near Youngstown, NY). The contents of the letter were obviously incriminating since Richard Jr. was ordered to "enter into security for his future good behaviour." It seems that by October 1777 Richard Jr.'s good behavior could no longer be guaranteed and his father gained permission from the committee to allow Richard Jr. and his young niece, Hannah, to leave for British territory. Richard's parents, tainted by the loyalism of their son, suffered personal abuse, had their property "destroyed & plundered," and in July 1778 were "conveyed away by a Guard to Crown Point."

In an account of his journey to the province of Quebec written in 1777, and also in his later writings, Richard Cartwright Jr. tried to clarify the basis of his loyalty to the British empire and constitution. Shortly after his departure from New York, he explained his reasons for leaving: "The distracted Condition of my native Country, where all Government was subverted, where Caprice was the only Rule and Measure of usurped Authority, and where all the Distress was exhibited that Power guided by Malice can produce, had long made me wish to leave it . . . notwithstanding the tender Feelings of Humanity which I suffered at Parting from the fondest of Parents, and a Number of agreeable Acquaintance it gave me a sensible Pleasure to quit a Place where Discord reigned and all the miseries of Anarchy had long prevailed." To loyalists such as Cartwright the British constitution symbolized institutions and traditions – for example, a government with an appointed upper house and executive, trial by jury, and habeas corpus – which guaranteed order, authority, and liberty under law. The other dimension of his loyalism was his belief in the "Unity of the Empire," under "the supremacy of Parliament," "considered as co-extensive with the British Dominions." In other words, it was his conviction that the many different branches of the British empire should be united under the authority of parliament, which ensured order, stability, and a uniformity of interests throughout the empire's various parts. Taken together, Cartwright's view of the empire, his commitment to the British constitution, and his strong awareness of his loyalist origins influenced both his response to public issues and the direction in which he sought to guide Upper Canada. After journeying overland to Montreal, Cartwright eventually became secretary to John Butler\*, major commandant of a loyalist regiment based at Fort Niagara. He spent 1778 and 1779 on military expeditions into northern New York and gained experience in military provisioning while making valuable commercial contacts. In May 1780 he left the military to enter a partnership with **Robert Hamilton**. The following year Hamilton and Cartwright with the help of their principal suppliers, James McGILL and Isaac TODD of Montreal – formed a partnership with **John ASKIN** of Detroit. All of these merchants were eager to tap not only the lucrative fur trade but also the supply of British garrisons. Cartwright's movements for the next couple of years are difficult to trace, but by 1783 he may have been looking after the firm's operations in eastern Upper Canada from a store on Carleton Island (NY). In 1784 the partnership with **Askin** was amicably dissolved, and that same year or perhaps in 1785 Cartwright moved from Carleton Island to Catarauqui [Kingston] on the mainland. Shortly after moving, Cartwright married a member of a well-known loyalist family, Magdalen Secord, sister-in-law of Laura [Ingersoll]. She would provide her husband with eight children, unflinching devotion and love, and unquestioning support.

At Carleton Island and later in Catarauqui (renamed Kingston in 1788), Cartwright found himself in an excellent position to realize his considerable entrepreneurial potential. He possessed untiring energy and a passion for detail, controlling every aspect of his growing business. Continuing in partnership with **Hamilton** until 1790, Cartwright was able to use the military contacts he had developed in Niagara to win supply contracts for the Kingston garrison; in the early 1790s William Robertson and Isaac Todd lobbied successfully in England to win an exclusive contract for Cartwright, Hamilton, Askin, and David Robertson to supply the Upper Canadian garrisons between 1793 and 1795. Cartwright also acted as a key link in the "commercial empire of the St Lawrence," which stretched from London to Montreal and through Kingston to Niagara, Detroit, and the northwest. In Kingston, Cartwright received and forwarded, for a five per cent commission, goods that McGill and Todd were sending into the interior. He exported Upper Canadian products – lumber, wheat, flour, potash, and pearl ash – through Montreal, and imported, via his Montreal agents, English manufactures and other goods which he sold very profitably to the growing civilian population. The virtual monopoly that Cartwright and other Kingston merchants, such as Joseph Forsyth, Peter Smith\*, and John Kirby\*, had over the economic life of the region translated itself into that dependent relationship between debtor and creditor which has characterized so many frontier societies. Thus, from the mid 1780s on, Cartwright was able to take full advantage of his location and his myriad of friends and associates. Even he admitted, however, that much depended on British support and British capital. He pointed to "the numerous garrisons and public departments established amongst us" and observed that "as long as the British Government shall think [it] proper to hire people to come over to eat our flour, we shall go on very well, and continue to make a figure."

Despite all of his early advantages, in 1786 Cartwright had found himself in a vulnerable economic situation and he therefore decided to pull back, as he put it, "into a narrow Compass." But by 1788 the general economic situation had improved and Cartwright involved himself in shipbuilding with the construction of the 120-ton *Lady Dorchester*. Six years later he joined a number of other merchants in building the *Governor Simcoe*.

Cartwright [Jr.] had learned early in his business career that diversification and flexibility were absolutely essential if a reasonable profit was to be earned. His general store in Kingston has been accurately described as “the most important business centre” in the community. He also owned a blacksmith’s shop and a cooper’s shop in Kingston. In 1792 he purchased the government mills Robert Clark\* had built at Napanee – 25 miles west of Kingston – and immediately enlarged them to increase the production of flour. The flour produced at Napanee was of unusually fine quality and within a few years Cartwright was sending it to Niagara and to Montreal. At Napanee, moreover, he constructed a large “Shop,” a sawmill, a fulling-mill, a distillery, and a “tavern and other buildings.” In 1815 he estimated that, for the 1806 to 1814 period, the operations in Napanee had “produced a profit of £11,011-19-8 equal to £1376-10 per Annum.” According to Cartwright, “few if any mercantile houses in Kingston have done business to equal advantage for the same time.” His profit from his Kingston businesses must have been at least as large as that from Napanee.

Flour had become by the mid 1790s such an important staple for Cartwright that he stressed, “unless we can make our payments by this means our business is likely to become very languid in this province.” In 1801 more than 25 per cent of all the flour shipped to Montreal from Kingston was Cartwright flour. The Kingston merchant was also very much involved in the salted pork trade. In 1794, for example, 800 barrels of pork were produced in Kingston – 75 per cent more than in 1793. The remarkable increase was traced to one man – Richard Cartwright.

Realizing the growing importance of the flour and pork trade to Montreal and beyond, and the disadvantages of being dependent upon bateaux, Cartwright in 1794 began “to think seriously of attempting to facilitate the Export of our produce to Montreal, by means of Scows and Rafts.” In 1801 he was busy constructing his own scows and he proposed sending them laden with flour directly from Napanee to Quebec. Despite the loss of one of his scows on the St Lawrence River in 1802, Cartwright’s enthusiasm for what he regarded as a most practical and inexpensive mode of transport never waned.

Not only was Cartwright interested and active in almost every aspect of trade; he also encouraged local manufacturing. He was involved in making canvas for the British navy during the War of 1812 and also in distributing knitted products made locally. Moreover, together with other members of the Kingston elite such as Peter Smith, Lawrence Herchmer, and Allan MacLean, he felt obliged in 1811 to keep the *Kingston Gazette* alive by purchasing it for a time from its disenchanted owner [see Stephen Miles\*]. Cartwright considered the *Gazette* to be an influential means whereby he and his fellow leaders could mould the attitudes and values of the inhabitants of eastern Upper Canada. It is, therefore, not surprising that, under the pseudonym “Falkland,” Cartwright contributed many articles to the *Gazette* on the eve of and during the War of 1812. In these he underscored the loyalist and British traditions which he felt were at the core of Upper Canadian society.

When Cartwright died in 1815 he left to his wife and children not only all of his valuable business enterprises and his houses and personal property in Kingston and York (Toronto) but also more than 27,000 acres of land to be found throughout much of Upper Canada. He obviously was an unusually gifted and successful entrepreneur. One of the major reasons for his commercial success, without question, was his scrupulous honesty and his remarkable eye for detail. He took no unfair advantage of his clients and he expected the same treatment in return. Another reason was his flexibility and his commercial diversification. He had succeeded, as he had once expressed it in 1815, in making all his enterprises “mutually to assist to play into each other.”

Cartwright’s economic views coincided with his economic interests. He opposed “Interference in the Management of Private Property” – whether stringent laws regarding bankruptcy and financial disclosure or restrictions on trade – as being “inconsistent with Civil Rights.” But he also advocated that government should encourage the production of certain cash crops by providing bounties and by inspecting Upper Canadian exports to ensure their high quality. He was especially opposed to restrictions on Upper Canadian trade with Lower Canada or the United States and used his influence (as one of three Upper Canadians on an interprovincial commission) to obtain in 1798 free trade with the United States. This reciprocity agreement ended only when the United States imposed restrictions in 1801. Cartwright argued that free trade would benefit Upper Canada since the northern United States would become integrated into the St Lawrence commercial system and English manufactures and Canadian produce would reach American markets through Canadian ports, such as Kingston, and through the hands of Canadian merchants, such as Richard Cartwright. Early in his life Cartwright had pondered the difficulty of distinguishing between schemes “set on Foot” for the good of one’s country and those advocated from “some private consideration.” His conclusion, that it was impossible even for the individuals involved to distinguish between them, might aptly summarize the relationship between the interests of Upper Canada and those of Richard Cartwright.

Cartwright’s stature in the community and his sense of duty to serve and promote the “good of the society” led to his appointment as a justice of the peace some time in the mid 1780s, and he served as chairman of the magistrates in his district once the Court of Quarter Sessions began meeting in 1788; in that year he was also appointed a judge of the Court of Common Pleas. He was regarded as a conscientious, astute judge who added “dignity to the court.” In 1797, and again in 1800, Cartwright was named with Joshua BOOTH, Hazelton Spencer, and Joseph Forsyth to the first Heir and Devisee Commission for the Midland District. In 1800, as well, Cartwright was appointed one of the commissioners in the Midland District for administering the oath of allegiance to settlers claiming land. His other appointments included: member of the Mecklenburg land board (established in 1788), militia officer (1793), county lieutenant (1792), and, most important, legislative councillor (1792). Moreover, he actively encouraged the improvement of Upper Canada’s educational facilities. In 1799 Cartwright brought to Upper Canada a young Scottish teacher, John Strachan, who was destined to educate many of the next generation of Upper Canadian leaders. A few years later, in 1805, Cartwright wrote a memorandum on education which resulted in a decision by the legislature to appropriate £400 for the purchase of scientific instruments for Strachan’s Cornwall school.

An important event in Cartwright’s political career was his quarrel with Upper Canada’s first lieutenant governor, John Graves SIMCOE. At stake were two different perceptions of Upper Canada as a British colony. Simcoe wanted Upper Canada to become a miniature of England with a landed aristocracy, an established church, and institutions which would be replicas of those in England – as Cartwright said, “he [Simcoe] thinks every existing regulation in England would be proper here.” In contrast, Cartwright believed that, although colonial institutions should be modeled on those of the mother country, the stress should be on “the spirit of the constitution,” not “on copying all the subordinate establishments without considering the great disparity of the two countries in every respect.” On these grounds, Cartwright, though an Anglican, opposed the exclusive privileges given to the Anglican clergy in the

Marriage Act of 1793 since there was inadequate "provision for the marriages of Dissenters," who comprised a majority of the population. Similarly, he opposed the Judicature Act of 1794, whereby Upper Canadian courts were centralized as in England, because the scattered population along with the shortage of lawyers made such centralization impractical. Not only did Cartwright think that British institutions had to be adapted to Upper Canadian needs and conditions, but he also felt that the independent views of colonial leaders, such as himself, should be respected by British lieutenant governors. He believed that he had been appointed a legislative councillor because of his "Knowledge of the country and legislation to be most applicable to the situation of the colony; not merely to show my Complaisance to the person at the head of the Government." Besides, Cartwright felt that he, unlike Simcoe, had made a long-term commitment to the colony. "All my prospects, as well for myself as my family," he wrote, "are confined to this province: I am bound to it by the strongest ties, and with its welfare my interest is most essentially connected." It is understandable why he was convinced that it was his right and duty to oppose policies that would jeopardize the colony's future.

Moreover, Simcoe's land policy – to encourage American emigrants to settle in Canada challenged Cartwright's vision of Upper Canada as an "asylum for the unfortunate Loyalists reduced to poverty and driven into exile by their attachment to Britain." This was the issue that upset Cartwright the most since, unlike Simcoe, he felt that Upper Canada was primarily a loyalist colony. "Loyalists heard, with astonishment and indignation, persons spoken of as proprietors of townships whom they had encountered in the field under the banners of the rebellion," Cartwright stated. Also, by opening Upper Canada to American settlers, Simcoe had "dispell[ed] the opinion fondly cherished by the Loyalists, that the donation of lands to them in this country was intended as a mark of peculiar favour and a reward for their attachment to their Sovereign." Cartwright argued that it was important in Upper Canada to "lay a solid foundation" and stress the character of immigrants, not their numbers. Americans, though resourceful, intelligent, and capable farmers, held subversive "political notions," such as an "affection of equality," and lacked "habits of subordination." They thus threatened the stable, peaceful, and ordered community which was Cartwright's Upper Canada.

Another challenge to Cartwright's Upper Canada came in the first decade of the 19th century from a group of government critics, one of whom, John Mills Jackson\*, wrote a pamphlet, *A view of the political situation of the province of Upper Canada* . . . (London, 1809), which was very critical of the authorities. Cartwright responded in his *Letters, from an American loyalist* (1810) by denouncing critics such as Jackson, Robert Thorpe\*, Joseph Willcocks, and William Weekes, in terms reminiscent of his earlier denunciations of the American rebels, as a "Faction" of demagogues and "turbulent Spirit[s]" who were making "indecent aspersions against the Government," "throwing obloquy" on it, and "cabal[ling] against" it. Like the rebels, argued Cartwright, these demagogues' "seditious exertions" were undermining the authority of government and law and disrupting the peace, order, and good government of Upper Canada. Jackson and his friends had offended Cartwright's loyalist sensibilities when they suggested that the loyalists had acted from mercenary motives. Aroused, Cartwright replied that "they were animated by no mercenary motives," and encouraged the 19th-century myth about the upper class origins of the loyalists by asserting "that the generality of those gallant men, so little known, and so much undervalued by their pretended Advocate, were men of Property; and some of them the greatest Landholders in America." Obviously, Cartwright's most deeply held preconceptions about himself as a loyalist had been challenged. And like other loyalist leaders, he became increasingly concerned about preserving the judicial and political *status quo*. By 1807 it was virtually impossible to distinguish Cartwright's views from those expressed by the government élite in York. In fact, Cartwright had become part of the élite. He was a particularly close associate of Lieutenant Governor Francis Gore\* and one of his principal advisers.

Yet another significant threat to Cartwright's adopted colony came with the outbreak of the War of 1812. As a militia officer, he was active as early as 1807 in inspiring Upper Canadians to resist the anticipated American invasion. He viewed the war – with Britain and Canada aligned against France and the United States – as a cosmic struggle in which Britain represented order and freedom and her opponents the "Horrors of Anarchy" and the "Fetters of Despotism." Upper Canadians, according to Cartwright, should "not shrink from the trial should it occur." Inspired by the pride "that must glow in the Brest of every Man to be numbered among a Nation so renowned as Great Britain," they should show their gratitude and do everything possible to turn back the invader, mindful of the "abuse and degradation" that loyalists especially would suffer at the hands of the Americans. In his "Falkland" articles in the *Kingston Gazette*, Cartwright showed that he was proud of the achievements of the colonial militia, meagre as they may seem to the critical historian. This pride was also evident in a letter of 1813 in which he discussed the victory at Crysler's Farm: "Notwithstanding General [James] Wilkinson's schemes of conquest . . . the reception he met with at Chryslers farm [from] our little band of Heroes is a foretaste of what he is to expect of his further progress."

The last five years of Cartwright's life were clouded by personal tragedy. He was a kind and loving father and husband, but he was also a patriarch who expected and received devotion and obedience from his wife and eight children. His ambitions for his children were lofty and he carefully planned and guided their careers. He therefore suffered a crushing blow from which he never really recovered when his two eldest sons – James and Richard – died in 1811, only to be followed to the grave by his daughter, Hannah, whom he loved dearly, and his third son, Stephen. Cartwright died himself on 27 July 1815 from what may have been throat cancer. He was only 56.

Despite his personal afflictions, Cartwright had many reasons to regard his life as a successful one. Besides achieving considerable personal wealth and exerting great influence in his community, he had witnessed and participated in the development and maturing of his adopted colony. Five years before his death, Cartwright summarized in a very personal way Upper Canada's accomplishments: "I have been a resident in this country before there was a human habitation within the limits of what is now the Province of Upper Canada. . . . I have seen this wilderness in the course of a few years, converted into fruitful fields, and covered with comfortable habitations. I see around me thousands, who without any other funds than their personal labor, began to denude the soil of its primaevial forests, in possession of extensive and well cultivated farms. . . . I see this property unencumbered with feudal burdens, undiminished by quit-rents or taxes, guarded by the wisest laws, equally and impartially administered. I see the proprietor himself protected from vexatious arrest or arbitrary imprisonment. I have seen the benevolent intentions of the British Government towards the Colony, exemplified in every measure that could tend to promote its prosperity; and crowned, by imparting to it, its own unrivalled constitution, as far as it was practicable to impart it to a dependent Province. I have seen the foundations laid of institutions and establishments for the promoting of knowledge, and diffusing religious instruction, which however weak and humble in their present state, will 'grow with our growth, and strengthen with our strength.'"

Not only had Upper Canada grown and prospered, but the loyalists had repaid the "paternal care" of their sovereign, for their settlement "in this remote corner of his Empire, has been crowned with such complete success." Looking back over these achievements, Cartwright concluded that "this is a scene on which the benevolent mind must dwell with peculiar complacency." Richard Cartwright in 1810 was evidently very much at peace with himself about the wisdom of his 1777 decision. And so would be his wife and the four children – Mary Magdalen, Thomas Robison, Robert David, and John Solomon\* – who survived him. Mary had married Captain Alexander Thomas Dobbs of the Royal Navy in 1814; Thomas would die at the age of 27 in 1826, a year before his mother's death. Robert became an Anglican minister and the father of Sir Richard John Cartwright\*, and John a distinguished Kingston lawyer and politician.

His daughter Elizabeth married **Captain Thomas Robison** [q.v.].

[http://books.google.com/books?id=wKkOAAAAYAAJ&pg=PA425&dq=%22neil+McLean%22+%22Herkimer%22&hl=en&ei=v46LTPR3BoG88gbep2mCg&sa=X&oi=book\\_result&ct=result&resnum=3&ved=0CDUQ6AEwAg#v=snippet&q=%22hamilton%22&f=false](http://books.google.com/books?id=wKkOAAAAYAAJ&pg=PA425&dq=%22neil+McLean%22+%22Herkimer%22&hl=en&ei=v46LTPR3BoG88gbep2mCg&sa=X&oi=book_result&ct=result&resnum=3&ved=0CDUQ6AEwAg#v=snippet&q=%22hamilton%22&f=false)  
page 643-44

One of the most noted of the refugees who settled at Kingston, was **Richard Cartwright**. He was a native of Albany, and was forced to leave his home because of his loyalty. He found an asylum with others at Carleton Island, or Fort Niagara. Some time after the conclusion of the war he was in partnership with Robert, afterward Honorable Hamilton, at Niagara. But sometime about 1790, he settled in Kingston, where, as a merchant he acquired extensive property. The Government mills at Napanee came into his possession. Those who remember his business capacity, say it was very great. He was a man of " liberal education and highly esteemed. Suffered at last calmly and patiently, and died at Montreal, 27th July, 1815, aged fifty years."

The estimation in which this gentleman was held is sufficiently attested by the following, which we take from the *Kingston Gazette*:

YORK, March 13, 1816. A new township in the rear of Darlington, in the district of Newcastle, has been surveyed, and is now open for the location of the U. E. Loyalists and military claimants. We understand that His Excellency, the Lieutenant Governor to testify in the most public manner the high sense which he entertained of the merit and services of the late Honorable Richard Cartwright, has been pleased to honor this township with the name of CARTWRIGHT, a name ever to be remembered in Canada with gratitude and respect. Dignified with a seat in the Legislative Council, and also with a high appointment in the militia of the Province, Mr. Cartwright discharged the duties incident to those situations, with skill, fidelity, and attention. Animated with the purest principle of loyalty, and with an ardent zeal for the preservation of that noble constitution which we enjoy, he dedicated, when even struggling under great bodily infirmity, the remains of a well spent life to the service of his country. Nor was he less conspicuous for his exemplary behaviour in private life; obliging to his equals—kind to his friends—affectionate to his family, he passed through life, eminently distinguished for virtuous and dignified propriety of conduct, uniformly maintaining the exalted character of a true patriot, and of a great man."

He was a good type of the old school, a tall, robust man, with a stern countenance, and a high mind. He had sustained the loss of one eye, but the remaining one was sharp and piercing. As the first Judge of Mecklenburgh, he discharged his duties with great firmness, amounting, it is said, often to severity. As an officer of the militia, a position he held in 1812, he was a strict disciplinarian, and often forgot that the militiamen were respectable farmers. Mr. Cartwright left two sons, the late John S. Cartwright, and the Rev. Robert Cartwright. It is unnecessary to say that the descendants of Judge Cartwright are among the most respectable, influential and wealthy, living in the Midland District

<http://my.tbaytel.net/bmartin/kingstn1.htm>

**Richard Cartwright, Sr.** According to the family monument in St. Paul's Churchyard, he was born in London, England, on the 18th of November, 1720. Thence he migrated to Albany, N.Y., which he left in 1778 to come to Canada. He is supposed to have been enrolled in the militia of the Province of New York during the "French War" of 1756-1763 or the American Revolutionary War, or both, and to have been awarded for his services a military pension on the basis of a subaltern's pay. This he enjoyed down to 1783, judging from a petition for land which the Hon. Richard Cartwright, as his son and heir, presented to Council. This Petition was read on August 12, 1795, the Council granting the prayer of it to the extent of 500 acres.

On the formation of the settlement at Cataraqui in 1784, Mr. Cartwright, Sr., repaired thither, as he stated in a petition for land, which he himself presented in company with Neil McLean, Richard Porter, and William Atkinson ( U. C. Land and State Book A, July 8, 1794, p.198). He was early appointed a Justice of the Peace and, as before stated, he became a member of the Land Board of Mecklenburg just on the eve of the proclamation of the Constitutional Act by Sir Alured Clarke, on December 24, 1791. Of the Board for the County of Frontenac he continued to be a member practically down to the time of its abolition in 1794. In Q Series, Vol.51,1, pp.372-3, he is described as "a very worthy and deserving Loyalist."

He had been assigned Lot 20, on which he had built a house, and he had the ferry across the river. As his lot, Neil McLean's, and Archibald McDonell's were supposed to be needed for military and naval purposes, he agreed to exchange his holding for 200 acres "not a great distance from the former Lot." Mr. McDonell demurring, all three were left in undisturbed possession, as "in the opinion of the Board, Government will have occasion for neither, as Timber and firewood for the use of the Garrison [at Point Frederick] may at all times be purchased for less money than the cutting it down would cost to supply fuel and wood for building" (Quebec Land Book for Upper Canada, pp. 370-2).

In 1745 he had married Johanna Beasley, a native of Albany, who was born September 6, 1726, and was buried in Kingston, September 6, 1795. Mr. Cartwright had predeceased her by rather less than a year, having been buried on October 23, 1794.

So far as is known, Mr. Cartwright, Sr., and Mr. Markland were the first Churchwardens of the parish.

----

**RICHARD Cartwright, Jr.**, appears also as the Hon. Richard Cartwright and as Judge Cartwright. He was the son of Richard Cartwright, Sr., and Johanna Beasley NY, where he was born on February 2, 1759. He died on July 27, 1815, in Montreal, where he

was buried. According to Dr. Strachan's funeral sermon, preached in Kingston some days later, he had had thoughts of becoming a clergyman, but, the Revolutionary War breaking out, the course of his life was changed. In 1777, after the disaster which overtook the British arms, he came to Canada by way of St. John's, P.Q. He appears to have been for a short time secretary to **Col. Butler**, Commanding Officer of the Rangers called by his name.

Between 1777 and 1788 Cartwright came into close contact with the Hon. James McGill, one of the great merchants of Montreal and the founder of the University which bears his name. Like McGill, he became a trader and a merchant, establishing himself first at Carleton Island, in partnership with the **Hon. Robert Hamilton**, and subsequently at Catarqui. The business relations and the friendship which he formed with these two men endured till the death of the latter of them in 1809 and of the former in 1813.

From a petition for land which he presented to the Executive Council of Upper Canada, on June 20, 1794, it appears that from 1787 to 1792 he was a Justice of the Peace and a member of the Land Board of the District of Mecklenburg.\* Of this body he seems to have been perhaps the most active member, for in many of the reports made to the Governor in Chief and the Council at Quebec his hand is clearly visible.

*\*The first Land Board for the District consisted of the Revd. Mr. John Stuart, **Neil McLean**, James Clark, **Richard Cartwright, Junr.**, and the Officer commanding for the time being. On June 8, 1791, all the Land Boards were continued from and after May 1, 1791. Mr. Clark's name does not appear in the Order in council of that date, but the other three do, together with those of James McDonnell and Hector McLean. To these were added on December 24, 1791, Richard Cartwright, Seur., and William Atkinson. These Seven men, with the Officer Commanding for the time being at Fort Frontenac, composed the Board for the Midland District and later for the County of Frontenac till its dissolution on November 6, 1794, by Lieutenant-Governor Simcoe.*

On Mr. Stuart's declining to accept appointment as a Judge of the Court of Common Pleas in 1788, Mr. Cartwright's name was substituted for his in the commission.\*

*\*The other Judges who were appointed for the District in 1789 were James Clark and **Neil McLean**.*

In 1795 Mr. Cartwright was appointed, with his fellow magistrates, Messrs. Atkinson and Markland, to contract for and superintend the building of a gaol and court house agreeably to a plan approved by the magistrates. In 1797 and subsequent years he sat as a member of the Land Claims Board for the Midland District, to decide the ownership of parcels of land which had changed hands or which had been inadequately or improperly described when being allotted to Loyalists.

For some time previous to 1792 he had been in occupation of the King's Mills at Kingston, already referred to. He also held at one time those at the Apanee River. These mills had been erected by Government with a view to providing the settlers with facilities for procuring timber and for getting their grain ground. In 1798 he represented to the Executive Council of the Province that, as the mills had served their original purpose, those at Kingston might be granted as an endowment for the Grammar School at that place. U. C. State Book B. pp. 184-5.

From a Letter Book, the property of the Library of Queen's University, it is clear that he was deeply interested in education, which he sought to promote in both his public and his private capacity. Through **Mr. Hamilton** and the latter's brother, he was instrumental in bringing Mr. Strachan to this country. For Strachan he, with the co-operation of the Hon. James McGill, procured, at the public expense, a set of physical instruments, and this in spite of the dead-weight of the opposition of the Commons' House of Assembly. Dr. Scadding is authority for the statement that these instruments ultimately became the property of Upper Canada College, Mr. Strachan being merely the custodian for Government

From the same Letter Book can also be seen how serious were the views which Mr. Cartwright entertained of his duties as a member of the Legislative Council of the Province, in which he had a seat from 1792 to 1815. This is noticeable particularly in respect of the Marriage Act, for he was liberal enough to wish to see ministers of all communions empowered to solemnize matrimony. His impatience at the illiberality of the interpretation put upon the clause of the Constitutional Act touching the provision for a "Protestant Clergy," has been already noted. At any waste of public funds he was righteously indignant, as, for instance, at the voting, in a thin House at the close of the session, aid to certain congregations for building Churches, when the original proposal had been only to purchase a pew in the Church at York for the accommodation of the members of the Legislative Council and of the House of Assembly.

Of successive Lieutenant-Governors and Administrators he was the trusted, if unofficial, adviser, for he was never called to the Executive Council. He was also a Commissioner of Roads for the Province and a representative of it in negotiations with the Province of Lower Canada in regard to financial matters.

How early he settled in Kingston, is not quite certain, but, from an entry in Land Book G, p.42, it is clear that he had been in possession of Lot 263, 2-5 of an acre, since 1789 and that a house had been erected upon the lot. On April 16, 1793, he was given permission by the Honourable Council "to build a store upon the Water Lot opposite his Town Lot at Kingston; and likewise to include in the Grant the beach marked "A" up to the bank B" (Land and State Book A, p.69). On June 21, 1794, he was refused some islands for which he petitioned, all islands being reserved for the uses of the Crown, but he was allowed 3,000 acres on the mainland, "His Excellency and the Council being apprized of the Advantages derived in various Instances from the Public Spirit and exertions of the Petitioner both as a Magistrate and in his private Capacity." Accordingly they thought themselves "fully justified in supporting his Claim upon the most Equitable Principles" (Land and State Book A, p. 172). His name appears in other connections in succeeding Land Books, among others for a town lot each for his wife and himself in York. Mrs. Cartwright and four children were granted 1,200 acres each, in accordance with the custom of the time, the intention of the framers of the Constitutional Act being to create a landed aristocracy.

Like other traders and merchants, Mr. Cartwright was often forced to take land in satisfaction of debts owing to him. Therefore he was very directly interested in the law regarding the transfer and the registration of land, also in the application to lands alienated by the original grantees of the Orders in Council relating to the issue of patents without payment of fees.

In 1799 he petitioned for passports for the Marquis de Beauport and Mr. Coster de St. Victoire (sic), who wished to return to France after their exile in Great Britain and Canada. For them and for others of these émigrés settlers, notably Mr. Quetton St. George, he had acted as agent.

As Lieutenant of his County Mr. Cartwright had the nomination of the officers of militia; and as such he had something also to do with making preparations for the defence of the Province in 1812. Among his papers is preserved an address to the militia, of which he was a Colonel. About the same time he was writing in a highly patriotic strain in the Kingston Gazette, under the name of "Falkland."

Worn out by the anxieties and the labours of the war, deeply depressed by the death of four of his children within three years of one another, he died in Montreal, whither he had gone on business of his own and of the McGill estate, of which he was an executor. He left four children under the guardianship of Dr. Strachan, Mary Magdalen (Mrs. Dobbs), Thomas Robison, John Solomon, and Robert David. Mrs. Cartwright, who, before her marriage, had been Miss Magdalen Secord, of Niagara, survived her husband almost twelve and a half years, dying on the 4th of January, 1827, eighteen months after the decease of her son, Thomas Robison.

-----

**Nathaniel Chandler** - 1780, Lodge No. 210, E.R. (A), New York; 1783, England; Charter member Morning Star Lodge, Worcester, MA; d. 1801, Worcester [Petersham], MA.

[http://books.google.com/books?id=hG4WAAAAYAAJ&pg=PA210&lpg=PA210&dq=%22nathaniel+chandler%22+%22worchester%22&source=bl&ots=9yqtjGf\\_p-&sig=2kePZowlbZ0WobH-lfZ6FmEWiFk&hl=en&ei=RpJkTKuhKYKB8qbF0oSDCQ&sa=X&oi=book\\_result&ct=result&resnum=5&ved=0CB4Q6AEwBDgU#v=onepage&q=%22nathaniel%20chandler%22%20%22worchester%22&f=false](http://books.google.com/books?id=hG4WAAAAYAAJ&pg=PA210&lpg=PA210&dq=%22nathaniel+chandler%22+%22worchester%22&source=bl&ots=9yqtjGf_p-&sig=2kePZowlbZ0WobH-lfZ6FmEWiFk&hl=en&ei=RpJkTKuhKYKB8qbF0oSDCQ&sa=X&oi=book_result&ct=result&resnum=5&ved=0CB4Q6AEwBDgU#v=onepage&q=%22nathaniel%20chandler%22%20%22worchester%22&f=false) page 210.

**Nathaniel Chandler** was born in Worcester, MA. 6 Nov 1750; graduated at Harvard College in 1768. His sympathies were on the side with his father, and he received a like invitation to either join the Whig party or depart from the country. He also went to Halifax in 1776 and was proscribed and banished. For a time he was in command of a corps of volunteers. After the close of the war he returned to Massachusetts, and in 1784 settled in Petersham, where he engaged in trade. On account of failing health was obliged to relinquish all business, and coming to Worcester where citizenship was restored to him by an act of the Legislature in 1789. He died unmarried 7 Mar 1801.

[http://books.google.com/books?id=Y5u359K6IBAC&pg=PA131&lpg=PA131&dq=%22nathaniel+chandler%22+%221750%22&source=bl&ots=WymPIWvyes&sig=dco4Nmcv8ZcqQXsHCkcAhqK-Mak&hl=en&ei=tJhkTM7KHcP98Aamjv3LCA&sa=X&oi=book\\_result&ct=result&resnum=9&ved=0CDAQ6AEwCDgU#v=onepage&q=%22nathaniel%20chandler%22%20%221750%22&f=false](http://books.google.com/books?id=Y5u359K6IBAC&pg=PA131&lpg=PA131&dq=%22nathaniel+chandler%22+%221750%22&source=bl&ots=WymPIWvyes&sig=dco4Nmcv8ZcqQXsHCkcAhqK-Mak&hl=en&ei=tJhkTM7KHcP98Aamjv3LCA&sa=X&oi=book_result&ct=result&resnum=9&ved=0CDAQ6AEwCDgU#v=onepage&q=%22nathaniel%20chandler%22%20%221750%22&f=false) page 131.

**Nathaniel Chandler** was son of Col. John Chandler and was born in Worcester, 6 Nov 1750. He was early a **pupil of the elder President Adams when he kept school in Worcester**, who was wont to speak of his scholar as possessing fine abilities. He afterwards was under the tutorship of Rev. Mr. Harrington of Lancaster and graduated at Harvard University in 1768. He studied law with James Putnam and was called to the Bar in 1771. At the breaking out of hostilities, he joined the English, and for a time commanded a corps of volunteers in the British service in New York. From New York he went to England; returned to this country in 1784, and engaged extensively in mercantile business in Petersham, MA. This he relinquished on account of ill health and moved to Worcester, where he died 7 Mar 1801.

-----

**Nathaniel Chandler** of Worcester, MA, son of Colonel John. He was born in that town in 1750; graduated at Harvard University in 1768; and commenced the practice of the law in Petersham. He was one of the eighteen country gentlemen who addressed Gage on his departure, in 1775. In 1776 he went to Halifax. In 1778 he was proscribed and banished. Entering the British service, he led a corps of Volunteers. He returned to Petersham in 1784, and engaged in trade, but relinquished business on account of ill health, and returned to Worcester. Citizenship was restored in 1789, by Act of the Legislature of Massachusetts. He was a very pleasant companion, and a favorite singer of songs in social parties. In early life he was a pupil of John Adams. His brother-in-law, the Rev. Dr. Bancroft, wrote that "he possessed personal manliness and beauty," that "he was endowed with a good mind and a lively imagination," that "in disposition he was cheerful," but that "his course of life drew him from those pursuits which might have rendered him a distinguished character." He never married. He died at Worcester in 1801.

<http://boards.ancestry.com/surnames.chandler/1947/mb.ashx>

Hon. John CHANDLER, son of Hon. John CHANDLER, was born at Woodstock, 26 Feb 1720-21. He married Dorothy PAINE, of Worcester, on 5 Mar 1740, d/o Colonel Nathaniel PAINE, of Bristol, RI, and Worcester, MA. Colonel PAINE's wife, her mother, was Sarah CLARK, daughter of Timothy CLARK, of Boston. Colonel PAINE removed to Worcester in 1738 and had land near Lincoln Street. Mrs. Dorothy CHANDLER died 5 Oct 1745. He married (2nd), 11 Jun 1746, to Mary CHURCH, d/o Charles CHURCH, of Bristol, RI, sheriff, who died 31 Dec 1746, aged 64 years. Her sister, Dorothy CHURCH, m. Samuel CHANDLER. Their father, Colonel Charles CHURCH, was son of Colonel Benjamin CHURCH, born in Duxbury, 1639, and wife Alice, the daughter of Constant SOUTHWORTH, of Plymouth.

John CHANDLER resided on the east side of Main Street near the present site of Clark's block, formerly the site of Mower's Tavern and of the United States Hotel. He followed in the footsteps of his father and grandfather, both prominent servants of the Crown. He was town treasurer from 1753 to 1760, inclusive; town clerk from 1764 to 1768, inclusive; county treasurer from 1762 to 1775, inclusive; sheriff from 1751 to 1762; Judge of Probate from 1762 to 1774. Colonel CHANDLER marched to the relief of Fort William Henry, August 1757. John ADAMS, who was then living in Worcester, afterwards president of the U.S., wrote: "At the time Fort William Henry was besieged Colonel CHANDLER had occasion to send expresses often and while keeping school in Worcester I offered my services and was sent to the Governor of Rhode Island."

He inherited the traits of character as well as the offices of his father and grandfather. He was cheerful and engaging in manner, hospitable as a citizen, friendly and kind as a neighbor, industrious and enterprising as a merchant. To a chivalrous sense of loyalty to the British Government he sacrificed during the Revolution property valued at over 36,000 pounds. In his own schedule presented to the British Government after he had left his country, he reduced those figures which were probably about right, to 17,000 pounds, including 6,000 for loss of income from his offices. So just and moderate was this compensation ascertained to be, at a time when extravagant claims were presented by others, that his claims were allowed in full and he was called in England "The Honest Refugee". His portrait is to be seen at the foot of the stairs in the front hall of the American Antiquarian Hall at Worcester. Colonel CHANDLER had a pew in Old South Church. After the Revolution broke out and Colonel CHANDLER left Worcester to affiliate with the Tories and British, he never returned. His estate was confiscated and he was named with his brother-in-law, Hon. James PUTNAM, and others of his family on the list of six who were banished and forbidden to return under penalty of death. Two of his sons, Rufus and William were among the proscribed, and his nephew, Dr. William PAINE. The son, William CHANDLER, and Dr. PAINE, were permitted later to return home, and Dr. PAINE regained the confidence and esteem of the community.

Colonel CHANDLER died in London, England, 26 Sep 1800, and was buried at Islington. His son Rufus, was buried in the same grave. The spot is marked by a simple stone suitably inscribed.

The children of John & Dorothy (PAINE) CHANDLER were:

- 1 John b. 03 Mar 1742
- 2 Gardner b. 01 Dec 1743; d. 16 Dec 1743
- 3 Clark b. 01 Dec 1743 (twin)
- 4 Dorothy b. Sep 1745; m. 26 Dec 1767 to Samuel WARD of Lancaster

The children of John & Mary (CHURCH) CHANDLER were:

- 1 Rufus b. 18 May 1747; m. 18 Nov 1770 to Eleanor PUTNAM
- 2 Gardiner b. 27 Jan 1749; m. in 1772 to Elizabeth RUGGLES
- 3 Nathaniel b. Nov. 6, 1750 [see above]
- 4 William b. 07 Dec 1752
- 5 Charles b. 22 Jan 1755; m. 18 Nov 1796 to Sally MOWER
- 6 Samuel b. 25 Feb 1757
- 7 Sarah b. 14 Dec 1758; m. 14 Sep 1780 to William SEAVER, Jr.
- 8 Benjamin b. 15 Aug 1761; d. 16 Dec 1775
- 9 Francis b. 28 Jul 1763; d. 16 Dec 1775 (These two brothers drowned together in a mill pond in South Worcester)
- 10 Lucretia b. 09 Jun 1765; m. 24 Oct 1786 to Rev. Aaron BANCROFT
- 11 Thomas b. 11 Jan 1768; m. 25 Sep 1802 to Eliza DAVIS, widow of William DENNY
- 12 Elizabeth b. 20 Feb 1770; m. 2 Dec 1786 to Ebenezer PUTNAM, of St. John, New Brunswick, where the family lived after the expatriation.

-----

**Joseph Chew** – b. 1720, Virginia; 1772, St. Patrick's Lodge No. 4, Johnstown, NY; 1750, New London, CT; Surveyor; 1774, Executor of Will of Sir William Johnson; 1774, Secretary for Indian Affairs; 1776, went of England with Brant; 1780, Associated with Major Andre; 1792-98, Secretary of Indian Affairs, Canada; 1789-1814, Pewholder, Christ Church, Montreal; d. 1798, Montreal.

<http://www.biographi.ca/009004-119.01-e.php?Biold=35927>

**Joseph Chew**, Indian department official; probably b. in Virginia (U.S.A.) in the 1720s; d. 24 Sept. 1798 at Montreal (Que.). He apparently began his military career as an officer in the Virginia troops. In 1747 he was a captain in the New York forces and was captured near Saratoga (Schuylerville, N.Y.) by Luc de LA CORNE. He was taken prisoner to New France, but his release was obtained in or before the summer of 1748. The war having been concluded, Chew set out for Maryland in January 1748/49 since he had the offer of "disposing of a Cargoe of goods" there. By 1752 he was living in New London, Connecticut, where he was marshal of the Vice-Admiralty Court. He was probably also still engaged in trade. In 1762, perhaps because he knew **Sir William JOHNSON**, a group of Connecticut speculators involved in a controversial land purchase along the Susquehanna River [see John Hendricks Lydius] sent him to discuss the settlement of the tract with the Indian superintendent.

During the late 1760s Chew encountered financial difficulties and was, he wrote, "Support'd almost wholly by . . . [Johnson's] Bounty." He moved to the vicinity of Johnson Hall (Johnstown, N.Y.) and became a justice of the peace, undoubtedly through Johnson's influence. On 6 July 1774 he was appointed secretary to the Indian department. In effect he was secretary to Guy Johnson, Sir William's successor, and in this capacity attended various conferences with the Six Nations.

In November 1775 Chew accompanied **Guy Johnson**, **Christian Daniel CLAUS**, **Joseph Brant** [Thayendanegea], and others to England in connection with Governor Guy Carleton's reorganization of the Indian department. When the party returned to North America several months later, he seems to have undertaken active military service in the New York City area against the American rebels. During a campaign in eastern Long Island in 1777 he was captured by Americans. Evidently paroled, he subsequently served in the Connecticut region. These activities separated Chew from his wife and children, whom he had left at Johnstown in 1775, and their welfare was a constant anxiety to him. At the war's end he sought compensation for his family's losses, going to England as late as 1789 for that purpose. Apparently he was successful, for he received various benefits including a grant of land in Carleton County, New Brunswick.

During the war the Indian department had fallen into disorganization. Particularly acrimonious was a dispute between **Daniel Claus** and John CAMPBELL over responsibility for the Canadian Indians. **Sir John Johnson's** appointment as superintendent general in 1782 alleviated some of the tension but Chew must have encountered difficulties when in the 1780s he again took up his duties as secretary. Sir John was somewhat ineffective as an administrator, and it was Chew who kept the department functioning. Working mostly in Montreal, he was responsible for the day-to-day correspondence with agents in the field and with other government departments. While the British retained the western posts and dreamed of creating a sphere of influence among the Indians of the

Ohio-Mississippi country, Chew's role was vital. In 1794 the signing of Jay's Treaty, which relinquished the posts, reduced the department's importance. Chew remained active as secretary until his never robust health deteriorated in the autumn of 1798. He died on 24 Sep [1798] apparently of a bronchial disorder.

Chew's last years had been marked by renewed concern for his family's welfare. He asked that his son John succeed him as secretary and sought a departmental appointment for his younger son William Johnson Chew. It is an indication of the high regard in which Joseph Chew was held that both requests were granted. John Chew served as secretary from 1798 to 1806 and William Johnson Chew was departmental storekeeper at Fort Niagara (near Youngstown, NY) and Fort George (Niagara-on-the-Lake, Ont.) from 1794 to 1809.

[http://books.google.com/books?id=pdgUAAAAYAAJ&pg=PA60&lpg=PA60&dq=%22joseph+chew%22&source=bl&ots=P3RnlqmFj&sig=veOpJhBipOIE2JitT7Vq\\_gdT0w&hl=en&ei=TqFkTIQSPMH-8AbNk4jQCA&sa=X&oi=book\\_result&ct=result&resnum=10&ved=0CDAQ6AEwCTgK#v=onepage&q=%22joseph%20chew%22&f=alse](http://books.google.com/books?id=pdgUAAAAYAAJ&pg=PA60&lpg=PA60&dq=%22joseph+chew%22&source=bl&ots=P3RnlqmFj&sig=veOpJhBipOIE2JitT7Vq_gdT0w&hl=en&ei=TqFkTIQSPMH-8AbNk4jQCA&sa=X&oi=book_result&ct=result&resnum=10&ved=0CDAQ6AEwCTgK#v=onepage&q=%22joseph%20chew%22&f=alse) page 59.

Joseph Chew and Samuel Chew (sons of Thomas and Martha (Tayler) Chew, of Virginia, came to New London before 1750, Joseph Chew was Surveyor of the Port in New London in 1761; he espoused the Loyalist side prior to and at the time of the Revolution, while Samuel Chew adhered to the Colonists. That Joseph Chew was a turbulent character is shown from the following extracts from *Hetnpstead's Diary*, viz.: p. 599: "Tuesday, November 28, 1752, Joseph Chew assaulted Captain Richard Durfey on the highway and wounded him with a bone on the head, and bruised his head and tore his shirt, etc.," p. 658: "Saturday, October 25, 1755, last night, about nine o'clock Joseph Chew and John Miller and Lechmere and others made a very great rout and tumult, firing guns and swearing and cursing and threatening to kill Stephen Potter and others, and was like to have killed Potter." On account of his loyalty to the Royal Cause he was requested to leave New London. This was a period of great disturbance between the Crown and the Colonists on account of taxation, and as Joseph Chew was connected with the New London Customs House, it was more than likely that his outbreaks were due to his political connections.

From *Sabine's Loyalists*, Vol. II, p. 495, we extract the following. : "Joseph Chew of New London, Conn., was a Commissary in the Royal Service, and in 1777 was taken prisoner by a party of Whigs at Sag Harbor,"—"Joseph Chew, a magistrate of Tryon (now Montgomery) County, N. Y., signed the declaration of Loyalty in 1775. In 1792 he was in Canada, an official under Sir John Johnson and in correspondence with Brant in relation to pending difficulties with the United States." According to the late Miss Alice Chew, of New London (a great-grand-daughter of Samuel Chew, brother of Joseph Chew), Joseph Chew went to Canada to live; which leads one to conclude that the above extracts from Sabine refer to Joseph Chew, of New London.

Joseph m. 12 Mar 1758 in New London, CT, Grace Deshon, b. 13 Aug 1735 in New London, CT.

Children of Grace Deshon and Joseph Chew:

- i. Joseph Chew, b. ca 1758; d. in Jamaica.
- ii. William Johnson Chew, b. ca 1759 in Connecticut; d. bet. 1812 - 1815 in Fort Niagara, NY.
- iii. Frances Chew, b. 1759 in Connecticut; d. 11 Oct 1841.
- iv. John Francis Chew, b. ca 1761 in Connecticut; d. 1806 in Montreal, Quebec, Canada; m. Gabriel Sistar.
- v. Grace Chew, b. ca 1764 in Connecticut; d. in Montreal, Quebec, Canada.

-----

**Dr. Duncan Clark (Clarke)** – b. ca 1743 Inverness, Scotland; 1772-76, New York; 1776-80, Norfolk, VA; 1780, New York; 1783, Halifax, NS; 1800, St. John's Lodge No. 211 E.R. (A) Halifax, NS; 1800, PGW, NS.

[http://www.biographi.ca/009004-119.01-e.php?&id\\_nbr=2329&interval=25&&PHPSESSID=ol872glud5anoqadbidagifm0](http://www.biographi.ca/009004-119.01-e.php?&id_nbr=2329&interval=25&&PHPSESSID=ol872glud5anoqadbidagifm0)

**Dr. Duncan Clark (Clarke)**, a Scots born Loyalist from New York and the town's leading physician, surgeon, and apothecary; b. c. 1759 in Scotland; m. 7 Feb. 1789 Justina Sophia Bayer in Halifax, N. S., and they had at least five sons; d. there 10 Sep 1808.

Considerable confusion surrounds the circumstances of Duncan Clark's early life. He enlisted in the 82nd Foot, probably in Scotland, and likely served with it in the American revolution; when the regiment was disbanded at Halifax in October 1783 Clark received half pay as an ensign. He may have had some medical training prior to his enlistment, but his subsequent expertise was likely gained during his regimental career. He may possibly have served as a surgeon's mate, for at this time surgeons' mates often purchased ensigncies in order to augment their pay and improve their status.

The month his regiment was disbanded Clark began his Halifax practice as a temporary replacement for the absent surgeon to the naval dockyard. He received a salary of 4*d.* per month per man in the yard, which amounted to approximately £25 per year. By September 1785 the incumbent still had not returned, and Clark therefore petitioned the dockyard commissioner, Henry DUNCAN, for the appointment, also requesting an adequate salary. Duncan's comment that he was "a very able surgeon . . . whose [emoluments] are no way adequate to his service" gained Clark the position, which he apparently retained for life. In 1804 he received the additional appointment of physician general and inspector of the Nova Scotia militia hospital. During the residence of Prince Edward AUGUSTUS, Clark served as physician in ordinary to the royal household, along with his friends William James ALMON and John Halliburton. He also maintained a large and popular medical practice in Halifax, and like several other doctors augmented his income by operating a pharmaceutical dispensary.

A congenial, dignified, and well-educated man, Clark is perhaps best remembered for his contributions to the Halifax social scene. He was a member of the North British Society by 1784, and after filling various committee positions and club offices he served as president in 1789, and again in 1797. Clark was also an active freemason, being master of St John's Lodge No.211 as early as 1786. He subsequently attained the position of grand master in the provincial grand lodge in 1800. Succeeded the following year by Sir John WENTWORTH, he remained as deputy grand master until 1807. Clark was also a member of a select informal intellectual circle which met regularly at the Great Pontack Inn for the discussion of literary and scientific subjects, followed by an evening's conviviality. Prince Edward Augustus often attended these gatherings.

Clark was reputedly a wealthy man, and in the 1790s is supposed to have invested successfully in several privateering ventures. Neither of these contentions has been substantiated. His few attempts at landholding, notably in the Hammonds Plains area near Wentworth's rural retreat, were financially unsuccessful; at his death most of the acreage remained unimproved. His total estate amounted to only £705, of which £497 was owing to creditors. One might suppose that any profits had been expended in maintaining a high standard of living, but the inventory of his personal effects suggests only a mediocre middle-class household. Certainly it was by his character and medical expertise alone that Duncan Clark made his mark on the colonial scene.

-----

**Dr. Joseph Clarke** - . CT; Physician; 1775 Stratford, CT; 1776 Prince of Wales Regiment; 1776 Lloyd's Neck, Long Island; 1786 Parr Town (Saint John), NB; Maugeville, NB; 1789, St. George's Lodge No. 2, NY; d. 1813.

<http://www.lib.unb.ca/collections/loyalist/seeOne.php?id=679&string=>

In 1775, Dr. Joseph Clarke (1732-1811) and his family were living in Stratford, CT, where he owned several parcels of land and practised physic and surgery. He was the son of Isaac Clarke and his second wife Martha Bostwick. Dr. Nehemiah Clarke (c.1739-1825), a Loyalist who was tortured by a rebel mob, was a brother. On 27 Oct 1760, Dr. Joseph Clarke and Isabella Elizabeth Alleyne were married at Braintree, near Boston. Their oldest daughter Sarah Hannah Clarke married Jeremiah Smith Boies of Milton, whose family remained sympathetic to the rebel cause, yet this did not appear to alter the close family ties with the Loyalist family who came to New Brunswick. A younger daughter, Isabella Elizabeth Clarke (1767-1859), and the woman associated with the Clarke and Gamble manuscripts, was her mother's namesake. She was born in Stratford, CT, and married in Maugeville, New Brunswick, to Dr. John Gamble (c.1755-1811) on 18 May 1784. Dr. John Gamble was a native of Ireland who had come to New York in 1779 and served as a surgeon in a British military hospital in New York before joining the Queen's Rangers.

Dr. Joseph Clarke, Isabella's father, also served as a doctor during the war. Because of his Loyalist ties, he had been persecuted and his property confiscated and sold, causing him to flee with his family to Lloyd's Neck on Long Island in 1777 and join the British troops. He recruited men for the Prince of Wales Volunteers and served as physician to the refugee Loyalists on Long Island until the end of the war. When the Loyalists were being evacuated from New York, Dr. Clarke was placed in command of Company 9 on the vessel, *Bridgewater*, as part of the June fleet. Eventually, the family settled at Maugeville, New Brunswick, where Dr. Clarke resumed his medical practice. Isabella Clarke and her husband, John Gamble, settled first in Parr Town (Saint John), then in Prince William, New Brunswick, but in 1796 Dr. Gamble journeyed by canoe and on foot to Niagara, Upper Canada, where he became the assistant surgeon of the reorganized Queen's Rangers. In 1798, Isabella Gamble with her five daughters between six and thirteen years of age, her sister Jane who later married Col. Samuel Smith of the Queen's Rangers, her father, Dr. Clarke, and Indian guides, made an incredibly difficult journey by canoe and batteaux from Maugeville, New Brunswick, to York (Toronto) where her husband, now a full surgeon, was located with the Queen's Rangers. The government of Upper Canada, under Lieutenant Governor John Graves Simcoe, had relocated to York from Niagara in 1794. With the disbanding of the Queen's Rangers in 1802, the family moved to Kingston, Ontario, and Dr. Gamble practised medicine in that town. He died on 2 Sep 1811 at the age of 56. Isabella moved to Toronto in 1820 where several of her thirteen children were located. She lived there for many years, and died at the residence of her son-in-law Thomas William Birchall on 9 Mar 1859 at the age of 92.

<http://www.uelac.org/Loyalist-Trails/2008/Loyalist-Trails-2008.php?issue=200807>

Dr. Joseph Clarke was already familiar with war's tragic toll on human life from his tour of duty as a surgeon with a provincial regiment during the Seven Years War. He could not have anticipated that there would be yet another war on American soil during his lifetime. Dr. Clarke's house in quiet Stratford, Connecticut was once described by a friend as "genteely furnished"; the doctor "lived in good style". Clarke "had the best practice in the place" until his convictions compelled him to join the British troops in October of 1776. As soon as he left Stratford, rebels seized his home and all of his livestock. There was to be no turning back.

Dr. Clarke recruited 33 other loyalists for the Prince of Wales Volunteers during his three-month term as a captain. In 1777, the doctor crossed Long Island Sound to practice medicine within the refugee settlement that was growing up around Fort Franklin. Clarke offered his services "without any pay or reward during the war". Over the course of the revolution, vicious patriot raiders from across the Sound plundered Clarke's home in Lloyd's Neck and later in Huntington.

At the end of the war, Dr. Clarke settled in Maugeville, New Brunswick on the St. John River. Like Bullein and Campbell, he also had an African in his household. However, 40 year-old Philip was a free man who had served the British forces for three years. He accompanied Dr. Clarke as his hired man.



-----

**Christian Daniel Claus** – 1766, Initiated in Union Lodge No. 1, Albany, NY; 1766, Charter member and Junior Warden of St. Patrick's Lodge No. 4, Johnstown, NY; 1770, Senior Warden; 1771, visitor to St. Peter's Lodge No. 4, P.G.L Montreal, Quebec; son-in-law of Sir William Johnson; 1749, Philadelphia; 1752, Mohawk Valley; d. 1787, Cardiff, Wales.

[http://www.biographi.ca/009004-119.01-e.php?id\\_nbr=1810&interval=25&PHPSESSID=neqo8ll4tsncbejrgakpn60690](http://www.biographi.ca/009004-119.01-e.php?id_nbr=1810&interval=25&PHPSESSID=neqo8ll4tsncbejrgakpn60690)

**Col. Christian Daniel Claus**, Indian department official; b. 13 Sep 1727 at Boennigheim (near Heilbronn, Federal Republic of Germany), son of Adam Frederic Claus, the town prefect, and his wife Anna Dorothea; d. 9 Nov 1787 near Cardiff, Wales. He was born into a prominent family of southwestern Germany. In 1748 or 1749 a German emigrant visiting from America involved him in a plan to export raw silk and tobacco from America for processing in Germany. When Claus arrived in Philadelphia in the autumn of 1749, he discovered that the scheme was more imaginary than real. With few contacts and apparently unable to afford the

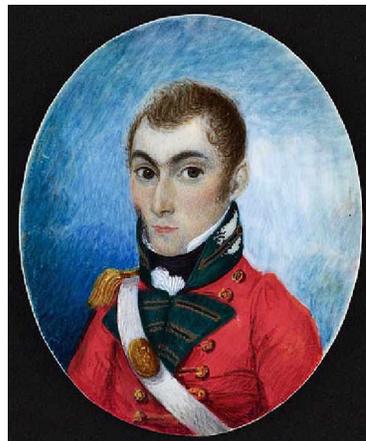
voyage home, he resolved to find employment during the winter and return to Germany in the spring. He made the acquaintance of Johann Conrad Weiser, Pennsylvania's Indian agent, and was probably hired at that time as a tutor for Weiser's son. In 1750 Claus accompanied Weiser on a journey to the Hudson-Mohawk valley of New York, and during their stay with the Onondagas he began to compile a vocabulary of Indian words. On his return to Philadelphia he met the governor who, recognizing his interest in languages, arranged for him and Weiser's son to be sent to live among the Mohawks. He stayed for a while with King Hendrick [Theyanoguin\*], who instructed him in the language, history, and customs of the Six Nations.

In 1755, when the management of Indian affairs in the northern colonies was centralized under the direction of **William JOHNSON**, Claus was made a lieutenant in the Indian department and a deputy secretary of Indian affairs. With the outbreak of the Seven Years' War at this time, the department was strained to its utmost for some years. Johnson's connection with the Six Nations became a vital part of the British effort to wrest control of eastern North America from France. Claus played an important role as an interpreter and diplomat in the frequent conferences and negotiations with the Indians. The collapse of New France added new pressures to the department; Johnson found that his traditional role with the Six Nations and his new concerns with the Indians of the Ohio country left him no time to look after Canada. Claus was accordingly made the deputy agent to the Canadian Indians on 20 Sep 1760. He was based at Montreal and reported both to Johnson and to the local military government.

The world of the Indian department was a quasi-military one. In 1756 Claus had been made a lieutenant in the Royal Americans (62nd, later 60th Foot). With Johnson's financial assistance he purchased a captaincy in 1761, but he sold it the following year. He became colonel of the Albany County militia on 18 Feb 1768 and acquired the colonelcy of another militia regiment on 7 Jul 1772.

These middle years of Claus's career were busy but pleasant. **He married Ann (Nancy), the daughter of Sir William Johnson** and Catherine Weissenberg (Wisenberg), on 13 Apr 1762. He occupied an important government post, and he owned considerable land in the vicinity of Albany. His success was deserved: he was charming, honest, and hardworking. The American Revolution and administrative change in the Indian department, however, ended this comfort.

Lt. Daniel Claus >



Sir William Johnson died suddenly on 11 Jul 1774 and was succeeded in the department by another son-in-law, **Guy JOHNSON**. Governor Guy Carleton, resenting the Johnson influence over Indian administration in Quebec and wishing to place the Montreal agency more nearly under his own control because of the approaching conflict with the Americans, used this opportunity to institute a change in personnel. Daniel Claus, who according to his own statement had for 15 years borne "the whole weight and management of . . . the Indian Department" in Canada, was summarily dismissed from office in 1775 and replaced by John CAMPBELL, the son-in-law of Luc de LA CORNE. On 11 Nov 1775 Claus took passage to England in company with Guy Johnson, Joseph Brant [Thayendanegea], and others seeking the cancellation of Carleton's arrangements.

Claus returned in Jun 1777 with an appointment as superintendent of the Six Nations Indians who were to accompany Barrimore Matthew St LEGER on an expedition into the Mohawk valley by way of Oswego, and he was present at St Leger's unsuccessful siege of Fort Stanwix (Rome, NY) in August. With John BURGOYNE's defeat at Saratoga (Schuylerville) in October, the loyalist cause in the upper Hudson valley was lost, and Claus's family fled to Canada, abandoning lands and possessions.

The final period of his career opened with his appointment in Aug 1778 as a deputy agent for the Six Nations in Canada, subordinate to Guy Johnson. Several factors were involved. Frederick Haldimand had replaced Carleton as governor in June. He knew Claus and was sympathetic to the needs of the Indian department. Burgoyne's surrender had left the future of the Six Nations, especially the Mohawks, in doubt, and someone was needed to act as an official liaison with Indian leaders. Claus, who was familiar with the Iroquois and spoke some of their dialects, was the obvious choice; Campbell did not speak any Indian tongue and was fully occupied with the affairs of the Canadian Indians.

In his last years Claus supervised, along with **John BUTLER**, the establishment of various groups of Six Nations Indians on British soil, particularly at the Bay of Quinte and the Grand River (Ont.). His time was spent chiefly in Montreal and Quebec, but he made regular journeys to the western country. He was also greatly concerned to obtain compensation for his losses in the American Revolution, and he died in Britain in 1787 while pursuing this interest. His son William later became deputy superintendent of Indian affairs.

Claus's career demonstrates the intricacies of office-holding and the complexity of Indian-white relations in the late 18th century. He was a consummate politician, who strongly defended the Johnson interests in the Indian department, and an ambitious official who took his responsibilities seriously and carried them out with great competence.

See also: Daniel Claus' narrative of his relations with Sir William Johnson . . .," by General Society of Colonial Wars (U.S.). New York, Daniel Claus, Louis Livingston Seaman. 1904. page 1-21, at:  
[http://books.google.com/books?id=q4AOAAAAYAAJ&printsec=frontcover&dq=%22daniel+claus%22&hl=en&ei=yzxITPjEcGB8gautqYACQ&sa=X&oi=book\\_result&ct=result&resnum=1&ved=0CCoQ6AEwAA#v=onepage&q&f=false](http://books.google.com/books?id=q4AOAAAAYAAJ&printsec=frontcover&dq=%22daniel+claus%22&hl=en&ei=yzxITPjEcGB8gautqYACQ&sa=X&oi=book_result&ct=result&resnum=1&ved=0CCoQ6AEwAA#v=onepage&q&f=false)

ALR, page 218:

**Garrett Clopper**.- 1789, St. George's Lodge No. 2, NY; St. George's Lodge No. 19, NS; b. 1756, New York; 1780, New York Volunteers; 1783, Saint John, NB; 1786, Fredericton, NB; 1793, King's New Brunswick Regiment; 1823, d. Fredericton, NB.

In 1782 he was an ensign in the New York Volunteers, and quartermaster of the corps. He went to St. John, New Brunswick, in 1783, and was the grantee of a city lot. He received half-pay, was sergeant-at-arms of the House of Assembly, and a magistrate of York County. He died in that Province. He married Penelope Miller, b. 19 Feb 1764 in Milton, Norfolk, MA. 6 children.

Garrett was a New York loyalist of Dutch descent who had served with the provincial forces during the American revolution and who held minor civil offices in New Brunswick; his mother's family were genteel Massachusetts loyalists, with a connection to the family of Edward Winslow. He served as registrar of deeds and wills for York County and in the offices of sergeant-at-arms of the House of Assembly and county clerk.

[http://books.google.com/books?id=bNUUAAAAYAAJ&pg=PA138&lpg=PA138&dq=%22garret+clopper%22&source=bl&ots=ruVWbbG9uA&sig=3xR2bRn-E-ll3INfXtR9mE2HXbE&hl=en&ei=p05ITJW4QcL68AaTsJXKCA&sa=X&oi=book\\_result&ct=result&resnum=4&ved=0CB4Q6AEwAw#v=onepage&q=%22garret%20clopper%22&f=false](http://books.google.com/books?id=bNUUAAAAYAAJ&pg=PA138&lpg=PA138&dq=%22garret+clopper%22&source=bl&ots=ruVWbbG9uA&sig=3xR2bRn-E-ll3INfXtR9mE2HXbE&hl=en&ei=p05ITJW4QcL68AaTsJXKCA&sa=X&oi=book_result&ct=result&resnum=4&ved=0CB4Q6AEwAw#v=onepage&q=%22garret%20clopper%22&f=false) page 138.

THE ANCESTRY OF GARRET CLOPPER, by Harry Gordon Botsford, Boston, MA.

Garret Clopper was the son of Henry and Margaret (Keteltas) Clopper, born in New York City, and baptized in the Dutch Reformed Church, 6 Oct 1756. From a recommendation by John H. Cruger, dated Jul 1777, at Long Island, shows him to have served his mercantile apprenticeship in his employ with great satisfaction to Mr. Cruger. He was an officer in the New York Volunteers and received a commission, dated 29 Jan 1781, promoting him from ensign to lieutenant.

In 1783, he joined the Loyalists and sailed from New York for New Brunswick, and settled in Fredericton, where he built a handsome colonial residence on the corner of St. John and Brunswick Streets. He held many public offices of trust and responsibility, as follows: Deputy Postmaster, Pension Officer, Sergeant-at-Arms in Legislature, and by a commission, dated 5 Oct 1816, was appointed Surrogate of York County, which position he held till his death, 26 Jul 1823. His son, Henry G. Clopper, who held a commission in the British Army, retired to succeed his father as Surrogate; he afterwards founded the Central Bank of New Brunswick and became its first president.

Garret Clopper married 27 Jan 1791, Penelope Miller, b. Milton, MA, 19 Feb 1764; d. in Fredericton, 9 Mar 1833. She was a sister of Lt. Col. Samuel Miller of the US Marines, who, in the war of 1812, commanded the moving batteries at St. Leonard's Creek, opposing the British approach upon Washington, and receiving a severe wound while exposed to the fiercest attacks of the British. He died in Philadelphia in 1856.

Garret Clopper (Hendricus, 4 Cornelius, Johannes, \* Cornelius), bap. 6 Oct 1756; d. 16 Jul 1823; m. Penelope Miller, 27 Jan 1791, d/o Col. Stephen Miller, a Loyalist of Milton, MA, and Hannah (Howland) Dyer of Plymouth, MA, a descendant of John Rowland of the *Mayflower*, 1620.

Children born in Fredericton, New Brunswick:

- i. Henry George, b. 25 Apr 1792; m. 9 Feb 1820. Mary Ann Ketchum, d/o Richard Ketchum a Long Island, NY, Loyalist.
- ii. Sarah Hails, b. 01 Dec, 1795.
- iii. Margaret Ann, b. 17 Jan 1798.
- iv. Garret Williams, b. 28 Oct 1800; d. unm.; killed in duel.

-----

ALR, page 218:

**Caleb Closson [Clausen and Clawson]** – 1787, Charter member of New Oswegatchie Lodge No. 14, P.G.L., Quebec.

In the original minutes it is spelt "Closson." This brother resided at concession 1, lot 11, E. 1-2, 102 acres, patented 1 Dec 1797, also concession 1, lot 33. E. 1-2, 108 acres, 17 May 1802, and concession 3, lot 37, W. 1-2. 100 acres. 1 May 1798, all in the township of Augusta. Bro. Clauson could not have been the regular occupant of the JW's chair, for it is written "as" junior warden.

[http://www.oshelp.com/houghtonfamily/nancy\\_gilchrist%20inlage.htm](http://www.oshelp.com/houghtonfamily/nancy_gilchrist%20inlage.htm)

Caleb Clawson, b. 1762 in Kingsbury, Charlotte, NY; d. Augusta, Grenville, Ontario; son of Caleb Clawson and Elizabeth \_\_\_\_; m. 1780 in St. Johns, Willand, Ontario, Hannah Landon, b. 6 Jan 1764 in Salisbury, CT; d. 1810 in Augusta, Grenville, Ontario, d/o Asa Landon and Jerusha Grifface.

Caleb was a Sergeant in Major Jessup's Rangers, Loyalists in the American Revolution. Members of Jessup's Rangers were the first settlers of Augusta after the war. Lot 33, concession 1 was a grant to Caleb in 1802. He built his house in an architectural style favored by the early pioneers of Augusta. Homes and barns were built the same way; the first floor was underground and access was from the second floor at ground level. A story goes that this house was used as a paymaster's office for the troops stationed along the river. More old coins have been unearthed here than any other place on the river.

Children of Caleb Clawson and Hannah Landon:

- i. Nancy Anna Clawson, b. 12 Mar 1781, St. John, New Brunswick; d. Salt Lake City, Salt Lake, UT; m1. Archibald Gilchrist 23 Sep 1800 in St. John, New Brunswick; m2. Benjamin C. Ellsworth 23 Sep 1800 in Crosby, Leeds, Ontario.
- ii. Sarah Closson, b. 1783, Augusta, Johnstown, Ontario; d. 14 Dec 1873; m. William Davies
- iii. Asa Clawson, b. 1785, Augusta, Johnstown, Ontario; m1. Sarah Davis 1801; m2. Rosetta Wright 1817.
- iv. Polly Clawson, b. 1789, Augusta, Grenville, CA, m. Thomas Hill.
- v. Female A. Clawson, b. 1797 in Augusta, Grenville, CA
- vi. Female Clawson, b. 1797 in Augusta, Grenville, CA
- vii. Daughter A. Clawson, b. 1799 in Augusta, Grenville, CA
- viii. Daughter Clawson, b. 1799 in Augusta, Grenville, CA
- ix. Thirza Clawson, b. 11 Aug 1800; m. Charles Burnham 15 May 1834.
- x. Rebecca Clawson, b. 12 Mar 1781 in Augusta, Grenville, CA; d. 1 Jan 1832; m. William Burnam.

- Children of Caleb Clawson and Ruth Wing:
- i. Mary Clawson, m. Thomas Hill.
  - ii. Rebecca Clawson.
  - iii. Hannah Clawson.
  - iv. Samuel Clawson.

-----

**1783-84 William Cock** - Master of Lodge No. 210/212 E.R. (A), New York; 1782-83, Grand Secretary, Prov. GL of NY [5 Dec 1782 to 5 Jun 1783]; 1783, Junior Grand Warden; 1783-84 [5 Jun 1783 to 4 Feb 1784], Grand Master, Prov. GL of New York [19 Sep 1783 to 4 Feb 1784]; Deputy Register of the Court of Chancery in New York.

On 25 Nov 1783 the British troops were to evacuate New York City. A Grand Lodge of Emergency was held on 19 Sep to discuss what to do about the Provincial Warrant, since most of the Grand Officers were British Royalists. It was decided that the Warrant should "remain in the care of such brethren as may hereafter be appointed to succeed the present Grand Officers, the most of whom are under the necessity of leaving New York upon the removal of His Majesty's troops."

When Provincial Grand Master William Walter, also Chaplain for De Lancey's 3rd Battalion, left for Nova Scotia, Junior Grand Warden Cock, who had also served as Grand Secretary in 1782 and 1783, was elected Grand Master. At the meeting of 4 Feb 1784, at which the first Grand Stewards' Lodge was appointed, Grand Master Cock resigned and nominated Robert R Livingston, Chancellor of the State of New York, as Grand Master. William Cock also left with the departing British Troop.

On November 25, 1783, the British troops were to evacuate New York City. A Grand Lodge of Emergency was held on September 19th to discuss what to do about the Provincial Warrant, since most of the Grand Officers were British Royalists. It was decided that the Warrant should "remain in the care of such brethren as may hereafter be appointed to succeed the present Grand Officers, the most of whom are under the necessity of leaving New York upon the removal of His Majesty's troops." When Provincial Grand Master William Walter, also Chaplain for De Lancey's 3rd Battalion, left for Nova Scotia, Junior Grand Warden Cock was elected as Grand Master. At the meeting of February 4, 1784, at which the first Grand Stewards' Lodge was appointed, Grand Master Cock resigned and nominated Robert R Livingston, Chancellor of the State of New York, as Grand Master.

[http://www.archive.org/stream/biographicalregi02macb/biographicalregi02macb\\_djvu.txt](http://www.archive.org/stream/biographicalregi02macb/biographicalregi02macb_djvu.txt)

William Cock was the son of Abraham Cock and Hilah Minthorne. He graduated from Columbia College in 1775 and in 1790 received the degree of A. M. On 27 Mar 1782, he and Dorothy Wallace were granted a marriage license. He was admitted to the bar in 1784 and in the following year became Deputy Register of the Court of Chancery, subsequently becoming Register, which office he held until his death. In 1781, he appears as a notary at Burling Slip and the following year he removed to 66 Wall Street, near the "Main Guard opposite the Old Presbyterian Meeting" and advertised as "Notary, Conveyancer, etc." This was where the Mortimer Building, No. 11 Wall Street, long stood, in which the writer was located for many years. Singularly enough an old deed of this property shows that in 1786 Cock and his wife Dorothy disposed of part of it.

The seal attached to the document shows a cock perched on a tower. Mr. Cock was prominent in Masonry, serving as Master of Lodge No. 212; as Grand Secretary, to which office he was elected, 5 Dec 1782, at Assembly Hall, at Roubalitz, in the City of New York; as Junior Grand Warden, 5 Jun 1783, and Grand Master, 19 Sep 1783. He was also an honorary member of the Marine Society. He died 7 Jul 1793, about 38 years of age, and was buried with Masonic honors in Trinity Churchyard. He left no will and "friends of the deceased," James Saldler and Dr. James Tillary (both members of the Society) were appointed administrators of his estate. He had a country place at Metinicock, Oyster Bay, Long Island. Two sons survived him, Archibald Minthorne and William, the latter dying 27 Jan 1815. — The Press; Col. Coll. Cat.; Col. E. M. L. Ehlers, Grand Secretary F&AM.

----

In the name of God, Amen. I, ABRAHAM COCK, of New York, cooper, being sick and weak, May 29, 1773. My executors are to pay all debts. I leave to my son **William** L5, two gold rings, "and a silver table spoon, marked A. C. H., and all my wearing apparell; Also my silver watch." I leave to my daughter Hannah "one gold mourning ring of **my former wife Hilah**"; Also another gold ring and a silver milk pot, "and table spoon marked A. C. H., and six tea spoons," and all the wearing apparell of my former wife. I leave to my wife Anne, three silver table spoons marked A. C. H., and L5 for mourning. My executors are to hire out or sell my negro man, "Joseph," and pay the money to my wife and my children, **William**, Hannah, and Hilah. I leave to my three children "all those three certain lots in the Bowery in the Out Ward, now in occupation of George Birke, butcher, subject to a mortgage to Robert Leake, Esq." I leave all the rest to my wife and children, and my executors are to sell the house where I now live. I make Joseph Jadwin and Mangle Minthorne, cooper, executors.

Witnesses, Jasper Drake, Tavern keeper, Foster Lewis, Charles Morse.

<http://www.popenoe.com/Minthorn-NYC.htm>

Hilah (Hillegond) Minthorn, baptized 23 Sep 1729, married **Abraham Cock**, cooper, at Trinity Church on 29 Jan 1756. Abraham died about 1786 when his property was sold, consisting of 8 acres, a two-story brick house and sundry fruit trees. Mangle Minthorn, who lived next door, was one of his executors.

Children:

- i Hannah Cock, m. Nathaniel Dickinson, later of New Brunswick Province.
- ii **William Cock**
- iii Hilah Cock

-----

**Isaac Collins** – 1779, Charter Member and Master, Lodge No. 210 E.R. (A), New York; 1780-82 Master

[http://books.google.com/books?id=PkEuAAAAYAAJ&pg=PR5&dq=%22isaac+collins%22+%22master%22&hl=en&ei=X8RmTNgsD4P\\_8Aa\\_kbzFBA&sa=X&oi=book\\_result&ct=result&resnum=6&ved=0CEQQ6AEwBTge#v=onepage&q=%22isaac%20collins%22%20%22master%22&f=false](http://books.google.com/books?id=PkEuAAAAYAAJ&pg=PR5&dq=%22isaac+collins%22+%22master%22&hl=en&ei=X8RmTNgsD4P_8Aa_kbzFBA&sa=X&oi=book_result&ct=result&resnum=6&ved=0CEQQ6AEwBTge#v=onepage&q=%22isaac%20collins%22%20%22master%22&f=false) page v.

The year 1783 saw many changes in the Grand and Subordinate Lodges, owing to the approaching evacuation of the city by the British soldiers and those English sympathizers who had taken advantage of the offer of homes in Nova Scotia presented by the English Government.

Wor. Bro. Joshua Watson, the Master of Lodge No. 210, left for Nova Scotia, and we read in the minutes of the Grand Lodge for June 19, 1783, "The Grand Lodge being convened in consequence of a memorial from Bro. Richard Jenkins, Senior Warden of Lodge No. 210, and in the absence of Bro. Joshua Watson, Master of said Lodge, in behalf of himself and sixteen brethren, members of said Lodge, representing that **Bro. Isaac Collins**, with some other brethren belonging to said Lodge, are using their utmost endeavors to remove the Warrant by which the said Lodge is established in this city, to St. Johns in Nova Scotia, and praying that this Grand Lodge will take the same into their serious consideration."

After a careful consideration of the matter, the Grand Lodge decided unanimously that the charter and jewels of Lodge No. 210 should remain in New York City. At the end of the year 1783, there remained only Lodges Nos. 169, 210 and 212 of those which organized the Grand Lodge, and of these No. 210 is the only one represented in the Grand Lodge today. (The present Trinity Lodge No. 12, which has wandered from the traditions of its ancestry and become German in sentiment and language, and Washington Lodge No. 21, constituted old No. 210.)

-----

**Dr. John Constable** – 1766, St. Patrick's Lodge No. 4, P.G.L., Johnstown, NY; Indian Department; went to Canada; b. ca 1728, Ireland; d. 17 Apr 1785, age 57. British Army surgeon who came to North America during the 'French and Indian War' between Britain and France (1754-1763); he stayed in America and during the Revolutionary War he became an aide-de-camp to General Lafayette; he became a merchant in Philadelphia and was in partnership with the brothers Gouverneur and Robert Morris. His wife, Jane, died 7 Oct 1805, in Schenectady, NY in her 73rd year. He was a friend of Sir William Johnson.

-----

John Constable, surgeon, to my four children, William Kerin Constable, Eweretta Phin [Phyn] *alias* Constable, Harriet Constable, and James Constable, to each of them £1 1s. sterling money of Great Britain as soon after my decease as they shall demand the same; all the residue of my estate to my wife Jane, for her sole use, with power to dispose thereof as she may think proper. I appoint my wife and James Ellis\*, merchant, executors.

Dated 16 Jan 1785. Witnesses, John Young, Thomas Barrow, Anthony Ackley, New York City, merchant. Proved, 11 May 1795.

\* James Ellis [Ellice] would most likely be the younger brother of Alexander Ellice of the famous firm of Phyn, Ellice and Company of Schenectady.

-----

<http://www.ebooksread.com/authors-eng/evelyn-p-evelyn-pierrepoint-bartow/bartow-genealogy-containing-every-one-of-the-name-of-bartow-descended-from-doct-tra/page-3-bartow-genealogy-containing-every-one-of-the-name-of-bartow-descended-from-doct-tra.shtml>

Doctor John Constable, of Dublin, a surgeon in the British army, b. 1728, settled in Montreal, 1753, d. in N. Y., 1785. He m. Jane **Kerin**, or Kieran, b. in Dublin in 1731, d. in NY, 7 Oct 1805. d/o William Kerin and Jane Ewer, an old Dublin family. A monument to Dr. Constable and wife is erected over their remains in St. Paul's churchyard, NY. They had six children:

1. **William Kerin**, b. 1752; d. 1802; m. Ann Marie White.
2. Eweretta, m. **James Phyn**, of London.
3. Elisabeth Thomasine, d. unm.
4. George, d. unm.
5. Harriette, m. Thomas Pierce, of Bristol, England; their dau. Jane, b. 1789, m. Mr. Clarke, of Devonshire.
6. James, b. in Schenectady, 1769, d. 1807 unm..

William Constable, b. in Dublin, 1752, Aide to Lafayette, settled at Constable; d. NY City, 1802. In 1782, he m. Ann, d. of Townsend White/ a native of Wales, but of the Whites of Bristol, and Warden of Christ Church, Philadelphia.

<http://wc.rootsweb.ancestry.com/cgi-bin/igm.cgi?op=GET&db=mizemoore&id=I0037>

Dr. John Constable b. 1728 in Dublin, Ireland ; d. 1785 in Schenectady, NY; bur. St Paul's, New York City, NY, son of [William Constable](#) b. 1693 in Loggan in the Manor of Wingfield, County Wexford, Ireland , and [Elizabeth Owens](#) b. ca. 1695; m. ca 1750 [Jane Kerin](#) b. 1731 in Dublin.  
Children

1. [William Kerin Constable](#) b: 1 Jan 1751/52 in Dublin, Ireland
2. [Eweretta Constable](#) b: 1754 in Dublin, Ireland
3. [Elisabeth Thomasine Constable](#) b: 1756 in Montreal, Canada
4. [George Constable](#) b: 1758 in Montreal, Canada
5. [Harriette Constable](#) b: 1761 in Montreal, Canada
6. [James Constable](#) b: 1769 in Schenectady



<http://auden.stanford.edu/cgi-bin/auden/individual.php?pid=I7100&ged=auden-bicknell.ged>

William Constable [portrait at right], b. 1 Jan 1752, Dublin; d. 22 May 1803, New York; m. Ann White of Philadelphia, a friend Miss Dandridge who became Mrs. George Washington; Owner of extensive landholdings in upstate New York (he was part of the small syndicate that made the giant 'Macomb Purchase'), ship owner and importing merchant; in partnership with Gouverneur Morris was one of the first American merchants to trade on a large scale with China; 1789 - President of the St. Patrick's Society, New York City (Alexander Macomb was Vice President); 1791 - Participated in the 'Macomb Purchase' of over 3.6 million acres in upper New York with Alexander Macomb and Daniel McCormick.

[http://books.google.com/books?id=76UUAAYAAJ&pg=PA238&lpg=PA238&dq=%22Dr.+John+Constable%22+%22phyn%22&source=bl&ots=5nCljZdR8S&sig=IXCtdb07Yr-YX7Dmx6MdZkNMSpM&hl=en&ei=h4BITOGLBYO78gaL99GoCQ&sa=X&oi=book\\_result&ct=result&resnum=6&ved=0CCYQ6AEwBQ#v=onepage&q=%22Dr.%20John%20Constable%22%20%22phyn%22&f=false](http://books.google.com/books?id=76UUAAYAAJ&pg=PA238&lpg=PA238&dq=%22Dr.+John+Constable%22+%22phyn%22&source=bl&ots=5nCljZdR8S&sig=IXCtdb07Yr-YX7Dmx6MdZkNMSpM&hl=en&ei=h4BITOGLBYO78gaL99GoCQ&sa=X&oi=book_result&ct=result&resnum=6&ved=0CCYQ6AEwBQ#v=onepage&q=%22Dr.%20John%20Constable%22%20%22phyn%22&f=false) page 238.

**Dr. John Constable**, was a surgeon in the British army, and came to Montreal during the French war, and brought his son William, then an infant, with him. In 1762 Governor Cadwallader Colden granted him a commission as surgeon in the first regiment, in the pay of the province of New York. He then removed to Schenectady, where his daughter married Mr. James Phyn, who was there engaged in the Indian trade, in correspondence with Col. Sir William Johnson.

Dr. Constable sent his son to Dublin for his education, to the care of his paternal aunt, Mrs. White, with whom he resided, while a student at Trinity college. By inheritance he became possessed of a valuable estate near Dublin. On his return to America his kinsman, Mr. Phyn, associated him in his business at Schenectady. On the breaking out of the war of the revolution Mr. Phyn and his friend Mr. Alexander Ellice, removed to England under a pass from the committee of safety, in consequence of which their property was not confiscated. These gentlemen established in England the firm of Phyn, Ellice and Inglis—a firm which gave two members to the privy council in the persons of their sons, Sir Robert Inglis and the right honorable Edward Ellice.

-----

ALR, page 219:

**Charles and Robert Cooke** – 1766, Crosswicks, NJ; 1780 (Robert) and 1782 (Charles), Lodge No. 210 E.R. (A), New York.

<http://www.royalprovincial.com/Military/rhist/njv/njvofficers.htm>

New Jersey Volunteers:

COOKE, Charles, Lieut. Colonel Dec 1776 (warrant only)

COOKE, Robert, Lieut. Colonel 24 Dec 1776 (warrant)

**Charles Cooke** emigrated from Ireland in 1766 and was in partnership with his brother, **Robert**, as a general import-export merchant at **Crosswicks**, Burlington county, NJ, near the Delaware River. He was captured in December, 1776, in an endeavor to raise recruits for the New Jersey Volunteers and collect provisions, just after the Battle of Trenton, and was a prisoner of war in Philadelphia and later in Lancaster. While on parole in Philadelphia he had cleverly bought up about L2,000 of flour, 'in hopes of reserving them for the use of the British Army, who was then expected, shortly, to take possession of this City.' In 1779 he was exchanged and allowed to rejoin his brother, **Robert**, in New York.

CHARLES and ROBERT COOKE to His MAJESTY'S COMMISSIONERS. - 1778, Nov. 20. New York.—Copy of a memorial; annexed to their original memorial to the Treasury, 8 April 1782, which see.

ROBERT and CHARLES COOKE. - 1779, May 12. New York—Copy of a Petition of Robert and Charles Cooke on this date praying payment for a quantity of flour issued by the British on their occupation of Philadelphia which he had purchased and removed to Chesnut [sic] Hill in hopes of reserving for them. He himself had been made prisoner and ordered within the British lines. Annexed to an original petition, see 8 April 1782.

Charles was apparently at 97 Wardour Street in Soho, England, around 12 Jun 1782, when visited by his friend James Moody, who stayed with him for the next year. Charles posted the following notice on 25 May 1779:

FOR SALE. All the lands and improvements belonging to the subscriber at Crosswicks landing, in navigation to Philadelphia, in a rich and populous neighbourhood, consisting of a large two story dwelling house and kitchen adjoining, sundry store houses and other buildings, all new and in good repair. Credit, immediate possession, and a good title will be given. Enquire of Isaiah Robbins. near the premises, or in Philadelphia to CHARLES COOKE.

-----

**Richard Cooper** – 1782, Lodge No. 169 E.R. (A), New York; Petitioner for St. George's Lodge No. 2, New York; 1783, St. Ann's Point, NB; 1792, St. George's Lodge No. 19, Mougerville, NB; b. 1756, America; d. bef 1799.

<http://www.royalprovincial.com/Military/rhist/njv/njvofficers.htm>

Richard Cooper, 4th Battalion, **New Jersey Volunteers**; Sergeant Major in 1777; Ensign 25 Aug 1780; Lieutenant 25 Oct 1782

A remarkable occurrence happened on February 27th [1780?] when a party of twenty men from the 4th's light company under Ensign Richard COOPER fell behind the rest of the battalion to cover the repair of a broken down wagon. They were quickly surrounded by two hundred men under the great rebel partisan Sumpter.



Summoned to lay down their arms, COOPER replied "Light Infantry never surrender!" and ordered his men to form a loose square behind trees. They held off ten times their number until Lt. Col. WATSON doubled back with the rest of the battalion and drove Sumpter off. COOPER was thanked in General Orders for his gallantry, and he quickly became the toast of the town. In 1782 he would be rewarded with a lieutenancy, after starting the war as sergeant major.

-----

In the name of God, Amen. I, WILLIAM CORBY, of the City of New York, being of sound mind and memory. After just debts be paid, I leave to my dearly beloved wife Ann, all my real and personal estate until my children, John and Elizabeth, shall be twenty-one years of age; who at their majority are to have equal shares of my real estate; every part of the personal estate at that time to become the sole property of my wife. Should both die in non-age, the whole real estate to go to my wife. She is to provide for the children until their coming of age. The mother of my wife, Mary Emett, shall remain on the estate and have a maintenance for the term of her natural life. I make my good friends, Richard Jenkins, and Jasper Ruckel, bakers, of the City of New York, jointly with my wife, Ann Corby, executors.

Dated August 15/1782. Witnesses', William Walter, John Kirk, of City of N. Y., inn-keeper, William Bull. Proved, November 11, 1782.

-----

#### James Courtney -

Courtney, Thomas, Richard, and **James**. of Boston. The first was an Addresser of Gage in 1775, went to Halifax in 1776, was proscribed and banished in 1778, and lost £2000 in consequence of his loyalty. The three removed to Shelburne, Nova Scotia, from New York, at the peace; Thomas, with a family of four, and four servants. They built largely at their new home; but Shelburne soon declined, and Richard went to Charleston, South Carolina, and **James to Wilmington, North Carolina**.

-----

ALR, page 219:

**Archibald Cunningham** – b. ca 1744, Haddington, Scotland; 1760, Boston; 1775, Lodge No. 169 E.R. (A), Boston; Loyal North British Volunteers; 1776, New York; 1776, Halifax, NS; 1777, Boston estate confiscated; 1778, proscribed [banished]; 1779, New York; 1779, Lodge No. 213 E.R. (A), New York; 1782, Secretary; 1780, JW Lodge No. 169, E.R. (A), New York; 1781, JW; 1781, SW; 1782-83, Master; **1783, Deputy Grand Master, GL New York**; 1783, Shelburne, NS; 1790, joined **Parr Lodge No. 3**, Shelburne, NS; 1791, Treasurer; 1797-1801, Secretary; d. 1820.

**Archibald Cunningham** of Boston. Merchant. Member of the North Church, and high in office among the Free Masons. Went to New York in 1776, and was proscribed and banished in 1778.

At the peace, accompanied by his family of six persons, and by one servant, he went from New York to Shelburne, Nova Scotia. His losses in consequence of his loyalty were estimated at £1100. In Nova Scotia he was Clerk of the Peace, and Register of Probate. He was a man of reading and observation, and left valuable papers. He died in 1820.

BOSTON, MARCH 26, 1892.

MR. JOHN L. LOUDON,

Treasurer Scots' Charitable Society [of Boston]:

*Dear Sir:*—While visiting Shelburn, N. S., last autumn, I found, among some old papers relating to the early settlement of Shelburn by the Loyalists, a number belonging to the estate of **Archibald Cunningham, Esq.**, Treasurer of your Society at the time of the Revolution. As these papers include letters and copies of correspondence which had passed between Mr. Cunningham, Sir Guy Carlton, Chief Justice Bower and others, at that most interesting time, I consider it my duty to place your Society in possession of these records, and now take the opportunity, while passing through your city, to do so.

Believe me,  
Yours very truly,  
JAMES S. MACDONALD. 69 Victoria Road, Halifax, N. S.

ARCHIBALD CUNNINGHAM This prosperous Scotsman of Boston joined the Loyal North British Volunteers in 1775. ... and later at New York and Shelburne, and ever esteemed him as perfect in his loyalty, amiable hi his private character . . .

-----

**John Davan [Da Van]** – 1758, Master, Royal Arch and King Solomon's Lodge No. 1, New York; 1771, Master, Trinity Lodge No. 1, New York; 1772, subscriber to Calcott's *Disquisition*; 1786, attended GL of New Jersey; 1789, Temple Lodge No. 13, New York. d. ca 1796. One of about 1000 signers [along with John Davan, Jr.] of the 16 Oct 1776 New York "Petition" to Lord Richard Howe and Gen. William Howe when the British occupied New York. [see Appendix I].

John Davan, leather dresser and breeches maker, at the sign of the "Crown and Breeches [sic - Thistle]," next door to Messrs. Robert and John Murray, Queen (*Pearl*) street, near the Fly Market, where he transacted a very extensive wholesale and retail trade.

Ref. ALR, Vol. VI, No. 3, page 402, paper, 'The 'Royal Arch and King Solomon Lodge' No. 218 and one of its Masters, John Devan.'

In an advertisement in the *New York Gazette*, 31 Mar 1760, John DaVan, a skinner and leather breeches maker, informed the public he had set up business at Elizabeth Town almost two miles from the Court House on the Boston Post Road leading from Elizabeth Town to Woodbridge. He may have been associated with brethren who endeavored to secure a charter for the Lodge at Elizabethtown (now Elizabeth), NY, in July 1762, from St. Johns Grand Lodge, Boston, MA, to be called Temple Lodge. There is no record of the charter having been granted or the Lodge constituted, but it is mentioned in the proceedings of the said Grand Lodge.

John Davan, as Master of Trinity Lodge No. 1, New York City, in Oct 1771, sent a letter of congratulations to Sir John Johnson, Provincial Grand Master. In the 1772 edition of Calcott's *Disquisition*, one of the subscribers is noted as John Davan, Master of Trinity Lodge, New York. In Aug 1776 he wrote to Moses Michael Hays in Newport, RI, about furnishing aprons for the Knights of the Sun. An advertisement in the *Pennsylvania Gazette* of 28 Sep 1774 relates to a request for the return of a runaway slave purchased from John Davan, Haccansach (Hackernsack) Township, Bergen County, NJ.

GL of NY Proceedings, 1898. page 106

[http://books.google.com/books?id=nHxLAAAAMAAJ&pg=PA108&dq=%22john+davan%22+%22lodge%22&hl=en&ei=oQloTP\\_9AoG78qb7z5i0BA&sa=X&oi=book\\_result&ct=result&resnum=1&ved=0CDIQ6AEwAA#v=onepage&q=%22john%20davan%22%20%22lodge%22&f=false](http://books.google.com/books?id=nHxLAAAAMAAJ&pg=PA108&dq=%22john+davan%22+%22lodge%22&hl=en&ei=oQloTP_9AoG78qb7z5i0BA&sa=X&oi=book_result&ct=result&resnum=1&ved=0CDIQ6AEwAA#v=onepage&q=%22john%20davan%22%20%22lodge%22&f=false)

In the proceedings of the Lodge Quator Coronati (No. 2076, English Register), Volume X., there is an article on Kirkwall Kilwinning Lodge, No. 382 (Scotland). In an extract there printed from its minutes reference was made, under date of 1759, to "**Royal Arch King Solomon's Lodge, No. 2, New York.**" Following up this clue I obtained, through Brother R. Muir, one of the members of that venerable Lodge, a copy of a warrant which seems that year to have been presented by a visitor from New York, and fortunately preserved in the record. The warrant, or diploma, reads as follows:

"And the Darkness comprehended it not. In the East a place full of light where reigns silence and peace. We, the Master and Wardens of the Royall Arch King Solomon's Lodge, No. 2, in the City of New York adorn'd with all their Honours and Assembled in due form, Do hereby declare, certify, and attest to all men enlightened and spread on the face of the earth, that the bearer hereof. Robert Bryson, hath been received and Enter'd an Apprentice, Fellow Craft, and after proof and due try all we have given him the Sublime Degree of a Master Mason, and he lawfully and safely may without any demurr be admitted into and accepted of by any Society to whom these presents shall come. Given under our hands and Seal of our Lodge in the City of New York in North America the 20th day of May 1759 and in Masonry 5759.

	(Signed)	<b>JOHN DA VAN, Master."</b>
(Signed) John THOMPSON,	"	JOHN MARSRALL, <i>Sen'r Warden.</i>
<i>D. Secretary.</i>	"	THOMAS HULL, <i>Jun'r Warden.</i>

In this case we must suppose that "Royal Arch" is simply a distinguishing name, such as "Keystone" or "Acacia" have at the present day, and had no more particular reference to any part of its work than is conveyed by the above names to the Lodges which now bear them. In the Scotch system we have still a variety of Lodges bearing this name. Royal Arch, Stilling (1759); Royal Arch, Cambusland (1769); Royal Arch, Rutherglen (1769); Royal Arch, Perth (1770), are a few instances.

The records of the establishment of Lodges by Provincial Grand Masters Coxe, Riggs, and Goelet, so far as our present knowledge goes, are simply represented by blanks. Coxe's homestead and his papers were destroyed by fire during the Revolutionary War; Riggs appears to have done nothing, although, judging from the inferences in the New York newspapers of the day, he infused considerable activity concerning the craft; and, so far as we know from any actual evidence, Goelet was merely a figurehead. I have long held, but without securing any evidence, that both Coxe and Riggs did more for Masonry in New York than merely hold the empty honor of leadership in a non-existent army. There were Masons in New York before Harrison's time. In the newspaper extracts in Valentine's *Manual of the Common Council (New York)* for 1865, is a copy of an advertisement which appeared in the *New York Gazette* of January 22, 1739, calling a meeting of "the Lodge" on the first and third Wednesdays of each month and signed "by order of the Grand Master, C. Wood, Secretary." The Grand Master, in this instance, would be Captain Richard Griggs, who arrived in New York from London in May, 1738.

Many facts seem to me to point that in New York City we had a series of Lodges, bearing numbers, which were in existence before Harrison's advent, but of which details have not yet been discovered, although I have no doubt that as in a more notable matter, time, patience, and perseverance may yet bring to light and discover the full story. Without being committed to any idea of correctness in the premises, desiring mainly to present a theory, the investigation of which, even if it should result in the theory being clearly shown to be untenable, would surely elicit some facts, I would suggest the following as a pre-Harrison arrangement of Lodges.

1. Temple.
2. King Solomon's Royal Arch.
3. Trinity.
4. Hiram.
8. Independent Royal Arch.

We know that No. 1 existed in December 23, 1758, for it then celebrated the festival of St. John; of the origin of 3 and 4 we know nothing, but they seem to have been for the time, powerful Lodges; the warrant here printed is evidence that No. 2 was a working Lodge in 1759, and the evidence we have seems to show that No. 8 was a working Lodge in 1760, with—like the others—a history extending prior to that date. Prior to Harrison's time there were at least three regiments in this country holding warrants, Fifth Infantry, (No. 80 Irish), Thirty-third Infantry, (No. 12Irish), and Twenty-seventh Infantry, (No. 24 Irish).

One peculiarity seems deserving of being pointed out: **John Davan**, who signed the diploma of King Solomon's Royal Arch (here printed) was described in Calcott's "Disquisitions on Freemasonry," (Boston reprint, 1772), as "**R.'. W.'. Mr. John Davan, Master of Trinity Lodge, New York,**" (W. J. Hughan in "Liberal Freemason" London, April, 1887), and it was the same Brother who a year earlier, in 1771, as Master of that Lodge signed a congratulatory letter to Sir John Johnson, on his appointment as Provincial Grand Master.

I have presented all this for three reasons, (1st), because it establishes beyond doubt the existence of a hitherto unknown early New York Lodge as Royal Arch King Solomon's No. 2;

(2d), because it shows the wide and interesting range of themes for investigation open to whoever engages in the study of Masonic history in New York, a study which becomes the more delightful and engrossing the more deeply it is prosecuted, and (3d), by working on this theory of a pre-Harrison set of Lodges, we may arrive at some undiscovered facts even although in the course of the discovery most of what is presented in the theory here laid down should be proved, which is quite likely to be the case.

History deals with truth. No statement should be presented as a fact unless backed up by indisputable evidence, but it is often well, in the absence of facts, to formulate a theory based upon what information we do possess and use it as a guide. The time has gone past when a historian—even a Masonic historian—will formulate a theory, imagine it a fact, and defend it against demonstrable truth with all the invective which the language permits. . . .

PETER ROSS,  
*Historian of Grand Lodge*

-----  
**William de Drach** [Ensign – later Lieutenant- Wilhelm von Drach or Wilhelm Drach von Ellershausen] – 1782, Lodge No. 213 E.R. (A), New York; 1783, Mater; Hiram Lodge No. 5, New York; Knyphausen Regiment, Hessian Corps.

Ensign Wilhelm von Drach was born at Ellrichshausen. At the time of the battles of Trenton in Dec 1776 he was 18 years old and was serving in the von Minnigerode company. He was taken prisoner at the battle.

<http://www.ushistory.org/washingtoncrossing/history/crossagain.htm>



Most people when referencing Washington's crossing of the Delaware River are speaking of the crossing which occurred on December 25, 1776, which preceded the first battle of Trenton. However, to be truly correct, that is only one of many crossings which Washington and his men undertook during the Trenton/Princeton campaign of late 1776/early 1777. The boat ride across the River that Christmas night on the way to New Jersey had its own set of obstacles, inclement weather and exhaustion, and fears as the troops headed into the unknowns surrounding a battle, however the return trip after the first battle of Trenton had just as many difficulties and arguably more than that of December 25th. After the battle of Trenton, the weather continued to be debilitating as the sleet and snow fall which had just begun in full force during the Christmas crossing now lay heavy on the ground and ice surrounded the boats in the river as the cycle of melt and re-freezing continued to make travel difficult. Precipitation continued to fall in the bitter air, making weary troops more miserable and chilling the captured prisoners. A return to Pennsylvania was necessary to give the victorious Continentals some time to rest in a safe haven and plan their next move. It also allowed for dissemination of approximately 900 Hessian prisoners. The prisoners also had to make the treacherous river crossing, with the Marbleheaders and some Associators manning the oars. Some of the

diary accounts left by both Hessian (translated by Bruce Burgoyne) and Americans tell the story best. The story of their crossing to Pennsylvania after the battle is told below:

[The writer of the diary did not participate during the attack, but been ordered to cover the flank. His regiment had been ordered to secure the bridge, which proved not be feasible. The writer, having sought to wade through the water, soon found the regiments were captured.]

“After being made captive we were immediately transferred across the Delaware in boats, the river being full of ice, so that we had to resign ourselves to the possibility of death. The wind was so strong against us, and the ice prevented the boat I was in from reaching the shore, so that we were driven almost two miles down the Delaware. I therefore resolved, in order not to spend the night on this river, in such dreadful weather, and gradually to die, to jump into the river and either die quickly or to get on land. I did that and **Lieutenant [Wilhelm] von Drach** followed me, as did the troops in the boat. Fortunately we reached land, but had to wade through water up to our chest for seventy yards, breaking through ice in many places. It would have been no surprise if this destroyed our health and instead of a promotion and a good nest egg, returned home to an unhappy prince with a wasted body.” – Capt. Andreas Wiederholdt (Hessian)

-----  
**John Lewis DeKoven** – 1780, Lodge No. 210 E.R. (A), New York; joined St. John's Lodge No. 2, CT; 1783, Royal Arch Captain, Middletown, CT; Lossberg's Regiment, Hessian Corps; Lt., Royal New Foundland Fencible Infantry; d. 13 Apr 1821, Upper Canada.

<http://www.smokershistory.com/before.html>

**John Lewis DeKoven**, a "foreigner" born in 1748, m. Elizabeth Sebor in 1781. His son, Henry L. De Koven married Margaret T. Sebor. John was "Taken off a British transport by a colonial privateer and brought in to be interned at Middletown, Connecticut was an officer in the Hanoverian auxiliaries of the British forces, John Lewis DeKoven. He must have been an enthusiastic Mason, and a persuasive fellow, as soon after his arrival in 1783 the lodge at Middletown was resuscitated from its war time dormancy, and DeKoven took the initiative in organizing a 'Grand' Royal Arch Chapter, that is, that is, a chapter which was self constituted and independent, although it was formed under sanction of the local lodge. This was an unusual thing to do in Connecticut, and St. Johns Lodge in Middletown is the only one, and there were a dozen in the state at that time, to lend its sanction to a Royal Arch chapter. It almost looks as though it was revived for that purpose.... DeKoven's enthusiasm was not confined to Masonry. Although he contracted a perfectly respectable marriage, apparently his European gallantry did not fit into the mores of the Land of Steady Habits. He began to wander from the straight and narrow path, and when he was caught chasing a neighbor's wife, the irate husband chased him out of town. On the way out, he sold his mark, the anchor of hope, and he is said to have fled to Canada." ("American Masonic Roots in British Military Lodges." W.L. James R. Case, Master, American Lodge of Research, New York City).

-----

**Israel Delieben [De Lieben]** – 1770, from Bohemia; 1781, Lodge No. 206 I.C.; 1782, Lodge No. 169 E.R. (A), New York [?]; 1783, visitor to Lodge No. 211 E.R. (A), Halifax, NS; d. 1807, Charleston, SC.

[http://books.google.com/books?id=EGAOcfEpTuAC&pg=PA143&dq=%22israel+delieben%22&hl=en&ei=xLNoTKXaC8L48AaB9cy2BA&sa=X&oi=book\\_result&ct=result&resnum=1&ved=0CCqQ6AEwAA#v=onepage&q=%22israel%20delieben%22&f=false](http://books.google.com/books?id=EGAOcfEpTuAC&pg=PA143&dq=%22israel+delieben%22&hl=en&ei=xLNoTKXaC8L48AaB9cy2BA&sa=X&oi=book_result&ct=result&resnum=1&ved=0CCqQ6AEwAA#v=onepage&q=%22israel%20delieben%22&f=false) page 143.

He was born in Prague, Bohemia in 1740, and after attaining his majority emigrated, finally arriving in Charleston, SC, about 1770. He was a Jew, a man of education and character, a scrupulous observer of his faith, but liberal and tolerant in his religious opinions. He evidently spent some of the intervening time in residence in Dublin, Ireland, and while there received much of his Masonry, for in a certificate dated 20 Mar 1792, given by him to Abraham Jacobs, Dilieben describes himself as:

"Grand Elect, Perfect and Sublime Mason, Knight of the East, Prince of Jerusalem, &c., &c. &c., Perfect Prince of the Sun, Grand Master Ecose, &c., &c., &c., Perfect Prince Mason – Duely authorized by the Most Puissant and Illustrious Grand Council of Dublin, on the 11th day of January 1770 – under the immediate auspice of the Most Puissant and Illustrious Marquis of Kildare, now Duke of Linster –"

and signed the certificate as:

"K. & S. P. of R. S. P. M.

In Charleston he engaged in mercantile pursuits and by his active and sterling integrity acquired after some years a handsome competency. He was described as one who loved Freemasonry and who put into practice its pure principles with remarkable fidelity. He was plain and undemonstrative in his manner and his charities were not circumscribed by sectarian lines. The poor of every creed were his beneficiaries and he was known as the "liberal-handed Jew."

He became a member of Orange Lodge No. 14 at Charleston in 1797. In the Annual Register for 1802 he is noted as a member of the Sublime Lodge of Perfection, Grand Treasurer of the Council of Princes of Jerusalem, a Knight Rose Croix, Keeper of the Seals and Archives in the Grand Consistory, and a Sovereign Grand Inspector of the Supreme Council.

He passed away at Charleston and was buried in the Jewish Cemetery on Corning Street, the inscription on his tombstone reading:

"Sacred to the Memory of Mr. Israel De Lieben, a native of Bohoemia who departed this life on the 28th January 1807 in the 67th year of his age."

-----

**Abraham De Peyster** – b. New York; New Jersey Volunteers; King's Royal American Regiment; 1783 Parr Town (Saint John), Maugerville, NB; 1789, SW St. George's Lodge No. 2, NY; St. George's Lodge No. 19, Maugerville, NB; d. 1798, St. John, NB.

[http://books.google.com/books?id=QjUNAAAIAAJ&pg=PA378&ots=piyfEJIW aR&dq=%22Biographical+Sketches+of+Loyalists+of+the+American+Revolution%22&output=text#c\\_top](http://books.google.com/books?id=QjUNAAAIAAJ&pg=PA378&ots=piyfEJIW aR&dq=%22Biographical+Sketches+of+Loyalists+of+the+American+Revolution%22&output=text#c_top)

**Abraham De Peyster** of New York. The De Peysters are of noble descent. Johannes de Peijster, (Peister, or Pester) the ancestor of this family in this country, was driven from his native land in the time of Charles the 9th, during that monarch's persecutions of his Protestant subjects. He settled in New York, and became an eminent merchant. "Portions of the costly articles of furniture, the elegant and massive family silver plate, and pictures, perfect gems of art ... which he brought out from Holland, are still in the possession of his descendants."

The subject of this notice was born in 1753. Two of his uncles, and one of his great-uncles, were members of the Council; another uncle was Chief-Justice of the Colony; and a brother-in-law was in command of a regiment of Royal Artillery. It is easy, therefore, to account for the loyalty of one so young and thus connected. He entered the King's service, and was a captain in the New York Volunteers. He was second in command at the battle of King's Mountain, in 1780, and, after the fall of Ferguson, hoisted a flag as a signal of surrender. The firing immediately ceased, and the Royal troops laying down their arms, the most of which were loaded, submitted to the conquerors at discretion. It seems not to be generally understood, that nearly the whole of Ferguson's force was composed of Loyalists; but such is the fact. He went into action with 1125 men, of whom only 162 were Regulars. Of the Loyalists, no less than 206 were killed, 128 wounded, and 629 taken prisoners. The loss of Regulars was 18 slain and 103 wounded and captured. Captain De Peyster was paid off the morning of the battle. Among the coin which he received was a doubloon, which he put in a pocket of his vest. While on the field, a bullet struck the gold and stopped, and his life was thus saved. Sims, in his "Life of Marion" relates that Major Postell, "who was stationed to guard the lower part of the Pedee, succeeded in capturing Captain De Peyster, with 29 grenadiers." "De Peyster," he continues, "had taken post in the dwelling-house of Postell's father. The latter had

with him but 28 militia, but he knew the ground, and gaining possession of the kitchen, fired it, and was preparing to burn the house also, when the Loyalist captain submitted. A gentleman of De Peyster's lineage informs me that Sims is inaccurate; that, in the court of inquiry which followed the surrender, it was proved that the Whig force was about 100, and entirely surrounded his kinsman's band of "twenty-nine."

Captain De Peyster, Frederick. of New York. Brother of the preceding. While a minor, he was in command of a company raised for the protection of his uncle, Hon. William Axtell, a member of the Council, who lived in Flushing, Long Island. Subsequently, he was a captain in the New York Volunteers. In swimming a river on horseback, a rifle bullet passed through both his legs, and killed his horse. At the storming of Fort Montgomery in 1777, a detachment of his regiment, which was a part of the Royal force, was the first to enter the works. In 1784 Captain De Peyster was at St. John, New Brunswick, and received the grant of a city lot. In 1792 he was a magistrate in the county of York. He returned to the United States. His first wife was, daughter of Commissary-General Hake; his second wife, daughter of Gerard G. Beekman, and granddaughter of Lieutenant Governor Van Cortlandt.

De Peyster, James. of New York. Brother of the preceding. He was captain-lieutenant in the King's American Regiment under Fanning, and entered the service when he was only nineteen years of age. His superior officers gave him high "testimonials of courage, ability, and conduct," after he closed his military life as a Loyalist. In 1786, he was commissioned as first lieutenant in the Royal Artillery, commanded by his brother-in-law, Colonel James. De Peyster is said to have been one of the handsomest men in the British Army.

I am indebted to one of his kinsmen in the State of New York — who has contributed several curious and interesting works to the literature of the country — for an account of his fate. I extract as freely as my limits will allow. The date is 1793; the scene, the siege of Valenciennes: "This siege was remarkable, in that a greater portion than usual of the operations were subterranean. Mines and counter-mines innumerable were formed and sprung by both besiegers and besieged. On the 25th July, the English sprung two large ones under the glacis and horn-work, whose immediate result was to enable them to establish themselves in the covered way. Among the foremost, as usual, our hero was buried by one of these explosions, and reported among the 'missing.' After a search of more than an hour, he was discovered in a state of partial stupefaction. Thus he may have been said to have been restored to his regiment after having been buried alive.

"Three days afterwards, Valenciennes surrendered. A large share in this success was accorded to the British Artillery. The British now advanced and occupied a camp in the neighborhood of Menin, a fortified town of West Flanders, on the Lys." "Again," says my informant, "on the 18th August, three battalions of the English Guards, and detachments of the Royal Artillery, advanced to attack the French position. The enemy occupied a redoubt of uncommon size and strength upon a height adjoining to the high-road, in front of the village of Lincelles. The road itself was defended by other works strongly palisadoed; woods and ditches covered their flanks. The battalions were instantly formed, and advanced under a heavy fire, with an order and intrepidity for which no praise can be too high.

"To overcome such difficulties demanded great sacrifices and greater exertions, yet the fall of two gallant officers, and the brave men who have suffered on this occasion, must be a matter of regret. In the fore front of this glorious attack, and among the first who fell, was the subject of this article."

Still again: "Many years after, my grandfather, Frederick De Peyster, was dining with his second cousin, Frederick C. White, General in the British Army, when the conversation turned upon the latter's military service in Holland, and particularly the combat of Menin, or, more properly speaking, of Lincelles. 'While advancing at the head of my corps,' said the General, 'on the 18th of August, 1793, I noticed a remarkably fine-looking dead officer, with his cocked hat slouched over his face, whom his men had raised up and fixed in an erect position, by taking advantage of the support afforded by the crotch of a tree. Not being able to recognize him, — for his chin had sunk down upon his chest, and his chapeau had been drawn down almost so as to cover his eyes, to keep it from falling off, — I turned aside, and, lifting his head, removed the hat, discovering thereby, to my grief and horror, that it was your beloved brother and my gallant cousin, James, who had been shot directly through the forehead.'" Finally: "Under contract of marriage to a lady of fortune, won by his physical and mental advantages, he postponed his union until the close of the campaign, and passed from the transient endearments of love to the lasting embrace of death His portrait in New York attracts universal attention, and bears ample testimony to his advantages of person."

[http://books.google.com/books?id=MDANAAAAIAAJ&pg=PA84&lpg=PA84&dq=%22Abraham+De+Peyster%22&source=bl&ots=qm\\_sB5G0dG1&sig=8BTmxt-4DXctZbdkPieE7ERVXcQ&hl=en&ei=P75oTNj2CoT68AbOp-iyBA&sa=X&oi=book\\_result&ct=result&resnum=9&ved=0CDEQ6AEwCA#v=onepage&q=%22Abraham%20De%20Peyster%22&f=false](http://books.google.com/books?id=MDANAAAAIAAJ&pg=PA84&lpg=PA84&dq=%22Abraham+De+Peyster%22&source=bl&ots=qm_sB5G0dG1&sig=8BTmxt-4DXctZbdkPieE7ERVXcQ&hl=en&ei=P75oTNj2CoT68AbOp-iyBA&sa=X&oi=book_result&ct=result&resnum=9&ved=0CDEQ6AEwCA#v=onepage&q=%22Abraham%20De%20Peyster%22&f=false) page 84.

Captain Abraham De Peyster was born in New York in 1753, the son of James De Peyster and his wife, Sarah, daughter of Hon. Joseph Reade.

Joining the British forces, with other members of this well known New York family, early in the Revolutionary war, he chose as his regiment the King's American regiment, composed of volunteers mostly from the Province of New York and formed in December, 1776, with Edmund Fanning as colonel. Abraham de Peyster was granted a commission as captain within two days of the formation of the regiment, namely, on 13 December.

His brothers, Frederick and James, also joined loyalist corps, the former as captain in the "Nassau Blues," a New York corps which was raised 1 May, 1779, with William Axtell as colonel, and was disbanded in December following, when most of the officers and men joined the New York Volunteers. Frederick de Peyster became a captain-lieutenant in his brother's regiment, the King's American regiment.

After serving in the Northern Colonies for some time, Captain Abraham de Peyster was moved to the South where he went through much of the hard fighting in South Carolina in the picked loyalist force commanded by Major Patrick Ferguson. (See pp. 82, 83.)

A brave and enterprising officer, upon him fell the invidious duty at the age of 27 of taking over the command of the loyalist force at the death of Major Patrick Ferguson, the most brilliant leader in guerilla fighting on the British side, at the memorable battle of King's Mountain—a battle which was fraught with such dire consequences to the British in South Carolina. Captain De Peyster's conduct in surrendering has been criticised. Tarleton, whose judgments of his brother officers and criticisms of operations must be received with caution, maintains that Captain De Peyster hoisted the white flag before the blood in Ferguson's body had become cold, but inasmuch as he was not present in the battle, his opinion is not helpful. (Tarleton, *History of the Campaigns of 1780 and 1781*, p. 65.) On the other hand such competent eye-witnesses as Captains Samuel Ryerson and John Taylor, both of the New Jersey Volunteers, and **Lieutenant Anthony Allaire**, of the Loyal American regiment, supported the decision of Captain de Peyster to surrender, acquitting him of the charge of timidity and declaring that his conduct was in all respects proper. (Mackenzie, *Strictures on Lieut.-Colonel Tarleton's History*, 1787, pp. 58-68). From a consideration of the evidence on both sides of the controversy, it would seem that a defeat for the hard pressed and much shaken loyalists, valiant as they were, was inevitable, and that he was not guilty of excessive caution in saving his force from further suffering. (Draper, *King's Mountain and its Heroes*, p. 479.)

It is unfortunate that Alexander Chesney, a participant in the battle, has not offered a definite opinion on the alleged premature surrender of the loyalist commander. One important comment, however, amounts to a virtual acquittal of the odious charge, namely, that the Americans having resumed fire after Captain De Peyster had sent out a flag of truce, he ordered a resumption of the battle, in the belief—as subsequent events proved to be true—that no quarter would be given to the loyalists, when a "dreadful havoc" ensued until the flag was sent out a second time.

At the peace, Captain Abraham De Peyster found an asylum with his brother officers in New Brunswick, where he became a justice of the peace, treasurer of the Province, and colonel of militia. Here he died, 19 February, 1798, leaving a widow and five young children. After his death, **his widow, a daughter of John Livingston of New York**, returned to New York. (Lawrence and Stockton, *Judges of New Brunswick and Their Times*, p. 274; J.W. De Peyster, *Local Memorials relating to the De Peyster and Watts and affiliated families*, 1881, pp. 40-45; J. W. De Peyster, "The Affair at King's Mountain," in *The Magazine of American History*, Vol. 5, pp. 401-404; Sabine, *Loyalists of the American Revolution*.)

<http://wc.rootsweb.ancestry.com/cgi-bin/igm.cgi?op=REG&db=mila2&id=I01599>

**Abraham De Peyster** (James Abraham De Peyster<sup>4</sup>, Abraham De Peyster<sup>3</sup>, Abraham de Peyster<sup>2</sup>, Johannes de Peyster<sup>1</sup>) b. 18 Feb 1753; d. bef. 19 Jul 1799 in St. John, NB; m. 2 Aug 1783 **Catharine Augusta Livingston**, b. aft. 1742; d. 3 Apr 1839 in New York, New York, d/o John Livingston and Catharine De Peyster.

Children of Abraham De Peyster and Catharine Augusta Livingston are:

- i. **Catharine Augusta De Peyster** b. ca 1786; m. 15 APR 1809 **Jacob Livingston**, s/o John Livingston and Maria Anna LEROY
- ii. **Harriot Charlton De Peyster** b. ca 1786.
- iii. **Sarah Caroline De Peyster** b. bef. 1802; m. 11 May 1831 **George Hibbard**, b. in Tioga co., NY; d. 14 Jul 1832.
- iv. **William Axtel De Peyster** b. 1793 in Nova Scotia; d. 21 Apr 1856 in New York, NY; m. 18 Oct 1822 **Mary Beekman**, b. 15 Sep 1800; d. 18 Oct 1885 in New York, NY.
- v. **Charlton De Peyster** b. aft. 1785; d. bef. 1802.
- vi. **Ann Eliza De Peyster** b. aft. 1785.

-----

<http://homepages.rootsweb.ancestry.com/~nbpast/family/begin/E-1.htm>

**Edward Earle** – New Jersey Volunteers; 1778, property confiscated; 1782, Lodge No. 169 E.R. (A), New York; 1782, petitioner for St. George Lodge No. 2, NY; 1783, SW; 1783, St. Ann's Point, NB; 1784, Mangersville, NB; 1794, New York; d. 1825, Wappinger's Falls, NY.

Edward Earle, b. 2 Jan 1751, of Hackensack, NJ; s/o Sylvester Earle & Mathilda (Megtel) Zabouriski; m. 19 Jan 1784, Lyche VanDyne or Sichy VanDyne, b. 15 Apr 1765, Newtown, NY; d/o Dowe VanDine & Seytie VanDerBilt

- 1. Sophia; chr. 14 Aug 1791, Waterborough
- 2. John; chr. 06 Jul 1793, Grand Lake

**History of Queens County, New Brunswick** - The Watchman, 1868, by E. Stone Wiggins

EARLE - Sylvester, born at Hackensack, NJ. His wife was a Pole, a descendant of the famous King John Sobieski. Their children were: Christine, b. 25 Aug 1734; Olsey, b. 10 Jan 10 1737; John, b. 4 Jun 1739; Sophia, b. 8 Dec 1742; John (2d), b. 10 Jan 1744; Hannah, b. 14 Apr 1747; **Justus, b. 19 Aug 1749; Edward, b. 2 Jun 1751**; Elizabeth, b. 18 Jul 1754; Edward (2d), b. 27 Nov 1757.

Justus married Ann Lawrence, Sept, 6th, 1778. Their children were: Sylvester, born August 3, 1779; John, born Sept. 7, 1781; Edward, born March 25, 1783; Richard Lawrence, born July 26, 1785, married Miss Fisher; Sylvester (2nd), born Sept. 29, 1787; Sylvester Sobieski, born March 16, 1791, married Maria Hughson; Justus, born March 15, 1793; Mary, born March 8, 1795; John, born April 18, 1797, married Sarah Cox; Matilda, born May 24, 1800; Sophia Matilda, born April 30, 1802, m. Richard Cox.

Edward and Justus (or Joste), U.E. Loyalists, came to St. John in 1783 in the September fleet, and settled on the Grand Lake. The former was a captain in the Third Battalion of New Jersey Volunteers, and after his retirement received half pay. His wife's maiden name was Lyche Vandyke [Vandyne ?]. After residing eight years in Quen's, he returned to the United States.

Justus was a Lieutenant in the Third Battalion, in Brigadier General Skinner's brigade, under the command of Sir Henry Clinton. His commission is dated Dec. 18, 1781. He was fourteen months in prison, having been taken captive at Ponlass Hook. He died Sept. 22, 1826, and was buried at Grand Point Cemetery. Here is also buried his wife, whose maiden name was Ann Lawrence, died April 22, 1824. All their children died when young, except Richard, Sylvester Sobieski and John.

Edward Earle, brother of Justus, resided at Hackensack. Joined the British and was a Lieut, and a Captain in Co. Buskirk's Corps. Retired on half-pay and settled at Grand Lake, Queens Co, NB.

*Before Commissioner Pemberton / Saint John / January 26. 1787. New Claim*

*Case of Capt. Edwd. Earle, late of New Jersey.*

*He came to this Province in Octr., 1783. Went up the River to Fredericton. Sent his Claim by Hardy. The Claim was delivered here by his Brother, who continued in this Town.*

*He is a native of America; resided in Hackinsac when Troubles broke out; joined the Brit. in 1776 when Lord Cornwallis first came into ye Jerseys. Had a Commission as Lieut. in Col. Buskirk's Corps; afterwards had a Captain's Commission in same Regt. Has now half pay. Servd. all the War. Is now settled on the Grand Lake, Queen's Co.*

*Claimant & his Brother, Justus, were in Possession jointly of a farm in Hackinsac. It was left to them two jointly by their Father's Will. His Father had been dead near 20 years... see brother's claim.*

-----

<http://homepages.rootsweb.ancestry.com/~nbpast/family/begin/E-1.htm>

**Justus Earle** – New Jersey Volunteers; 1778, property confiscated; 1782, Lodge No. 169 E.R. (A), New York; 1782, petitioner for St. George's Lodge No. 2, New York; d. 1825, Grand Lake, NB.

Justus Earle, b. 19 Aug 1749, of Hackensack, NJ; d. 22 Sep 1826, ae 77 yrs., Waterborough, Queens Co, NB; Grand Pt. Anglican Cem, Grand Lake, Queens Co.; s/o Sylvester Earl (d. 1768) & Martha; m. 6 Sep 1778 / bond 5 Sep, Ann Lawrence; b. 30 Mar 1752; d. 22 Apr 1824 ae 72 yrs, ae 61 yrs 4 mos; bur. Grand Pt. Anglican Cem, Grand Lake, Queens Co.; d/o Col. Richard Lawrence.

Justus (Joost) Earle - Hackensack, Bergen Co, NJ. Fled to within the British lines with his brother, Edward Earle, Nov 1776, served with brothers Regt. coming to Saint John with them. / Claim - Fredericton 15 Apr 1786 farm owned by self and Edward at Hackensack.

Earle, Justus (Joost) - Hackensack, Bergen Co, NJ. Fled to within the British lines with his brother, Edward Earle, Nov 1776, served with brothers Regt. coming to Saint John with them. / Claim - Fredericton 15 Apr 1786 farm owned by self and Edward at Hackensack.

08: Fraser Alexander, ed. ~ Second Report of the Bureau of Archives for the Province of Ontario 1904 Ontario Provincial Archives, Loyalist claims from AO files - see where to get full text.

*Before Commissioner Pemberton / Saint John / January 26. 1787. New Claim Case of Justus Earl(sic), late of New Jersey.*

*He is a Brother to Edward Earl. The Claim is entered in both their names. The landed Estate belonged to them equally, the moveable Estate belonged to Claimant. Says he gave his Claim to Mr. Hardy, before Mr. Hardy went to Halifax. He gave it in the joint name of himself & Bror.*

*Claimt. lived at Hackinsac; joined the Brit. on their first coming to ye Jerseys. Servd. first as a Volunteer. In Apl. had a Comn. as Ensign in Col. Buskirk's Regt. Had afterwards a Comn. as Lieut. Continued to serve during the War. Has now half pay. Lives in Queen's Co.*

*Was possessed of a Farm in Hackinsac which belonged to him & his Brother, it was given by his Father's Will. The farm consisted of above 200 acres on ye survey after Confiscation, it measured he thinks 250 acres. -see brother's claim.*

*Children:*

1. Sylvester; b. 03 Aug 1779 (d. young)
2. John; b. 07 Sep 1781 (d. young)
3. Edward; b. 25 Mar 1783; d. 25 Aug 1794 ae 6 yrs 9 mos 13 days / or 18 days
4. Richard Lawrence; b. 26 Jul 1786, Waterborough, Queens Co, NB; d. 3 Mar 1858, Grand Pt, Queens Co, NB. (Also resided in Saint John, NB.); m. 19/29 Oct 1815, Fredericton, NB, Nancy S. Fisher, b. 1791, Fredericton, NB; d. 23 May 1853 ae 58 yrs.
5. Sylvester; b. 29 Sep 1787 (d. young)
6. Sylvester Sobieski, Dr.; b. 16 Mar 1791; chr. 14 Aug 1791, Waterborough; m. Maria Hughson
7. Justus; b. 15 Mar 1793; chr. 16 Feb 1794
8. Mary; b. 08 Mar 1795; chr. 28 Feb 1796, Grand Lake; d. 3 Nov 1876 ae 82 yrs; bur. St James Cem, Lr. Jemseg; m. Oct 1828, Sunday pre the 18th, at Trinity Church, William Foshay
9. John Edward; b. 18 Apr 1797, at Grand Point, Canning Parish, Queens Co, NB; chr. 5 Aug 1799, Grand Lake; 20 Feb 1866 ae 69 yrs, Grand Lake; bur. Earle Cemetery, Grand Pt.; m. 24 May 1822, Sarah Cox; b. 1 Jan 1803; d. 12 Sep 1885.
10. Matilda; b. 24 May 1800 (d. young); chr, 17 Aug 1800, Grand Lake
11. Sophia Matilda; b. 30 Apr 1802; chr. 19 Sep 1802, Grand Lake; m. Richard Cox

<http://familytreemaker.genealogy.com/users/r/o/b/Eileen-M-Robinson/WBSITE-0001/UHP-0006.html>

**Justus (Joost) Earle** (son of [Sylvester Earle](#) and [Machteldje Zabriskie](#)) was born August 19, 1749 in Secaucus, Bergen County, New Jersey, USA, and died September 22, 1826 in Grande Point, Queens County, New Brunswick, Canada. He married [Anna Lawrence](#) on September 06, 1778 in New York City, New York, USA, daughter of [Richard Lawrence](#) and [Mary Leggett](#).

Notes from the Earle Genealogy compiled by Rev Isaac Newton Earle and published Aug 1932.

Justus Earle was the third son of Sylvester and Matilda (Zabriskie) Earle. He was born 19 August 1749 and was baptised at the Schraalenburgh Reformed Church. His name appears commonly in the records as "Joost" He was the founder of the "New Brunswick, Canada Branch" of the Earle family and in part of the "Nova Scotia Branch."

According to the will of Sylvester Earle, his father, the plantation at Hackensack (Bergen Co, New Jersey) was divided equally between his two youngest sons, Justus and Edward. The former seems to have lived on the farm, but he had not been in possession long when the War of the Revolution broke out, and he with his younger brother Edward, espoused the cause of England and joined the British army. Justus was a commissioned officer of the Third Battalion of New Jersey Volunteers in General Skinner's Brigade, under the command of Sir Henry Clinton. He entered the army as a volunteer and his first commission was as

Ensign. He was promoted to be a Lieutenant on Dec 8, 1781. He was taken prisoner in action at Paulus Hook and was held prisoner for fourteen months (at Philadelphia). He resigned his commission in 1783 and went on half pay.

In 1783, Justus went to St John, New Brunswick. The migration of Loyalists from New York State to Canada, New Brunswick and Nova Scotia began as early as 1774 and continued until 1789. "The immigrants to New Brunswick and Nova Scotia were chiefly soldiers, farmers, merchants, professional men, men of various trades and of no trade." (2nd report of the Bureau of Archives for the Province of Ontario, by Alexander Fraser, Part 1 published in 1904). The total number of refugees who settled in Nova Scotia, New Brunswick, Cape Breton and Prince Edward's Island, is placed at no less than 35,000 of whom not fewer than 30,000 came from New York.

In consequence of the espousal by Justus and Edward Earle of the British cause, their property was confiscated by the American authorities and sold to Abraham Bardolph. In November 1789, Lord Dorchester requested the Council at Quebec "to put a mark of honour upon the families who adhered to the Unity of the Empire and joined the Royal Standard in America before the treaty of separation in the year 1783." The Council concurred, and thereafter "all Loyalists were to be distinguished by the letters U.E. affixed to their names, alluding to their great principle "The Unity Empire". A register of the U.E. Loyalists was ordered to be kept, and for twenty years names were added to this list. The distinction, according to "The Report of the Bureau of Archives for the Province of Ontario, published in 1904, was not assumed by the emigrants. The British Government undertook the task of compensating them for losses, or at least to restore to some extent their lost fortunes, through the formation in July 1783, of a commission appointed by the British Parliament to hear and adjust such claims. The claim of Justus is given in the testimony before Commissioner Pemberton in 1787 as follows: (Copy of original on file).

"New Claim, 679."

"Case of Justus Earle, late of New Jersey. He is a brother to Edward Earl. The claim is entered in both their names. The landed Estate belonging to them equally, the moveable Estate belonged to Claimant. Says he gave his Claim to Mr. Hardy, before Mr Hardy went to Halifax. He gave it in the joint name of himself and Bror. Claimant lived at Hackensack: joined the Brit. On their first coming to ye Jerseys. Served first as a Volunteer. In April had a Com as Ensign in Col. Buskirk's Regt. Had afterwards a Comm. As Lieut. Continued to serve during War. Has now half pay. Lives in Queen's Co. "

"Was possessed of a farm in Hackensack to him & his brother. It was given by his Father's Will. The farm consisted of above 200 acres on ye survey after confiscation. It measures he thinks 250 acres. There were between 30 & 40 acres of Meadow, 110 Plough Land, the rest Woodland. Farms in that Precinct if in good cultivation used to sell from 10 to 15 pounds per acre. Produces Copy of Judgment against him and Appraisement at 2000 pounds York Cury. The Estate was sold. Claimt. Saw an advertisement of sale. Abraham Bardolph bought it & is now in Possession. By his Father's Will 300 pounds was to be paid to his 3 sisters, 100 pounds each. One is dead: the second Hannah, married Wm. Sorel, at Shelbourne; the 3rd died in the States."

"The moveable Estate belonged to Claimt. It was left in ye Farm. It consisted of five horses, about 20 horned Cattle, 29 sheep, furniture, farming utensils, a considerable quantity of Corn in the Barn. This was seized for the use of the American Army; does not know that any part was sold by Comrs. It was chiefly pillaged and taken for use of Army."

"On September 6, 1778, Mr Earle married Anna Lawrence, who was baptised Nov 30 1762 and died April 22, 1824 aged 62 years 4 months 8 days. A record received from New Brunswick in May 1920 reads like a page from the family Bible of Justus and Anna L. Earle. It is evidently the original record of this family and differs from other records we have seen. It is as follows:

August 3, 1779,	was born my son Sylvester, deceased 15th September 1779.
September 7th, 1781	was born my son John; deceased the 18th Dec 1783.
March 25th, 1783,	was born my son Edward; deceased the 2nd March 1784.
July 26, 1785	was born my son Richard Lawrence,
September 29th, 1787	was born my son Sylvester, second by that name; deceased August 20th 1790.
April 9th, 1789	was born my son John; d. Aug 17, 1794 (a previous record has Edward; perhaps it was John Edward).
March 16, 1791,	was born my 7th son, Sylvester, the 3rd by that name.
March 16th 1793,	was born my son Justus; deceased Aug 12, 1794.
March 8th, 1795,	was born my daughter Mary.
April 18th, 1797	was born my son John Edward.
May 24th 1800,	was born my daughter Matilda; deceased Aug 20, 1800
April 30th, 1802	was born my daughter Sophia Matilda.

An examination of this interesting record shows that the first three children were born in New Jersey, and that only one child accompanied his parents in the migration in October 1783. The other nine children were born in New Brunswick. The first eight children were sons, two of whom only survived. The ninth son also reached adult age, and one daughter. There, with their descendants, constitute THE NEW BRUNSWICK BRANCH.

There is much more information on Justus Earle, he apparently lived in Fredericton for a while and was described as a "Merchant". After his claim was heard and settled, he obtained land at Grand Lake, near Gagetown where he lived until his death.

Justus Earle's magnificent silver shoulder plate, worn during his time with the New Jersey Volunteers, can be seen at the Provincial Museum in Fredericton. He is buried in the Anglican Cemetery at Grand Lake along with his wife Anna and many relatives. It should also be noted that Justus and Anna brought their slaves with them from America and they are buried alongside them in New Brunswick.

Film 0868248. "Loyalists of Bergen County DAR publication" LDS church.

An interesting sidelight regarding the Earle brothers is found in Miss Maxwell's volume. Lieutenant Justus Earle and his brother Edward settled first on the present Waterloo Row, Fredericton, but later **sold their property to General Benedict Arnold** and moved to Grand Lake, New Brunswick. Most of the large military grants to the loyalist corps was escheated within a few years and

regranted. The Earle brothers were among the grantees who moved from Prince William parish when it was regranted. New Brunswick formed part of Nova Scotia until 1784. Maxwell, op cit. pp 65, 92, 110; Wright, op cit. p. 279

-----

**Alexander Ellice** – 1765, New York; 1782, Initiated St. Patrick Lodge No. 4, Johnstown, NY; 1775-83, Montreal and London.

[http://www.biographi.ca/009004-119.01-e.php?&id\\_nbr=2394&interval=25&&PHPSESSID=k7oc9qnjhtljvsedshi7vps6l7](http://www.biographi.ca/009004-119.01-e.php?&id_nbr=2394&interval=25&&PHPSESSID=k7oc9qnjhtljvsedshi7vps6l7)

**Alexander Ellice**, merchant, shipowner, landowner, and seigneur; baptized 28 May 1743 in the parish of Auchterless (Kirktown of Auchterless), Scotland, eldest son of William Ellice of Knockleith and Mary Simpson of Gartly; m. c. 1780 Ann (Anne) Russell; d. 28 Sept. 1805 in Bath, England, and was buried 5 October in Bath Abbey.

The son of a prosperous miller, Alexander Ellice attended Marischal College (University of Aberdeen), and was admitted to the Scottish bar. Apparently foreseeing little opportunity for success in the legal profession or in his homeland, in 1765 he led his four brothers to Schenectady, NY. Early in 1766, with an investment of £714 11s. 10d., he entered into partnership with James Phyn, brother of his brother-in-law and possibly a cousin, and with John Duncan, to engage in the fur trade and general merchandising in upstate New York and the lower Great Lakes area. The firm, known as Phyn, Ellice and Company following Duncan's retirement in 1767, prospered and expanded; in 1768 Ellice's brother Robert\*, and in 1769 the Detroit fur trader John Porteous, were taken into the partnership. To broaden its financial base, the company took on contracts to supply provisions for military posts and presents used by the Indian Department, and it moved into the grain trade. Ellice invested his profits shrewdly in mortgages and land in prosperous northern New York, including a valuable mill-site, acquired from Sir William Johnson\*, at Little Falls. Thanks to his solid connections, in January 1770 Ellice was granted a royal patent for 40,000 acres near Cooperstown.

Until 1768 Phyn, Ellice and Company disposed of its furs at New York, but in that year, finding the New York market glutted, it sold in London. At the same time, dissatisfied with its New York suppliers, it began ordering goods directly from Britain, at first from WILLIAM and Alexander Forsyth, Glasgow friends of the Phyn and Ellice families, and then, having discovered that it was cheaper to deal with London, from Neale and Pigou, who were located there. However, in 1769 the embargo placed the previous year by American merchants on British imports prevented Phyn, Ellice from delivering its goods to the interior. To circumvent the embargo in 1770, the company had its imports shipped to Quebec, where it obtained a licence to send trade goods valued at £6,000 to Porteous at Detroit. In 1771 and 1772 Phyn, Ellice, and Porteous evolved a scheme to beat their Montreal competitors by obtaining from the British government a virtual monopoly of the supply trade to the Indian agents in the North American interior. Ellice conducted negotiations in London in the spring of 1772, but the scheme fell through.

The partnership with Porteous was terminated in the summer of 1773, and one year later a new one was established with Alexander and William Macomb of Detroit. When in October 1774 the American colonies severed commercial relations with Britain, Phyn, Ellice and Company, which now did all its business direct with London, was placed in a difficult situation. It again circumvented the embargo by importing through Montreal, where it had engaged Isaac Todd as its agent, but the ruse was detected and Ellice was severely reprimanded by the committee of correspondence at Schenectady. Phyn and Ellice had already decided that their future in the fur trade lay with Britain. At the end of 1774 Phyn left to establish a London office; the following summer Ellice went to Niagara (near Youngstown, N.Y.), ostensibly on business, but instead of returning to Schenectady, in October 1775 he continued on to England. Most of the Schenectady assets were liquidated and the remainder transferred to Ellice's brother James, who had been brought into the company some years before.

In 1776 Ellice came to Montreal, where he established Alexander Ellice and Company and began restoring Phyn, Ellice's business with the fur-trade outfitters it had formerly supplied from Schenectady. The Canadian trade being as yet relatively unstructured, he was able as well to furnish simultaneously several of the major Montreal traders, including James MCGILL, Simon MCTAVISH, and George McBeath. In 1777 Ellice's investment in the fur trade of about £42,300 was by far the largest of any merchant based in the colony. That year he also stood security for other traders to the value of £84,500 and in 1778 to the value of £71,000. In 1778 Robert arrived at Montreal, and the following year he and John Forsyth\* took over operations there under the name Robert Ellice and Company, freeing Alexander to assure communications between the London and Montreal offices.

During the American Revolutionary War Robert Ellice and Company and Phyn, Ellice's Schenectady branch furnished military supplies to, and acted as messengers and paymasters for, their respective sides. Between 1778 and 1783 the Montreal company received £28,233 for its services to the British forces. After the war Phyn, Ellice appears to have moved into the triangular trade involving America, the West Indies, and Europe. Thirty-two departures of its vessels were recorded at Quebec between 1786 and 1804; although in most cases the ships were bound for London, some went to Newfoundland, to Cadiz, or to the West Indies. Like other firms of the time, Phyn, Ellice probably held shares in at least some of the vessels it used in order to ensure a certain control of transport to market. As well, in time of war, unless captured by privateers, sunk, or confiscated by the British navy, ships were good speculative investments. Formal agreements among a number of merchants for the use of a ship during a voyage or a series of voyages enabled them to spread the costs in case of loss. Ellice's commerce in the Caribbean region and with the American Atlantic colonies led to his acquisition, for non-payment of debts, of sugar plantations in the former and landed estates in the latter.

It was as a financier, supplier, and middleman in the Canadian fur trade, however, that Ellice made most of his fortune. From 1781 to 1783 he stood security for traders to the value of £227,000 and in 1789 and 1790 to a total value of £77,200. He was heavily involved in the trade south and west of the Great Lakes through Robert Ellice and Company but the best profits were increasingly to be made in the northwest, where the trade was becoming concentrated in the hands of fewer and larger co-partnerships. Beginning in 1784 Phyn, Ellice and Company furnished trade goods to McBeath and Peter POND, each of whom owned a one-sixteenth share in the North West Company; yet it also supplied Gregory, MacLeod and Company [see John GREGORY], the NWC's major competitor until 1787. Following the formation of McTavish, Frobisher and Company [see Simon McTavish] in November 1787, Phyn, Ellice – known since a reorganization in January 1787 as Phyn, Ellices, and Inglis – obtained a contract to supply half of the new company's goods.

Since 1779 Ellice had been travelling frequently between Montreal and London, apparently maintaining residences in both cities. He seems to have acquired the confidence of, and probably some influence among, merchants on both sides of the Atlantic. In 1778 he had been made a member of a committee of Montreal importers to determine a method, acceptable to both London and Montreal merchants, for the disposal of imported goods damaged in transit by salt water. The following year he was among eight surveyors elected to oversee the newly established procedure. In 1786 Ellice presided over a gala dinner held by London merchants trading to Quebec in honour of Lord Dorchester [Guy Carleton], recently appointed its governor-in-chief, and William Smith\*, the new chief justice. He was in the colony again in October 1790 and signed a petition for the establishment of a non-sectarian university [see Jean-François Hubert\*]. When, however, a few days later, he took ship for London in the company of McTavish, James McGill, and John Richardson\*, it was apparently to establish a permanent residence in the imperial capital. None the less, he returned occasionally to the province, where his business activities continued undiminished. Upon Robert Ellice's death in 1790 the Montreal office was reorganized as Forsyth, Richardson and Company, Ellice being related by marriage to the two principals, John Forsyth and John Richardson. In 1798 Forsyth, Richardson became a partner in the New North West Company (sometimes called the XY Company), formed that year to compete with the NWC, and Phyn, Ellices, and Inglis found itself in the position of major supplier for both sides; indeed it became the London agent for the New North West Company. In 1804 Ellice and his son Edward\*, ostensibly on behalf of the New North West Company, attempted to purchase a controlling interest in the HBC. Although unsuccessful, their bid of £103,000 provided a dramatic demonstration of Alexander's financial power. When the rival Montreal firms united in the reorganized NWC that year, Phyn, Ellices, and Inglis was able to maintain its position as a principal supplier to the new co-partnership. In 1857 Edward would assert proudly, "My father supplied the great part of the capital by which the whole north-west trade was conducted." Between 1802 and 1807 Ellice's London office registered an annual gross balance in excess of £1,000,000.

As was his custom, Ellice invested part of his profits in land holdings. Although these investments were essentially a means of achieving financial security, Ellice evinced a certain interest in agriculture, for in 1794 he became a member of the Montreal branch of the Agriculture Society. In 1795 he bought for £9,000 from Michel Chartier\* de Lotbinière the seigneurie of Villechauve, commonly known as Beauharnois, which measured 324 square miles. Ellice evidently intended to retire there eventually, but in the mean time, through a manager, he built a large manor-house, renamed the sub-fiefs of the seigneurie for members of his family, and laid out areas for new development. To complement the seigneurie he acquired most of the adjacent townships of Godmanchester and Hinchinbrook. Other lands were acquired in settlement of debts, such as 16,000 acres in Upper Canada from the fur-trading firm of Leith, Jameson and Company. In 1803 Ellice was granted 6,690 acres in Clifton Township, Lower Canada. The same year he sold the seigneurie of Champlain, purchased from Joseph DRAPEAU in 1797, to Joseph FROBISHER and his partners in the Batiscan Iron Works Company.

In 1803 Ellice, having been in poor health for some time, retired from Phyn, Ellices, and Inglis. He died two years later, leaving an estate worth in excess of £450,000. It included nearly 350,000 acres of land in New York and the Canadas, as well as property in Prince Edward Island, Britain, and elsewhere, shares in the London and Montreal companies, ships, stock holdings, and mortgages. The estate was divided fairly equally among his widow and ten surviving children, some of whom had been born in Canada since Ann had often accompanied her husband on business trips. The diverse and generally successful careers pursued by the brood, including the army, the navy, the church, business, and landowning, were typical routes to prosperity followed by the sons of the rising upper middle class; none of Ellice's inheritors, however, benefited more from his father's work, or managed his heritage with greater astuteness, than Edward, who became the true successor to the Ellice empire.

In his remarkable 40-year business association with the Canadas, Alexander Ellice had contributed much to their economic life, which depended so heavily on the fur trade. The place he had opened for the Ellices in colonial affairs would endure, with modifications, until the seigneurie of Beauharnois passed out of the family in 1866.

-----

### **Sampson [Samuel] Fleming -**

Ref. "History of Freemasonry in Michigan," by J. Fairbairn Smith and Charles Fey. 1963. Pages 32-33.

Sampson Fleming – The Senior Warden of Lodge No. 1 at Detroit, Sampson Fleming, had a considerably active Masonic history which we can trace until the year 1789 when he was admitted an affiliate of Holland Lodge No. 8, of New York City. Once again, however, we must admit that we do not know when or where he was made a Mason.

A certificate . . . leads us to believe that he was the second Worshipful Master of Lodge No. 1. The certificate was issued under date of 18 Aug 1767 to Thomas Robison [q.v.], showing that he was a member in good standing of Union Lodge No. 1 of Detroit, and Fleming signed the certificate as Worshipful Master. [Note: Union Lodge No. 1 may have been an alternate name for Zion Lodge No. 1].

We next find him in Montreal where he visited St. Peter's Lodge No. 4 on 22 Nov, 5, 15, 19 Dec 1780 and on 27 Dec he was elected Worshipful Master and presided as such on 2 Jan 1781. He does not appear to have attended Lodge after that date. He is shown as absent for some months and then his name disappears from the record.

On 15 May 1789 he visited Holland Lodge No. 8, New York City, and registered as a Past Master and was proposed for admission and on 5 Jun 1789 he was admitted to membership.

Fleming came from Ireland to New York and soon after his arrival in this country was appointed as Commissary of Stores and Provisions to the 60th or Royal American Regiment [possibly as a Major]. On 5 Feb 1762 he was ordered to Detroit by General Jeffery Amherst.

Fleming married Alice Haliburton 17 Jun 1768 at Detroit. Her father was a Chaplain in the British Army. Fleming died 24 Apr 1791.

<http://www.mlloyd.org/gen/macomb/text/amr/wt.htm>

With the Revolutionary War at an end, the partnership of Macomb, Edgar and Macomb began to dissolve. First to drop out, on Sept. 3, 1783, was William Edgar, who followed the advice of a fellow trader, **Sampson Fleming**, and moved to New York City. He took with him as his share a draft in the amount of 48,000 pounds New York currency - a good clue to the firm's net assets. Within two years, the exact date unknown, Alexander Macomb also shifted his activities to New York City, leaving his brother alone in charge of the store.

Why Alexander Macomb chose to risk a second career under the American flag, while his brother remained loyal to the Crown, may have been a simple matter of differing personalities: Alexander, the aggressive, calculating entrepreneur; William, always the junior partner, a follower, more a conservative than an adventurer, content to live out his life as a Detroit merchant, with no further achievements than winning a term in the Upper Canada provincial assembly. Alexander Macomb, the risk-taker, had visions of a higher sort.

<http://www.biographi.ca/009004-119.01-e.php?Bioid=36364>

Mixing good sense with humour he {Bro. John Askin of Detroit} wrote to . . . Sampson Fleming, who had recently become the father of a baby boy [ca 1778], "I beg you will not kill him with d-m-d Physick. . . . If I hear any more of your tampering with him & Mrs Fleming permits me, I will go down & take him from you."

<http://www.wisconsinhistory.org/ratification/digital/resource/1096.pdf>

During the Revolution Fleming (b. 1757; d. 15 Jun 1791, age 34), a British commissary who made a fortune trading with the western posts, resided in New York City after the war. He was a large stockholder in the Bank of North America.

Children of SAMPSON & ALICE:

WILLIAM	b. 07 Dec 1777 N.Y.
ANN	b. 19 Sep 1779 N.Y.
AUGUSTUS	b. 28 Aug 1785 N.Y.
JAMES	b. 14 Aug 1788 N.Y.,
ALEXANDER	b. 27 Sep 1790 N.Y.

Sampson was the son of SOLOMON FLEMING who was probably from England and then came to America.

<http://www.cousinconnect.com/d/a/147574>

Sampson FLEMING b. 1757 NYC, d. 15 Jun 1791 at his house on Broadway, NYC (son of Solomon FLEMING). Sampson married Alice HALIBURTON abt 1777 in Fort Detroit, MI. Alice was b. 22 Jan 1758 in possibly Canada. Her father was Maj. William HALIBURTON, British Army chaplain. Sampson was a fur trader from New York City and Deputy Commissary of Stores and Provisions in Fort Detroit, MI. He and Alice lived in NYC and had the following children: Wm. b 1777; Ann b 1779; Gen. Augustus b 1785; Brig. Gen. James b 1788 (who mar. Maria Matilda LUDLOW) and Col. Alexander b. 1790 (who mar. Emma Seton ATKINSON).

Resolved that Mr Sampson Fleming be permitted to erect his House to front on the Broad Way on the following Line vizt Beginning at the South West Corner of the House of Thomas Ten Eyck & to run thence agreeable to the Line of the front of the House of David Johnston lately destroyed by fire to the Distance of fifty feet.

---

WILL OF SAMPSON FLEMING, of New York, my executors to buy stock in the Bank of North America as soon as the moneys come to hand if the plan proposed to David Williamson should take place; the moneys arising therefrom partly for the support of my wife and children; the remainder that may be necessary taken from the interest arising from bank stock. If the scheme proposed prove destructive, my executors are to sell Beaver Hall; I allow £800 a year for the support of my wife and children, to be taken out of dividends from Bank stock or Beaver Hall; to my wife Alice, the use of the furniture she possesses at my death; if my wife remarries, my estate to be divided into five equal parts; one equal part thereof to my wife, the remaining parts to be equally divided among my children; to Sarah Perry's child, now living with Darkos Keetch, two shares in the bank of North America, at four hundred dollars each share; my son William, born December 7, 1777; my daughter Ann, born September 16, 1779; my son, John Augustus, born August 28, 1785, and my wife, Alice Fleming (formerly Haliburton) shall share equally without distinction. In case all my children die without issue, reversion to my brother, William Fleming; my sister, Eleanor Fleming, alias Bowman, and my step-brother, John Bell; if John Bell be dead, his share to descend to his brother, Adam Bell, Jr., of Movilla, or to his father, Adam Bell, Sr. I appoint my wife and Daniel McCormick, executors.

Dated March 26, 1787. Witnesses, George Anthon, physician; Richard Kip, Jr., Joseph Pitcairn. Proved, June 22, 1791, when administration was granted unto Alice Fleming, alias Haliburton.

-----

There has been no written history of Freemasonry in Michigan prior to 1844. Three Grand Lodges have been organized in that State. The first was in 1826. The first Lodge, "named Zion," was formed by a Warrant from Provincial Grand Master George Harrison, of New York, under the date of April 27, 1764, which was No. 448 Register of England, and No. 1 of Detroit.

Bro. A. G. Pitts, "Notes on the Early History of Freemasonry in Michigan," says "The only certain fact thus far is that under date of April 27, 1764, a Warrant was prepared by the Prov. Grand Master of New York empowering Lieut. John Christie of the 60th regiment, **Sampson Fleming**, and Josias Harper, to organize a Lodge 'to be held at Detroit under whatever name the said Master and his officers shall please to distinguish it.'"

The following warrant was issued . . . on the 27th day of April, A. D., 1764.

TO ALL AND EVERY OUR WORSHIPFUL AND LOVING BRETHREN:

Wee, GEORGE HARISON, Esq., Provincial Grand Master of the Most Ancient and Honourable Society of Free and Accepted Masons in the Province of New York in America, send Greeting::

KNOIV YE, that, reposing special Trust and Confidence in our Worshipful and well-beloved Brother Lieu JOHN CHRISTIE, of the 60th Regiment, Wee do hereby nominate, constitute and appoint him, the said John Christie, to be Master of a Lodge of Masons, Number one, to be held at Detroit under whatever name the said Master and his officers shall please to distinguish it; and Wee do also appoint **Sampson Fleming, Senior Warden**, and Josias Harper Junr Warden of the said Lodge by Virtue of the Power and Authority vested in me by a deputation bearing date in London the ninth day of June, A. D., One Thousand Seven Hundred and fifty-three, A. L. Five Thousand Seven Hundred and fifty-three, from the Right Worshipful John Proby, Baron of Carysford, in the county of Wicklow, in the Kingdom of Ireland, the then Grand Master of England, Appointing us Provincial Grand Master of New York. And Wee do hereby authorize the said JOHN CHRISTIE to make Masons as also to do and execute all things Lawful in Masonry, he taking especial care that the Mem bets ofhis said Lodge do Observe and keep the Rules, Orders Regulations and Insructions contained m our constitutions and their own By-laws, together with all such other Rules, Orders, Regulations and Instructions as shall be given us, and paying out of the first money he shall receive for Initiation Fees to me at New York, Three pounds three shilling Sterling by me applied to the use of the Grand Charily here or Elsewhere.

Given under Our Hand and Seal of Masonry at New York this L. S. Twenty-seventh day of April, A. D. One Thousand Seven Hundred and sixty-four, and in the year of Masonry Five Thousand Seven Hundred and Sixty-four.

Witness, PETER MIDDLETON.  
No. 448 of the Register of England and No. 1 of Detroit.

-----

**Lt. James Foreman –**

<http://www.ebooksread.com/authors-eng/patrick-wilfrid-1892--thibeau/education-in-nova-scotia-before-1811-hci/page-9-education-in-nova-scotia-before-1811-hci.shtml>

James Foreman (or Forman), who came to Annapolis with the refugees of 1781, soon moved to Digby where he opened the school. According to Wilson, he was preceded by a teacher named William Barbanks, who taught in several hamlets in the county before the close of the century. Foreman began his school at Digby in 1784 with an enrollment of seventy-five pupils. It lasted but eight months, the teacher turning his attention to the institution of a Sunday school of the Church of England. This venture has won for Foreman more celebrity than did his secular school. It is regarded by some writers as the first Sunday school on the continent of America, though others give precedence to the institution started by Davidson at Lyons Brook, in Pictou County, in 1776. Foreman's school gave impetus to the establishment of such institutions in the province, two being started in Halifax by Bishop Inglis in 1788. One of these, for boys, was directed by a Mr. Tidmarsh ; the other, for girls, by Mrs. Clarke.

With the promise of assistance from the S. P. G., Mr. Foreman renewed his secular school in a new location in Digby town in 1789. Bishop Inglis paid him a visit in 1791 and found forty scholars attending the school. Foreman, returned to England and then returned to Digby, where he died in 1802. His wife, Elizabeth, died 3 Aug 1834, aged 76.

-----

ALR, page 221

**Captain Caleb Fowler –** 1752, b. North Castle, NY; 1772, 2nd and 3rd Degree in Solomon Lodge No. 1, Poughkeepsie, NY; 1780, Lodge No. 210 E.R. (A), New York; in Loyal American Regiment; 1784, Granville, NS; d. there.

of West Chester County, NY. He was one of the loyalist protestors at White Plains in April of 1775 who denounced Whig Congresses and Committees, and who pledged themselves "at the hazard of their lives and properties, to support the King and Constitution." Commissioned a lieutenant in the LAR on April 5, 1777 and was later promoted to captain. He went to Canada and died near Fredericton.

A handwritten signature in cursive script that reads "Caleb Fowler" followed by a flourish.

Signature of Caleb Fowler from an LAR muster roll

-----

**William Fowler –** b. ca 1752; 60th Regiment; King's Loyal American Regiment; 1772, 2nd Degree Solomon Lodge No. 1, Poughkeepsie, NY; 1780, Lodge No. 210 E.R. (A), New York; 1783, Master, Lodge No. 7, Prov. GL of NY in Loyal American Regiment, 1783, Saint John River, NB; St. Ann's Point; 1791, joined St. George's Lodge No. 19, Maugerville, NB; 1793, SW Hiram York Lodge No. 23, Fredericton, NB; d. 1798.

Hiram York Lodge No. 23, Fredericton - Worked under a warrant granted to " Rev. Walter Price, WM, **William Fowler, SW**, and Stephen Jarvis, JW, to meet at the house of Cornelius Ackerman or elsewhere in the township of Fredericton, New Brunswick, on the second Thursday in each calendar month." It was dated at Halifax 6th March, 1793, and signed by Richard Bulkeley, G. M., Duncan Clark, D. G. M., James Clarke, S. G. W., Jonathan Sterns, J. G. W., and Joseph Peters, G. S.

The petition for the warrant was recommended by Lodge No. 643, registry of the grand lodge of Ireland, held in His Majesty's Sixth regiment of foot, then stationed at Fredericton.

The lodge was regularly constituted "under a deputation" issued by the provincial grand master at Halifax, and the proceedings reported to the provincial grand lodge at a communication held at Halifax 9th February, 1794. It had a short career, however, judged by a report under date 9th August, 1800, addressed to the provincial grand secretary, setting forth that "there were not sufficient members remaining to work the lodge in consequence of the removal of the New Brunswick regiment to Saint John," and he added that " they had \*not elected officers for that year." From these statements it is reasonable to suppose that the lodge ceased to exist at that time, *i. e.* A. D. 1800. Although not strictly a military lodge, its membership was almost wholly drawn from the military ranks.

-----

ALR, page 222:

**Hugh Fraser** – b. 1731; 1759, 78th Regiment (Fraser's Highlanders); 1762, initiated St. Andrew's Lodge No. 2, P.G.L., Quebec; 1763, New York; 1767, joined St. Patrick's Lodge No. 4, Johnstown, NY; 1776, 84th Regiment; 1778, joined St. Andrew's Lodge No. 2, P.G.L., Quebec; 1779, demitted; 1780, Scotland; d 1814 in Scotland.

<http://www.historycooperative.org/journals/nyh/89.2/calloway.html>

Soldiers from Fraser's Highlanders (78th Regiment) benefited from Johnson's patronage. About twenty veterans and their families settled on his estate, and Johnson helped others secure bounty lands in northern New York. Hugh Fraser, who had been a lieutenant in the regiment, went to the Mohawk Valley in 1764, then returned to Scotland and brought back his wife and a number of Highland tenants.

<http://www.clanfraser.ca/78th1.htm>

**Lieutenant Hugh Fraser** (c1730-1814) - Harper lists Hugh Fraser as adjutant among the staff officers who sailed for Louisbourg in 1758, which identifies him as the original adjutant appointed to this position on January 12, 1757. Gazetted an ensign on June 9, 1758; promoted to lieutenant on April 29, 1760; retired on half-pay in 1763. Wallace says he was probably of the Foyers family, and identifies him with Capt. Hugh Fraser, 84th Foot (Royal Highland Emigrants), but his name appears continuously in the 78th half-pay lists. Hugh Fraser married Elizabeth, a daughter of Lieut. John McTavish of the 78th, tried his fortune in the Colony of New York with the help of Sir William Johnson. By November 1780, disenchanted with the ongoing war, Hugh returned to Scotland with his family and settled on a farm called Brightmony, near Auldearn, Nairnshire; he died at Perth on January 21, 1814, aged 83. That the Lieut. Hugh Fraser who survived until 1813 was McTavish's son-in-law is confirmed by the fact that his agent on the Half-Pay Ledgers in that year was McTavish's London firm of McTavish, Fraser & Co. According to Charles Fraser-Mackintosh [The Confederacy of Clan Chattan (Glasgow, 1898) pp. 63 ff.], "Hugh Fraser, is said to have been a great-grandson of Malcolm Fraser of Culduthel, but the names of his father and grandfather have not been found."

<http://www.garthbeg.com/simonmctavish.htm>

John McTavish, upon coming home from the French and Indian war (called the 7 Years War in the UK), having served as a Lieutenant with the Fraser Highlanders, realized that the future lay in America. When **Hugh Fraser** (who served with John) asked for his daughter Elizabeth's hand in marriage and told of his plans to move to New York, John agreed with the stipulation that Hugh and Elizabeth take young Simon [McTavish] with them. Simon was 13 years old at the time. He is believed to have apprenticed for a period and then is found living in Detroit, in 1773, trading in the Niagara region. As the American Revolutionary War broke out he moved to Montreal, which became his headquarters. Simon soon joined up with the Frobisher brothers, Joseph, Benjamin, and Thomas. Soon they and others, including McGill, Pond, Todd and Mackenzie formed a partnership known as The Northwest Company. In no time at all, Simon became the controlling partner of this fur trading company. To round out his financial holdings he soon purchased and developed a saw mill, cookie factory, and a cooery. His London firm McTavish, Fraser and Company, handled insurance, resupplying and credit.

-----

**Rev. James Fraser** – Educated in Edinburgh; Lodge No. 169 E.R. (A), New York; 1783, Grand Chaplain, Prov. GL of New York; 1783, Lodge No. 211 E.R. (A), Halifax, NS; 1786, Saint John, NB; 1788-94, Miramichi, NB.

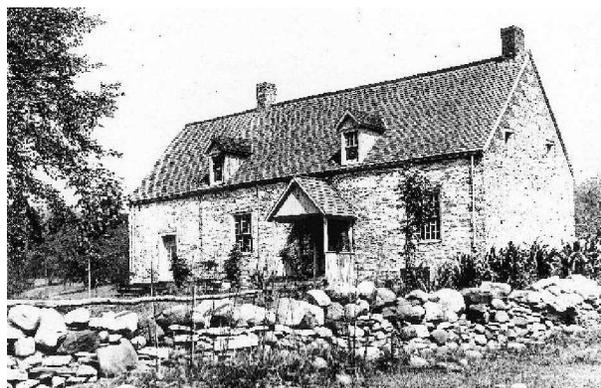
-----

**Hendrick Frey** -

<http://www.fortklock.com/greenech10.htm>

In the Palatine district, among other neighbors of Fort Plain, was the patriot Major John Frey and his Tory brother, **Hendrick Frey**, both sons of Heinrich Frey jr., who was possibly the first white child born in the wilderness west of Schenectady. Heinrich Frey sr., in 1689, had settled on 300 acres of land, at the now town of Palatine Bridge, where he built a log cabin. This was succeeded in 1739 by a stone dwelling which is often called Fort Frey, and is still standing. It had a row of portholes on all sides and was stockaded during the French war and occupied by several companies of soldiers.

*Fort Frey – ca 1900 >*



Col. **Hendrick Frey**, being the oldest son, inherited his father's landed estate which had grown to be of large size. He was educated at the school of Rev. Mr. Dunlap in Cherry Valley, and **married a sister [Elizabeth] of Gen. Herkimer**. He had been a colonel of Colonial troops under the Johnsons and with Guy Johnson had been the first to represent Tryon county in the assembly. After some delay Col. Hendrick Frey went over to the cause of England.

Major John Frey was born in 1740 and later educated also at Cherry Valley. He **married a niece of Gen. Herkimer**. At the age of sixteen he joined Bradstreet's expedition, to take Fort Niagara from the French, with the rank of lieutenant. He was a justice of Tryon county, a member of the Committee of Safety and in 1776 its chairman. He was the first sheriff of Tryon county elected by the people. At Oriskany, Maj. Frey was wounded in the arm and taken a prisoner to Canada. It is said that he was in danger of being killed by his own brother, a Tory, after the battle. He held important offices and died at the age of 93.

See further of the Frey family at **Appendix II**

-----  
**Charles Geddes** – Watchmaker; Loyal North British Volunteers; 1175, NO. 169 E.R. (A), Boston; 1776, No. 169 E.R. (A), New York; 1776 Halifax, NS; 1783 do; 1784 Joined No 211 E.R. (A), Halifax, NS; 1787 Master; d. 1807.

<http://boards.ancestrylibrary.com/surnames.geddes/207/mb.ashx>

Charles and Robert GEDDES lived in Halifax in the 1780s. Robert advertised his abilities as a cabinetmaker Feb 1780. Charles was a watchmaker and had a shop on Granville St. in 1783. Robert and Charles joined the North British Society in 1783 in Halifax. Charles was born 25 June 1750 in Edinburgh the son of James GEDDES and Liliás GRAY; died 27 Sep 1810, age 61 in Halifax, NS

Charles Geddes, watchmaker, Halifax, served Heir of Line and Provision General to his father, James Geddes, watchmaker in Edinburgh, dated 18th November 1784.

In his youth Charles learned his father's craft of watchmaker. A Covenant signed by him in Edinburgh 22 July 1770 which he renewed there two years later was found among his effects in Halifax, Nova Scotia, after his death.

----  
CHARLES GEDDES, Clock and Watch maker, & Finisher, from London, at his Shop below the Sign of Admiral Vernon, in King Street, Boston, makes, mends, cleans, repairs, and finishes all sorts of clocks and watches, in the best and neatest manner, and upon the most reasonable Terms.— *Boston News-Letter*, Oct. 14, 1773.

By 1791 Charles Geddes could advertise a complete line of violins, clarinets . . .

One of Brother Geddes' first acts in Halifax was to visit Lodge No. 211 on 4 August 1783 and of this Lodge he was elected a member on 5 April 1784. He was Junior Warden in 1785, Senior Warden in 1786, Master in 1787 and Treasurer, 1790-97. At the celebration of St. John the Baptist's Day in 1785 he was Senior Grand Deacon and at the celebrations in 1790 and 1791 he was one of the twelve Past Masters or Grand Stewards with White Rods.

For a fine sample of his clock work, see Appendix VI

-----  
**Robert Hamilton** –

[http://books.google.com/books?id=sxprqtvjLF0C&pg=PA468&dq=%22robert+hamilton%22+%22grand+master%22&hl=en&ei=XvSKTOnqPIQC8gbx0eipCQ&sa=X&oi=book\\_result&ct=result&resnum=1&ved=0CCkQ6AEwAA#v=onepage&q=%22robert%20hamilton%22%20%22grand%20master%22&f=false](http://books.google.com/books?id=sxprqtvjLF0C&pg=PA468&dq=%22robert+hamilton%22+%22grand+master%22&hl=en&ei=XvSKTOnqPIQC8gbx0eipCQ&sa=X&oi=book_result&ct=result&resnum=1&ved=0CCkQ6AEwAA#v=onepage&q=%22robert%20hamilton%22%20%22grand%20master%22&f=false) page 468.

**W. Bro. Hon. Robert Hamilton**, was the Deputy Provincial Grand Master of the First Provincial Grand Lodge under R. W. Bro. William Jarvis. He was a merchant of Niagara, a member of the Land Board in 1791 at that place, a member of the first Executive Council of the civil government in 1792, and a man prominent in affairs in that part of Upper Canada, he was also the first judge of the district of Nassau. Lord Dorchester formed western Canada into four districts, of which one was Nassau, and it was located between the river Trent on the east and to a line extending from Long Point north from the western boundary which included the Niagara peninsula.

In 1797 the lodges at Niagara elected him as Provincial Grand Master in the place of R. W. Bro. Jarvis, although the records after that date give the name of the latter officer as continuing in the office to which he had been appointed. R. W. Bro. Simon McGillivray, however, in a letter, which he wrote to the Grand Master of England in 1822, states that after R. W. Bro. Jarvis removed to York "the lodges at Niagara held a meeting and elected the late Robert Hamilton, Provincial Grand Master," but, he added, "Jarvis retained his warrant." It is possible that the lodges did this in 1797 and at a subsequent meeting in 1799-1800 re-elected Jarvis, for in a circular, dated 29th March, 1803, "R. W. Bro. William Jarvis, Esq., G. Master," is given.

During the American revolution Mr. Hamilton, in partnership with Mr. (afterwards Hon.) **Richard Cartwright**, established a store on Carleton Island, near the military post which was known as Fort Haldimand, and carried on an extensive trade with the Indians. Soon after the close of the war Mr. Hamilton removed to Queenston, and was appointed one of the local judges, having Lieut.-Col. John Butler as his colleague on the bench.

Captain Patrick Campbell, who visited Niagara in December, 1790, says:

"Mr. Robert Hamilton, a gentleman of the first rank and property in the neighborhood, and one of the Governor's Council, came also to wait on me and invite me to his house, an honor I readily embraced. He and Mrs. Hamilton were so very obliging as to go along with me in their oak sled to see the Grand Falls of Niagara."

Hamilton built a large stone residence at Queenston, a brewery and a warehouse. In 1791 he was appointed a member of the Legislative Council for the new Province of Upper Canada, an office he retained until his death. For some time he distinguished himself in connection with Mr. Cartwright, his old partner, also a member, by opposing government measures, thereby incurring Lt.-Governor Simcoe's lively displeasure. In one of the Governor's despatches he denounces Hamilton as an " avowed republican," but when it was hinted that certain privileges would be taken away from them the opposition ceased. Governor Simcoe acknowledged that he had received much valuable information respecting the commerce of the country, and particularly the Indian trade of the far west, from Mr. Hamilton. He was the father of the late Hon. John Hamilton, of Kingston.

The following entry concerning Mr. Hamilton is found in Mrs. Simcoe's diary, dated at Niagara, 30th July, 1792:

"We stopped and breakfasted at Mr. Hamilton's, a merchant who lives two miles from here at the landing, where the cargoes going to Detroit are landed and sent 9 miles to Ft. Chipewa."

"Mr. Hamilton has a very good stone house the back rooms looking on the river. A gallery, the length of the house, is a delightful covered walk, both below and above in all weather."

[http://books.google.com/books?id=LSe5v6d92i4C&pg=PA209&dq=%22robert+hamilton%22+%22lodge%22+%22queenstown%22&hl=en&ei=hE6KTMSXBIH\\_8AbwvJWdCw&sa=X&oi=book\\_result&ct=result&resnum=1&ved=0CDEQ6AEwAA#v=onepage&q=%22robert%20hamilton%22%20%22lodge%22%20%22queenstown%22&f=false](http://books.google.com/books?id=LSe5v6d92i4C&pg=PA209&dq=%22robert+hamilton%22+%22lodge%22+%22queenstown%22&hl=en&ei=hE6KTMSXBIH_8AbwvJWdCw&sa=X&oi=book_result&ct=result&resnum=1&ved=0CDEQ6AEwAA#v=onepage&q=%22robert%20hamilton%22%20%22lodge%22%20%22queenstown%22&f=false) page 209.

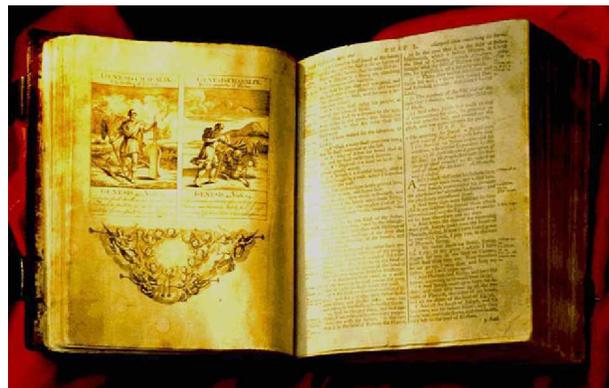
**Robert Hamilton** - Prominent in merchantile and official life in Niagara District. Shortly after the close of the Revolutionary War, Mr. Hamilton removed to Queenstown (Queenston), Upper Canada, from Carleton Island, where, in partnership with Richard (Hon.) Cartwright, he had carried on an extensive trade with the Indians. He built a brewery, wharves and warehouses at Queenston, and soon became prominent in that part of Upper Canada. He was a member of the Land Board, and was also first judge of the District of Nassau.

Under William Jarvis he became Deputy Provincial Grand Master of the First Provincial Grand Lodge of Freemasons, and in 1797 was elected Grand Master in place of Jarvis. For some time he distinguished himself in connection with his former partner, Mr. Cartwright, by opposing Government measures, thereby incurring Governor Simcoe's displeasure. The latter received from Hon. Robert Hamilton much valuable information respecting the commerce of the country, and particularly the Indian trade. His death took place at Queenston, 8 Mar 1809.

For a more complete and interesting biography of Robert Hamilton, see **Appendix VIII**.

-----  
**Jonathan Hampton –**

<http://www.stjohns1.org/portal/gwib>



As one of the oldest Lodges in the United States of America, it is only fitting that our Altar Bible is an irreplaceable part of the fabric of American history.

On 8 Mar 1770, St. John's Lodge suffered a catastrophic fire at its old Lodge room at Scotch Street. In addition to losing its earliest records and Lodge furnishings, the original Lodge Bible was destroyed in the conflagration.

On 28 Nov 1770, the Master of the St. John's, **W.: Jonathan Hampton**, presented a replacement Bible to the Lodge. At the time, printed Bibles were an expensive rarity and the Lodge was fortunate indeed to benefit from W.: Hampton's generosity. Scarcely could the Brethren of the time have predicted that within a few short years the Colonies were to sever their ties with their mother country and the Bible was to become the very cornerstone of a new nation founded upon the Masonic principles

of liberty and equality.

The Bible was printed by Mark Baskett, printer by Royal Appointment to the King's Most Excellent Majesty, London 1767. The deep gold lettering, distinctly clear on both covers, displays this inscription:

"God shall establish; St. John's Lodge constituted 5757; Burnt down 8th March, 5770; Rebuilt and opened November 28th, 5770. Officers then presiding: Jonathan Hampton, Master: William Butler, Senior Warden: Isaac Heron, Junior Warden."

The Bible is the King James Version, complete with the Apocrypha and elaborately supplemented with the historical, astronomical and legal data of that period. It contains numerous artistic steel engravings portraying Biblical narratives from designs and paintings by old masters and engraved by the celebrated English artist, John Stuart.

After the conclusion of the War of Independence, New York City became the first Constitutional capital of the United States, and it was there on April 30th, 1789 that Brother George Washington was to be sworn in as the first President of the United States.

On a platform erected for the purpose, in front of the then City Hall, were gathered the Congress of the United States, with George Washington and Chancellor Livingston, Grand Master of Masons in the State of New York. In front of them was an immense concourse of citizens. It was indeed a great holiday occasion; the Revolutionary War was over and peace reigned throughout the country.

Everything was ready for the administration of the oath of office to the President of the new government, when it was discovered that a Holy Bible had not been provided on which the President-Elect could swear allegiance to the Constitution. Jacob Morton, who was Marshal of the parade, and at that time Master of St. John's Lodge, was standing close by. Seeing the dilemma they were in, he remarked that he could get the altar Bible of St. John's Lodge, which met at the Old Coffee House on the corner of Water and Wall Streets. Chancellor Livingston begged him to do so. The Bible was brought, and the ceremony proceeded. The stately Washington took his oath with his right hand resting on the Bible which had been opened to Genesis XLIX and L. His head bowed in a reverential manner, he added in a clear and distinct voice, "I swear, so help me God!" then bowing over this magnificent Bible, he reverently kissed it, whereupon Chancellor Livingston exclaimed in a ringing voice, "Long live George Washington, President of the United States!"

To preserve the memory of this auspicious event, a page was inserted in the Bible with the following inscription:

"On this sacred volume, on the 30th day of April, A. L. 5789, in the City of New York, was administered to George Washington, the first president of the United States of America, the oath to support the Constitution of the United States. This important ceremony was performed by the Most Worshipful Grand Master of Free and Accepted Masons of the State of New York, the Honorable Robert R. Livingston, Chancellor of the State.

Fame stretched her wings and with her trumpet blew.  
Great Washington is near. What praise is due?  
What title shall he have? She paused, and said  
'Not one - his name alone strikes every title dead."

The Bible has since been used at four other inaugurations: President Harding in 1921; President Eisenhower in 1953; President Jimmy Carter in 1977 and President George Bush Sr. in 1989. It was also to have been used for the inauguration of George W. Bush in 2001, but rain prevented its use. It has also been present at numerous public and Masonic occasions, including Washington's funeral procession in New York, December 31st, 1799; the introduction of Croton water into New York City, October 14th, 1840; the dedication of the Masonic Temple in Boston, June 24th, 1867, and of that in Philadelphia on May 24th, 1869; the dedication of the Washington monument in Washington, February 21st, 1885 and its rededication in 1998; and the laying of the cornerstone of the Masonic Home at Utica on May 21st, 1891.

It was also used at the opening of the present Masonic Hall in New York on September 18, 1909, when St. John's Lodge held the first meeting, and conferred the first Third Degree, in the newly completed Temple. More recently it featured at the World Fair in New York, has been displayed at the CIA Offices outside Washington D.C., and at the Famous Fathers & Sons exhibition at the George Bush Memorial Library outside Dallas, Texas in 2001. The Bible is still in active use by the Lodge. When not being used by St. John's Lodge or on tour, it is on display at Federal Hall, Wall Street, New York.

-----

ALR, page 223:

**Thomas Hanford** b. 1751 of Connecticut; 1780 Lodge No. 210 E.R. (A), New York; At the peace he went to St. John, New Brunswick, and was a grantee of that city. He became an eminent merchant. In 1795 he was a member of the Loyal Artillery. He died at St. John, NB, in 1826, aged 73. Ann, his widow, survived several years, and died at the age of 78.

-----

<http://loyalistfamilies.com/the-family-of-george-harding-maugerville-loyalist/>

**George Harding** (c.1744-1808), Loyalist. In 1783 George Harding purchased Lot 74 in Maugerville from Samuel and Sarah Bridges, and he was listed in the Sunbury County Poll Book, 1795, with home and freehold in Maugerville. Mrs. Harding, "consort of George Harding," died in 1795.

George Harding deeded his slave Sippee to his son John, "to be his property and his heirs and successors during the life of the said negro..." The indenture was dated 1784 and signed in 1802 by the Justice of the Peace at Maugerville, Elijah Miles. This interesting document was given to the Legislative Library, Fredericton and is framed. John Harding willed his slaves to his sister, Elizabeth, the second wife of the Loyalist Captain Elijah Miles. Sippee became the verger of Christ Church, Maugerville.

-----

**Elias Hardy** – 1775, Virginia; 1777, Maryland; New York; 1784, Lodge No. 169 E.R. (A), New York; 1784, Master; 1784, visitor to Lodge No. 211 E.R. (A), Halifax, NS; 1784, petitioner for Lodge at Parr (St. John), NB (Hiram Lodge No. 17 NS); 1784, Master; 1785, joined Parr Lodge No. 3, Selburne, NS; St. George's Lodge No. 2, NY; 1789, St. George's Lodge No. 19, Maugerville, NB. d. 1798 Saint John, NB.

[http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Elias\\_Hardy](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Elias_Hardy)

Dictionary of Canadian Biography

[http://www.biographi.ca/009004-119.01-e.php?id\\_nbr=1934](http://www.biographi.ca/009004-119.01-e.php?id_nbr=1934)

**Elias Hardy**, lawyer and office-holder; b. ca 1744 at Farnham, Surrey, England; m. Martha Huggeford of New York; d. 25 Dec. 1798 at Saint John, New Brunswick.

Elias Hardy, the son of a nonconformist minister, read law and in 1770 was admitted as a solicitor in the courts of Chancery and King's Bench. In 1775 he decided to seek his fortune in the new world and went to Virginia where, finding the courts closed because of the colonists' dispute with the British government, he worked briefly as a tutor. Hardy publicly criticized Thomas Paine's inflammatory pamphlet *Common sense* . . . (1776), which led to his seizure by a mob of Virginia partisans. He escaped and fled first to Maryland, and then to New York City, where he remained for the duration of the American Revolution. In 1778 he was commissioned to act as a notary public. Hardy took no part in the war although he tried to obtain a military commission, but he was clearly identified as a loyalist. In 1782 he was one of the nine petitioners, including such loyalist notables as Charles Inglis, Samuel Seabury, and Christopher Billopp, who begged Sir Guy Carleton\* to see that loyalist interests were safeguarded during the peace negotiations.

Hardy originally intended to return to England at the end of the war, when an outburst of dissension within the loyalist ranks permanently altered the course of his life. A group of 55 New York professional men and Church of England ministers petitioned the British government in July 1783 for extraordinary grants of 5,000 acres of land in Nova Scotia, in recognition of their special merits and wartime sacrifices. Many common loyalist refugees were enraged by this Petition of Fifty-five and asked a committee consisting of Hardy, Samuel Hake, Tertullus Dickinson (Hardy's brother-in-law), and Captain Henry Law to express their opposition formally. Hardy himself drafted the angry, eloquent counter-petition, which, signed by 600 loyalists, accused the 55 of trying to secure all the best lands in Nova Scotia for themselves and force other refugees "to be tenants to those whom they consider as their superiors in nothing but deeper art and keener policy." For the refugees, the counter-petition elicited an assurance from Carleton that all loyalist exiles would receive equitable grants of good land in Nova Scotia. For Hardy, it set the mould for his subsequent career in British North America.

Henceforth Hardy's public activities were marked by an active, though always legally correct, opposition to the attempts of loyalists favoured by wealth, official position, or other special privilege to use their influence to take advantage of the less fortunate. He was not a radical, but his political and legal career from 1783 until his terminal illness in 1795 displays a consistent determination to protect the rights of the common citizen against more powerful; aggrandizing interests.

In 1783 Hardy decided to accompany the loyalist exiles who were resettling around the Saint John harbor area of Nova Scotia. There he encountered widespread discontent over the prejudicial manner in which the loyalist agents in charge of the settlements along the Saint John River were distributing the best commercial lots to themselves and their friends. At the request of a loyalist militia company, Hardy drafted a petition of grievances which accused the agents of favoritism in the distribution of land and supplies and threatened to take the case to London if a fairer system were not introduced. This petition thoroughly alarmed both the agents and Governor John PARR of Nova Scotia. It not only impugned the agents' management of the settlement process, but potentially endangered their effort to get the British government to partition Nova Scotia and create a separate loyalist province north of the Bay of Fundy. The governor saw in the petition a challenge to the conduct of his administration.

At first, Parr was inclined to blame Hardy for the troubles along the Saint John. Hardy, however, went to Halifax during the winter of 1783-84 and convinced the governor that his real enemies were the loyalist agents, both because of their partiality in allocating lands and, more important, because of their desire to use the discontent within the settlements to discredit the Parr administration so as to achieve the partition of Nova Scotia. Parr and Hardy thereupon allied themselves to undermine the power of the agents and oppose the partition movement. In the spring of 1784, Hardy returned to the Saint John with Parr's chief justice, Bryan Finucane, who promptly redistributed the contested commercial lots and began to organize a political opposition to partition. In addition, the Nova Scotia Council set up a committee of inquiry to investigate the conduct of the agents, with Hardy as its chief investigator. The agents reacted predictably to Hardy's activities. In Lieutenant-Colonel Edward Winslow\*'s opinion, Hardy was not only "a pettifogging notary public" but "a viper"; Major John Coffin\* condemned him as a "vagabound," and George Leonard\* as the leader of "Malcontents" and "undeserving people." Hardy was undeterred, but his efforts came too late. The British government had already decided to partition Nova Scotia, and in June 1784 New Brunswick was created with the loyalist agents and their colleagues firmly entrenched in the most important positions of power.

In spite of this setback, Hardy chose to stay on in New Brunswick and settled in Saint John. His role in the hotly contested election of 1785 is ambiguous. Although Hardy declined to be a candidate in the city, Governor Thomas Carleton\* was probably correct when he identified him as the mastermind behind the slate of candidates who opposed the government nominees. The lower cove party, as it was called, was headed by Dickinson, and **five of the party's six candidates were members of the first Masonic lodge in Saint John, formed in September 1784, to which Hardy also belonged.** Hardy was the recognized spokesman for the opposition slate during the election itself, but he personally worked to damp down the threat of violence which eventually led to a riot. He later defended the rioters against government prosecution. Hardy himself was elected to the assembly from the remote county of Northumberland, thanks to the sponsorship of his client, the fishing magnate William DAVIDSON. His voting record in the assembly was decidedly liberal but not intransigently antigovernment, demonstrating the delicate balance which Hardy tried to maintain between the need for a well-established system of law and order within the province and the equally important need for its inhabitants to be able to enjoy their rights and express their grievances. Thus while Hardy supported the administration's bill to discourage "tumults and disorders," he opposed its effort to limit political meetings to 20 persons. Likewise, although he voted to establish the Church of England in the province, he at the same time sought to extend the right to perform the marriage ceremony to Presbyterian and Methodist ministers. Hardy was unequivocal in his support of bills to pay assembly members for their expenses while attending legislative sessions and in opposing a residence requirement for assembly candidates, in both instances wishing to see a broadening of the choice open to the electorate. Yet Hardy's professional respect for the law caused him to oppose popular efforts to reduce the jurisdiction of the Supreme Court. By 1790 Hardy's politics had become sufficiently acceptable to the Carleton government that he was appointed, with the Executive Council's assent, common clerk of the City of Saint John.

It has been stated that, as a lawyer, Hardy was "well nigh without a peer," and inevitably he attracted clients among the well-to-do as well as the indigent, although even the most prosperous were not accepted members of New Brunswick's governing élite. In October 1783 he and John Le Chevalier Roome had formed a partnership in New York to collect loyalist claims and forward them to London, and during the 1780s he drafted and presented the claims of many New Brunswickers for compensation from the loyalist claims commission. His most famous trial cases were his defense of Munson Hoyt against charges of slander by Benedict Arnold\* in

1790, his representation, which began in 1793, of James Simonds\* against his former partners in the Simonds, Hazen and White Company, and his opposition to the attempts of the landowners along the Saint John River to reduce the fishing rights of the citizens of Saint John. In all these cases, opposing counsel was New Brunswick's other great trial lawyer, Ward Chipman\*.

In 1793 Hardy relinquished his seat in Northumberland County and was elected to the assembly from Saint John. Henceforth, he became a much more conspicuous advocate of that city's populace. Thus, he supported bills to establish local grammar schools in preference to a college at Fredericton, he joined the effort to move the provincial capital back to Saint John from Fredericton, and, most notably, he used his political and legal skills to protect the rights of the Saint John fishermen. Throughout these disputes, Hardy did not attack the Carleton government head-on but in 1795, when the Legislative Council chose to question the assembly's power to initiate revenue measures, Hardy drafted a sophisticated, terse reply for the assembly, emphatically asserting its exclusive right to originate money bills. This impassioned defense of the people's representatives proved to be Hardy's last significant political act, for ill health forced him out of public life later in the same year. It seems a most fitting climax to his career.

Neither Hardy's person nor his politics ever won him entry into New Brunswick's elegant social circles, but, as Ward Chipman ruefully admitted, he maintained his popular base of support throughout his life. Even after Chipman and Mayor Gabriel George Ludlow\* engineered Hardy's dismissal from the Saint John clerkship in 1795 as part of a fisheries dispute, the Common Council voted Hardy a sum of £80 in 1797 for his "past services." Like so many of his clients and supporters, Hardy was buried in an unmarked grave in Saint John upon his death in 1798. His estate was valued at £61. Soon thereafter Hardy's wife Martha and their four children moved to the New York home of her father, Dr Peter Huggesford, a New York loyalist who had lived briefly in Saint John after the revolution and then resettled permanently in the United States.

In the 20th century Hardy's contribution to the provincial legal tradition has been acknowledged, but his contributions as a political reformer still remain largely unrecognized. In part this neglect is because he has been overshadowed in Canadian historiography by the more flamboyant and politically aggressive assembly champion, James Glenie\*. Yet Glenie's opposition to the Carleton government was sporadic and limited to select issues, and it sometimes seemed motivated more by a desire to advance his political position in England than to improve the lot of the people of New Brunswick. The bulk of the evidence suggests that Hardy's milder, but broader and more constant, defense of the impoverished refugee, the subsistence farmer, the city mechanic, and the common fisherman made him the most effective advocate of individual liberties and popular participation in government during New Brunswick's earliest years.

See also the book "The London lawyer: a biographical sketch of Elias Hardy, counsellor-at-law," by William Odber Raymond. 1894. 12 pages, at:

[http://books.google.com/books?id=5BUbAAAAAAJ&pg=PA4-IA1&lpg=PA4-IA1&dq=%22elijas+hardy%22&source=bl&ots=5bYnVtc79P&sig=AFv\\_bfNwXN5mKjKdOCfb-toZg&hl=en&ei=1FfTMe6IMK8ga-8O3LDQ&sa=X&oi=book\\_result&ct=result&resnum=1&ved=0CBUQ6AEwADgK#v=onepage&q&f=false](http://books.google.com/books?id=5BUbAAAAAAJ&pg=PA4-IA1&lpg=PA4-IA1&dq=%22elijas+hardy%22&source=bl&ots=5bYnVtc79P&sig=AFv_bfNwXN5mKjKdOCfb-toZg&hl=en&ei=1FfTMe6IMK8ga-8O3LDQ&sa=X&oi=book_result&ct=result&resnum=1&ved=0CBUQ6AEwADgK#v=onepage&q&f=false)

----

**Jehu Hay** – Union Lodge No. 1, Prov. GL of NY; 1782-86 Lt. Gov. of Detroit.

[http://www.biographi.ca/009004-119.01-e.php?&id\\_nbr=1941&interval=25&&PHPSESSID=adnkols6nskkj5vb2814m7aed1](http://www.biographi.ca/009004-119.01-e.php?&id_nbr=1941&interval=25&&PHPSESSID=adnkols6nskkj5vb2814m7aed1)

**Jehu [John] Hay (Hayes, Hays)**, army officer, Indian department official, and lieutenant governor of Detroit; probably b. at Chester, Pennsylvania; m. 1764 Julie-Marie Réaume at Detroit, and they had a large family; d. 2 Aug 1785 at Detroit.

Jehu Hay purchased an ensigncy in the Royal Americans (60th Foot) and was formally commissioned on 2 Apr 1758. He was assistant engineer at Fort Niagara (near Youngstown, NY) in 1760 and from about the beginning of Aug 1761 was adjutant there. On 27 Apr 1762 he was promoted lieutenant and shortly after was sent to Detroit with Henry GLADWIN. Hay played an active role in the defense of the fort against Pontiac's siege in 1763 and his diary is a major source for the history of this episode. The disbanding of much of his regiment in 1763 caused Hay anxiety over his prospects, especially when his improvident father died that year and left him responsible for a brother and sister. On Gladwin's recommendation he was made fort major in Aug 1764. Later that fall, however, he was placed on half pay.

In Feb 1765 Hay sought employment in the Indian department from Sir William Johnson and in mid 1766 was appointed commissary for Indian affairs at Detroit with a salary of £200 a year. In this capacity he supervised trade with the Indians, attended conferences, and procured intelligence on Indian affairs. He experienced his first problems with the Detroit mercantile community at this time because he had to enforce unpopular restrictions on the Indian trade. It has been alleged that his handling of crown funds would not have stood close scrutiny; Hay, however, felt that his superiors' auditing was already too rigorous.

As a result of the British government's decision in 1768 to turn over responsibility for Indian affairs to the colonies, the department's funds decreased and the commissaries were discharged as of 25 Mar 1769. Hay did not secure another appointment in the department until early 1774, when he was made the Indian agent at Detroit. At this time Thomas GAGE commissioned him to tour the Ohio valley and report on the increasingly chaotic situation there. Hay left in July but had to turn back because of the hostility of the Shawnees, who were at war with Virginia.

In 1775 Detroit received a lieutenant governor in Henry HAMILTON. He and Hay became close, and by 1778 Hay was Indian agent, acting engineer, barrack master, and major, commanding six companies of the local militia. He played an important role in Hamilton's expedition against Vincennes (Ind.) in the fall of 1778, supervising preparations, obtaining intelligence, conferring with the Indians, and leading the advance party in the final successful approach to the fort. Over the winter he assisted in rebuilding and supplying it. When George Rogers Clark attacked Vincennes in Feb 1779 Hay took part in the negotiations for its surrender. Clark believed that Hamilton and Hay were responsible for Indian raids on frontier settlements in Kentucky and the Ohio valley and spoke of executing them as murderers. Governor Thomas Jefferson of Virginia shared Clark's hostility and delayed releasing them as long as he could. They gave their paroles on 10 Oct 1780, proceeded to New York, and sailed for England on 27 May 1781.

On 23 Apr 1782 Hay was appointed lieutenant governor of Detroit as a reward for his service, and he reached Quebec late in June. He soon came into conflict with Governor Haldimand, who was unwilling to change the command at Detroit at what he felt to be a critical juncture in the western campaigns. Haldimand did not want to remove the commandant, Major Arent Schuyler De Peyster, or to insult him by requiring him to serve under an ex-lieutenant. By the end of Oct 1783 he had decided to transfer De Peyster to Niagara and send Hay to Detroit, but he angered Hay by leaving responsibility for Indian affairs in the hands of Alexander MCKEE.

Hay reached his post on 12 Jul 1784. He was soon in trouble with both Haldimand and the inhabitants about the enforcement of strict and unpopular British controls over shipping on the Great Lakes, and about expenses at Detroit, the eviction of non-residents, and the removal of local records to Quebec. Once again he was the man in the middle and could satisfy neither party. He repaired Detroit's fortifications and barracks and worked well with McKee, an old associate, in gathering intelligence and conducting diplomacy among the tribes. His health was poor, however, and he died on 2 Aug 1785.

[http://books.google.com/books?id=o5QUAAAAYAAJ&pg=PA132&dq=%22jehu+hay%22&hl=en&ei=wlprTOmgOsH48Ab55J3-zzBA&sa=X&oi=book\\_result&ct=result&resnum=8&ved=0CFAQ6AEwBzgK#v=onepage&q=%22jehu%20hay%22&f=false](http://books.google.com/books?id=o5QUAAAAYAAJ&pg=PA132&dq=%22jehu+hay%22&hl=en&ei=wlprTOmgOsH48Ab55J3-zzBA&sa=X&oi=book_result&ct=result&resnum=8&ved=0CFAQ6AEwBzgK#v=onepage&q=%22jehu%20hay%22&f=false) pg. 132.

Jehu Hay, the last lieutenant-governor of Detroit, was born in Chester, Pennsylvania, and in 1758 he enlisted in the 60th American Regiment. In 1762 he was a lieutenant at Detroit and served here during the siege of the town by Pontiac the following year. In 1774 he was selected by General Haldimand to visit the Illinois country and report upon the conditions there. Two years later he was made deputy Indian agent and major of the Detroit militia. He accompanied Hamilton to Vincennes in 1778, was captured there and taken to Virginia as a prisoner of war. On October 10, 1780, he was paroled to go to New York, and the following year he was exchanged.

In 1782 he was appointed lieutenant-governor of Detroit, but did not assume the duties of the position until more than a year later on account of objections on the part of Colonel De Peyster, who wrote to Governor Haldimand that he "did not wish to have anything to do with Mr. Hay." Later, in Oct 1783, Colonel De Peyster was ordered to Niagara, but it was so late in the season that his departure was delayed until the next spring, and Hay did not arrive in Detroit until 12 Jul 1784. When he did arrive he found the powers of the office much restricted. By Governor Haldimand's orders, Sir William Johnson, before his death in 1774, had made the distribution of goods to the Indians and his methods were now followed, although Hay protested that it was a usurpation of his functions. It has been stated that Hay paid a large sum of money for the appointment and was naturally disappointed when some of his perquisites were taken away from him. Hay was of disagreeable disposition and had few friends, his bearing being caused in part, however, by ill health. His death occurred at Detroit on 2 Aug 1785. His widow, whose maiden name was Marie Julie Reaume (1748-1795) daughter Hyacinthe Reaume (1704-1774) and Agathe Lacelle (1709-1778), and to whom he was married 22 Jan 1748, died at Detroit, 23 Mar 1795.

In the summer of 1911 workmen employed in the excavation of a sewer on Jefferson Avenue unearthed a black walnut coffin containing a human skeleton. C. M. Burton, city historiographer, made a careful investigation of the discovery and reached the conclusion that the skeleton was that of Jehu Hay. The fact that a black walnut coffin indicated a person of importance, as the common people upon interment were seldom given the luxury of even a pine coffin, also that the body was found at the site of the "governor's gardens," wherein history records that Hay was buried, led to the almost certain identification of the remains.

-----

#### **Timothy Hierlihy -**

Ref: Timothy Hierlihy and his Times, 157 pages, at: <http://buttercup.library.mun.ca/cdm-stfx/document.php?CISOROOT=/stfx&CISOPTR=6327&REC=18>

<http://www.stpius.addr.com/durham.html>

**Lieutenant Colonel Timothy Hierlihy** - A native of Ireland, he migrated to America in 1753. Shortly after his arrival in America the French and Indian War broke out in 1754. ... On 26th April, 1755, Timothy Hierlihy began his long military career. Enlisted in 2nd Connecticut Regiment, and was appointed clerk in No.1 Company. Hierlihy served throughout the American campaigns which ended with the capture of Quebec in 1759. (Hierlihy's enlistment and various promotions in course of French and Indian War are catalogued in the Connecticut Colonial Records). He eventually settled at Middletown Connecticut, a town on the Connecticut River about 25 miles south of Hartford, and bought 70 acres where he built a house and barn and was residing at the outbreak of the War of Independence. ... Hierlihy married at Christ Church, Middletown, to Miss Elizabeth Wetmore ... his son Timothy William was born there. (Note: This was written prior to Middlefield being a separate town from Middletown).

<http://www.parl.ns.ca/placenames/antigonisha.html>

In 1784 **Colonel Timothy Hierlihy** and the other officers and men of the Nova Scotia Volunteers received a grant of twenty-one thousand six hundred acres of Antigonish Harbour, this was later known as the "Soldiers Grant." **Colonel Timothy Grant Hierlihy** had served in the Prince of Whales Regiment during the American Revolution, recruited men for service in Independent Companies and in 1778 was sent to the Island of St. John (now Prince Edward Island) with the troops under his command being stationed at Charlottetown. In 1782 these troops were merged with the Nova Scotia Volunteers with Hierlihy as commanding officer.

-----

<http://www.nysm.nysed.gov/albany/bios/h/bhilton1876.html>

**Benjamin Hilton, Jr.**, was baptized in September 1749. He was the son of Benjamin Hilton and Mary Price. He was known as Benjamin Jr. to prevent confusion with his well-known father. This innkeeper's son grew up on Albany's south side, was listed as a private in an Albany militia company in 1767 and later served on the city night watch. In September 1774, he was one of the founding members of St. George's Masonic Lodge in Schenectady. Benjamin Jr. helped out at the family establishment where he came into frequent contact with English speakers and began to identify with the royalist perspective on colonial life.

Although he contributed three shillings for the relief of Ticonderoga in May 1775, he would not follow his neighbors down the road to Revolution. About that time, he was appointed lieutenant of a new militia company but refused to serve. Losing his father as he was coming of age, Benjamin Jr. already had begun to express his feelings of opposition to the crusade for American liberties. His letters to prominent Tories were not appreciated! In January 1776, the twenty-seven-year-old was placed under house arrest. In June, he refused to sign the Association and subsequently was deported to Hartford, Connecticut. His inflammatory written rhetoric made his freedom in Albany impossible. Even the support of his uncle, revolutionary stalwart John Price, could no longer save him.

In November 1779, a New York newspaper announced that he had married Susannah Griswold at Hempstead Plains. In 1781, he was again denounced as a loyalist. In 1784, he settled in Wolfville, Nova Scotia where he resumed Masonic activities. During the 1790s, he sold his family's Albany real estate.

<http://www.stgeorgeslodge.org/history.htm>

In 1773, when **Benjamin Hilton, Jr.** and Cornelius VanDyck were raised by Master's Lodge, the group around the table in the corner probably became rather crowded. During the spring and summer months there must have been much discussion about meeting privately in a separate room and, of course, organizing a Masonic Lodge to save the long tiresome trips to Albany and Johnstown. A petition to form a lodge in Schenectady was presented to Master's Lodge in Albany, on October 4, 1773 and this is recorded in their minutes.

It was signed by Brothers Christopher Yates, John Hughan and **Benjamin Hilton, Jr.** and was directed to Right Worshipful Provincial Grand Master Sir John Johnson. The petition requested that certain brothers "be formed into a regular body by the name of St. George's Lodge in Schenectady." . . .

Master's Lodge presented the petition to Sir John Johnson complying with ancient Masonic custom that a new lodge should be recommended by the nearest existing lodge. The dispensation was granted on June 21, 1774 to form St. George's, Lodge No. 1 in Schenectady and to "make Masons according to the strict rules of Masonry." The dispensation appointed Christopher Yates, Master, **Benjamin Hilton, Senior Warden** and John Hughan, Junior Warden with full power to make by-laws and conduct the affairs of the Lodge. The first recorded meeting was held on August 18, 1774, when the by-laws were adopted.

<http://www.nysm.nysed.gov/albany/bios/h/bhilton.html>

Benjamin Hilton [Sr.] may have been the son of trader and innkeeper William Hilton and his second wife, Anna Van Berkhoven. He married Maria Price in September 1742. Over the next two decades, their children were baptized in the Albany Dutch church and at St. Peter's English church where both parents were members. These Hiltons lived on Albany's south side. In 1740, he was chosen constable in the first ward. Following his recently deceased father, in 1756 he was identified as an innkeeper. Hilton's Beaver Street establishment was near the home and tavern of **Richard Cartwright** [q.v.]. In 1771, Simon Myer rented business space there. Hilton also held another lot away from the settled part of the city.

Benjamin Hilton belonged to the **Albany Masonic Lodge**, supported St. Peter's, was reimbursed by the city for expenses, and served on Albany juries. He had passed on by 1779 when his widow was identified as the head of household on an Albany assessment roll. His son was the Tory, **Benjamin Hilton, Jr.**

-----

**Nahum Houghton** – 1780, No. 210 E.R. (A), New York.

<http://freepages.genealogy.rootsweb.ancestry.com/~houghtonfamily/p1032.htm>

Nahum **Houghton** was born on 1 October 1732 in Lancaster, Worcester, MA, son of Benjamin Houghton, Jr. and Ruth Wheelock; m. Sarah Hazelton 20 Jan 1777 both given as "of Concord," NH.

The following advertisement which appeared in the *Massachusetts Spy*.

"LANCASTER, July 17th, 1775. "Whereas Nahum Houghton being complained of as being an enemy to his Country, by officiating as an unwearied Pedlar of that baneful herb TEA, and otherwise rendering himself odious to the inhabitants of this Town, and notwithstanding being warned, he did not appear before the Committee that his political principles might be Known. This therefore (agreeable to a vote of said Town) is to caution all friends to the Community, to entirely shun his Company, and have no manner of dealings or connections with him, except acts of common humanity.

JOHN PRESCOTT, *Chairman.*"

Children:

- |                    |  |
|--------------------|--|
| i. Sally           | b. 14 Apr 1777, Shoreham, Addison, VT  |
| ii. Nahum          | b. 10 Apr 1783   |
| iii. Sophia        | b. 10 Apr 1783   |
| iv. William        | b. 12 Nov 1784   |
| v. Elizabeth       | b. 23 Feb 1786   |
| vi. Peter Hazleton | b. 09 Feb 1788, Shoreham, Addison, VT; d. 9 Mar 1865, Bridport, Addison, VT; m. 14 Mar 1818 Electa Smith |
| vii. Lucina        | b. 28 Aug 1789   |
| viii. Susanna      | b. 07 Jun 1793 (twin)  |
| ix. Rosanna        | b. 07 Jun 1793 (twin)  |
| x. Polly           | b. 18 Jul 1795; m. David Vantine   |

Children of Benjamin Houghton Jr and Ruth Wheelock:

- |                                  |                                |
|----------------------------------|--------------------------------|
| i. Ezra Houghton+                | b. 2 Jul 1722, d. 18 Jul 1789  |
| ii. Trumpeter Abijah Houghton Sr | b. 23 Sep 1723, d. 23 Jan 1802 |

- |                             |                                   |
|-----------------------------|-----------------------------------|
| iii. Relief Houghton        | b. 23 Oct 1726, d. 29 Oct 1795    |
| iv. Capt. Elijah Houghton   | b. 16 Jun 1728, d. 7 Jul 1810     |
| v. Parnee Houghton          | b. 14 Apr 1730, d. 25 Jan 1816    |
| vi. Philemon Houghton       | b. 3 Jun 1731                     |
| <b>vii. Nahum Houghton</b>  | <b>b. 1 Oct 1732</b>              |
| viii. Ruth Houghton         | b. 3 Apr 1734                     |
| ix. Lemuel Houghton         | b. 25 Sep 1735, d. bt 1810 - 1811 |
| x. Deacon Benjamin Houghton | b. 10 May 1740, d. 31 Jul 1802    |
| xi. Ephraim Houghton        | b. 1742, d. 12 Apr 1777           |
| xii. Elisabeth Houghton     | b. 24 Oct 1743                    |
| xiii. Capt. John Houghton   | b. 14 Oct 1745, d. 15 Aug 1818    |

-----

**Dr. Peter Huggeford** - Lodge No. 169 E.R. (A), New York; King's Royal American Regiment.

[http://books.google.com/books?id=EtgUAAAAYAAJ&pg=PA175&lpg=PA175&dq=%22peter+huggeford%22&source=bl&ots=IFfPBbYqN&sig=CotHILSOKGyrB8jlXiBJ1dggsos&hl=en&ei=DC5vTITkYP58Ab6taSbDQ&sa=X&oi=book\\_result&ct=result&resnum=1&ed=0CBIQ6AEwAA#v=onepage&q=%22peter%20huggeford%22&f=false](http://books.google.com/books?id=EtgUAAAAYAAJ&pg=PA175&lpg=PA175&dq=%22peter+huggeford%22&source=bl&ots=IFfPBbYqN&sig=CotHILSOKGyrB8jlXiBJ1dggsos&hl=en&ei=DC5vTITkYP58Ab6taSbDQ&sa=X&oi=book_result&ct=result&resnum=1&ed=0CBIQ6AEwAA#v=onepage&q=%22peter%20huggeford%22&f=false) page 175.

**Dr. Peter Huggeford** was a Loyalist, and his Cortlandt property was confiscated. He went to Nova Scotia during the Revolution, but returned to White Plains, where he died. (For a fuller account of his life, see *Deceased Physicians of Westchester County*). In his will dated July 28, 1796, Peter Huggeford of the Town of White Plains, Physician, ordered his executors to sell 700 acres of land at St. Mary's Bay in Nova Scotia; the proceeds to go to "surviving children" and "the heirs of my deceased children." He mentions daughters Frances Field, Martha Hardy, Jane Dickinson and Esther; sons Tertulles and Joseph; grandson John Huggeford; sons in law John Titus, Tertulles Dickinson and Benjamin Field. To his daughter Frances Field, he gave "the land where I now live." His 500 acres of land in Schoharie and 700 acres in Vermont, were "to be sold if recovered." For will of Dr. Huggeford's son John of New York, witnessed by Richard Hatfield, Esq., and his wife Mary, see *New York Wills*.

-----

**Solomon Johns** – King's Rangers; 1766, Init. Union Lodge No. 1, PGL NY, Albany; 1766, joined St. Patrick's Lodge No. 4, Johnstown, NY; 1770, Master; 1781, Charter Member St. James Lodge No. 14, PGL, Cataraqui [Kingston], Quebec.

Lodge No. 14:

Quebec, 12 May 1781

At the petition of our Worshipful Brothers, Major James Rogers, Captain John Walden Meyers, Lieut. **William Buell**, Captain Ozariah Pritchard, Lieutenant **Solomon Johns**, James Taylor, James Ferguson, & William Marsh, in the **King's Rangers**,

A Warrant was granted, constituting said Brethren into a Regular Lodge of Free & Accepted Masons, by the name of St. James' Lodge No. 14, of Quebec . . . Given at Cataraqui, in the Province of Quebec . . . this 23rd Day of June, A.L. 5784. . .

<http://www.bucklinsociety.net/JohnsSolomon.htm>

Solomon Johns, began his life in the town of Sharon, New Haven (Litchfield) County, Connecticut. He was the ninth and last child of Benjamin Johns and Mary Allis. Because his mother died shortly after his birth, it is likely that Jerusha Johns, his stepmother, took care of him as he grew up in Amenia, New York. Solomon was involved in land speculation with his father from a young age. They were part of a group known as the "Yorkers", or "Durhamites", who acquired land in the New Hampshire Grants, later to become the state of Vermont.

Solomon acquired land prior to 1775 in Clarendon, Rutland County, Vermont. A muster roll taken during the Revolutionary War states that Solomon had been a farmer there. We assume that he settled on this land with his bride, Susanna Bucklin, after their marriage in 1775. Their first son, David Bucklin Johns, was probably born at the Clarendon property in the latter part of 1776.

The Declaration of Independence in 1776 changed the lives of everyone in colonial America. Some inhabitants were truly loyal British subjects. Others felt that the notable British army would win the conflict and so they remained loyal to the "crown" in order to retain their land. These people were called Tories, later known as Loyalists. The citizens who would not accept the high taxes imposed by Britain, or the demands of King George III, were the Patriots, also known as "rebels". Feelings were extremely strong on both sides and thus began the Revolutionary War for independence from Britain. Unfortunately, many families in America were torn apart because of their diverging principles. The Johns family had men fighting on opposing sides.

When the revolution heated up Solomon Johns chose to pledge allegiance to the crown by "joining the King's troops in August 1777" . Other "Yorkers" were reported to have joined as well. This very likely occurred when General John Burgoyne, military governor of Canada, came through Vermont on his campaign south from Fort St. Johns. The British troops marched along the Hudson River, about 20 miles east of Clarendon. The farmers of the lands on Lake Champlain and the Upper Hudson River joined what appeared to be a victorious army.

Some of the men who joined the British side brought their families along. It is very likely that Solomon took his wife Susanna and son David with him, as he would not want to leave them alone. The Patriots also left Vermont during this time period so there were few people left in that area.

During the summer of 1777 an unfortunate incident occurred in Rutland County involving Solomon. An altercation took place between him and a certain Nathan Tuttle, ending in this man's death, apparently by the hand of Solomon, after great provocation by

Tuttle. A bond of secrecy was agreed upon among those present for the duration of Solomon's life. When Solomon died in 1786 the story was told in Rutland, and some felt that his premature death was retribution for the killing of Mr. Tuttle.

Vermont became a republic early in 1778. The government incurred expenses, but there was no revenue forthcoming. Ira Allen, as Secretary of State, proposed that the estates of those who had left Vermont should be confiscated and sold to provide funds for the operation of the government. That was immediately acted upon on 25 March 1778, and a commission was appointed the following day to carry out the orders. There were 155 estates taken; one of those was the Clarendon property of Solomon Johns, confiscated 23 April 1778, second on the list to be sold by the Commission.

Solomon is noted as accompanying Major Christopher Carleton of the British army, in the fall of 1778, on an expedition against several settlements along the eastern side of Lake Champlain in Vermont Territory. At that time we believe he was with the Queen's Loyal Rangers. This was a provincial corps, one of several made up of ordinary countrymen aiding the British army to suppress the rebellion against the British crown. In October 1778, prior to this expedition, Major Carleton wrote in his journal in regard to the Indians agreeing with his wish "to send a person I could confide in to bring me a true state of the strength and situation of the enemy. The person I sent was Mr. Johns, and at his request, a Serjant of Capt. Sherwood's company with him". Three pages further on in his journal Major Carleton continues - "About midnight, the officer Johns, who had been sent out six days earlier, returned".

Solomon Johns, labeled a Tory, was banished from Vermont in 1779 through an act passed by the Vermont government under the Convention of Dorset; "to prevent the return to this state of certain persons therein named, and others who have left this state, and who joined the enemies thereof". This act was later repealed. Loyalists from Connecticut, New York and Vermont escaped detainment because they spent weeks tramping by night and hiding by day to join the British camp at St. Johns, Quebec. Many arrived in a state of starvation and with their clothes in shreds.

On 1st May 1779 the 2nd battalion of the King's Rangers, also known as "Rogers Rangers", was raised under the leadership of Major Commandant James Rogers, brother of the famous Robert Rogers of the Seven Years War. Solomon was appointed to the rank of Lieutenant. All officers were required to recruit a requisite number of men to qualify for their position. The King's Rangers were headquartered at Fort St. Johns (now St. Jean) Quebec, situated on the Richelieu River. A very important role played by a large number of the officers and men of this battalion was that of scouting and reconnaissance for other corps including carrying top secret dispatches.

As well, some of the men were secret service agents, or spies, for the crown forces in rebel territory. Disguised as civilians, their fate, if captured, was to be hanged. We believe that Solomon was involved in these perilous activities. He and fellow officer William Buell were captured in Vermont in August 1780. It is presumed that they were on a secret service mission for the British Secret Service, Northern Department, under the direction of Capt. Justus Sherwood. References to Lieut. Johns regarding his incarceration are primarily expense accounts by the individuals involved in capturing him and Ensign Buell. One was the account of Steel Smith of Windsor - "expenses for meals for Solomon Johns and William Buell (Tories) and their gards". Another was an excerpt from an account of Col. Ebenezer Woods for expenses of 1 pound, 5 shillings for "five days spent in catching and securing Solomon Johns and William Buell". The last was the Order of Governor Chittenden "pleas to pay to Lieut. Elnathan Strong four pounds and eight pence Connecticut money to pay the Expenses of the Gard that brought Solomon Johns and Buel to Bennington". A gaol had been set up in Bennington for incarcerating those who were supporting the enemy. (The spelling here is as recorded from the original documents.)

A letter from Major-General Frederick Haldimand, governor-in-chief of Canada, was taken to Governor Chittenden of Vermont in November of 1780 to suggest an exchange of prisoners. Governor Haldimand appointed Capt. Justus Sherwood and his second-in-command, Dr. George Smythe (code name Hudibras), as his representatives if Governor Chittenden was amenable to an exchange. Chittenden responded agreeing to the above and appointed his representatives. The meeting was set for January 1781, but the Vermont people could not make the journey because of ice conditions on Lake Champlain. We assume that Solomon and other Loyalist prisoners were exchanged, during the spring of 1781, for Patriot prisoners held in Quebec.

By summer Lieutenant Solomon Johns was "on command at Point au Fer", according to a muster roll of the men under Captain Azariah Pritchard dated 27 July 1781. Point au Fer was a command post (also called a blockhouse) on the western side of Lake Champlain about 24 miles south of Fort St. Johns. Here officers and men were stationed on active duty, awaiting orders to go into rebel territory on reconnaissance or secret service missions, usually in Vermont or New York.

In September 1781 Governor Haldimand officially commissioned the King's Rangers as one of the provincial corps working with the British army. Lieutenant Solomon Johns was appointed to the 2nd Company under Capt. Azariah Pritchard. The descendants of his eldest son, David Johns, kept Solomon's officers' sword at least until the early 1900's. Alice Johns viewed the sword when she stayed with her aunt, Nancy Johns Brown, in Ontario about 1900. Its current location is unknown.

By early 1783 it was evident that Britain was going to give the rebelling colonies their independence. Most of the Loyalists realized that they could not return to their previous homeland. Because of their express allegiance to the King they would have to start a new life in Canada. Governor Haldimand had made arrangements for the British government to purchase Indian land, in the area that later became Ontario, for the accommodation of the exiled Loyalists. He sent men who were skilled in the art of land colonization to investigate the possibilities for settlement. By 19 September Capt. Justus Sherwood was in Montreal with a survey crew that consisted of Lieut. Solomon Johns, and two privates, from the King's Rangers and Ensign Elijah Bothum with seven privates from the Loyal Rangers. Deputy Surveyor-General John Collins accompanied Capt. Sherwood's party. On 23 September the surveyors and their assistants were at the west-end of Lake St. Francis, about 65 miles from Montreal. Solomon took a crew inland, returning to report that "they had never seen as fine a country for all kinds of cultivation". They had crossed a large creek that emptied into a river at the head of the Long Sault Rapids where a waterfall would make a fine mill site, one of the first requirements for a new community. On 8 October Capt. Sherwood escorted Elijah Bothum and Solomon Johns westward, each with one assistant, and ordered them to explore up the Bay of Quinte, on Lake Ontario. A few days later he sent them out to explore along the north shore of the Bay of Quinte. This area was later to be known as the Catarqui Townships. The men returned with good accounts of the land

they had visited farther west. Solomon's reports are documented with Capt. Sherwood's reports in the Haldimand Papers at the Public Archives of Canada, Ottawa.

All members of the provincial corps who were on duty at the British posts near Montreal, Sorel and Lake Champlain were disbanded on 24 December 1783. The Loyal Rangers, King's Rangers and the first battalion of the King's Royal Regiment of New York were to remain where they were quartered until the spring, when they could be moved to the land that the Governor had chosen for them up the St. Lawrence. Along with their families they would continue receiving provisions over the winter. A muster roll of the King's Rangers at that time states that they were at the camp at Machiche, a camp near Montreal. Solomon Johns, Lieutenant 2<sup>nd</sup> Company King's Rangers, was mustered out 27 January 1784 with his fellow officers.

For his service as a subaltern in the provincial corps, Lieutenant Solomon Johns was initially allotted 750 acres of crown land. Part of this land was allocated in the Cataraqui Townships - #3, Fredericksburgh and #5, Marysburg . However, along with fellow officers William Buell and James and David Breakenridge, Solomon chose instead to settle with the men of the Loyal Rangers in New Oswegatchie, an area comprising the three townships east of Kingston on the north side of the St. Lawrence River. Each township fronting on the St. Lawrence and the Bay of Quinte was nine miles wide and twelve miles deep, divided into rows called concessions. Each concession was laid out into lots of 200 acres each, with four lots having a mile of water frontage. Every two or three miles there was a forty-foot wide strip was reserved for a crossroad. The lots were fairly allocated to the Loyalists by a "draw out of a hat".

In 1784 Solomon, Susanna, and their family began the pilgrimage, along with other Loyalist families, from Lachine, Quebec up the St. Lawrence River to their new homeland. This was an arduous journey with four families and four French Canadian crewmen assigned to a bateau - a flat bottom boat, 24 feet long, 5 feet across the beam, and pointed at both ends. These vessels were sturdily built to withstand the battering on the rocks and small enough to be manhandled by the crews through rough water. They traveled in brigades of 12 bateaux. All passengers disembarked, and removed their valuables, each time the bateaux were hauled through the rapids. When the Loyalists arrived at their prescribed destinations they stayed in camps until they could go to their land. Each family was given a canvas tent, to be returned once they had built a cabin, plus one set of clothing for each man and boy over 10, and cloth for the women, girls and small boys. Each person was given shoe soles and one blanket, with two small children sharing a blanket. Seed, grain, an axe, and a shovel rounded out the provisions, although "victualing" would continue until 1 May 1786.

Once on their land the men helped each other to build their cabins. These primitive dwellings were no larger than 12 feet by 14 feet, with one small window, and only a blanket to cover the doorway. Furniture and utensils were made during the evenings from available wood. One of the complaints was of the lack of bread. Wheat was not available during that first year. Meals consisted mostly of cornbread, the dried corn having been ground by hand in a burrowed out log. When available fish, berries, and wild game supplemented these meager provisions. Many settlers perished in the cold winter, but those who lived through it flourished on the exceptionally fertile land. According to a petition of Susanna Johns, Solomon's wife, dated 1799, addressed to the General Assembly of the State of Vermont, Solomon had returned to Clarendon at the end of the Revolution to dispose of his interests there. By this time his stepmother had died, and it is our belief that Solomon then helped his father to settle his affairs in Vermont and brought him to Elizabethtown Township, Ontario. The family may have homesteaded on the property that Benjamin purchased there.

Solomon was in good company when he settled in Elizabethtown. In time, his comrades became leaders in their communities. These men were New Englanders and preferred the style of community life that they had known and hoped to recreate in their new settlements. The democratically minded citizens congregated around William Buell who was elected to the legislative assembly in 1800. He later founded the town of Elizabethtown, now Brockville, which had a New England Square as its focal point - the only one in the townships built to the original plan. Capt. James Breakenridge, who married Solomon's niece Nancy Johns, became a magistrate and was appointed as Colonel to command the Leeds Militia. James also represented his area in the legislature and later became known as the "Duke of Leeds". Capt. Justus Sherwood of the Loyal Rangers was another prominent citizen of the area, residing in Augusta, later named Prescott. There are several monuments honoring Capt. Sherwood for his important contribution during the revolution and later in his community. Had Solomon lived for a natural lifetime he may well have had a role of leadership along with his peers.

Unfortunately, in his prime at the age of 35, Solomon died during the spring of 1786 "from the fall of a tree", presumably while clearing his land. His widow, Susanna, and their children were destitute. During the summer of 1787 Major Robert Mathews, assistant to Lord Dorchester (Governor of Canada from 1786 to 1796), was on a voyage to inspect the Loyalist townships. In May he reached the residence of Justus Sherwood, who was away on a survey, and went on to stay with a man who had been a sergeant in the Loyal Rangers. There "the widow of Lieutenant Solomon Johns, King's Rangers, brought a petition for Lord Dorchester". Major Mathews wrote in his journal that he remembered Lieutenant Johns as a "gallant, active, worthy young man".

In time, the amount of land granted to officers of The Provincial Corps was increased to match that received by the 84th Regiment of Foot, Royal Highland Emigrants. Solomon's widow and children were eventually allocated 2400 acres for Solomon's service, including a compassionate grant of 400 acres for Susanna. These lots of 200 acres each were located in various townships in Upper Canada.

The descendants of Solomon Johns, U.E. will remember him with respect and admiration for his courage. Sadly, he did not live to witness the growth of the settlement, of which he was a founder, at Elizabethtown Township (now the city of Brockville, Leeds County) in southern Ontario. He missed the pride of watching his sons grow into men, and the pleasure of knowing his grandchildren. Because Lieutenant Solomon Johns chose to remain loyal to the British crown during the Revolutionary War he, and his descendants, are entitled to a mark of honor, the only hereditary title in Canada.

**Those Loyalists who have adhered to the Unity of the Empire, and joined the Royal Standard before the Treaty of Separation in the year 1783, and all their children and their descendants by either sex, are to be distinguished by the following Capitals, affixed to their names: U.E. alluding to their great principle The Unity of the Empire.**

-- Lord Dorchester's Proclamation, 9 November 1789.

-----

**Guy Johnson** – Son-in-law of Sir William Johnson; 1766, Initiated Union Lodge No. 10, Prov. GL, Albany, NY; 1766, Charter member St. Patrick's Lodge No. 4, Johnstown, NY; 1770, Master; 1774, Superintendent of Indian Affairs; 1776, England; 1777, New York; 1780, Niagara, Upper Canada; 1781, Visitor to St. Peter's Lodge NO. 4, P.G.L., Montreal, Quebec; 1783, England; d. 1788.

[http://www.biographi.ca/009004-119.01-e.php?id\\_nbr=1973&&PHPSESSID=2p23qj30a6l45bpmiaitkoc370](http://www.biographi.ca/009004-119.01-e.php?id_nbr=1973&&PHPSESSID=2p23qj30a6l45bpmiaitkoc370)

Guy Johnson - Indian department official; b. c. 1740 in Ireland; d. 5 March 1788 in London, England. He may have been the midshipman of that name who served on HMS *Prince* in 1755. On arriving in North America Guy claimed that Sir William JOHNSON, the British superintendent of northern Indians, was his uncle but their relationship was probably more distant. Although young, he served through the Seven Years' War as an officer in the provincial forces, commanding a company of rangers under Jeffery AMHERST in 1759 and 1760. He acted as secretary in the northern Indian department until 1762 when Johnson appointed him a deputy agent. In 1763 he married Sir William's youngest daughter, Mary (Polly), and established his home at Guy Park near present Amsterdam, NY. While performing his duties in the Indian department, he was also active in military and political affairs, rising to colonel and adjutant-general of the New York militia and being elected to the New York assembly for 1773–75.

Upon Sir William's death in July 1774, Guy was directed by Lieutenant-General Gage to assume the duties of superintendent pending confirmation by the crown. Faced with mounting revolutionary activity, Guy, his brother-in-law **Sir John Johnson**, and **Christian Daniel CLAUS** attempted to organize resistance in the Mohawk valley to the usurpation of authority by the Tryon County committee of safety. With the beginning of armed rebellion in 1775, he devoted his full energies to retaining the allegiance to the crown of the powerful Six Nations Confederacy. He was unable to fulfill this task in the increasingly hostile environment of the Mohawk valley, and he and a few hundred loyal residents left in May 1775. At Oswego Johnson met with more than a thousand Iroquois and secured their pledge to protect the St Lawrence River–Lake Ontario supply route should the rebels threaten it. He failed, however, to obtain their active support for the crown's effort to suppress the spreading rebellion. At Oswego his young wife died on 11 July, leaving him with two small daughters.



Johnson proceeded to Montreal where he secured assurances of aid from the Canadian Indians, but finding his authority challenged by the newly arrived agent of Indian affairs for the province of Quebec, John CAMPBELL, he left for England in November to clarify the scope of his superintendency. He failed to have the Canadian Indians returned to his jurisdiction, but he accepted appointment as superintendent of the Six Nations and returned to America in the summer of 1776. He joined Sir William Howe's army at New York and, expecting the rebellion in the colony to be crushed by the campaign of 1777, remained in the city until BURGOYNE's defeat near Saratoga (Schuylerville) dashed such hopes. He then attempted to reach Canada by ship, but the scarcity of transport, the activity of the French fleet, and bad weather prevented him from reaching Montreal before the spring of 1779. Johnson was criticized for leaving the management of his department to two subordinates, **John Butler** at Niagara (near Youngstown, NY) and **Daniel Claus** at Montreal, during the crucial years 1776–79. He maintained that he had kept in contact with his deputies and even claimed credit for planning the devastating raids against the Wyoming valley in 1778 and the Schoharie valley settlements in 1780. It is clear, however, from the correspondence of Claus, Butler, Sir John Johnson, General HALDIMAND, and others that he had little or no influence on the operation of the Indian department from 1776 to late 1779. Circumstances may have justified his long stay in New York City, but the regular communications that existed between there and Montreal provided him with the means by which he could have guided departmental policy. His neglect was inexcusable.

Johnson reached Niagara in the autumn of 1779. Despite Haldimand's protests about costs, he succeeded in providing for the thousands of Iroquois driven from their homes by the American campaign of 1779, and he directed large-scale Indian and loyalist raids against the frontier, destroying massive quantities of produce needed by the rebel army. In 1783 he turned over the Indian department to Sir John Johnson, who after 1778 had become Haldimand's chief adviser on Indian affairs, and returned to England to obtain restitution for property confiscated by the rebels. While still pressing his claim, he died in London on 5 Mar 1788.

-----

**Sir John Johnson** – son of Sir William Johnson; Initiated Royal Lodge No. 313 E.R. (A), London; 1767-73 Prov. Grand Master, New York; 1788, Prov. Grand Master, Canada; d. 1830, Montreal.

See also: "Orderly book of Sir John Johnson during the Oriskany campaign, 1776-1777," by Sir John Johnson, John Watts De Peyster, Theodor Bailey Myers. 1881, at:

[http://books.google.com/books?id=EujX\\_2L4bfMC&pg=PA213&dq=%22david+matthews%22+%22george+washington%22&hl=en&ei=Jv6ETJecJoH\\_8AarsfirAQ&sa=X&oi=book\\_result&ct=result&resnum=10&ved=0CFkQ6AEwCQ#v=onepage&q=%22david%20matthews%22%20%22george%20washington%22&f=false](http://books.google.com/books?id=EujX_2L4bfMC&pg=PA213&dq=%22david+matthews%22+%22george+washington%22&hl=en&ei=Jv6ETJecJoH_8AarsfirAQ&sa=X&oi=book_result&ct=result&resnum=10&ved=0CFkQ6AEwCQ#v=onepage&q=%22david%20matthews%22%20%22george%20washington%22&f=false)



Sir John Johnson, 2nd Baronet of New York, b. 5 Nov 1741; d. 4 Jan 1830. Army officer, Indian Department official, politician, landowner, and seigneur; b. 5 Nov. 1741 at Mount Johnson (near Amsterdam, NY), the **only son of William Johnson** (later Sir William) and Catherine Weissenberg (Wisenberg, Wyszenberg); m. 29 Jun 1773 Mary Watts in New York City, and they had 11 children who survived to adulthood; d. 4 Jan 1830 in Montreal.

John Johnson spent most of his childhood at Fort Johnson (near Amsterdam) on the Mohawk River. He received his formal education at home and sporadically at the College and Academy of Philadelphia from 1757 to 1760. At 13 he had served as a volunteer under the command of his father in the battle against the French at Lake George (Lac Saint-Sacrement); as a young man he accompanied him on expeditions to Niagara (near Youngstown, NY, and Detroit. He attended most of Sir William's conferences with the Indians, including the one at Fort Stanwix (Rome), NY, in 1768 when a boundary between white and Indian territory was agreed upon. In 1764, during the aftermath of Pontiac's uprising, he acquitted himself satisfactorily when he led an Indian expedition into the Ohio country. He went on a two-year "grand tour" of the British Isles in 1765-67 and was knighted by George III in fulfillment of a promise made to Sir William.

Sir John Johnson came home a staunch supporter of his king, almost contemptuous of anyone who dared disagree with royal policy. He settled at Fort Johnson and took Clarissa Putman as his common-law wife, but in 1773 he yielded to his father's wish that he marry into the New York aristocracy. He brought his new wife, Mary Watts, to Fort Johnson and set Clarissa Putman aside, although he continued to support her and their two children. He did not, however, accede to his father's wish to groom him as the next superintendent of northern Indians, for he preferred the diversions of a country gentleman. In 1774, on Sir William's death, he moved to Johnson Hall (Johnstown), having inherited the baronetcy and close to 200,000 acres of land. He assumed responsibility for the numerous tenants and accepted the commission of major-general of the district militia.

During the early years of the American revolution Sir John and his brothers-in-law **Christian Daniel Claus** and **Guy Johnson** strove but failed to keep the Mohawk valley loyal. His brothers-in-law fled to the province of Quebec in 1775 and Sir John followed in the spring of 1776, narrowly escaping the military detachment sent to arrest him. Upon his arrival in Montreal he was commissioned to recruit the first battalion of the King's Royal Regiment of New York and in 1780 a second one. He participated in St. Leger's ill-fated siege of Fort Stanwix in 1777 and commanded the force which defeated the Americans at nearby Oriskany. In 1780 he led raids into the Mohawk valley, laying waste the countryside and burning vast quantities of grain and flour intended for the use of the Continental Army.



Johnson,  
Colonel of Indians.

*John Johnson*

In the first half of 1782 Sir John was appointed brigadier-general on the American establishment and, by a commission dated 14 March 1782, "Superintendent General and Inspector General of the Six Nations Indians and those in the Province of Quebec." During his long association with the Indians he never failed to champion their cause and to demonstrate his concern for their interests and rights. He was as well the defender and friend of the loyalists in the province. In 1784 Governor Frederick Haldimand appointed him to supervise the settlement of loyalist refugees on the upper St Lawrence and the Bay of Quinte and, for many years after, these new settlers regarded him as their leader. In the winter of 1785 he presented a petition on their behalf to the king, praying that the new settlements might be separated from the rest of the province in order that they could enjoy freehold tenure of lands and English civil law. When Upper Canada was created in 1791, it was generally expected that Sir John would be named its first lieutenant governor.

< Sir John Johnson

Bitterly disappointed when the post went to John Graves Simcoe, Johnson resolved to seek a place for himself elsewhere. He moved with his wife and children to London, where a stay of four years was sufficient to convince him that his abilities and contributions were quite unappreciated in England and that the Canadas offered the best opportunities after all for himself and his family. Accordingly, he moved back to Montreal in the fall of 1796. Shortly thereafter he was appointed to the Legislative Council of Lower Canada; from 1786 to 1791 he had been a member of the same council for Quebec. He also resumed his duties as head of the Indian Department.

In the latter capacity, Johnson continued his efforts to provide the Indians with their needs and to serve as the guardian of their rights and interests, as well as to maintain an efficient and orderly department. As chief officer, he was not expected to make policy for the department's operation, but he volunteered his opinions when important issues arose.

He "made strong opposition" in 1796 to the placing of the responsibility for Indian affairs in the hands of the civil authorities in the two Canadas; however, his advice went unheeded. He was not consulted when in 1815 the control of the department was once more assigned to the commander of the forces, but it seems certain that he approved of the move for he knew it "would give great satisfaction to the Indians." When in the early 1820s the British government considered the abolition of the practice of giving presents to the Indians, he made it known that he was emphatically opposed to the idea, and the presents continued.

During the years when the department was under military control, Johnson's influence depended on the pleasure of the commander of the forces and varied from one to another, being perhaps greatest with Haldimand and certainly least with Lord Dalhousie [Ramsay\*], whose interference in the affairs of the department was limitless. Nevertheless, it was Sir John Johnson who was held responsible for the peace, contentment, and welfare of the Indians. When unrest appeared imminent among them, it was he who talked to the chiefs individually and held council with them collectively; dispelling their fears and suspicions. In the fall of 1782 at Niagara he convinced them that the king was not about to sacrifice their interests in peace negotiations with the United States. Again at Niagara in the summer of 1783 he succeeded in assuring them of something he did not himself believe, that the Americans would honour the boundary line agreed upon at Fort Stanwix in 1768; although on the occasion he knew he was feeding them with false hopes, he prevented them from embarking on a war that could only have brought disaster to themselves. In 1799, by visiting the posts of Upper Canada and conferring with the chiefs and warriors, he allayed the fears expressed by the governors of the two provinces of unrest among the native people. In the 1820s he carried on a bitter and protracted quarrel with Dalhousie over an unwise appointment the governor had made without consultation, and at the same time he tried to prevent construction workers on the Lachine Canal from stirring up trouble in the Indian village of Caughnawaga (Kahnawake).

Johnson also put a great deal of effort into the acquisition of property. Having renovated the palatial Château de Longueuil on Rue Saint-Paul in Montreal, he took up residence there late in 1798. Determined to recover at least the equivalent of what he had lost in New York, he became engrossed in the relentless pursuit of more real estate. He already owned a country residence in Lachine and another in the suburbs below Montreal; in Upper Canada he had a house on a large lot in Kingston, a property in Cornwall, and large tracts on Lake St Francis and the Raisin River, at Gananoque, and on Amherst Island; in addition, he had sundry smaller holdings in various parts of the Canadas. In 1795 he purchased the seigneurie of Monnoir, roughly 84,000 acres, and a few years later the seigneurie of Argenteuil, about 54,000 acres. Even so, he was not satisfied and all the rest of his life sought to augment his land holdings.

Johnson never lost his sentimental attachment to the valley of his youth. Although he built beautiful manor-houses at Monnoir and Argenteuil, the terrain surrounding the cone-shaped Mont Sainte-Thérèse (Mont Saint-Grégoire) on Monnoir reminded him of his homes in the Mohawk valley. He renamed the hill Mount Johnson, built a small house at its base, and lived there much of the time in the twilight of his life. Dalhousie described him as "very lively in countenance & speaks rapidly Very gentlemanlike manners, & with all that a kind of wildness, as if he wished to appear a character tinctured with the habits and the intercourse he has had with the Indian tribes." He died on 4 Jan 1830 in Montreal. The military and masonic funeral, attended by 300 Indians as well as throngs of friends, relatives, acquaintances, and admirers, was colourful and impressive. The ancient Mohawk orator at the ceremony referred to him as the Indians' "friend and fellow warrior." His remains were conveyed to Mount Johnson for burial.

-----

**John 'Mahogany' Jones** – b. Maine; Rogers' Rangers; Jessup's Corp; Imprisoned in Boston; 1780, Quebec; 1787, Master, New Oswegatchie Lodge No. 14, P.G.L. Quebec; d. 1802.

[http://books.google.com/books?id=sxprgtvjLF0C&pg=PA289&lpg=PA289&dq=%22mahogany+jones%22+%22rangers%22&source=bl&ots=8UQC49vfyky&sig=Yh\\_0QalfhTEqRk6yFYRVSnTh5aY&hl=en&ei=VOpvTJ3PCoL78AbewOR9&sa=X&oi=book\\_result&ct=result&resnum=1&ved=0CBIQ6AEwAA#v=onepage&q=%22mahogany%20jones%22%20%22rangers%22&f=false](http://books.google.com/books?id=sxprgtvjLF0C&pg=PA289&lpg=PA289&dq=%22mahogany+jones%22+%22rangers%22&source=bl&ots=8UQC49vfyky&sig=Yh_0QalfhTEqRk6yFYRVSnTh5aY&hl=en&ei=VOpvTJ3PCoL78AbewOR9&sa=X&oi=book_result&ct=result&resnum=1&ved=0CBIQ6AEwAA#v=onepage&q=%22mahogany%20jones%22%20%22rangers%22&f=false) page 289.

Tuesday, October 10th, 1787. New Oswegatchie Lodge Assembled at the house of Ensign Thos. Sherwood, in Elizabethtown, and opened in due form at 6 o'clock P.M.

"Present. **John Jones, Esq., Master**, Ensign William Buell, Sen. Warden, Brother Caleb Closson, as Jun. Warden, Ensign David Breakenridge, acting Secre'y, Brother George Campbell, acting Tyler, Capt. Samuel Wright, Ensign Thomas Sherwood, Brother Jeremiah McArthur, Visitor.

The names of those present at this meeting include many of the early settlers of Leeds, viz.: **Capt. John Jones**, concession 2, lot 10-11, north part 1-2, 100 acres, Elizabethtown, patented March 26th, 1798. Bro. Jones, who was W. M., came originally from Maine, and was a captain in Rogers' Rangers. Being of dark complexion, he was called "**Mahogany Jones**" He was persecuted by the Whigs, tied with a rope, dragged through the water, thrust into Boston jail, escaped, and arrived at Quebec in 1780. Among his feats was the capture of his old enemy the American general, Cushing.

---

John Jones of Maine. Captain in Rogers's Rangers. Of a dark complexion, he was called "Mahogany Jones." Prior to the war, he lived at or near Pownalborough, and was surveyor of the Plymouth Company. As the troubles increased, the Whigs accused him of secreting tea, and broke open his store. Next, they fastened him to a long rope, and dragged him through the water until he was nearly drowned. Finally, to put an end to his exertions against the popular cause, he was committed to jail in Boston. He escaped, went to Quebec in 1780, and received a commission in the Rangers. In Maine again before the peace, he annoyed his personal foes there repeatedly. Among his feats was the capture of his "old enemy," General Charles Cushing, of Pownalborough. Jones's own story is, in substance, that, pretending to be a Whig and a friend, Cushing rose from his bed, put on his breeches, came down stairs, obtained a candle, and opened the door; that Mrs. Cushing soon followed her husband, but returned, put her head out of the chamber window, and screamed "Murder!" and that he told her, if she did not hold her tongue, his Indians would scalp her. Further, that he gave the General shoes and stockings, and marched him off through the woods four days to the British post, (now Castine,) at the mouth of the Penobscot.

Jones, immediately after the peace, was at Grand Menan, Bay of Fundy, and interested in lands granted on that island to Loyalists. In 1784, he resumed his business as surveyor, on the river St. Croix. At length, "his Toryism forgotten," he removed to the Kennebec. In 1793, he made a map of the country on the last named river. Of great courage, he surveyed the Company's lands "at a time when *squatters*, disguised as Indians, threatened the lives of all who should attempt" that service. He died at Augusta, Maine.

-----

**Dr. Robert Kerr** – b. 1755; 1776, Hospital Mate, Quebec; 1778, joined St. Andrew's Lodge No. 2, P.G.L. Quebec; 1777, Burgoyne's Expedition; 178, Halifax, NS; 1779-84, Surgeon Royal Regiment of New York; 1783, joined Barry Lodge No. 17, P.G.L. Quebec in the 34th Regiment; 1788, Surgeon, Indian Department; **m. Elizabeth, daughter of Sir William Johnson**; 1807, Deputy Provincial Grand Master, Upper Canada; d. 1824, Albany, NY.

<http://www.uelac.org/Loyalist-Info/detail.php?letter=k&line=86>

Dr. Robert Kerr was born in 1755 in Scotland and as a young man, emigrated to the New York Colony. During the Revolutionary War he served in the 2nd Battalion KRRNY and was at the Battle of Saratoga where he was captured in October 1777. He managed to escape to Quebec by 1779 and was a friend of Dr. James Macnab of Machiche, both having served as Assistant Surgeons in Burgoyne's Battle of Saratoga. Dr. Kerr attended his friend, Dr. Macnab during his final illness and at his death. Years later Dr Kerr was to write, on 23 Feb 1818, "I do certify that I was acquainted with Doctor James Macnab when he acted as assistant-surgeon to the Loyalists during the first war with America; and that I attended him in his last illness, at Machiche in Lower Canada, where he died about the beginning of the year 1780." (signed) Robert Kerr, Surgeon I. Department.

Dr. Kerr remained with the militia for several years, stationed at Niagara and at York. He was, according to Cruikshank and Watt in "The History and Muster Roll of the King's Royal Regiment of New York", page 149, "appointed surgeon to the Indian Department in 1788", and was still connected to it when he wrote, in 1818, the letter that attested to the Loyalty of Dr. James Macnab. Dr. Kerr married in Niagara in 1783, Elizabeth, the daughter of Sir William Johnson and Molly Brant. They moved to Fredericksburgh Township, in the Catabaqui Townships by 1789 where Dr. Kerr had received a land grant of 300 acres and also a land grant of 400 acres in Thurlow Twp. Elizabeth Johnson Kerr died 24 Jan 1794. There is no record of a family. Dr. Kerr soldiered on. That there was a continuing relationship between Dr. Kerr and the two young sons of Dr. James Macnab, Simon and James Macnab Jr, is apparent because of the inter marriages of the Sir William Johnson, Ferguson and Fraser families and correspondence between James Macnab Jr. and Dr. Kerr. Dr. Robert Kerr, was a Loyalist doctor who settled in Upper Canada and remained here until his death forty one years later at the age of 69.

Obituary - 9 Mar 1824 - Rochester Telegraph - DIED - At Albany, on the 25<sup>th</sup> ult. Dr Robert Kerr, aged 69. He was a resident of Niagara, (U. C.) has been a surgeon in the British service upwards of 45 years, many of which . . . at Fort George.

There is a picture of Dr. Kerr on pg 149 of Gavin Watt's 2006 "The History and Muster Roll of The King's Royal Reg. of NY." "Old Niagara on the Lake", by Peter Stokes has additional information about Robert Kerr and his house in Niagara on the Lake.

He m. 1783, Elizabeth Brant Johnson, d/o **Sir William Johnson and Molly Brant**. Elizabeth's grave monument at St. Mark's Anglican Church Cemetery is one of the oldest in their cemetery and that Elizabeth has a special place in their thinking. Major McAlpine's Corp. Fredericksburgh by 1789 where he held 300 acres and another 400 acres in Thurlow. d. 1824 in York, Upper Canada; not buried beside Elizabeth and there are conflicting stories as to where he is buried, York or Albany New York. In the historical notes of the novel "George Johnson's War" it is claimed that Robert and Elizabeth had five children and gives the names of four: William, Walter, Robert and Nancy. Not documented.

Elizabeth Johnson, daughter of Sir William and Molly Brandt, was born in 1761 at Johnson Hall, Johnstown, NY, and died 1794 in Ontario, Canada. She married Dr. Robert Kerr, surgeon of the Royal Greens (a Crown military regiment). Dr Kerr received a land grant in Ontario for his services to the Crown. He was at Catabaqui, Fredericksburg, Ontario, October 1784, and was employed by the Indian Department at Niagara after the war. He possibly served the Crown during the War of 1812 as a military surgeon. Three sons, William Johnson Kerr, Walter Kerr, and Robert Kerr served the Crown as officers during the War of 1812. William Johnson Kerr married a cousin, Elizabeth, daughter of Chief Joseph Brant. At least one of William Johnson Kerr's descendants attained the position of Chief within the Mohawk Tribe. Much of Captain Joseph Brant's land was owned by the Kerr family for several generations. Elizabeth lived with Dr. Kerr throughout her life, moved to Canada with him following the defeat of the British during the Revolutionary War, and died there. She bore three children by him. She was acknowledged in the will of her father, Sir William Johnson, who bequeathed to her large tracts of land and a considerable amount of money.

At the Battle of Beaver Dams, the warriors in Lt. FitzGibbons command, included about 100 Grand River Mohawks "under the command of young John Brant, and his 2nd cousin, Capt. William Johnson Kerr and the Mohawks adopted Scottish leader, John Norton". . . .and a second reference to William Johnson Kerr is found in "His Majesty's Indian Allies", British Indian Policy in The Defence of Canada 1774-1815, pg184: " During the Rebellion of 1837...:about 100 warriors volunteered to serve under the command of William Johnson Kerr, a grandson of Sir William Johnson". Since Elizabeth Johnson was the only Johnson daughter married to a Kerr, William Johnson Kerr would appear to be the s/o of Robert and Elizabeth Kerr.

[http://books.google.com/books?id=sxprqtyjLF0C&pg=PA477&dq=%22dr.+robert+kerr%22&hl=en&ei=t4FwTL\\_0IMP38Abrjvncg&sa=X&oi=book\\_result&ct=result&resnum=3&ved=0CD0Q6AEwAjqK#v=onepage&q=%22dr.%20robert%20kerr%22&f=false](http://books.google.com/books?id=sxprqtyjLF0C&pg=PA477&dq=%22dr.+robert+kerr%22&hl=en&ei=t4FwTL_0IMP38Abrjvncg&sa=X&oi=book_result&ct=result&resnum=3&ved=0CD0Q6AEwAjqK#v=onepage&q=%22dr.%20robert%20kerr%22&f=false) page 477-484.

In 1796, when the Provincial Grand Master's lodge was formed by R. VV. Bro. Wm. Jarvis, he named Bros. Francis Crooks and **Robert Kerr to be wardens** of that lodge. Bro. Francis Crooks was a relative of the Hon. James Crooks, who settled in Niagara in 1794. The family came from Kilmarnock, Scotland.

At the death of the Hon. Robert Hamilton, **Dr. Robert Kerr** succeeded to the office of **Deputy Grand Master**.

**R. W. Bro. Kerr** was for many years surgeon to the Indian department. He was a connection of Sir Robert Kerr, who in 1600 became the Duke of Roxburgh in the peerage of Scotland. He was an army surgeon in Sir John Johnson's 2nd battalion, and settled at Niagara about 1789. He married [Elizabeth] a daughter of Sir William Johnson, whose second wife was Mary or "Molly" Brant, a sister of the Indian chief, Joseph Brant. The family lived on Prideaux street, Niagara, named after the general who was killed at Fort Niagara. Dr. Kerr is said to have been initiated in lodge No. 466, E. R., known as "Barry" in the 34th Regiment, and was made a Royal Arch Mason at Quebec in 1790. This lodge was at one time No. 17, Lower Canada. **R.W. Bro. Kerr was the Deputy Grand**

**Master under R. W. Bro. Jarvis in 1802, and in 1807 was the Provincial Grand Master of the schismatic or rival Grand Lodge at Niagara, and held that office until 1820** when he was succeeded by W. Bro. George Adams of the township of Grantham.

*R. W. Bro. (DR.) ROBERT KERR. P. D. P. G. M.. NIAGARA. 1822 >*

His effective work, while holding the latter assumed position, is shown by the fact that when R. W. Bro. McGillivray re-organized the Canadian Craft in 1822, he stated that he had "neither the inclination nor the right to deprive Dr. Kerr of his rank in the Provincial Grand Lodge."

In the archives of Unity Royal Arch chapter No. 20, Quebec, is the Royal Arch certificate of Bro. Robert Kerr, dated Quebec, 29th March, 1790. It is signed by Companions "James Davidson, Z.; John Lynd, H.; and Thos. Aylwin." The name of the "J." is not given. Comps. Ja. Thompson and John Munro were the scribes.

In 1787 Major John Ross, of the 34th, writing from Montreal, testified to the ability of **Dr. Kerr**, who was surgeon to Johnson's 2nd battalion. Major Ross added that **Dr. Kerr** had served faithfully at Carleton Island and Cataragui [later called Kingston]. At both of these places there were Craft lodges as early as 1787. A further testimonial to his ability is found in a letter of May 1787, from **Neil McLean**, father of the late Chief Justice McLean, who wrote to **Dr. Kerr**, testifying to his care and attention as a medical man, and trusting that the government would retain his services. This letter was addressed to "**Mr. Robert Kerr**, Surgeon to the Loyalists in the District of Cataragui." He left that part of Upper Canada about 1788 and settled at Newark, and was surgeon to the Indian department. He had the reputation then of being "an eminent surgeon."



In 1817 he is spoken of as "Surgeon to the Indian department of Upper Canada and Fort George," and in 1823 the military records show that he was on the "Military Staff" of the "Indian Department" at "Niagara," and also in the "Militia General Staff." He was active in the war of 1812-15, and occupied many prominent positions. In 1801 and in 1822-23 he was a school trustee by appointment of the Lieut.-Governor and was also Master of the Surrogate Court at Niagara. In 1806 he was a magistrate, and was well known for his fair and just decisions. He was fond of athletic sports, and was proficient in the art of boxing and enjoyed a friendly bout with the gloves, so much so that he was styled by many "the boxing magistrate."

A lady now living at Niagara has a distinct recollection of Dr. Kerr. She states that he was a tall, finely built man, walked very straight, but from his brown skin looked weather-beaten, as if he had seen much active service. He was well educated, a pleasant speaker, interesting to converse with and full of anecdote. He lived prior to 1822 in the old hospital at Niagara, removing in 1823 to Albany, NY. Bro. Kerr died in Feb. of 1824, at the age of sixty-nine years, leaving a family of three sons and two daughters.

Bro. Kerr did not lose his interest in Craft work after the reorganization of the second Provincial Grand Lodge by R. W. Bro. Simon McGillivray in 1822, and was present at the semi-annual meeting at York (Toronto) in July, 1823. In the autumn of that year, however, he determined to remove from Niagara, U. C., to Albany, N. Y., where he had many friends. He did not long survive his change of residence, for he died at the capital of the State on 25th February, 1824.

Through the courtesy of W. Pro. Solomon Strasser, P.M., of Mount Vernon lodge, the writer was enabled to gather some particulars concerning his death and funeral.

The Albany "Argus" of Friday, 27th February, 1824, thus notes the death of the distinguished brother:

DIED.

"In this city, on the evening of the 25th inst. Dr. Robert Kerr, aged 69 years. Dr. Kerr was a most respectable inhabitant of Niagara, Upper Canada. For upwards of 45 years he was a surgeon in His Majesty's service, and we understand that he has held several important places in the magistracy and public trusts of the province, where his station has been for many years. His liberal hospitality and uniform kindness to the American army are extensively known and gratefully remembered by many now in this city. His funeral will take place this day at half-past 4 o'clock from Cruttenden's (Public Square). His acquaintances and friends are respectfully requested to attend without further invitation, and it is hoped that our citizens and members of the Legislature generally will be disposed to pay due honor to the memory of this respectable stranger."

Dr. Kerr's death is also noted in "The Weekly Register," the unofficial supplement of "The Upper Canada Gazette," the official paper of the old Province of Upper Canada (Ontario) in its issue of Thursday, 8th April, 1824. On the second page of the "Register" is the following notice:

DIED.

"At Albany, on Wednesday, the 25th of February last, aged 69 years. Robert Kerr, Esquire, of Niagara, Upper Canada. Surgeon in the Indian Department Mr. Kerr was one of the oldest inhabitants of Upper Canada. He was a man of great respectability and conspicuous for his loyalty. During the late war he was with his three sons actively employed in His Majesty's service. The funeral of Dr. Kerr was attended by a large concourse of citizens and members of the Legislature. He was indeed universally respected. Being a Grand Master of the Grand Lodge of Upper Canada, the Masonic brethren of Albany, under the superintendence of the officers of Mount Vernon lodge, paid the last tribute of affection to their good and worthy brother and dropped the sympathetic tears over his grave. The lodges resolved to wear crape on the left arm for 30 days as a testimony of their respect for him whose loss they deplore."

The funeral was under the auspices of Mount Vernon lodge, No. 3. F. & A. M., Grand Lodge of the State of New York. The records of the lodge for the year 1824 are missing, so that the official record of the action of the lodge in connection with Bro Kerr's death cannot be given. The notice, however, in The Gazette shows that the last tribute of respect for the dead was paid to the remains of the distinguished brother by the Craftsmen of Albany and that the funeral was of a public character.

The interment was originally in the burial ground of St. Peter's Episcopal church, situated near the old State Capitol building. This church was incorporated in 1769. Some years after the burial of the late Bro. Kerr the bodies in the grounds attached to St. Peter's church were removed and re-interred in grounds now forming a portion of Washington Park, and finally were again re-interred by the municipal government of Albany in the **[Albany] Rural Cemetery**. This burial ground was opened in 1845. Bro. Kerr's remains are in the lot devoted to the re-interments from St. Peter's Episcopal church grounds and in section 49, lot 13, North Ridge. Over his grave is a slab of white marble in a fair state of preservation, about four feet long and two-and-a-half wide, bearing the following inscription:

SACRED TO THE MEMORY OF  
ROBERT KERR, Esq.,  
JUDGE OF THE SURROGATE COURT AND AN ACTIVE MAGISTRATE  
FOR THE DISTRICT OF NIAGARA IN UPPER CANADA.  
DESCENDED FROM AN ANCIENT FAMILY IN NORTH BRITAIN.  
HE FAITHFULLY SERVED THE KING AS SURGEON OF THE FORCES  
AND ON THE STAFF FOR UPWARDS OF FORTY-SIX YEARS.  
His SOCIAL HABITS AND KINDNESS OF HEART  
ENDEARED HIM TO HIS ACQUAINTANCES, AND HIS LOSS WILL LONG BE FELT BY THOSE WHO KNEW HIM BEST.  
HE WAS A DISTINGUISHED MASON AND A DEPUTY GRAND MASTER OF THE PROVINCE.  
THE HONORS PAID TO HIS REMAINS BY THE ANCIENT FRATERNITY AND BY SEVERAL  
HONORABLE MEMBERS OF THE LEGISLATURE AT ALBANY, IN THE STATE  
OF NEW YORK, WHERE HE DIED, IN THE 69th YEAR OF  
HIS AGE, ON THE 25TH FEB., 1824, ARE  
GRATEFULLY ACKNOWLEDGED  
BY HIS SORROWING  
FRIENDS.

On the 3rd December, 1866, was published by order of the Common Council of Albany a book containing a list of the inscriptions on the slabs and tombstones of all the dead whose bodies were removed from the St. Peter's Episcopal Cemetery to the Rural Cemetery. The record reads:

"Robt. Kerr,

"Judge of the Surrogate Court, Niagara,  
"District of Upper Canada, Masons, &c.  
"Feb. 25th, 1824. 69th year."

This simple entry contains the record of the close of a useful life. It is much to be regretted that the records of Mount Vernon lodge are lost, for from them there might have been obtained some information concerning the last days of this distinguished brother. As W. Bro. Strausser writes of this Canadian Mason, whose remains were honored by American Craftsmen, "his exalted and distinguished services were no doubt appreciated by the fraternity of this ancient city, and there appears no reasonable doubt that the tomb-stone was erected by his brethren of this city, as the inscription somewhat indicates."

His wife's remains were interred in the Niagara churchyard, and a headstone bears the inscription:

"Sacred to the memory of Elizabeth Kerr, wife of Robert Kerr, who departed this life at Niagara, the 24th January, A.D. 1794, aetat 32 years."

His eldest daughter, Anna Agnes Kerr, married at St. Mark's church, Niagara, on October 3rd, 1816, Mr. Robert Gillespie, of Montreal, and the youngest daughter married the Hon. Thomas Clarke, who was a member of one of the Niagara lodges, and who on 30th May, 1825. affiliated with St. Andrew's lodge No. 1. Toronto. His eldest son, William Johnson Kerr, born in 1787. married in 1828 Elizabeth Brant, a daughter of Joseph Brant or Thayandanegea, chief of the Six Nations. William distinguished himself in the war of 1812 and commanded the Indians at the battle of Beaver Dams. He also in 1837 at the time of the rebellion raised a body of Indians for crown service. He was a member of the Legislative Assembly of Upper Canada, and sat for one of the ridings of Halton, and in 1841 was W. M. of Barton lodge, Hamilton, of which lodge Chief Joseph Brant was in 1796 a member. He had two other sons, Walter and Robert. William Johnson Kerr had three sons and one daughter. The third son, William Johnson Simcoe Kerr, was a barrister by profession. He died in 1875.



His daughter, Catharine, married John Osborne, of Hamilton and now of Winnipeg. Mr. Osborne was elected to the office of Grand Secretary of the Grand Lodge of Canada in 1856, and held the position until the annual meeting in 1857.

< TOMB OF MRS. ROBERT KERR, NIAGARA.

R. W. Bro. Dr. Kerr, Bro. the Rev. Robt. Addison, and R. W. Bro. Col. Butler were present, and walked in the cortege at the funeral of General Brock at Niagara in 1812.

-----

**Samuel Kipp** – b. Westchester, NY; Queen's Rangers; Kipp's Light Horse; 1782, Lodge No. 210 E.R. (A), New York; 1783, Cumberland Co., NS; 1785, Concord Lodge No. 12, Cumberland, NS.

Samuel Kipp [Kip] of West Chester County, New York. His family relations to the British Government, and his intimacy with Colonel De Lancey, are assigned as reasons for predisposing him to espouse the Royal cause. He raised a company of cavalry, and "embarked all his interests in the contest." He was a landholder, and his soldiers were principally his own tenants. In charging a body of Whig troops, in West Chester County, in 1781, his horse was killed, and he was himself severely wounded. He survived the close of the war several years. His reputation was that of "an active and daring partisan officer."

---

Captain Samuel Kipp son of Benjamin Kipp was born 1753 and died 1803. He was a Captain in DeLancey's Light Horse Brigade during the Revolutionary war. He married Freelope Trotten then Mary Knapp. He went to Nova Scotia from New York where his GGGgrandfather immigrated from Holland. Before that the family was from France. Per the book Samuel Kipp and his descendants by Louis Richard ( at the Montreal Library)

Captain Samuel Kipp went on to Montreal where he is buried. Samuel and Mary Knapp had 4 children, James b March 15, James moved from Montreal around 1795 with his family to Montana then Missouri where he was buried 1788, Capt. Samuel & Mary's other children were; Samuel born 1790 in New York, Elizabeth b July 27, 1791 and Charlotte born July 6, 1796 at Montreal.

----

#### **Benjamin Kissam –**

<http://genforum.genealogy.com/roosevelt/messages/133.html>

7. Cornelia HOFFMAN b. 13 Aug 1734 in Kingston, NY; d. 13 Nov 1789 in New York City, NY; m. 22 Sep 1752 in Dutch Church, Rhinebeck, Dutchess, NY, Isaac ROOSEVELT b. 8 Dec 1726 in New York City, NY; d. 13 Oct 1794 in New York City, NY, son of Jacobus (James) Roosevelt and Catharina Hardenbroeck;

Children:

- i. Abraham ROOSEVELT b. 13 Aug 1753 in New York City; d. 2 Oct 1753 in New York City
- ii. Martinus ROOSEVELT b. 27 Oct 1754; d. 20 Sep 1755
- iii. Catherine ROOSEVELT b. 28 Jul 1756; d. 19 May 1807
- iv. Sarah ROOSEVELT b. 18 Nov 1758; d. 18 Dec 1777 in Red Hook, Dutchess, NY
- v. Cornelia ROOSEVELT b. 29 Apr 1761; d. 1 Jun 1761
- vi. Maria ROOSEVELT b. 05 Aug 1763; d. 19 Jul 1841; m. 8 May 1786 Richard VARICK, b. 25 Mar 1753; d. 30 Jul 1831 in Jersey City, NJ, son of Abraham Varick and Jane Dey
- vii. Martin ROOSEVELT b. 22 May 1765; d. 19 Sep 1781 in Princeton University, Princeton, NJ
- viii. Cornelia ROOSEVELT b. 27 Apr 1767; d. 1 Jul 1818 in Rhinebeck, NY; m. 16 Jan 1786 **Benjamin KISSAM** b. ca 1759; d. 14 Jul 1803, son of Benjamin Kissam and Catherine Rutgers

Children of Benjamin and Cornelia:

- i. Cornelia Catherine KISSAM m. Caspar Wistar EDDY
  - ii. Maria Ann KISSAM
  - iii. Helena KISSAM
  - iv. Amelia Charlotte KISSAM
  - v. Catherine Roosevelt KISSAM
  - vi. Benjamin Roosevelt KISSAM
  - vii. Richard Varick KISSAM
- ix. Helena ROOSEVELT b: 30 Aug 1768; d: 7 Sep 1798
  - x. Jacobus/James ROOSEVELT b: 10 Jan 1760 in New York City, NY; d: 6 Feb 1847 in New York City, NY; m. 15 Nov 1786 in New York City, NY, Mary Eliza WALTON, b: 15 Mar 1769 in New York City, NY; d/o Mr. Abraham Walton and Ms. Grace Williams

----

**Thomas Mallard** – 1780 Lodge No. 210 E.R. (A), New York; formerly a lieutenant with the 37th Company of Militia, b. 25 Dec 1752 at Leicester, England; d. 25 Mar 1793 age 40 yrs 6 mos.; came to NY in 1776; moved to St. John, NB in 1783 as a Loyalist. Survived by his wife, Ann.

October 15, 1785 Governor Thomas Carleton issues a writ for New Brunswick's first provincial election. In Saint John, the election ends with a riot outside the Mallard House polling station, and troops are called in from nearby Fort Howe to restore order.

January 3, 1786 The first meeting of the New Brunswick Legislature is held at the Mallard House on King Street in Saint John. The historic opening marks the official business of developing the new province of New Brunswick.

April 11, 1786. Thomas Mallard announced in the "Royal Gazette" he has acquired the schooner "*Four Sisters*" and has established a weekly passenger and cargo service from Saint John to Fredericton.

[http://books.google.com/books?id=1js9AAAAYAAJ&pg=PA394&dq=%22thomas+mallard%22+%22new+brunswick%22&hl=en&ei=q-eTLahEYP78Aa05ZW6Aq&sa=X&oi=book\\_result&ct=result&resnum=1&ved=0CC4Q6AEwAA#v=onepage&q=%22thomas%20mallard%22%20%22new%20brunswick%22&f=false](http://books.google.com/books?id=1js9AAAAYAAJ&pg=PA394&dq=%22thomas+mallard%22+%22new+brunswick%22&hl=en&ei=q-eTLahEYP78Aa05ZW6Aq&sa=X&oi=book_result&ct=result&resnum=1&ved=0CC4Q6AEwAA#v=onepage&q=%22thomas%20mallard%22%20%22new%20brunswick%22&f=false) page 394.

## MALLARD BUILDING.

Situate on the south side of King street, on the site at present occupied by the Royal hotel. The lot, No. 393, was drawn by William Ryan, a loyalist, who sold it, August 4, 1785, to Thomas Mallard for nine guineas. The building was among the first erected in the city. It was used as a hotel or inn, and also devoted to public purposes. The first session of the provincial legislature was convened here in 1786, and the common council of the city met in it from December, 1785, to March, 1797. A serious riot occurred at this house November, 1785, at an election for representatives in the general assembly, when several persons were severely injured. This building's 'Long Room' also served as a theater for several plays up to at least 1795, when five productions were held there.

As St. John's Lodge was constituted and held its early meetings in the building, it deserves special mention, and should be peculiarly interesting to members of the present day. The lodge met here from April, 1802, to May, 1805, and again from March, 1813, to May, 1814.

The original building was forty feet wide and two storeys in height, the upper storey containing the hall in which the lodge held its meetings. It was partially destroyed by fire in the year 1829, and when rebuilt was materially altered internally and externally. In the year 1850 the premises were leased to the late John D. Frost, who tore down the old building, together with an adjoining house, and upon the foundations erected a brick structure, having stores on the lower storey and a hotel in the upper portion; and is the same building, with alterations and additions, now known as the Royal Hotel. The property is at present owned by the heirs of the late George Bonsall.



Mallard House

[http://books.google.com/books?id=rzFCAAAIAAJ&pg=PA440&dq=%22thomas+mallard%22+%22new+brunswick%22&hl=en&ei=q-eETLahEYP78Aa05ZW6Aq&sa=X&oi=book\\_result&ct=result&resnum=4&ved=0CDsQ6AEwAw#v=onepage&q=%22thomas%20mallard%22%20%22new%20brunswick%22&f=false](http://books.google.com/books?id=rzFCAAAIAAJ&pg=PA440&dq=%22thomas+mallard%22+%22new+brunswick%22&hl=en&ei=q-eETLahEYP78Aa05ZW6Aq&sa=X&oi=book_result&ct=result&resnum=4&ved=0CDsQ6AEwAw#v=onepage&q=%22thomas%20mallard%22%20%22new%20brunswick%22&f=false) page 440

MALLARD, THOMAS. During the war he was in the city of New York. The following receipt has been preserved.

"New York, 13 Novbr. 1780. Rec'd by order of the Commander in Chief of Mr. Thomas Mallard thirty pounds, being half a year's rent due the 1st inst. for No. 522 Hanover Square, for the use express'd in said order.

JOHN SMYTH, Coll'r of rents."

£30:0:0

It may be remarked, that the above is one, probably, of many hundred receipts given by John Smyth for payment of rents while the royal army occupied New York. After the evacuation, the question arose, whether the persons who had occupied buildings under the authority of the British Commander-in-chief, could plead payments to Smyth in bar of actions commenced against them by the owners. This question, before it was finally disposed of, caused much excitement among the people, in the courts, and in the legislature. Mr. Mallard settled in New Brunswick in 1783, and died at St. John about the year 1803.

-----

### **Caleb Mallory (Mallory)[Jr.] –**

**Caleb Mallory** was born Oct 23 1749 in Woodbury, CT, and moved to Shelborne, NS in 1782; grantee in St John, NB, in 1783. He later returned to Connecticut. Caleb married Mary Terry [or Ferry] on Mar 17 1768.

Upon the Memorial of Caleb Mallory late of Maugerville in New Brunswick, a Subject of Great Britain now resident in Washington Litchfield County, State of Connecticut, representing to this Assembly that he has disposed of all his Interest in said New Brunswick, and has come into this State with his Family where he expects to reside during his Life Praying that he may be naturalized or enabled to hold Lands in this State &c as per Memorial on file.

Caleb who seemed a bit partial to the British cause and at one time was fined for drinking Bohea Tea (British Tea). he married Mary Ferry and moved to Canada. However, he was caught counterfeiting in Rutland Co Vt, but escape custody and returned to his family in Shelburne Nova Scotia.

I Caleb Mallory of Woodbury, do freely acknowledge That I have sundry times, since the fifth day of March, drank Bohea tea (English Tea), and have said that I did not know nor care for the continental congress, nor their doings which I am now fully convinced was wrong in me, & for which I am very sorry, as I thereby have given just occasion for offense to the good people of this town, and this country in general; and I hereby faithfully promise, for the future,, not to do, nor say any thing, that that be violation of andy doings of said congress; as I am not convinced, that the doings of the said congress are reasonable, and salutary for this Cournty. Woodbury, August 7th 1775. Caleb Mallory.

The above aknowledgement being made before the committee of inspection, for said Woodbury the same is accepted by them as satisfactory; he publishing the said announcement in the public newspapers. By the order of the committees, Daniel Sherman, chairman. A true copy examined, by Increas Moseley, Jr. Clerk.

Twenty Dollars Reward

On Thursday night last, broke gaol in Rutland, Caleb Mallory, who was confined for passing counterfeit money. Said Mallory is about 5 feet 8 inches high, light complexion, grey eyes, about fifty five years old, bald on the forepart and crown of the head, his hair short and of a dark color. It is supposed he has made his way toward Canada, where his family resides. Whoever shall take up said Mallory, and return him to the keeper of the gaol in Rutland shall be entitled to take the above reward, all the necessary charges paid, by Henry Gould Rutland May 1?, 1806

----

**David Matthews –**

[http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/David\\_Mathews](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/David_Mathews)

**David Mathews** (died 1800) was a lawyer and politician from New York City. He was a Loyalist during the Revolutionary War and was Mayor of New York from 1776 until 1783. Mathews lived in Flatbush and was mayor, in 1776, when he was implicated in a plot to kidnap George Washington. Mathews and William Tryon, then governor of Province of New York, were implicated in the plot, as was a member of Washington's Life Guard, [Thomas Hickey](#), who was eventually executed. The New York Provincial Congress ordered Mathews's arrest for "being Engaged in a Conspiracy against the Authority of the Congress and the Liberties of America." The charges were never proven, and he was briefly imprisoned, and then either escaped or was paroled and returned to New York.

After the war, Matthews testified before a Royal Commission, seated in London, "*I formed a plan for the taking of Mr. Washington and his Guard prisoners but which was not effected.*" [see further text of this below].

A thief David Matthews jailed for stealing a piano overheard soldiers in the cell talking about the assassination. He bartered the information for his freedom. The information checked out and lead to hangings. At the hanging of Sergeant Thomas Hickey, General Washington tried to turn attention away from the main crime of attempting to kill the army's commander-in-chief. General Washington said, "The most certain method to keep from being tempted into the crimes of mutiny, sedition, and treachery, was to avoid lewd women who, by the dying confession of this poor criminal, first led him into practices which ended in an untimely and ignominious death."

[http://books.google.com/books?id=yGIAAAAACAAJ&pg=RA1-PA1158&dq=%22david+matthews%22+%22george+washington%22&hl=en&ei=Jv6ETJecJoH\\_8AarsfjAQ&sa=X&oi=book\\_result&ct=result&resnum=6&ved=0CEUQ6AEwBQ#v=onepage&q=%22david%20matthews%22%20%22george%20washington%22&f=false](http://books.google.com/books?id=yGIAAAAACAAJ&pg=RA1-PA1158&dq=%22david+matthews%22+%22george+washington%22&hl=en&ei=Jv6ETJecJoH_8AarsfjAQ&sa=X&oi=book_result&ct=result&resnum=6&ved=0CEUQ6AEwBQ#v=onepage&q=%22david%20matthews%22%20%22george%20washington%22&f=false) page 1158.

June 21, 1776. *To His Excellency* GEORGE WASHINGTON, Esq., *General:*

SIR: Whereas **David Matthews**, Esquire, stands charged with dangerous designs and treasonable conspiracies against the rights and liberties of the United Colonies of *America* : We do, in pursuance of a certain resolve of the Congress of the Colony of the 20th of *June* instant, authorize and request you to cause the said *David Matthews* to be, with all his papers, forthwith apprehended and secured, and that return be made to us of the manner in which the warrant shall be executed, in order that the same may be made known to the said Congress.

Given under our hands, this 21st day of *June*, 1776.

PHILIP LIVINGSTON,  
JOHN JAY,  
GOUVERNEUR MORRIS.

General *Greene* is desired to have the within warrant executed with precision, and exactly by one o'clock the ensuing morning, by a careful officer.

GEORGE WASHINGTON

Friday afternoon, June 21, 1776.

Long-Island, June 22, 1776.

In obedience to the within order and warrant, I sent a detachment of my brigade, under the command of Colonel *Vernon*, to the house of the within-named *David Matthews*, Esq., at *Flatbush*, who surrounded his house and seized his person precisely at the hour of one this morning. After having made him a prisoner, diligent search was made after his papers, but none could be found, notwithstanding great care was taken that none of the family should have the least opportunity to remove or destroy them.

NATHANAEL GREENE.

"The **Royal Commission** on the Losses and Services of American Loyalists," 1783," by Daniel Parker Coke. Page 168  
[http://books.google.com/books?id=2FhdYdLnkoC&pg=PA168&dq=%22david+matthews%22+%22royal+commission%22&hl=en&ei=fouFTJbuBcO88garqeGcAq&sa=X&oi=book\\_result&ct=result&resnum=1&ved=0CCqQ6AEwAA#v=onepage&q&f=false](http://books.google.com/books?id=2FhdYdLnkoC&pg=PA168&dq=%22david+matthews%22+%22royal+commission%22&hl=en&ei=fouFTJbuBcO88garqeGcAq&sa=X&oi=book_result&ct=result&resnum=1&ved=0CCqQ6AEwAA#v=onepage&q&f=false)

## Memorial of David Matthew, Esq. Late Mayor of New York

David Matthew Esq – the Claimant – sworn

5<sup>th</sup> of Aug<sup>t</sup> 1784.

A Native of New York. In the Year 1775 He practiced the Law & held the Offices of Clerk of the Court of Com Pleas & Clerk of the Court of Sessions for the County of Orange. These were Patent Offices. No Salary to either but he says the Fees amounted to £200 C. per Ann. & that he made on an Average £600 a Y<sup>r</sup> C. by his practice. He mad himself very obnoxious early in 1776 & was in consequence thereof apprehended by order of the New York Convention & sent to Gaol where he was kept 2 Months & then removed to Connecticut where he was confined till he effected his Escape the 21<sup>st</sup> of Nov<sup>r</sup> 1776. He had exerted himself on various Occasions at the Commencem<sup>t</sup> of the troubles in acquiring Information concerning the Designs of the Insurgents which he communicated to Capt<sup>n</sup> Vandeput & in doing so he ran the risqué of losing his Life particularly when he attempted with the assistance of some of the Magistrates to prevent the people from seizing 500 Stand of Arms. In this however he fail'd notwithstanding the most vigorous Exertions. Says that Feb<sup>r</sup> 1776 he was appointed Mayor of New York by Gov<sup>r</sup> Tryon. Says that M<sup>r</sup> Hicks his Predecessor made £600 C. per Ann. by the Office. In Dec<sup>r</sup> following he was appointed by Gov<sup>r</sup> Tryon Register to the Court of Vice Admiralty which was afterw<sup>de</sup> confirmed by the Lords of Admiralty. Says that in peace it was an office which hardly produced any Income but that in War time it might on an Average be worth £1000 C. per Ann. tho' he did not reap any great Advantage from it as his Deputy (for he could not attend the business himself) was very negligent. Says that he had formed a Plan for the taking of M<sup>r</sup> Washington & his Guard Prisoners but which was not effected by an unfortunate Discovery that was made of a Letter. One of the persons who was concern'd in the business (a M<sup>r</sup> Hicky) was seized and executed. He the Claim<sup>t</sup> was also seized & confined as he has already stated. He had been at £150 C. expence in making his Escape & Govr Tryon made him a present of 50 Gas [guineas]. Says again it was £150 S. that it cost him to make his Escape.

He had an Allowance of £600 per Ann. from the 1<sup>st</sup> of Jan<sup>y</sup> to the 31<sup>st</sup> of Dec<sup>r</sup> 1783. The was by Warrant of Sir W<sup>m</sup> Howe.

Produces Certificates from Gen<sup>l</sup> Tryon & Admiral Digby which make very full mention of ths Loyalty and Services.

He has an Allowance of £200 per Ann. from the Treasury from the 5<sup>th</sup> of Jan<sup>y</sup> 1784.

When British forces occupied the city in August 1776, Mathews resumed his office as mayor. When the British evacuated on November 10, 1783, he left with other loyalists to Nova Scotia. He was appointed attorney general and a member of the Executive Council by Lieutenant Governor Joseph Frederick Wallet DesBarres. Although an elected house of assembly was to have been established, this did not occur. The remainder of Mathews life would be spent enmeshed in the particular political struggles of a colony without a house of assembly. Having held a respectable elected office in New York, he had difficulty adjusting to Nova Scotia's restrictions.

[http://www.biographi.ca/009004-119.01-e.php?&id\\_nbr=2054](http://www.biographi.ca/009004-119.01-e.php?&id_nbr=2054)

**David Matthers**, office-holder; b. in New York City, son of Vincent Mathews and his second wife Catalina Abeel; m. Sarah Seymour, and they had at least two sons and two daughters; d. July 1800 at Amelia Point, Cape Breton Island. He received his A.M. from the College of New Jersey (Princeton University) in 1754. After holding some minor offices in the administration of New York City, he was appointed mayor in February 1776. Soon afterwards, he was accused of "treasonable practices against the States of America" in connection with his alleged involvement in the "Hickey Plot" to assassinate George Washington and was jailed in Litchfield, Connecticut. He escaped, however, and returned to New York; in 1779 his property, which included 26,000 acres and two houses, was confiscated by the New York Congress. Mathews continued as mayor of New York until shortly before the evacuation of the city by British troops in November 1783. Following his departure from New York, Mathews travelled, like many other loyalists, to Nova Scotia, where he applied unsuccessfully for the position of attorney general; it is not known whether he had ever received any formal legal training. In 1785 he was persuaded by Abraham Cuyler, a former mayor of Albany and now registrar of the new colony of Cape Breton, to move to Sydney, its capital. In July he was appointed attorney general and a member of the Executive Council by Lieutenant Governor Joseph Frederick Wallet DesBarres.

Although a provision had been made for a house of assembly in Cape Breton, none was established. As a result, the Council became the scene for debate over local issues; such debates frequently divided the Council into factions, thereby impairing effective government. The first such split occurred in December 1785 when Des-Barres failed to consult the Council about the distribution of supplies to the inhabitants. The self-important Mathews, who had already begun to chafe under DesBarres's strict control of the Council, promptly resigned in protest. When DesBarres then attempted to seize military supplies in order to feed the settlers, Colonel John Yorke of the 33rd Foot objected and soon afterwards joined a faction, led by Mathews and supported by Cuyler and other Council members, which worked for DesBarres's removal. The group sent a petition protesting DesBarres's conduct to Governor John PARR of Nova Scotia, DesBarres's immediate superior. Parr forwarded the petition to the British government, and Des-Barres was recalled in November 1786 as a result of this and other complaints.

On the arrival of Lieutenant Governor William Macarmick in 1787 Mathews rejoined the Council. He soon managed to have his main opponent, Richard GIBBONS, the chief justice, removed from office, and later became Macarmick's principal confidant in the colony. After some time, however, the lieutenant governor objected to what he considered were Mathews' efforts to dominate him. The controversy reached a head in 1794 when Mathews formed an organization for the ostensible purpose of resisting "the rise and progress of sentiment and opinions subversive to our happy Establishment in Church and State" and preventing an influx of refugees from Saint-Pierre and Miquelon, who were fleeing an outbreak of revolutionary activity there. Macarmick claimed, however, that the association included "all the principle people, [so] that I might be obliged to fill vacancies out of this society." By persuading the Council's anti-Mathews faction, led by the Reverend Ranna Cossit, to submit a petition which claimed that the organization would "subvert the good order of Society," Macarmick was able to ban Mathews' association in July. Mathews' followers threatened

to riot, and only a stern reprimand to all concerned from the Duke of Portland, Secretary of State for the Home Department, prevented the calamity. [William Henry Cavendish-Bentinck was the 3rd Duke of Portland]

Macarwick left Cape Breton in 1795 and Mathews, as senior councillor, became administrator of the colony. He soon used the office for personal aggrandizement, appointing his sons David and William Tryon acting attorney general and provost-marshal respectively, and naming to the Council Richard Stout, Sydney's principal merchant, to whom he was deeply in debt. Mathews was also able to attack his opponents on the Council. He denied Cossit's right to appoint a schoolteacher and imprisoned the minister on debt charges, removed William McKinnon from his position as secretary and registrar of the colony, and dismissed Chief Justice Ingram Ball, replacing him with his crony Archibald Charles Dodd. Both Ball and McKinnon were also eventually jailed on charges of debt. At the end of June 1798 Major-General James Ogilvie arrived in Sydney to replace Mathews as administrator. In the year he served Ogilvie conducted an investigation into Mathews' conduct, but he left without being able to prove Mathews guilty of any wrongdoing.

The next administrator, General John Murray, who arrived in June 1799 attempted to repair the divisions in the Council, but Mathews refused to be reconciled with his opponents. Moreover, he and Murray clashed over the appointment of a schoolteacher. After this and other quarrels Murray dismissed Mathews as attorney general in January 1800. Mathews promptly made an alliance with Edward Augustus, Duke of Kent [who was also Grand Master of the Antients GL 1813], who harboured a personal grudge against Murray, and Murray was replaced by Major-General John Despard in June. Mathews did not live to enjoy his victory long, however, for he died at his home near Sydney the following month. Although he was doubtless an ambitious and quarrelsome man, David Mathews' career illustrates the loyalists' difficulties in adjusting to the political restrictions of the postwar British empire, particularly in a colony without a house of assembly.

-----

**Archibald McNeil [McNiel]** - b. 1719; baker and flour merchant, Boston; 1757, St. John's Lodge, Boston; 1759, Masters' Lodge, Boston; 1762, Master, Second Lodge Boston; 1765, Master, Master's Lodge Boston; 1765, J.G.W. P.G.L. Boston; 1767-70, S.G.W. P.G.L. Boston; 1776, Halifax, NS; 1778, visitor St. Andrew's Lodge No. 2, P.G.L. Quebec; 1779, Estate confiscated; 1781, Lodge No. 169 E.R. (A), New York; 1782, Grand Steward, P.G.L. New York; 1783, Halifax, NS; 1784, visitor Lodge No. 211 E.R. (A), Halifax; 1784, murdered by Indians at Quebec.

<http://www.acadian.org/indians2.html>

In 1783 a messenger of Halimand, Governor of Quebec, a man named Dufour and a Loyalist, **Archibald McNeil**, were assassinated on their way to Halifax. It was carried out by Charles Nichau Noiste and Francis Harguenion, two Indians from Fort Madawaska. The authorities from Quebec had the assassins arrested. A delegation composed of Francois-Xavier, Grand-Pierre and eight other high-ranking members of the tribe, went to the trial in Quebec. It opened in August 1784 and was presided over by Governor Haldimand himself and a judge of the Supreme Court. Francois-Xavier, in his capacity of chief, spoke first. After a profuse greeting to the governor, he continued:

*"Twenty-six springs ago (since the takeover of Fort St. John by Moncton, in 1758) we have followed your ways. During that time, we have our village clean. But now a young man, a bad MALECITE, has thrown a bloody branch into it. We have handed him over to your authority, so that the great chief of the English, may do with him as he judges appropriate".*

According to Chief Francois-Xavier, Charles Nichau Noiste was the only guilty one. The chief asked on behalf of the tribe, that Harguenion be freed because, he said:

*"I do not believe he is guilty. In my capacity as chief, I promise to bring him back if you should find some proof of his guilt".*

Then turning to the governor, he added:

*"The pale faces, of whom you are the chief, are responsible for this crime. In the future, see to it that no one brings fire water into my territory; it is the cause of all our misfortunes".*

Harguenion was freed and relations between the Indians and the authorities of Quebec improved. Noiste was convicted and executed in Quebec.

-----

**Dr. Peter Middleton** – b. Scotland; ed. Edinburgh; 1730, New York; brother-in-law of George Harison; 1755, Charter member and Master, Lodge at Albany (?); 1767, founded Medical School at King's College (now Columbia); 1771, Deputy Grand Master, Prov. GL of New York; Surgeon in British Army; d. 1781.

Dr. Peter Middleton, one of the original members of the St. Andrew's Society of New York and its President for three terms, 1767-69. He was a native of Edinburgh, and graduated in medicine in that city. He settled in New York about 1730, and soon was regarded as the most eminent physician and surgeon in the Colony. In 1750, in company with another medical man, he made the first dissection in America of a body before a number of students, and in the matter of the education for his own profession Dr. Middleton seemed to have always taken a deep interest. In 1767 he established a medical school in New York, a school which subsequently merged into King's [Columbia] College, of which institution he was one of the Governors from 1770 till his death, in 1781.

<http://beatl.barnard.columbia.edu/kingsv1/biosketches.htm>

**Peter Middleton (1730-1781)** came to New York City from Scotland in 1752 and founded St. Andrew's Society in 1756. A physician, he was one of six who proposed that King's College open a medical school, which it did in November 1767. Middleton was elected a Governor of King's College in 1773. He sided with the British during the Revolutionary War.

[http://www.phoenixmasonry.org/goulds\\_history\\_volume\\_6.htm](http://www.phoenixmasonry.org/goulds_history_volume_6.htm)

Sir John Johnson, son of Sir William Johnson, distinguished diplomat and friend of the American Indians, was Harison's successor in Office. His Deputation by Lord Blaney was dated 1767, but he was not Installed until 1771. St. George Lodge, No. 1 (now No. 6), of

Schenectady, Constituted on September 14, 1774, appears to have been the only Lodge Warranted by him. Sir John was a Tory of the Tories. He went to Canada when the War for Independence began, and for some reason or other he took the Provincial Warrant with him. Before departing he appointed **Dr. Peter Middleton** as his Deputy.

**Dr. Middleton** was a son-in-law of Governor Cadwallader Colden and thus related to **George Harison**, whose Grand Warden he was in 1766 and as whose Deputy he later acted. It was he who Warranted St. John's Regimental, No. 1, a Lodge composed of Brethren in the Colonial army. In 1776 he re-Warranted American Union Lodge, Constituted shortly before by Massachusetts while its members were in camp at Roxbury, Massachusetts, and before they were transferred to New York. Deputy Grand Master **Middleton** changed the name of this Lodge to Military Union. It was the leading fraternal organization in the Colonial army and had a stirring history. In 1791 the later Grand Lodge of the State of New York received a letter from Marietta, then only a frontier settlement in that part of the Northwest Territory later known as Ohio, conveying the information that a number of Brethren had incorporated themselves into a Lodge under the Warrant of American Union Lodge, No. 1.

The departure of Sir John Johnson with the Provincial Charter practically put an end to the Provincial Grand Lodge that had emanated from the Premier Grand Lodge of England.

[http://balder.prohosting.com/shissem/Hissem\\_William\\_Heysam\\_Line.html](http://balder.prohosting.com/shissem/Hissem_William_Heysam_Line.html)

Daughters of Richard Nicholls [Nichols], esq., whom Elizabeth Tuder Stollard also called her cousins. **Jane Nicholls married George Harrison**, Esq., surveyor of customs. Mary married the Reverend Samuel Auchmuty. Another daughter, Elizabeth, married Alexander Colden, of Flushing, Surveyor-General and the son of Cadwallader Colden, Governor of New York in the 1760's. A fourth daughter, **Susannah Nicholls**, married John Burges and, upon his death, **Dr. Peter Middleton**, governor of King's college.

[http://books.google.com/books?id=Yx4XAAAAYAAJ&pg=PA27&dq=%22Peter+Middleton%22+%22susannah%22&hl=en&ei=RstzTJXvOsXflqeD9ITICA&sa=X&oi=book\\_result&ct=result&resnum=1&ved=0CCUQ6AEwAA#v=onepage&q=%22Peter%20Middleton%22%20%22susannah%22&f=false](http://books.google.com/books?id=Yx4XAAAAYAAJ&pg=PA27&dq=%22Peter+Middleton%22+%22susannah%22&hl=en&ei=RstzTJXvOsXflqeD9ITICA&sa=X&oi=book_result&ct=result&resnum=1&ved=0CCUQ6AEwAA#v=onepage&q=%22Peter%20Middleton%22%20%22susannah%22&f=false) page 25.

### Will of Peter Middleton

Page 180.—PETER MIDDLETON, Physician, of New York City, direct my executors to call in all my outstanding open accounts and book debts and to sell all my household furniture and effects as soon after my decease as possible, except such articles as are herein specified, my lawful debts and funeral charges and all legacies and donations to be taken from the moneys arising from above-mentioned sale: To my daughter, Susannah Margaret, my gold watch and seals, my three silver waiters, my pearl brooch, all my rings except two after mentioned, all my paintings, and my iron chest to preserve papers in; Also whatever books of History or entertainment my executors may think proper for her amusement or instruction that may be selected for her use from my collection and preserved for her as her own; to my pupil, John B. Middleton, all my wearing apparel, except my large cambelet cloak; Also all my arms, all my medicines, shop furniture, instruments, medical books, and manuscripts; Also to him and his heirs forever all my lands lying on the Unadilla branch of the Susquehanna River, in what is commonly called Colonel Craghan's [Crogan's] Purchase, amounting to five thousand acres, more or less; Also one-fifth part of all my personal estate wheresoever and whatsoever, together with twenty-five Guineas to purchase him present necessaries, to be laid out with the approbation of my executors; to my daughter-in-law, Ann Burges, £300, as a merited gratuity for her good behavior and kind attention to me and to my daughter Susannah; Also twenty-five Guineas for mourning; to Margaret Burges, now Mrs. Smythies, twenty-five guineas for mourning; to my sister-in-law, Mrs. Jane Harrison, my gold brooch, set with red and white stones; to the Hon. Andrew Elliot, Esq., my large cambelet cloak, and my scots pebble ring; to Goldsbrow Banyar, Esq., my red cornelian seal ring; to Robert Auchmuty, Esq., my **gold mason's jewel and my apron**; to my daughter, Susannah Margaret, all the residue of my real estate whatsoever and wheresoever, whether consisting of lands, lots, horses, or otherwise, to her or her heirs; Also all the remaining four fifths of my personal estate after all the donations and deductions above specified are settled. If the said John B. Middleton should die before he attains the age of twenty-one years, or without lawful issue, or intestate, all in these cases above bequeathed to him shall revert to and become the property of my daughter or her heirs; if my daughter should die without heirs or intestate, all that hereby bequeathed to her shall become the property of John B. Middleton if then alive, or of his oldest male descendant of the name of Middleton, if any such there shall be, and on failure of both these, I then direct the whole hereby bequeathed property to my daughter shall go to my nearest male heir bearing the name Middleton; should the said John B. Middleton, after succeeding to the shares of my daughter, die afterwards without heirs or intestate, in that case I direct that all hereby bequeathed to him shall be given to my nearest male heir bearing the name of Middleton, together with all my said daughter's shares of my estate; to my daughter Susannah, my old wench, Haig; Also my negro lad, Fortune, upon this condition, that my daughter give over to John B. Middleton above mentioned all her right and title to the negro child, James; but should the said wench, Haig, or lad Fortune be inattentive to my daughter, or not promote her interest and happiness while she is under age and unmarried, or if they refuse to go with her where she wishes to go, then I order my executors to sell said wench, Haig, or lad Fortune to the highest bidder for my daughter's benefit. I give full power to my executors to sell, mortgage, or exchange, or dispose of all or any part of my real estate to any person or persons by good and sufficient deeds in law or other conveyance as shall seem right for the present or future benefit of my heirs and legatees above mentioned. I appoint The Hon. Andrew Elliot, Esq.; Robert Auchmuty, Esq., and Goldsbrow Banyar, Esq., executors.

Dated November 1, 1780. Witnesses, Lambert Moore, New York City; George Webster, John King, Jr.

*Codicil.* It is my desire (Peter Middleton) that my daughter, Susannah Margaret, shall remain under the guidance and charge of Anne Burges until my executors think it necessary to remove her, and as, whereas, I have lately had two gold watches bequeathed to me, I leave the best one to my daughter, and necessary trinkets and seals; the other gold watch to Anne Burges, and notwithstanding I have bequeathed all my wearing apparel to John B. Middleton, it is my will that my daughter shall choose from my linens whatever may be immediately useful to her, and the residue given to my son, the said John B. Middleton; to William Smythies, ten guineas, and to his son Carlton, five guineas more; to Doctor J. Bard, my "stots Horn Swishing mill"; I desire a mourning ring to be given to Doctor Mallet; Also one to Doctor S. Bard and one to Doctor Michalis, and another to Doctor Bayley for their kind attention to me during my sickness; to Anthony Van Dam, Esq., my gold-headed cane; to William Seton, Esq., my **grand master's mason's jewels, my small mason's apron**, and my Highland Durk. I appoint Anthony Van Dam and William Seton,

executors, in conjunction with the three gentlemen above named in my will, and giving them the same power as aforesaid mentioned; the names of the aforesaid executors being The Hon. Lieut.-Gov. Andrew Elliot, Goldsbrow Banyar, and Robert Auchmuty, Esq.

Dated 14 Dec 1780. Witnesses, George Webster, New York City, grocer; Samuel Bard, James Wells, Jr. Proved, 15 Jan 1781.

---

Dr. Middleton was evidently quite well acquainted with Sir William Johnson, as attested by the following correspondence from Sir William's Papers, vol. II, page 46 :

[http://books.google.com/books?id=0fh2AAAAMAAJ&pg=PA253&lpg=PA253&dq=%22peter+middleton%22+%22william+johnson%22&source=bl&ots=kjJx7f57Tc&sig=AaBc1qicITpPB1brPBpMsiqXPpU&hl=en&ei=7vSITKrBH8X\\_lgevLUM&sa=X&oi=book\\_result&ct=result&resnum=1&ved=0CBYQ6AEwAA#v=onepage&q=middleton&f=false](http://books.google.com/books?id=0fh2AAAAMAAJ&pg=PA253&lpg=PA253&dq=%22peter+middleton%22+%22william+johnson%22&source=bl&ots=kjJx7f57Tc&sig=AaBc1qicITpPB1brPBpMsiqXPpU&hl=en&ei=7vSITKrBH8X_lgevLUM&sa=X&oi=book_result&ct=result&resnum=1&ved=0CBYQ6AEwAA#v=onepage&q=middleton&f=false)

TO PETER MIDDLETON  
<Camp at Lake George 16 Sepr. 1755. >

(1)

As your present ill state of <health unfitts you for the discharge of> your Duty in this Army, you have my <Liberty to go down to> New York in order to promote your Recovery, as <soon as that takes> place you are to repair with all possible Dispatch to your <post in> the New York Regm<sup>t</sup>. under my Command or to follow such fu<ture> Orders as you may receive from me relative therto.

(2)

You are to Accompany the Baron De Dieskau the Fre<nch> General and to use your utmost skill and Diligence to get > Wounds cured and to establish his Health

(3)

On your Arrivall at Albany you are to accompany the Baron and his Aid de Camp to my House and there attend him and not suffer the Curiosity or impertinence of any persons either to retard his Cure or offend him and I would have very <few> persons admitted to talk either with him or his Aid de Camp <as> few of the Dutch Albanians as possible and I give you this Discretionary power in my house.

(4)

As soon as you think it is safe for the Barons health I would have you accompany him and his Aid de Camp to New York. On your Arrivall there have the General and Aid de Ca<mp> on Board with the Guard, wait on the Governour & acquaint him of their Arrivall that he may give his orders thereupon.

INDORSED: Instructions to Dr. Middelton

---

Ibid. page 40

TO WILLIAM COCKCROFT  
Camp at Lake George 15 Sepr. 1755.

SIR

. . . General The Baron De Dieskau & his Aid de Camp. I desire you will prepare the best Accommodations possible for the General & during his Stay to have him treated with the utmost respect & good Usage & to forward him to Albany in the Litter & by a Battoe as he shall Choose & **Dr. Middleton** (who is to attend him) advise. His Aid de Camp & the French Man out of the Rhode Island Reg<sup>t</sup>, are to attend him. It will be proper in a Civil way to keep a sharp Eye on the Aid de Camp And the officer who goes down to Albany to keep a good look out.

Pray use your best Endeavours to keep up good Guards, Peace & Order amongst the Troops under your Command, & keep in a watchful Posture against the Enemy. I woud have you daily send out small parties of 3, 4 or 5 to Scour the Woods for a mile or two round you . . .

I am Sir Your hum Serv<sup>t</sup>.

WM. JOHNSON

-----

Ibid. page 68-69

FROM OLIVER DE LANCEY  
Albany y<sup>e</sup> 21 [September 1755.]

DEAR S<sup>r</sup>

I have only time to Congratulate you on the Glor [ious] Success your Army has enjoy'd under your Direction [ ] to your own Great Glory.

It gave me very sensible satisfaction to Hear from our friend **Doctor Middleton** that the Wound you received was not Dangerous and that you are in a Condition to Conduct The Forces I hope to future success and Dont Doubt it from so happy a beginning I should be glad to Receive any Intelligence your time will permit you to Communicate I am here with Sr Charles Hardy who is Come Merely to forward the Service you are Engaged in and seems quite bent to Do every thing in His Power to secure you future

success & Honor Make My Compliments to Ayres Wraxall & Other friends I am in haste and Only time to say How Much success I wish you being with sincerity Sr

Your Humble Ser'

OLIVER DE LANCEY

----

[http://books.google.com/books?id=2HSB5QuBFAC&pg=PA290&lpg=PA290&dq=%22peter+middleton%22+%22david+mathews%22&source=bl&ots=dvQejQPFOK&sig=qk6r5zoStUnVGcxG\\_hPEAlcNmF0&hl=en&ei=AqSJTLmjJMOqAfQvImBDg&sa=X&oi=book\\_result&ct=result&resnum=7&ved=0CCwQ6AEwBq#v=onepage&q=%22peter%20middleton%22%20%22david%20mathews%22&f=false](http://books.google.com/books?id=2HSB5QuBFAC&pg=PA290&lpg=PA290&dq=%22peter+middleton%22+%22david+mathews%22&source=bl&ots=dvQejQPFOK&sig=qk6r5zoStUnVGcxG_hPEAlcNmF0&hl=en&ei=AqSJTLmjJMOqAfQvImBDg&sa=X&oi=book_result&ct=result&resnum=7&ved=0CCwQ6AEwBq#v=onepage&q=%22peter%20middleton%22%20%22david%20mathews%22&f=false) page 269.

1776 – From a Diary of the Revolution . . .

We are informed that Mr. John Alsop, one of the New York delegates, has escaped from the Congress, and is on Long Island, on his way to join General Howe. **Dr. Peter Middleton**, Mr. Theophilus Bache, Mr. Philip John Livingstone, sheriff of Dutchess county, Mr. John Watts, jun., recorder of New York, Mr. Augustus Van Cortlandt, and Messrs. Robert and Samuel Auchmuty, **are lately arrived in this island, having narrowly escaped from their pursuers.**

**Lady Johnson** is seized by order of General Schuyler, by way of reprisal for **Sir John**, her husband, who has taken an active and loyal part, at the head of his faithful Mohawks. These have declared that, should the least injury be done to her, they would desolate and extirpate every person and property belonging to this same general. A person just escaped from New York informs us, that there is again a fresh hunt for the friends of government, who are called Tories, and that Mr. Augustus Van Horne, Mr. Vincent Pearce Ashfield, Captain Haradd, Mr. John Roome, jun., Mr. John Stone Fairholme, and Captain Turnbull, late of the Royal Americans, are made prisoners; Captain Archibald Kennedy, of the royal navy, is confined in Morristown, and Governor Franklin, **accompanied by that merry heart, David Mathews, Mayor of New York**, now under sentence of death for eminent proofs of loyalty to his King and the old constitution, are removed into Connecticut government for the better security of their persons.

-----

**Nathaniel Mills -**

[http://books.google.com/books?id=sC6tbQtfqgMC&pg=PA163&lpg=PA163&dq=%22nathaniel+mills%22+%22dorchester%22&source=bl&ots=V7swW/rj9NO&sig=c4jb7X77HS54Lu3qDh\\_2uNzrKNE&hl=en&ei=ilt6TLmeKcH7lwe13ZTsCw&sa=X&oi=book\\_result&ct=result&resnum=1&ved=0CBIQ6AEwAA#v=onepage&q=%22nathaniel%20mills%22%20%22dorchester%22&f=false](http://books.google.com/books?id=sC6tbQtfqgMC&pg=PA163&lpg=PA163&dq=%22nathaniel+mills%22+%22dorchester%22&source=bl&ots=V7swW/rj9NO&sig=c4jb7X77HS54Lu3qDh_2uNzrKNE&hl=en&ei=ilt6TLmeKcH7lwe13ZTsCw&sa=X&oi=book_result&ct=result&resnum=1&ved=0CBIQ6AEwAA#v=onepage&q=%22nathaniel%20mills%22%20%22dorchester%22&f=false) page 163.

NATHANIEL MILLS was born 3 Nov 1749, at Dorchester, MA, and was apprenticed to John Fleming, a Boston printer. At the expiration of his time of service, Mills, in partnership with John Hicks, bought out his former master, who was desirous of returning to Great Britain. Mills & Hicks began business in Boston in April, 1773. They also acquired control of "The Massachusetts Gazette," and continued it in the interest of the government party. This paper, according to Thomas, was terminated in April, 1775. The same writer is authority for the statement that besides their newspaper they printed "only a few political pamphlets and the 'Massachusetts Register.'" Mills resided a short time at Cambridge, but rejoined his partner in Boston before its evacuation by the British. They accompanied the British army to Halifax, and from thence went to England, where they remained about two years. In 1777 they came to New York and opened a printing-office in connection with a stationery store. They published there the "British and American Register" and "Army List in 1778," and a few other pamphlets. In 1782 they joined the Robertsons, the firm being Robertsons, Mills & Hicks. In 1783 Mills went to Nova Scotia, settling first at Halifax and then at Shelburne.

<http://files.usgwarchives.net/ma/statewide/loyalists.txt>

Nathaniel Mills. Printer. Boston. Was proscribed and banished in 1778. He was born in Massachusetts, and served his apprenticeship with John Fleming. The friends of the Royal Government urged him and John Hicks to purchase of Green and Russell the "Massachusetts Gazette and Post-Boy," which they did in 1773. Under their management, this paper took strong ground in opposition to the measures of the Whigs, and defended the Ministry and Colonial servants of the Crown with great zeal and ability. Hostilities, in 1775, put an end to its publication. Mills remained with the British troops while they occupied Boston, and on the evacuation accompanied them to Halifax, Nova Scotia. Thence he proceeded to Great Britain, but soon returned to New York and became interested with the Robertsons in the "Royal American Gazette." He continued in New York during the remainder of the war, and at the peace went a second time to Halifax, and from thence to Shelburne in the same colony.

-----

**James Moody** – b. 1744 Little Egg Harbor, NJ; 1777 New York; Lt. New Jersey Volunteers; 1791 No. 169 E.R. (A), New York; 1782 England; 1783 Sissiboo, NS; Weymouth, NS; 1785 London; 1786 Sissiboo, NS; 1788 Joined Digby Lodge No. 6, Digby, NS; 1790 Union Lodge No. 20, Sissiboo, NS; 1790-91 Master; 1793 Lodge in Royal Nova Scotia Regiment No. 24, NS; d. 1809.

See his interesting "Narrative of the exertions and sufferings of Lieut. James Moody, in cause of government since the year 1776," by James Moody, 1782, at: <http://www.archive.org/details/narrativeofexert00moody> ; a .pdf copy is in the OMDHS digital archives.

See also, "So Obstinate Loyal: James Moody, 1744-1809," by Susan Burgess Shenstone. 2001, 329 pages at:

[http://books.google.com/books?id=K0p6rn-vsPgC&pg=PA210&lpg=PA210&dq=%22digby%22+%22james+moody%22&source=bl&ots=XLM1qtC\\_QD&sig=83bsQ88IRh\\_74CQmb38zQnuOqpQ&hl=en&ei=r2GTJqnAYbAsAOEk82TCg&sa=X&oi=book\\_result&ct=result&resnum=5&sqi=2&ved=0CCIQ6AEwBA#v=onepage&q=%22digby%22%20%22james%20moody%22&f=false](http://books.google.com/books?id=K0p6rn-vsPgC&pg=PA210&lpg=PA210&dq=%22digby%22+%22james+moody%22&source=bl&ots=XLM1qtC_QD&sig=83bsQ88IRh_74CQmb38zQnuOqpQ&hl=en&ei=r2GTJqnAYbAsAOEk82TCg&sa=X&oi=book_result&ct=result&resnum=5&sqi=2&ved=0CCIQ6AEwBA#v=onepage&q=%22digby%22%20%22james%20moody%22&f=false) a paperbound copy of which is in the archives of the OMDHS. 340 pages, with index.

When James Moody arrived in 1786, he at first attended meetings in Digby. But in the summer of 1790 he pushed for the formation of a new Lodge in Sissiboo. In October, at the request of the Halifax Grand Lodge, the Digby Masons solemnly gathered at James's house in Sissiboo to inaugurate Union Lodge No. 20 in the province. They even voted a present to the new branch [Lodge], which was to meet there . . . The secretary was James's old friend Reuben Hankinson, an ensign in his battalion, who now lived at the first bend of the Sissiboo River. Another member was John Gigg [q.v.].

[http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/James\\_Moody\\_\(loyalist\)](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/James_Moody_(loyalist))

**James Moody** (ca 1744 – April 6, 1809) was a loyalist volunteer during the Revolution who became a farmer and political figure in Nova Scotia. He represented Annapolis County in the Nova Scotia House of Assembly from 1793 to 1806. He was born in New Jersey, the son of John Moody. After he refused to give up his allegiance to Britain and swear loyalty to the United States, Moody was harassed and shot at, so he joined the New Jersey Volunteers. He was captured in 1780 but managed to escape to New York City. After that, for a time, he was put into service intercepting rebel correspondence. In 1782, Moody went to England; he married Jane Lynson, his second wife, that same year. Also that year, he published *Lieut. James Moody's narrative of his exertions and sufferings in the cause of government, since the year 1776*, an account of his experiences during the Revolution. He went to Nova Scotia in 1782 and settled at Sissaboo (later Weymouth). Moody built ships there and also constructed mills. He served as a captain in the Royal Nova Scotia Regiment, a colonel in the local militia and road commissioner. He died in Sissaboo, leaving a widow, Jane, his second wife.

<http://www.weymouthnovascotia.com/history.php>

The most well known Loyalist to settle in Weymouth during this post-revolutionary period was James Moody (known locally as Colonel Moody from New Jersey). The story of Moody's involvement in the American Revolution has all the hallmarks of a Hollywood movie, including secret intelligence missions into enemy territory and daring escapes from prison at the 11th hour. Moody's escapades were so well known to American rebels that George Washington once called him "that villain Moody".

Moody arrived in Weymouth in June, 1786 with a fistful of money from the British government, compensation for his military duties during the Revolution. Moody was a community builder, and is considered by many as one of the founding fathers of Weymouth. Moody built a shipyard, donated land for an Anglican church (at Weymouth North) and assisted local Acadians in receiving clear title to their land. Despite the fact that Moody was a slaveholder, he possessed outstanding leadership qualities and is considered one of the best of the Loyalist leaders.

The initiative for the construction of a church at Sissaboo (Weymouth North) came from the loyalist Colonel James Moody. He gave the land in 1790 and was one of the committee to supervise construction. By 1798 Moody could write Bishop Inglis that the church was fit for use.

[http://www.biographi.ca/009004-119.01-e.php?&id\\_nbr=2564&&PHPSESSID=ctaar1ahgmp01t4suf5agqfvf2](http://www.biographi.ca/009004-119.01-e.php?&id_nbr=2564&&PHPSESSID=ctaar1ahgmp01t4suf5agqfvf2)

**James Moody**, army and militia officer, office holder, politician, and author; b. ca 1744 in New Jersey, son of John Moody; by his first marriage he had three children; m. secondly 21 March 1782 Jane Lynson, *née* Robinson; d. 6 April 1809 in Sissiboo (Weymouth), N.S.

James Moody occupies a special place among the thousands of loyalists who settled in Nova Scotia after the American revolution because he is widely held to have been one of the most effective British raiders in that conflict, and many of his exploits read like popular fiction. At the outbreak of the revolution he was living quietly on a farm belonging to his father in Sussex County, N.J. Like many loyalists, he was "a Lover of Peace & good Order, and loyal on Principle," but initially he had no thoughts of taking part in the struggle. Early in 1777, however, the local committee of safety ordered him to abjure his British allegiance and pledge loyalty to the United States, and he refused. He was then harassed, and after being shot at in his fields he gathered more than 70 neighbours and fled to the British lines in April.

Soon after his arrival Moody became an unpaid volunteer in the New Jersey Volunteers, and because of his knowledge of northern New Jersey was sent back there to observe rebel troop movements, enlist men for the British forces, and generally annoy the inhabitants. On all the missions he undertook he led small bodies of men deep into enemy territory, and on several occasions he narrowly escaped death or capture. At last, in July 1780, now an ensign, he was taken near Englishtown, N.J. Imprisoned at West Point, N.Y., he was treated with great cruelty by Benedict ARNOLD, who commanded there, and it was not until George Washington himself intervened that his conditions improved. In September Moody was transferred to Washington's main camp, where he was to be tried by court martial for causing the death of two rebel officers in a skirmish. Hearing that he would almost certainly be condemned to death, he decided to escape. But this was easier said than done. He had been manacled, and was guarded by a sentry placed in his cell; in addition, there was a second sentinel at the door, and four others near by, and he was in the middle of the rebel camp. Notwithstanding these apparently insurmountable difficulties, one stormy night he incredibly managed to free himself and evade his captors. After several days of travel, he arrived safely at New York City.

Moody was to be left little time to rest from his harrowing experience. In March 1781 Oliver De Lancey, adjutant general of the British army, requested his help in intercepting Washington's correspondence, and after one failure he succeeded. On another mission to capture rebel mail he had a narrow brush with death when 70 men fired at him from point-blank range. Moody was uninjured, however, and must have been thankful for the proverbial inaccuracy of the 18th-century musket. His last major undertaking occurred in November 1781 when he was sent to break into the state-house at Philadelphia, Pa, and steal congressional books and documents. The plan was exposed, and he was forced to spend two days in a cornstack without food or water to avoid capture. His brother, who had accompanied him, was caught and executed as a spy.

Moody's adventures seriously affected his health, and when Sir Henry Clinton, the retiring commander-in-chief, was leaving America early in 1782 Moody accepted his offer of a passage to England. There he memorialized the government for compensation for his losses, and was awarded a yearly pension of £100 from the Treasury. The officials were impressed with his claims, commenting that

"this is a Case of great Merit & great Exertions in his Majesty's Service." Moody also had his wartime experiences published as a pamphlet entitled *Lieut. James Moody's narrative of his exertions and sufferings in the cause of government*. Although the *Narrative* was ignored by the London press, Moody had it reprinted, asserting that he did so to reply to the general disbelief in the facts it presented. This time he added testimonials from several prominent army officers and loyalists, all of whom signified their complete acceptance of his story. The *Narrative*, and the accompanying personal statements, doubtless helped Moody when he went before the loyalist claims commission in 1784: he was awarded £1,608 of his total claim of £1,709 for property confiscated during the war and received in addition £1,330 for his expenses in raising men for the British service. He also obtained half pay as a lieutenant (he had been promoted in August 1781) when the New Jersey Volunteers were disbanded after the war.

Now at least temporarily free from the financial difficulties that had afflicted him throughout the war and during his stay in London, in 1785 Moody went to Nova Scotia, where he had been recommended to Governor John Parr\* for a grant of land. The following year he travelled to the loyalist community on the Sissiboo River that later became the town of Weymouth. Moody soon became a person of some stature in the infant settlement. In August 1788 Bishop Charles INGLIS noted when passing through the community that Moody had just launched a ship he had built and was constructing another, and that in the absence of a clergyman he led the inhabitants in prayers on Sunday. Moody must have continued the latter task for some time, since Weymouth did not receive a clergyman until 1798; in the mean time, in 1790, he and his wife conveyed land for a church and cemetery to the inhabitants of Weymouth. In conjunction with a Colonel Taylor, Moody launched another ship in 1793, and he was also active in building mills. He served as a captain in the Royal Nova Scotia Regiment from 1793 to 1802 and participated as well in local affairs. A magistrate and colonel of militia, he was made a road commissioner in 1801. Moody entered politics when he was elected to the House of Assembly from Annapolis Township in 1793. Like that of other rural members, his time in Halifax was limited owing to the difficulties of travel, but he apparently took an active part in the business of the house. One of his proposals, the separation of the western portion of Annapolis County and its establishment as an independent county, was not accepted until 1833, when Digby County was created. Following his retirement from the assembly in 1806 Moody lived on his farm; the 640-acre grant he had received in 1791 had been swelled by 2,258 acres allotted to him when Digby Township was regranted in 1801. His death left his widow in straitened circumstances, however, and she was forced to petition the British government for a continuation of her husband's pension. Her claim was supported by strong recommendations from Inglis and EDWARD AUGUSTUS, Duke of Kent and Strathearn, and she received an annual pension of £81.

-----

**Jeremiah Pecker** – 5 Feb 1778 Initiated in Lodge No. 4, Pennsylvania; 1780 Lodge No. 210 E.R. (A), New York; 1783, Shelburne, NS; 1784, joined Lodge No. 242 E.R., New Providence, Bahamas; 1802, St. John's Lodge No. 20, Saint John, NB; d. 1809.

November 2 [1802] - "Bro. Jeremiah Pecker produced a certificate from Lodge, No. 242, of New Providence, Bahama Island, in which he is recommended as a master mason, and, as he wished to become a member of this lodge [St. John's], he was proposed and unanimously admitted."

<http://www.nbgs.ca/firstfamilies/FAMILY-P-2006.pdf>

**Capt. Jeremiah Pecker** b 20 Sep 1735 Haverhill, MA, d. 1809 in Saint John, s/o Capt. John and Hannah (Wainwright) Pecker: m. 6 Mar 1770 Sally Mooers d/o Daniel Mooers and Abigail Springer: first settled at Penobscot, ME, then moved to Shelburne, NS in Nov 1783, where the Crown granted him 50 acres of land, one town and one water lot. He then to Saint John where Jeremiah taught school: he married and had two children. Graduated from Harvard in 1757 and taught school in Saint John, New Brunswick.

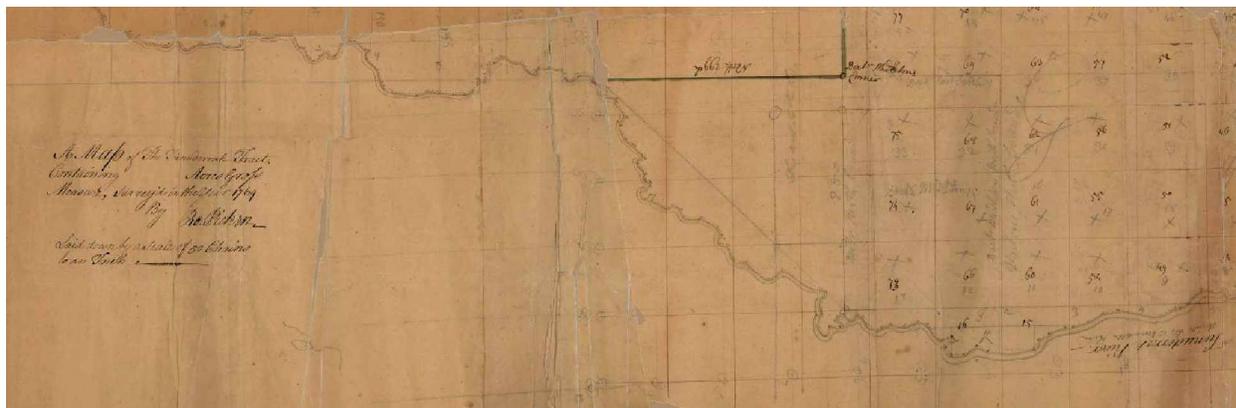
**Robert Picken** – Surveyor; 1770, St. Patrick's Lodge No. 4, Johnstown, NY; 1779, Niagara; d. 1790's in Montreal.



<http://www.rootsweb.ancestry.com/~nyjcdar/>

Believed to be one of the first ten houses built by Sir William Johnson on the Kingsborough Patent for his staff living and working in the area, all the houses were one and one-half stories and painted yellow. This house was built in 1765 for Robert Picken, Sir William Johnson's surveyor. The building was moved to its current location in 1788, to a lot owned by James Burk. Mr. Burk used it as an inn, adding a lean-to that housed teamsters.

[http://www.fort-plank.com/Patent\\_Maps.html](http://www.fort-plank.com/Patent_Maps.html)



Section of a circa 1769/70 map of the [patents on the east side of the Lower Unadilla River](#) found within the Offices of the New York State Bureau of Land Management located on the 26th Floor of the Corning Tower in the Empire State Plaza of Albany, New York.

This map, by **Robert Picken**, is of particular interest as it shows the division of the "Clotworthy Upton, **Doctor Peter Middleton [q.v.]**, & Staats Long Morris Patents" into individual lots.

These lots are adjacent to lands held by John Butler, George Croghan and the Coopers near Otsego Lake.

-----

**Nicholas Purdue** [Perdue, Pardue or Purdie] **Olding** [Oeding] – 1782, Lt. in the Royal Garrison Battalion and Deputy Muster Master General; 1782, Lodge No. 210 E.R. (A), New York; 1784, Hiram Lodge No. 8, Sheet Harbor, NS; 1784-88, Master.

(promoted) - Loyal American Regt., 1777; (promoted) - Emmerick's Chasseurs, Jan. 1779; Royal Garrison Battalion, July 13, 1781.

Bro. Olding moved from Sheet Harbour because of "the badness of the land" and "the high prices of provisions." At Merigomish, he found that his prospects brightened with the land "exceedingly good and produces fine crops."

1796 - Reduced Lieutenant in H.M. Royal Garrison Battalion and received 650 acres of land at Sheet Harbour for himself and family. Settled thereon and made improvements; but it is unfit for cultivation; and he requests a grant for himself, wife and six children in Merigomish, in place of his first grant.

"Mr Olding is to produce proof of the facts stated in his memorial and point out the particular situation of the land he now applies for, by whom bounded, etc. and relinquish in due form his former grant of land that when H.M. pleasure is known his memorial may be further considered."

<http://freepages.genealogy.rootsweb.ancestry.com/~dantrogers/pafq2271.htm>

**Nicholas Purdue** [Perdue] **Olding** [Oeding] b. on 13 Mar 1751 in Winchester, England; d. on 6 Apr 1845; son of William Olding and Mary Gillies; m. Mary Collord, b. 13 Mar 1755 in Morrisiana, Westchester, NY; d. 3 Sep 1841 in Merigomish, NS..

Children:

- |   |  |
|---|--|
| i William Robinson Olding                         | b. 19 Jul 1778 in Morrisiana, Westchester, NY; d. 8 Nov 1779.  |
| ii Mary Gayton Olding                             | b. 04 Sep 1780.  |
| iii Michael Gillies Olding                        | b. 20 Jan 1783; d. 1819.   |
| iv <a href="#">John William Sutherland Olding</a> | b. 17 Apr 1786; d. 6 Jun 1867; m. Ann Davidson Roy on 20 Aug 1810.                                       |
| v Jacob Collard Olding                            | b. 27 Apr 1789; d. 31 Dec 1863.  |
| vi Catherine Ann Olding                           | b. 01 Oct 1791.  |
| vii <a href="#">Thomas Baker Olding</a>           | b. 30 Aug 1794 in Pt. Betty Is., Merigomish, NS; d. 10 Feb 1875; m. Mary Armstrong Copeland in Feb 1818. |
| viii Harriet Spry-Heaton Olding                   | b. 12 Aug 1797; d. Oct 1886.   |

[http://www.canadiangenealogy.net/novascotia/pictou\\_county/bench\\_bar.htm](http://www.canadiangenealogy.net/novascotia/pictou_county/bench_bar.htm)

The first practicing lawyer in the County, as far as is known, was Nicholas Purdue Olding. For many years he was not only the father but the grandfather of the Bar. Born in England, 1751; educated at Oxford; his friends intended him for the Church, but on completing his course, he turned his attention to law. Having finished his law course, he came to America at the time of the American Revolution and took arms in defense of the mother country. At the close of the war, he came to Halifax with his wife and two children.

In 1784 he was admitted to the Bar, and entered upon the practice of his profession with great promise. But he had received a wound in the head, which rendered him unfit for the excitement of the Bar and the social habits of the time. About 1797 he received a grant of land at Merigomish from Governor Wentworth. Soon afterwards he moved there and settled on Point Betty Island, where he lived the remainder of his life.

He did not regularly practice as a barrister, but did considerable law business, writing deeds and issuing legal documents. He generally attended the court at Pictou until near the close of his life. Though brought up in the Church of England, he joined the Presbyterian Church, under Dr. McGregor's ministry. His wife died in 1841 in the 87th year of her age, and he in 1845, in his ninety-

fifth year. They had lived together for the long period of sixty-four years. Mr. Olding was well educated, had a high sense of honor, and maintained throughout his life a reputation for integrity and justice.

-----

**John Paul.** This brother was one of the original members and first Junior Warden of Hiram Lodge, No. 17; also one of the founders of St. John's Lodge, but never held office therein. Exalted to the R. A. degree in Chapter No. 213, New York, previous to the close of the revolutionary war, and one of the original members and first master of the veil of Carleton R. A. Chapter in Saint John. A native of Lanark, Scotland, where he probably was made a mason previous to his embarkation for America. Held a commission in the royal artillery during the war of independence; fought at the battles of Lexington, Bunker Hill, Braudywine, Long Island, Germantown, etc.; fired the first gun on the British side at the battle of Lexington, and in the engagement received a severe wound.

Coming to Saint John at the termination of hostilities, he received an appointment on the staff of the ordnance department in this city. Grantee of lot No. 1201, situate on the north side of Brittain street, midway between Carmarthen and Wentworth streets. A freeman of the city, and one of the first elders of St. Andrew's Kirk.

Died at Saint John, April 29, 1833, at the ripe old age of 82 years, enjoying the respect and esteem of the community. His remains were interred with military honors in the old burial ground near King square.

ALR – p. 229:

b. ca 1751, Scotland; Royal Artillery; 1782, No. 213 E.R. (A), New York, 1783, S.W.; 1784, Charter Member and Junior Warden Hiram Lodge No. 17, P.G.L. N. S., Saint John, NB; 1814, Union Lodge No. 38, NS. Saint John, NB. d. 1833.

-----

**Moses Pitcher** – Glazier; 1760, Initiated First Lodge, Boston, MA; 1764, Masters' Lodge, Boston; 1779, Lodge No. 169 E.R. (A), New York; 1783, Shelburne, NS; 1793, Halifax, NS; 1801, ca. Union Lodge No. 1, Halifax, NS; d. 1817, Halifax, NS.

<http://files.usgarchives.org/ma/statewide/loyalists.txt>

**Moses Pitcher** b. ca 1733 of Boston. The Council of Massachusetts ordered his arrest, April, 1776. At the peace, accompanied by his family and five servants, he went from New York to Shelburne, Nova Scotia, where the Crown granted him a farm, one town and one water lot. He died at Halifax, in 1817, aged eighty-four years.

He sailed to St. John in command of the June fleet aboard the ship *Free Briton*.

Pitchers Farm, NS: A community on the Sunrise Trail in Antigonish County was named for **Moses Pitcher**, its first rights- holder, who had received a grant of five hundred acres there in 1811.

Son of [Nathaniel Pitcher](#) and [Rachael Walker](#)

Husband of [Mary \(Massey\) Dolbeare](#)

[http://books.google.com/books?id=VS24OKpV-9qC&pg=PA102&dq=%22moses+pitcher%22&hl=en&ei=moh5TITNNYG78gbkofyOBw&sa=X&oi=book\\_result&ct=result&resnum=2&ved=0CDwQ6AEwAQ#v=onepage&q=%22moses%20pitcher%22&f=false](http://books.google.com/books?id=VS24OKpV-9qC&pg=PA102&dq=%22moses+pitcher%22&hl=en&ei=moh5TITNNYG78gbkofyOBw&sa=X&oi=book_result&ct=result&resnum=2&ved=0CDwQ6AEwAQ#v=onepage&q=%22moses%20pitcher%22&f=false) page 102.

**Moses Pitcher** (1760), glazier, of Boston. In 1757, he had wife, Mary [Dolbeare - marriage intentions 20 Apr 1757 at Boston]. He united with the Old South Church, June 8, 1760 and was third sergeant of the Artillery Company in 1764. The selectmen directed Mr. Nath. Brown, Oct. 28, 1761, to deliver unto Mr. Moses Pitcher "all the sashes saved from Faneuil Hall Market at the late fire," and April 27, 1767, the selectmen agreed that Mr. Pitcher should have the glaziers' work in repairing the school-house on the Common.

Moses Pitcher received Masonic degrees in the First Lodge, in Boston, May 3, 1762, and is recorded several times as present in the St. John's Grand Lodge. He attended the installation of M. W. John Rowe as grand master, Nov. 23, 1768.

In 1776, William Cooper, clerk, entered a complaint against "Moses Pitcher, glazier," for breach of a resolve of the General Court of Massachusetts, passed July 10, of that year. The resolve warned all soldiers of the training band and alarm lists to appear on the Common for the purpose of raising there from by enlistment or draft "one out of every twenty-five." Moses Pitcher, a soldier in the train-band, failed to appear and was fined ten pounds.

Moses Pitcher (1760). AUTHORITIES: Boston Records; Early Masonic Records; New Eng. Hist. and Gen. Reg., 1880.

-----

#### RESOLVE ALLOWING 13/4 TO MOSES PITCHER.

A PETITION of Moses Pitcher of Boston; praying an Allowance of his Expences on his returning home Sick from the Army in 1756.

Read and *Resolved*, That there be allowed and paid out of the public Treasury thirteen Shillings and four pence to the Petitioner in ful for his Expence in his return home from the last Crown point Expedition. [*Passed March 18.*]

----

MOSES PITCHER, loyal refugee from Boston, to GENERAL SIR HENRY CLINTON.

1782, March 20. New York. - Petition. That he escaped from Boston to Rhode Island, whither his wife and 8 children were sent, and where he remained till its evacuation. His whole family afflicted with sickness for 19 months. Asks some relief. Recommended (on behalf of the Board) by Governor Franklin, 25th March.

-----

**George Pitfield** – 1780, Lodge No. 210 E.R. (A), New York; 1792. Sion Lodge No. 21, Kingston, NS; 1802 Master; d. 1827.

[http://www.pitfield-family.co.uk/AmericanFamily/PS01/PS01\\_001.htm](http://www.pitfield-family.co.uk/AmericanFamily/PS01/PS01_001.htm)

**George PITFIELD, b. ca 1749; d. 1827; bur. Sussex Vale, Kings County, New Brunswick, Canada; m. [Eliza KENNY](#), b. 1768, Portsmouth, NH; d. 1827**

Children:

[George](#) (1794-1880)  
[Samuel Kenny](#) (1797-1861)  
[Mary Ann](#) (1798-1887)  
[Eliza Armath](#) (1800-1851)  
[Isabella](#) (1802-1844)  
[Susanna](#) (1804-)  
[William Henry](#) (1806-1872)  
[Oliver A.](#) (1809-1880)  
[Edward Peter](#) (1811-1839)  
[Amelia Coreline](#) (1813-1826)  
[Georgina Charlotte](#) (1818-1827)

### George Pitfield (1749-1827) and the Loyalists of New Brunswick

During and at the end of the American War of Independence, 1776-1783, some 40,000 Loyalists moved north into Canada. Of these, 32,000 went to Nova Scotia, most of them in the fleets of ships organized at New York by General Sir Guy Carleton, commander-in-chief of the British forces. New York was the last stronghold of the Loyalists and was evacuated by the British in November 1783 two months after independence had been granted to the thirteen American colonies.

George Pitfield arrived at Saint John, Nova Scotia in May 1783, aboard one of the ships that made up "The Spring Fleet" from New York. The bulk of the Loyalists went to the St. John River valley and the shores of the Bay of Fundy. Aided by government rations, tools and land grants, they carved homes out of the forests and began the long, tough job of pioneer settlement.

This Loyalist influx trebled the existing population of Nova Scotia and thus they heavily outnumbered the 'Neutral Yankees' who had moved north prior to the Revolution. In the Fundy-St. John region the Loyalists at once demanded their own government, complete with elective assembly. The British government fell in quickly with the request and broke up the old province of Nova Scotia in 1784, creating a new Province of New Brunswick which incorporated most of the mainland of the old Nova Scotia and with an elective assembly. Thus New Brunswick became the Loyalist province par excellence.

Amongst those Loyalists petitioning for land was one George Pitfield who, in 1786, stated that he had come with the first fleet from New York and had settled on a lot of land belonging to Colonel Spry. This lot was on the Saint John River, below Jemseg Creek, Queens County. In the Petition George asked that he be permitted to hold this lot of land as he had seven or eight acres under improvement.

This petition is the earliest reference that I have to George Pitfield. It has been impossible, as yet, to ascertain where in America he originated from. I have not been able to trace a single reference to him in America. Circumstantial evidence seems to imply that he was not part of any Loyalist fighting force. One account of him states that he was involved in ship building in America, although I have not found any evidence for this. [Benjamin Pitfield \(-1793\)](#), a contemporary of George and, according to present day family tradition, his brother, had been living in New Jersey from at least 1760 - staying put during and after the American Revolution.

It would appear that George did not keep up his original lot of land in Queens County and in 1794 he was living at Sussex Vale, Kings County where he made a petition for 200 acres of land. This petition was made in conjunction with nine others - several of these were members of the New Jersey Volunteer Regiment, giving further circumstantial evidence that George could have come from New Jersey.

Around this time George married [Eliza Kenny \(1768-1827\)](#). Eliza was born at Portsmouth, New Hampshire, the daughter of Samuel Kenny, a loyalist who fought with the British troops. Samuel Kenny died soon after arriving in Canada. George and Eliza had eleven children and the family prospered in Sussex Parish. In 1796 George was a Warden of Trinity Church, Sussex Vale and later became a Justice of the Peace. In 1809 he stood in the General Election for the House of Assembly, for one of the two seats in Kings County. He was declared elected but the return was declared void and a new election held in 1810, where George was defeated. He stood again in 1819 but was once again defeated.

[Eliza Pitfield](#) died in April 1827 aged 59 and George died in June of the same year aged 78 - both were buried at Sussex Vale.

-----

Captain Richard Porter – 1777 22nd Regiment; 1781, Lodge No. 133 S.C. in 22nd Regiment; Past Master; Attended PGL, New York; 1794, Joined New Oswegatchie Lodge No. 14, PGL Quebec; 1796 Master Lodge No. 6, PGL Kingston, Upper Canada.

[http://books.google.com/books?id=aCEgQedbOv0C&pg=PA554&pg=PA554&dq=%22richard+porter%22+%22260th+regiment%22&source=bl&ots=gYUigt71II&sig=FzORwnnTZ7XE2-q4csekDglELkM&hl=en&ei=aROJTLvdJsSAIAfK8b3VDw&sa=X&oi=book\\_result&ct=result&resnum=1&ved=0CBIQ6AEwAA#v=onepage&q=%22porter%22&f=false](http://books.google.com/books?id=aCEgQedbOv0C&pg=PA554&pg=PA554&dq=%22richard+porter%22+%22260th+regiment%22&source=bl&ots=gYUigt71II&sig=FzORwnnTZ7XE2-q4csekDglELkM&hl=en&ei=aROJTLvdJsSAIAfK8b3VDw&sa=X&oi=book_result&ct=result&resnum=1&ved=0CBIQ6AEwAA#v=onepage&q=%22porter%22&f=false) page 554.

The first meeting of the lodge was held on 7th August. 1704, when a Provincial Grand Lodge was opened with R. W. Bro. Christopher Danbv in the chair. The minutes read:

"Kingston, U.C., 7th Augt., 1794. " Grand Lodge of Ancient Free and Accepted Masons opened at 7 o'clock, at Brother John Darley's Free Masons' Tavern . . .

"The Lodge proceeded to constitute Lodge, No. 6, when the following Brethren were installed in due form, according to ancient custom. "**Bro. Richard Porter, Esqr., W.M.**; William McKay, Esqr., S.W.; William Burrell, J.W.

**Bro. Richard Porter**, the first W. M. of No. 6, was a captain in the 60th regiment, which had two field warrants, one No. 448, E. R., issued in 1764, originally granted by the Provincial Grand Master of New York to Lieut. J. Christie, as Master and others, to meet as lodge No. 1, at Detroit. It became No. 62 in 1806, and in 1819 No. 3, Grand Lodge of New York, and is now Zion Lodge No. 1, Grand Lodge of Michigan, as will be seen in the history of that lodge.

The second warrant was to be held "in H. M. Loyal American Regiment or elsewhere." This lodge was warranted in 1783 by the Grand Lodge of New York, and was No. 7, which eventually became the New Oswegatchie lodge, which worked at Elizabethtown in Upper Canada (see history of No. 7). **W. Bro. Porter** probably belonged to the second lodge known as "No. 7" [in present day Ogdensburg, in what was to become New York State, and as No. 14 when it removed to Canada].

In April [1795] two meetings of the lodge were held, one on the regular night and " the other an emergency, but no other business was done than merely taking leave of our Worthy Brother and much respected Master, **Richard Porter**, Esquire, who was unavoidably called off, and much against his wish and inclination was obliged to resign the chair." W. Bro. Porter, as captain in the 60th regiment, had been ordered from Kingston on military duty.

<http://my.tbaytel.net/bmartin/kingstn1.htm>

In 1794 the Surveyor-General was ordered to locate for Capt. Porter 1200 acres in the Township of Ameliasburg, if vacant. On the same day, June 14, he was refused 1 acre square adjoining a point known as Annesley's Point, in the Town of Kingston, which had hitherto been reserved for erecting a work of defence.

He was a J.P., as appears from the records of the Sessions, and an officer of the 60 Regt. On July 7, 1791, Mr. [Richard] Cartwright, acting in the capacity of agent for the merchants in the trade on the Lake, wrote to him a letter of protest against an order from Col. Gordon to prevent any private vessel from sailing from Kingston except under orders and convoy of one of H.M. armed vessels. Col. Gordon's message had been carried, apparently, by Capt. Porter to Capt. David Betton, Senior Naval Officer on Lake Ontario.

On August 7, 1794, he was installed as W.M. of Lodge No.6 A.F. & A.M.

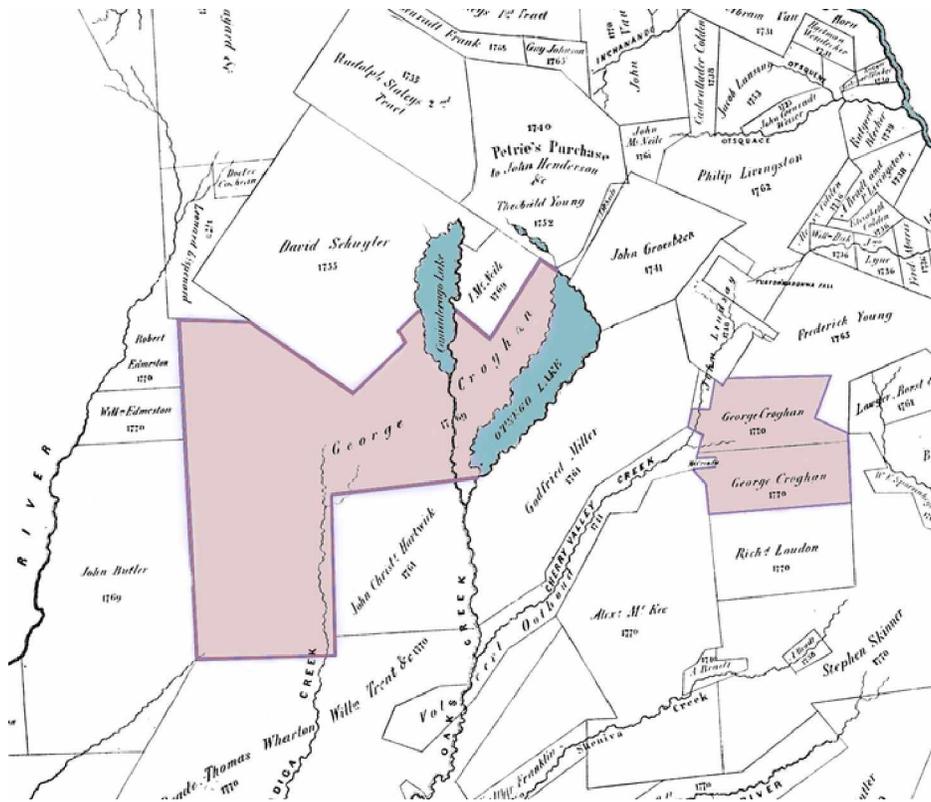
-----

**Major Augustin(e) Prevost** 1744-1822 – 1767-68, Lieut. British Army; 1766, Union Lodge No. 1, Albany, NY; 1767, Joined St. Patrick's Lodge No. 4, Johnstown, NY; 1771, Adjutant, 60th Regiment; 1783, New York; 1783, New Brunswick; 1784, Philadelphia; m. Susannah, daughter of George Croghan; d. Jan 1822.

<http://www.lib.unb.ca/collections/loyalist/seeOne.php?id=704&string=>

#### **The Journal of Augustine Prevost: 1774.**

Augustine Prevost, Jr. was the son of Augustine Prevost (1723-1786), one of four brothers who served as officers in the Royal American Regiment (60th Regiment), and dominated the command of that regiment from the 1750s until the end of the American Revolution. The Prevosts came, originally, from Poitou, France, but by the later 16th century this French Huguenot family was established in Geneva, Switzerland. The Royal Americans included men from several European nations, including Switzerland, and in addition to the Prevosts, two officers of Swiss origin who also gained prominence were Henry Bouquet and Frederick Haldimand. The younger Augustine Prevost was born in Switzerland, but was sent to military school in England at an early age. He was commissioned an ensign in the Royal Americans at the age of fourteen in 1761. Soon afterward he joined his father, who was by then a lieutenant-colonel, in Pennsylvania. On 15 April 1765, Augustine Prevost Jr. **married Susannah Croghan** (1750-1790) in Lancaster, Pennsylvania. She was the daughter of George Croghan, Sir William Johnson's highly respected deputy Indian agent for the western Indians. Unfortunately, George Croghan was heavily involved in land speculation, and this proved to be financially disastrous for him and for his son-in-law, Augustine Prevost, who had been persuaded to join him in his financial ventures.



Croghan Land Patents – Otsego Co., New York

Augustine Prevost, Sr. attained the rank of major-general during the American Revolution, and Augustine Prevost Jr. served under his father's command during the war. He became deputy inspector-general of Provincial Forces while in Charlestown, South Carolina, and was present at the siege of Savannah, Georgia. When Charlestown was evacuated in 1782, he sailed with his regiment to New York, but remained in America when the Regiment returned to Britain. Augustine Prevost, Jr. was a close friend of Joseph Brant from his early years in America and through his connection with George Croghan, whose Indian daughter Catharine had married Joseph Brant. Of his many children, lieutenant James Prevost and lieutenant Henry Prevost were both killed in 1811 fighting under Wellington in Portugal, and John Augustine, who became a lieutenant-colonel, was lost at sea. While Augustine Prevost Jr. attained the rank of major during the American Revolution, he did not reach the rank and distinction of his brother, Sir George Prevost, who rose to become a lieutenant-general in the British army and Governor General of Canada. Augustine's son George Augustine retired as a British army major and the administration of the Croghan estates and financial affairs fell to him. Augustine Prevost died on 17 January 1821 at his home in Greenville, New York.

In August of 1777, Augustine Prevost, Sr. sent his son, Major Augustine Prevost, to Pennsylvania to recruit for the 1st Battalion of the Royal Americans and to assist George Croghan in resolving a dispute with the Shawnee Indians. The trip also provided an opportunity for Augustine to meet with Croghan concerning their tangled financial affairs. The Diary, kept by Augustine on that journey from Lancaster to Pittsburg, is a record of the events that occurred during the trip. The first few pages at the beginning of the Diary are dated April 1774. They describe the departure of the Prevost family from Kingston, Jamaica, where the battalion had been stationed for two years, and their journey to Philadelphia. On 4 August 1774, Augustine Prevost left his home near Lancaster, Pennsylvania, and began the long journey to carry out his orders to recruit men for the Regiment, and to meet with Croghan concerning both Indian affairs and their financial situation. The Diary ends when he left Pittsburg in September of 1774 with the twenty-one men he had recruited. In November, he sailed with his regiment for Jamaica.

Accompanying the Diary, and as part of the introductory material written by Nicholas Wainwright and filmed at the beginning of the reel, is a section entitled, "Notes". The information it contains is most useful in providing background information on people, places, and events relating to the Diary. The "Notes" are arranged by the date in the Diary to which they refer. At the end of the Diary, several personal accounts with individuals have been recorded, and from 25 August until 3 September there is a record of the cost of food and lodging.

The original Diary is held by The London Library, London, England.

**The Diary of Augustine Prevost: 1774**, is one of several titles in the series, British Records Relating to America in Microform, which are published under the auspices of the British Association for American Studies by Microform Limited.

----

**Broughton Reynolds** - Elizabethtown, Elizabeth, Essex Co.; Loyalist; immigrated to NJ from England, 1764; ran the tavern 'Marquis of Granby' until 1771; fled to NYC; 1780 Lodge No. 210 E.R. (A), New York; 1783 Returned to England.

A public house was kept by **Broughton Reynolds**, who was also postmaster at Elizabeth- town in 1767

**Broughton Reynolds** was an Englishman who emigrated to New Jersey in 1764 and settled as a farmer at **Elizabethtown**. He accompanied the British army to New York City in 1777, leaving his wife and seven children "to the mercy of the Rebels."

---

To BE RUN FOR. *At the Course, in Elizabeth-Town, the first Tuesday in October next [1767], by any Horse, Mare or Gelding, that never won a Match, Plate or Purse, Value £10, carrying Weight for Age, the best of three two Mile Heats ;*

Purse of Thirty Pounds: Three .years old to carry 8 Stone; 4 years old, 8 Stone 7 Pounds; 5 years old, 9 Stone; 6 years old, 9 Stone 7 Pounds; and aged Horses, 10 Stone. The Cattle to be entered with **Mr. Broughton Reynolds**, any Time before the Day of Running, paying 4 Dollars entrance, or double at the Post, which Entrance Money to be run for the next Day, by all, but the winning and the distanced Horses. All Disputes to be decided by proper Judges chosen by a Majority of the Subscribers.

N. B. 'Tis to be hoped no Gentleman in possession of a full-blooded Horse will spoil Sport for the Value of £30.

----

Measures, long contemplated, but for prudential reasons deferred, were now taken, looking to the confiscation of the property of those who had deserted their country and espoused the cause of the Royalists. Several had gone over during the spring and summer of 1778. The following advertisement was not made public until Nov. 14th, on which day it was dated at Elizabeth Town:

At an inferior court of Common Pleas held for the county of Essex, on the 15th day of September last, were returned inquisitions for joining the army of the King of Great Britain, and other treasonable practices, found against Oavilear Jewit, Ichabod Best Barnet, William Luce, John Smith Hetfield, Job Hetfield, Abel Hetfield, **Broughton Reynolds**, Richard Miller, John Willis, Jacob Tooker, James Hetfield, James Frazee, Samuel Oliver, James Moore, Jpnathan Oliver, Samuel Smith, John Stites, jun., Daniel Moore, John Morse, Isaac Stanbury, Thomas Burrows and John Folker.

At a later date, Feb. 17, 1779, final judgment was entered against all of these persons, except Job and Abel Hetfield, Jacob Tooker, and John Stites, jun., and their estates sold at auction.

----

RUN AWAY from the subscriber, on the evening of the 23d ult. a Negro Lad named FORTUNE, about eighteen years of age, of a brownish cast, and much pitted with the small pox, is slender made, and about five feet seven or eight inches high, came from Georgia about ten months ago with Major Drummond of the New-Jersey Volunteers, is very fond of dress, and generally wears a small round hat bound with silver lace; one of his eyes are sore and much inflamed. Whoever will apprehend said Negro, and bring him to No. 42, White-Hall, or give information where he may be had, shall receive TWO GUINEAS reward, paid by

**BROUGHTON REYNOLDS.**

N. B. All persons and masters of vessels, are forewarned harbouring or secreting said negro at their peril, as in case of conviction they will be dealt with accordingly.

New-York, September 1, 1780. — *The Royal Gazette, No. 410, September 2, 1780.*

----

FIVE DOLLARS Reward. RuN-away from the subscriber, in Elizabeth-Town, East New-Jersey, on Sunday evening last, a servant lad named Cornelius Hurry, born in Old England, about 19 years of age, five feet 6 inches high, fair complexion, light coloured hair: Had on when he went away, a blue sailor's jacket, much worn, and faded; a blue broad cloth under jacket; a pair of buckskin breeches, blue stockings, half boots much worn. He has lived with the subscriber as an hostler, can trim a horse very well. Whoever secures the above servant, and confines him in any goal in this or the neighbouring provinces, or returns him to his master, shall receive the above reward, and all reasonable charges, paid by me.

**BROUGHTON REYNOLDS.**

*The New York Gazette and Weekly Mercury, No. 915, May 8, 1769.*

-----

**Lt. Benajmin Roberts** – Lt. British Army; Commissariat, Indian Service; 1766, St. Patrick's Lodge No. 4, Johnstown, NY; 1770 Fulton Co. NY; London; 1785 Nova Scotia [?].

[http://books.google.com/books?id=b-uLUVJtHKkC&pg=PA429&dq=%22benjamin+roberts%22+%22indian%22&hl=en&ei=OJ6JTOj3A8P78Aan6vy2CQ&sa=X&oi=book\\_result&ct=result&resnum=2&ved=0CDAQ6AEwAQ#v=onepage&q=%22benjamin%20roberts%22%20%22indian%22&f=false](http://books.google.com/books?id=b-uLUVJtHKkC&pg=PA429&dq=%22benjamin+roberts%22+%22indian%22&hl=en&ei=OJ6JTOj3A8P78Aan6vy2CQ&sa=X&oi=book_result&ct=result&resnum=2&ved=0CDAQ6AEwAQ#v=onepage&q=%22benjamin%20roberts%22%20%22indian%22&f=false) page 429.

[http://www.biographi.ca/009004-119.01-e.php?&id\\_nbr=2145&interval=25&&PHPSESSID=ctaar1ahgmp01t4suf5agqfv2](http://www.biographi.ca/009004-119.01-e.php?&id_nbr=2145&interval=25&&PHPSESSID=ctaar1ahgmp01t4suf5agqfv2)

Benjamin Roberts – army officer and Indian department officica from 1758 to 1775. Commissioned Ensign in th 46th Regiment of Foot on 23 Jul 1758, he served in North America during the French and Indian War. He was present at the sieges of Fort Carillon, Fort Niagara and Havana, Cuba. In 176 he appears to have been stationed at Fort Ontario. ON 12 Sep 1762 he received his lieutenancy, but in 1766 he exchanged with a half-pay officer and was appointed an Indian department commissary by Sir William Johnson.

The post-war years were hectic for the department of northern Indians, since its responsibilities now extended into Canada. A series of Indian uprising linked with Pontiac occurred, and rumors of French intrigues and pan-Indian unions were rife. Wandering independent traders dealing mostly in whiskey and the attendant ills of this commerce further complicated the delicate frontier situation. The British government, with Johnson's advice, reacted by imposing new regulations on the Indian trade. After 1765 white traders had to be licensed, trading was confined to designated posts, and new restrictions limited the liquor traffic. These changes expanded the role of the Indian department. The supervision of trading at the post was its responsibility, and Johnson staffed forts along the perimeter of the Great Lakes with commissaries who were, he wrote, to have "ye Sole management, Of the Trade & Indian affairs." The relationship of these commissaries to the commandants of the posts was not easy because the limits of their respective jurisdictions were unclear. Moreover some of the commissaries who were half-pay officers could not resist flaunting their semi-independent authority before the men of superior military rank. **Benjamin Roberts** seems to have been prey to such official vanity.

Noted for his egocentricity, Roberts quarrelled violently in July 1776 with Captain Jonathan Rogers of Fort Ontario. Later that year he had a bitter dispute with Captain John Brown of Fort Niagara, where he had been stationed. In March 1767 Johnson appointed him commissary at Michilimackinac, the most important trading post on the Upper Lakes. Rumors were circulating that its commandant, Robert Rogers, had been involved with the French and Spaniards in planning a Bourbon coup d'etat in the west, and Thomas Gage, the commander in chief, ordered Johnson to have the Indian department interpreters and commissioners keep a close watch on him.

Roberts arrive at Michilimackinac early in the summer of 1767 and soon had a stormy scene with Rogers over control of some confiscated rum. He appears to have had justification for his actions. According to the traders Jean-Baptiste Cadot and Alexander Henry the elder, who wrote to Johnson in support of Roberts, Rogers was "permitting rum to go out of this Garrison at midnight in order to carry on a Contraband trade." A clash over the provision of quarters for the Indian department's blacksmith ended with Rogers ordering Roberts to Detroit early in October, but Roberts had already been talking with Rogers' former secretary, Nathaniel Potter. Potter had left for Montreal at the end of August and there swore out an affidavit accusing Rogers of treason. Gage had Rogers arrested in December 1767 and brought to Montreal for trial the following spring. Roberts corroborated the charges, but a court martial acquitted Rogers. Bitter animosity between the two did not dissipate. In May 1769, when they encountered one another on the street in Montreal, Rogers propose that they meet alone for a duel. Rogers, by his own account, "said I could not trust myself to such a man, who I heard had neither honor or Courage . . . He told me he'd blow my brain out."

Robert's position was by then unenviable. No evidence had been produced to substantiate the charges against Rogers. The post of commissary had been abolished after the new structure for the Indian department that Johnson had begun setting up was rejected by a cost-conscious British government. By the end of 1769 Roberts had decided to seek an appointment in Britain. Johnson wrote him a glowing letter of reference, and John Blackburn, one of Johnson's London correspondents, prevailed on Lord Hillsborough, the secretary of state for the American Colonies, to find him a position. Experience, however, had not improved Roberts' judgment; he lived extravagantly and from 1772 until at least 1774 he was in debtors' prison. By June 1775 he had been released and was writing to Lord Dartmouth, Hillsborough's successor. He had, observed Blackburn, "an astonishing tincture of Vanity in all He Did."

---

Mr. Roberts in a lengthy letter to Sir William Johnson, dated Oct. 31, 1767, gives some details of the disturbances

Commissary keeps one key and the Traders another,—that Capt. Rogers ordered the Deputy Commissary of Provisions to take charge of the said Rum \ that your memorialist desired that he might be permitted to keep one key of the store, as well as the Deputy Commissary of Provisions, which was refused with some warmth j that your memorialist said he looked upon himself as seizing officer, and therefore accountable for the Rum ;—therefore would hold the Deputy Commissary of Provisions liable for the Rum. Capt. Rogers told your memorialist he was very impertinent, and said that your memorialist had nothing to say to the affair, your memorialist replied he was acting in Office and that no man but the commanding officer dared tell your memorialist he was impertinent. Then Capt. Rogers got very warm and gave >our memorialist the He. Your memorialist answered that he was a gentleman, and that he would not dare to tell him so out of the limits of his command. Then Captain Rogers cried out he was challenged as commanding officer, that your memorialist denied having challenged him ; that Capt. Rogers ordered your memorialist in arrest, which your memorialist refused j that Capt. Rogers called the guard, ordered your memorialist's stick (which your Memorialist used to examine the bales and sacks, that no rum is hid in them) to be wrested out of his hands, and that your memorialist was lifted up, and carried like a criminal through the fort, guarded by soldiers with fixed bayonets, and cast into his house.

Your memorialist from such arbitrary proceeding, has the gravest reason to apprehend the most fatal consequences to his person and effects. He also suffers much in mind from the risque these Traders run, who are ventured into the Indian Country, on the assurance of Rum being prohibited for trade in the Indian Country. Your memorialist must further inform you that Rum was let out of the Fort after tatoo. That after your memorialist made his information to Capt. Rogers that your memorialist saw Capt. Rogers talking to one of the parties concerned in carrying out Rum ; that said party is Stuart (to whom by my information the rum seems to belong) was met crossing over to the island in a Battoe.

Your memorialist apprehends (that as it is His Majesty's Instructions that no person having Command in the Indian Country, Should interpose his authority in anything concerning the trade or civil commerce of the Indians; but to give the Commissary, or other Civil Magistrate all the assistance in his power), that he has been greatly abused, and has no other resource than your protection, as being Commander of the troops, from further insult, and for the security of the Traders who labor under many grievances.

Your memorialist intreats you to consider the importance of his trust, and the appearance such behaviour must have in the eyes of the savages who are to and one Atherton, formerly in Wendells Rangers; are mentioned as interested in Roger's plans.

He attributes much of the difficulty among Indians to rum, and it would prove of great advantage to the trade if all the rum was lodged with the Commissary, and none given or sold to the Indians at that post,—"that then he only having, as they call it, milk to

give the Indians," their presents would cost less, and be more acceptable. He thinks the garrison should be often relieved, as the tendency was for the soldiers to become traders. Of Major Rogers he says: "he is very industrious to raise the expense of our department that his might appear small, and is doing everything to undermine me with the Indians . . .

----



**Col. Beverly Robinson [Jr.]** b. 1754/55, NY; d. 1816, New York; 1780, Lodge No. 210 E.R. (A), New York; Royal American Regiment; 1784, Wilmot, NS; 1784, Saint John River, NB; King's New Brunswick Regiment; 1789, J. L. at Fredericton, NB No. 20 P.G.L Quebec;

<http://www.famousamericans.net/beverlyrobinson/>

Beverly Robinson [Sr.], soldier, born in Virginia in 1723; died in Thornbury, England, in 1792. He was the son of John Robinson, president of the council of Virginia in 1734, and afterward speaker of the house of burgesses. The son served under Wolfe as a major at the storming of Quebec in 1759, and became wealthy by his marriage with Susanna, daughter of Frederick Phillipse. Though he opposed the measures that led to the separation of the colonies from the mother-country, he joined the loyalists when independence was declared, removed to New York, and raised the Loyal American regiment, of which he was colonel, also commanding the corps called the guards and pioneers. Colonel Robinson was also employed to conduct several matters of importance on behalf of the royalists, and figured conspicuously in cases of defection from the Whig cause. He opened a correspondence with the Whig leaders of Vermont relative to their return to their allegiance, and was concerned in Arnold's treason. His country mansion was Arnold's headquarters while the latter was arranging his plan. After the trial and conviction of Andre, Colonel Robinson, as a witness, accompanied the commissioners that were sent by Sir Henry Clinton to Washington's headquarters to plead with him for Andre's life. Colonel Robinson had previously addressed Washington on the subject of Andre's release, and in his letter

reminded him of their former friendship. At the termination of the war he went to New Brunswick, and was a member of the first council of that colony, but did not take his seat. He subsequently went to England with part of his family, and resided in retirement at Thornbury, near Bath, till his death. His wife was included in the confiscation act of New York, and the whole of the estate that was derived from her father passed from the family. As a compensation for this loss the British government granted her husband the sum of £17,000 sterling. She died at Thornbury in 1822, aged 94 years.

Their son, **Beverly Robinson [Jr.]**, born in New York state about 1755; died in New York city in 1816, was graduated at Columbia in 1773, and at the beginning of the Revolution was a student of law in the office of James Duane. He was a lieutenant-colonel in the Loyal American regiment, and at the evacuation of New York was placed at the head of a large number of loyalists, who embarked for Nova Scotia. He afterward went to New Brunswick, and resided principally at and near the city of St. John, receiving half-pay as an officer of the crown. He was a member of the Royal Council of New Brunswick, and on the occurrence of the war between Great Britain and France, was given command of a regiment that had been raised in the colony. Colonel Robinson did much to advance the interests of the city of St. John. He died while on a visit to two of his sons that remained residents of New York City. The younger Beverly Robinson married in January 1778 Nancy Barclay, youngest daughter of Reverend Dr. Henry Barclay.

[http://findarticles.com/p/articles/mi\\_hb1372/is\\_2\\_35/ai\\_n28698952/pg\\_6/](http://findarticles.com/p/articles/mi_hb1372/is_2_35/ai_n28698952/pg_6/)

Beverly Robinson, Junior, who has married Nancy Barclay, daughter of another Rector of Trinity Church in New York, lived in Fredericton while building his home at Nashwaaksis. The doors and window frames for the new house had not arrived when the Fredericton house burned. With no other shelter to be had, the Robinsons moved into the unfinished house, and through that bitter cold winter, blankets were all they had for doors and windows.

Here, in those early days, massive mahogany tables sparkled with gleaming silver, and gracious ladies were escorted to dinner by stately men. Many visitors enjoyed the Robinson's generous hospitality and the comfort of good featherbeds after a hard day's riding. There were no roads in New Brunswick then; but the loyal colonists got around on horseback, and they had boats -- slow Durham boats and row boats.

Bishop Inglis, the first Bishop of North America, was used to having transportation difficulties in his efforts to reach all parts of his diocese which included Newfoundland, Bermuda, Nova Scotia (where he made his headquarters), Quebec and part of Ontario. But even in Saint John, when he had finished laying the cornerstone of Old Trinity Church there in 1788, he had to bargain with fishermen to take him to Fredericton. He hired "two men and a row boat at a dollar and a half a day" and stopped at Inns along the river. "Rogers", thirty-three miles from Saint John, was a good Inn. "Flaglor's" at Oak Point was another worthy of mention, but the good Bishop was not so complimentary about others with their soiled bed linens and poor meals.

Bishop Inglis was a guest at "Colonel Robinson's excellent farm" and Governor Thomas Carleton and his Lady often stopped over for tea, while planning the first official Ball ever held in Fredericton.

It was a gala affair. "The Governor was so animated and Mrs. Carleton so anxious to please that they showered every attention on their guests", is recorded in an old diary. Our great-great-grandmothers stepped the minuet in the low-timbered rooms of Government House to the music of flutes and violins. At supper they were served "rare and delicious foods" after which they "danced again until three o'clock in the morning." A scandalous hour for pioneer folk!

Of the beautiful gowns worn that night, Mrs. Carleton's was "of elegant tea-coloured satin, with a white satin petticoat embroidered in pastel shades. Her hair was dressed in light curls tied with a silk bandeau embroidered with "Vive le Roi", which had a pearl brooch on one side and ostrich and peacock feathers on the other.... [She] carried a large bouquet of Jasmine and Carnations."

Another gown had "a train and body of cerise satin with vandyke points richly embroidered in silver, and an elegant gold muslin petticoat and sash of same, and a cape of white crepe with epaulettes of gold and silver bullion." For jewellery the lady wore "brilliant pendulum earrings", and over her light curls "a crepe bandeau trimmed with blonde lace and ornamented fancy plumes."

The house Beverly Robinson built at Nashwaaksis, a two-storey peaked-roof building, stands deserted now. Some of the willow trees he planted still cast cool shadows over the once-tilled fields of his "excellent farm". Of Beverly Robinson, Member of the Legislative Council, Trustee of the College of New Brunswick, and organizer of the King's New Brunswick Regiment, only memories remain. While his tall ghost walks the deserted gardens on windy moonlit nights, all across Canada there are Robinsons bearing the family names of Beverly, Morris, de Lancey, Cortlandt and Barclay, for Beverly and Susanna's descendants are legion.

Another son of the first Beverly, Morris, born in the Highlands of New York in 1759; died at Gibraltar in 1815, served as a captain in the Queen's Rangers during the war of the Revolution, and after the restoration of peace was continued in commission. At the time of his death he was a lieutenant-colonel and assistant barrack-master-general in the British army.

Another son, John, born in New York state in 1761; died in St. John, New Brunswick, in 1828, was a lieutenant in the Loyal American regiment during the Revolution, and when the corps was disbanded he settled in New Brunswick and received half-pay, tie became a successful merchant, was deputy paymaster-general of the king's forces in the colony, a member of the council, treasurer of New Brunswick, mayor of St. John, and president of the first bank that was chartered in that city and in the colony.

Another son, Sir Frederick Phillipse, soldier, born in the Highlands of New York in Sep 1763; died in Brighton, England, 1 Jan 1852, was attached to his father's regiment, and in Feb 1777, was commissioned an ensign. He was wounded and taken prisoner at the battle of Stony Point, but was exchanged, and left this country. He was promoted to the rank of captain in 1794, served in the West Indies under Sir Charles Gore, and was present at the siege of Fort Bourbon in the island of Martinique. In 1795 he returned to England, and in 1812 he served as brigadier-general in the peninsula. After the termination of the peninsular war he went to Canada as commander-in-chief of the troops in the upper province. He commanded the British force in the attack on Plattsburg under General Prevost, and protested against the order of his superior officer when he was directed to retire. From 1 Jul 1815, till 1816, he administered the government of Upper Canada during the absence of Francis Gore. He soon afterward removed to the West Indies, where he took Command of the forces, He became a lieutenant-general in 1825, and in 1841 was promoted to the full rank of general. On 2 Jan 1815, he was made a knight commander of the Bath, and in 1835 he became a knight grand cross of that order.

Another son, Sir William Henry, born in the Highlands of New York in 1766 died in Bath, England, in 1836, accompanied his father to England, was appointed to a place in the commissariat department of the British army, and was its head at the time of his death. He was knighted for his long services. His wife, Catherine, daughter of Cortlandt Skinner, attorney-general of New Jersey, died at Wisthorpe House, Marlow, England, in 1843.

"History of St. John's lodge, F. & A.M. of Saint John, New Brunswick," by William Franklin Bunting, page 295.

[http://books.google.com/books?id=1js9AAAAYAAJ&pg=PA296&dq=%22Beverly+robinson%22+%22new+Brunswick%22&hl=en&ei=hhtgTLzTJsl68Ab2yL3EDQ&sa=X&oi=book\\_result&ct=result&resnum=6&ved=0CEkQ6AEwBQ#v=onepage&q=%22Beverly%20robinson%22%20%22new%20Brunswick%22&f=false](http://books.google.com/books?id=1js9AAAAYAAJ&pg=PA296&dq=%22Beverly+robinson%22+%22new+Brunswick%22&hl=en&ei=hhtgTLzTJsl68Ab2yL3EDQ&sa=X&oi=book_result&ct=result&resnum=6&ved=0CEkQ6AEwBQ#v=onepage&q=%22Beverly%20robinson%22%20%22new%20Brunswick%22&f=false)

#### **NEW BRUNSWICK LODGE, No. 541, FREDERICTON.**

The second lodge constituted in New Brunswick, and, up to the year 1829, the only one in the province on the roll of the regular or mother grand lodge of England. The warrant was granted April 2nd, 1789, H. R. H. the Duke of Cumberland being Grand Master, Sir Peter Parker, Deputy Grand Master, and William White, Grand Secretary; to the Hon. Daniel Bliss, Master; George Sproule, Esq., S. W.; **Beverly Robinson, Jr., Esq., J. W.**, and John Murray, Jr., Esq., Secretary. The lodge was regularly constituted at Fredericton during the year 1789 by the provincial grand lodge of Quebec, and the particulars reported to the *grand* secretary at London by John Jones, Esq., provincial grand secretary of Quebec. A re-numbering of the lodges on the grand lodge roll was made 18th April, 1792, when the number of this lodge was changed from No. 541 to No. 450. Its name continued on the roll of the grand lodge up to the date of the union in 1813, when it disappeared.

All the office-bearers named in the warrant of this lodge took a prominent part on the royal side in the American revolutionary war, and occupied important public positions in the early government of the province. Hon. Daniel Bliss was a member of the provincial council, and chief justice of the court of common pleas; George Sproule, Esq., was surveyor general of the province and a member of the council; **Beverly Robinson, Jr., Esq.**, was a lieutenant colonel in the loyal American regiment commanded by his father, Col. Beverly Robinson, Sr., and John Murray, Jr., Esq., was a captain in the King's American dragoons during the war, and, after he came to New Brunswick, held a commission in the 54th regiment of foot.

I am of the opinion that this lodge did not continue its labors any length of time, as I have been unable to glean any further particulars than is contained in the report of the opening, which I obtained from W. Bro. R. F. Gould, of London, England, who very kindly copied it from the grand lodge records.

-----

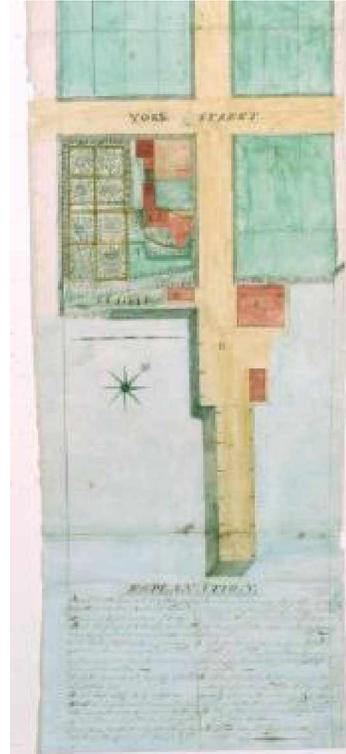
#### **Captain Thomas Robison –**

Ref: "History of Freemasonry in Michigan," by J. Fairbairn Smith and Charles Fey, 1963. pages 35-37.

C. W. Moore, Editor of the Masonic Review of Cincinnati, in his November 1858 issue, gives us the next clue in the continuous existence of Lodge No. 1 at Detroit for, in that issue, we find a typescript of a certificate issued to **Captain Thomas Robison** who was a British Naval Captain. In speaking of the certificate, Editor Moore has this to say about Robison:

He was born in Strommes, one of the Orkney Islands (Scotland), was married in Albany, NY, to **Elizabeth Cartwright, daughter of [Bro.] Richard Cartwright, Esq.** [q.v.]. Bro. Robison died in Kingston, Ontario, 27 Mar 1806, at a very advanced age. Besides his Diploma he left a beautiful Masonic jewel, of gold, manufactured in London and bearing date A.L. 5767. Both are now [1858] in the possession of Richard J. Robison, Esq., of Portland, Maine, the grandson of Thomas Robison. . . . Upon his death, he left the sum of \$100,000 to his family.

The Thomas Robison certificate was "Given under our hands and seal of our Lodge, at our Lodge Room at Detroit, this eighteenth day of August, in the year of Masonry 5767, and of salvation 1767" by Sam. Fleming, Master; Rich. McNeill and Willm. Edgar, Wardens; Ben. James, Secretary. The Lodge name for this certificate is given a "Union Lodge of Detroit No. 1" which is most likely one of various names of Zion Lodge then working in Detroit (aka Harmony or Unity Lodge).



<http://www.masshist.org/findingaids/doc.cfm?fa=fa0305>

Stephen Codman (1758-1844) was born in Charlestown, MA, 4 Dec 1758, the son of John Codman and Abigail Soley Asbury Codman. He was a shipping merchant by trade with ships sailing to Bombay, China, and Europe. For a short time he conducted business from Portland, Maine where he met Hannah Robison, daughter of **ship captain Thomas Robison** and Elizabeth. He married Hannah Robison (1768-1819) on 20 Nov 1788, and returned to Boston shortly thereafter. He died in 1844.

< Manuscript map of a plan of Ann (now Park) Street in Portland, as it was about 1802, showing the property of Thomas Robison. Thomas Robison, A Scotsman, lived in Falmouth (Portland) before the war. A Loyalist, Robison went to Canada and served in the British Army during the war. He returned to Falmouth in 1783 and became a prosperous merchant. Robison opened Ann Street (now Park) from Congress Street to the water. This plan was drawn at the time of the pending sale of his holdings and subsequent departure from Portland.

"The history of Portland, from 1632 to 1864 . . .," by William Willis, page 840.

[http://books.google.com/books?id=fffBtJBkRG8C&pg=PA555&lpg=PA555&dq=%22thomas+robison%22+%22portland%22&source=bl&ots=s5562-5wUY&sig=m5mc1eQxqJl6WVH5U7itLsewV8&hl=en&ei=DzqKTJm\\_M8OqIAFR0tnaCA&sa=X&oi=book\\_result&ct=result&resnum=6&ved=0CCEQ6AEwBQ#v=onepage&q=%22robison%22&f=false](http://books.google.com/books?id=fffBtJBkRG8C&pg=PA555&lpg=PA555&dq=%22thomas+robison%22+%22portland%22&source=bl&ots=s5562-5wUY&sig=m5mc1eQxqJl6WVH5U7itLsewV8&hl=en&ei=DzqKTJm_M8OqIAFR0tnaCA&sa=X&oi=book_result&ct=result&resnum=6&ved=0CCEQ6AEwBQ#v=onepage&q=%22robison%22&f=false)

**Thomas Robison** was a younger brother of Samuel, and lived here with his brother before the Revolution; he did not move his family here until after the war; during that struggle he had a command on the Lakes. He was a respectable merchant and enterprising man. In 1785, he formed a connection in business with Edgar and Reed, and they carried on distilling and general merchandising at the west part of the town. They purchased a large tract of land extending from Main Street to Foro River, on which they built two houses, a distillhouse, wharf, and other buildings, and opened Ann, now Park street, through it. They built one house on the corner of Congress and Park streets, and another at the foot of the street, in which lived Mr. Robison and his son Thomas after him. He was selectman of the

town in 1788 and 1789. He died in Canada in July 1806, to which he had removed one or two years before his death; his children were Mary, Samuel, Thomas, William, Jane, married first to Thomas Hodges in 1790, second, to Robert Ilsley; and Eliza, married to Lemuel Weeks; Hannah married Stephen Codman in 1788; Thomas married Eliza Homer in Nov 1802, and had a large family. While he remained in this town he lived in an expensive style, and kept a free and hospitable house.

<http://images.maritimehistoryofthegreatlakes.ca/61687/data>

MEMORIALS OF FORT ERIE AND EARLY NAVIGATION ON LAKE ERIE. by Brig-General E.A. Cruickshank.

The articles of capitulation signed at Montreal provided for the surrender of all the military and trading posts still occupied by the French to the westward of Niagara. The difficulty of maintaining garrisons in these distant posts at once became evident. Since the loss of the GRIFFON the French had contented themselves with the navigation of the upper lakes in canoes and large flat-bottomed bateaux, capable only of transporting a few tons of cargo. This method of transport was slow, dangerous, and required the employment of many skilled boatmen. Writing from Fort Pitt to General Monckton on 30th June, 1761, Colonel Henry Bouquet, who had lately taken possession of Presqu'Isle on Lake Erie, said that "a Vessel upon Lake Erie would be of great service to support the advanced Posts." As a result of this recommendation and others, before the end of that year, a party of workmen with necessary tools and materials came from New York and established a small shipyard on what became known as Navy Island in the Niagara river above the Falls, Sir William Johnson gave some personal supervision to the work which was carried on under the direction of John Dease, his nephew. A considerable quantity of sawn timber and plank, prepared by the French was opportunely discovered in Chippawa creek, and a sloop or a schooner, named the **HURON**, was launched and rigged, and sailed for Detroit in October. During the next two years, the sloops BEAVER and CHARLOTTE, and the schooners BOSTON, GLADWIN, and VICTORY were built and equipped at Navy Island. All the stores for these ships and supplies for the western posts were laboriously brought over the portage on the east side of the river to the storehouse at the upper landing, which had received the name of Fort Schlosser, in honour of a Swiss officer of the Royal Americans, of that name, who was temporarily in command.

**The HURON, commanded by Captain Thomas Robison**, and the BEAVER were usefully employed in the exploration of Lake Erie and the river channels, and the transportation of provisions and troops but the BEAVER was wrecked on the 28th August, 1763, and the HURON was lost later in the same year.

----

For an account of the 1831 Litigation of the estate of Capt. Thomas Robison see **Appendix VII**.

-----  
**Major Robert Rogers** - b. 1731, Melthuen, MA; 1739, Dumbarton, NH; 1754, formed Rogers' Rangers; 1756, Initiated, St. John's Lodge No. 1, Portsmouth, NH; 1759, attacked St. Francis; 1760, Detroit; 1761, visited St. John's Lodge No. 1, NH; 1761, Concord, NH; 1765, England; 1766-68, Governor of Mackilimackinac; 1769, England; 1775, America; 1777, England; 1778, proscribed by NH; "d. 1795 in England.

"My lodge, Zion of Detroit, founded in 1764 with a cadre of the 60 Regiment of Foot, along with Rogers Rangers, still has entires of Israel Putnam and Robert Rogers, visiting the Lodge" . . . per John R. Snider, Master, Zion Lodge No. 1, in Detroit – 2009.

"Journals of Major Robert Rogers . . .," by Robert Rogers, at

[http://books.google.com/books?id=KXqIHwLlaP8C&printsec=frontcover&dq='Robert+rogers'%22&hl=en&ei=7iKMTKktg7vyBs7q3O4L&sa=X&oi=book\\_result&ct=result&resnum=2&ved=0CDUQ6AEwAQ#v=onepage&q&f=false](http://books.google.com/books?id=KXqIHwLlaP8C&printsec=frontcover&dq='Robert+rogers'%22&hl=en&ei=7iKMTKktg7vyBs7q3O4L&sa=X&oi=book_result&ct=result&resnum=2&ved=0CDUQ6AEwAQ#v=onepage&q&f=false)

[http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Robert\\_Rogers\\_\(soldier\)](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Robert_Rogers_(soldier))

**Robert Rogers** (7 November 1731 – 18 May 1795) was an [American colonial frontiersman](#). Rogers served in the British army during both the [French and Indian War](#) and the [American Revolution](#). During the French and Indian War Rogers raised and commanded the famous [Rogers' Rangers](#).

Robert Rogers was born to James and Mary McFatrige Rogers on 7 November 1731, in [Methuen](#), a small town in northeastern [Massachusetts](#). At that time, the town served as a staging point for [Ulster-Scots](#) settlers bound for the untamed wilderness of New Hampshire. In 1739, when Robert was eight years old, his family relocated to the Great Meadow district of New Hampshire near present-day [Concord](#), where James, an Irish immigrant, founded a settlement on 2,190 acres (8.9 km<sup>2</sup>) of land, which he called Munterloney after a hilly place in [Derry](#), Ireland. Robert referred to this childhood residence as "Mountalona". It was later renamed [Dunbarton, New Hampshire](#).

In 1740 the [War of the Austrian Succession](#) (1740-1748) broke out in Europe and in 1744 the war spread to North America where it was known as [King George's War](#) (1744-1748). During Robert's youth (1746) he saw service in the New Hampshire militia as a private in Captain Daniel Ladd's Scouting Company and in 1747, also as a private, Ebenezer Eastman's Scouting Company both times guarding the New Hampshire frontier. In 1754 Robert became involved with a gang of counterfeiters. He was indicted but the case was never brought to trial.

In 1755, war engulfed the colonies, spreading also to Europe. Britain and France declared war on each other. The British in America suffered a string of defeats including [Braddock's](#). Encouraged by the French victories, American Indians launched a series of attacks along the colonial frontier with the intent of driving the British inhabitants into the sea.

### **Rogers and the Rangers**

Rogers raised and commanded the famous [Rogers' Rangers](#) that fought for [the British](#) during the [French and Indian War](#). This militia unit operated primarily in the [Lake George](#) and [Lake Champlain](#) regions of New York. They frequently undertook winter raids against French towns and military emplacements, traveling on crude snowshoes and across frozen rivers. Never fully respected by the British regulars, Rogers' Rangers were one of the few non-Indian forces able to operate in the inhospitable region due to the harsh winter conditions and mountainous terrain.

Rogers evidenced an unusual talent for commanding his unit in conditions that the regular armies of the day were unaccustomed to working in. He took the initiative in mustering, equipping and commanding ranger units. He wrote an early guide for commanding such units is [Robert Rogers' 28 "Rules of Ranging"](#). The [Queen's York Rangers](#) of the Canadian Army, the [U.S. Army Rangers](#) and the [1st Battalion 119th Field Artillery](#) all claim Rogers as their founder, and "[Rogers' Rules of Ranging](#)" are still quoted on the last page of the U.S. Army's Ranger handbook.

As he was personally responsible for paying his soldiers, Rogers went deeply into debt and took loans to ensure his soldiers were paid properly after their regular pay was raided during transport. He was never compensated by the British Army or government, though he had reason to believe he should have had his expenses reimbursed.

The war broke out in the midst of Robert Rogers' counterfeiting trial. The colonial government decided it needed experienced frontiersmen more than it needed to punish counterfeiters; hence, the charges against Rogers were dismissed. Upon his release, Rogers was appropriated in 1755 as an official recruiter for the renowned Colonel [John Winslow](#).

In 1756, Rogers arrived in [Portsmouth, New Hampshire](#) and, using the authority invested in him by Colonel Winslow, began to muster soldiers for the British Crown. It was probably during this time that the recruits enlisted by him began to be called "Rogers' Rangers" by the local populace.

Due to attacks by Americans Indians along the frontier, Rogers' recruitment drive was well supported by the frightened and angry provincials. **The masons of St. John's Lodge in Portsmouth, NH, received him with two degrees.** In Portsmouth, he also met his future wife, Elizabeth Browne, the youngest daughter of Reverend Arthur Browne ([Anglican](#)). By the end of 1756, Rogers had raised three more companies of rangers, totaling four, one of which he commanded.

Robert's brothers — [James](#), Richard and possibly John — all served in Rogers' Rangers. Richard died of [small pox](#) in 1757 at [Fort William Henry](#); his corpse was later disinterred and mutilated by hostile natives. James would later assume Robert's post in the [King's Rangers](#) at the end of the American Revolutionary War. It is not known what became of John, but it is suspected that he remained in the south after Robert's 1762 visit to [Charleston, South Carolina](#).

## Northern campaign

From 1755 to 1758, Rogers and his rangers served under a series of unsuccessful British commanders operating over the northern accesses to the British colonies: Major General [William Johnson](#), Major General [William Shirley](#), Colonel [William Haviland](#), and Major General [James Abercromby](#). At the time, the British could do little more than fight defensive campaigns around [Lake Champlain](#), [Crown Point](#), [Ticonderoga](#) and the upper [Hudson](#). However, the British were victorious in [Nova Scotia](#) (Acadia), from which they [transported](#) the French [Acadians](#) to [Louisiana](#).

During this time, the rangers proved indispensable; they grew gradually to twelve companies as well as several additional contingents of natives who had pledged their allegiance to the British cause. The rangers were kept organizationally distinct from British regulars. Rogers was their acting commandant, as well as the direct commander of his own company. Rogers routinely gave advice to his British superiors, which was ignored for the most part.

On 21 January 1757, at the [First Battle of the Snowshoes](#), Rogers' Rangers ambushed and captured seven Frenchmen near [Fort Carillon](#) but then encountered a hundred French and Canadian militia and Ottawa Indians from the [Ohio Country](#). After taking casualties, Rogers' force retreated.

After British forces [surrendered Fort William Henry](#) in August 1757, the Rangers were stationed on [Rogers Island](#) near [Fort Edward](#). This allowed the Rangers to train and operate with more freedom than the regular British forces.

On 13 March 1758, at the [Second Battle of the Snowshoes](#), Rogers' Rangers ambushed a French and Indian column and, in turn, were ambushed by enemy forces. The Rangers lost 125 men in this encounter, as well as eight men wounded, with 52 surviving.<sup>[a]</sup> Rogers estimated 100 killed and nearly 100 wounded of the French-Indian forces; however, the French listed casualties as total of ten Indians killed and seventeen wounded. On 7 July 1758, Rogers' Rangers took part in the [Battle of Carillon](#).

In 1758, Abercromby recognized Rogers' accomplishments by promoting him to [Major](#), with the equally famous [John Stark](#) as his second-in-command. Rogers now held two ranks appropriate to his double role: Captain and Major.

In 1759, the tide of the war turned and the British advanced on [the city of Quebec](#). Major General [Jeffrey Amherst](#), the newly appointed [Commander-in-Chief of British forces in North America](#), had a brilliant and definitive idea: He dispatched Rogers and his rangers on an expedition far behind enemy lines to the west against the [Abenakis](#) at [Saint-Francis](#) in [Quebec](#), a staging base for native raids into New England. Rogers led a force of two-hundred rangers from [Crown Point](#), New York, deep into French territory to Saint-Francis.

At this time, the natives near Saint-Francis had given up their aboriginal way of life and were living in a town next to a French mission. Rogers [burned the town](#) and claimed to have killed 200—the actual number was 30 killed and 5 captured. Following the 3 October 1759 attack and successful destruction of Saint-Francis, Rogers' force ran out of food during their retreat back through the rugged wilderness of northern [Vermont](#). Once the Rangers reached a safe location along the [Connecticut River](#) at the abandoned [Fort Wentworth](#), Rogers left them encamped, and returned a few days later with food, and relief forces from [Fort at Number 4](#) now [Charlestown, New Hampshire](#), the nearest British town.

The destruction of Saint-Francis by Rogers was a major psychological victory: The colonists no longer felt that they were helpless. The unfortunate residents of Saint-Francis — a combined group of Abenakis and others — understood that they were no longer beyond reach. Abenaki raids along the frontier did not cease, but significantly diminished.

## Western campaign

[Robert Monckton](#) was Rogers' superior officer during the western campaign.

[Quebec](#) fell in 1759 to be followed by [Montreal](#) in 1760. Native activity against colonials in the east ceased. Rogers' service there was over. General Amherst transferred him to Brigadier General [Robert Monckton](#), commanding at [Fort Pitt](#) (formerly [Fort Duquesne](#)). Following Amherst's advice, Monckton sent the rangers to capture [Detroit](#), far to the north, which they did.

On 29 November 1760, Rogers received the submission of the French posts on the [Great Lakes](#). It was the final act of his command. Shortly thereafter, his rangers were disbanded. Monckton offered Rogers command of a company of regulars in [South Carolina](#) but, after visiting the place, Rogers chose instead to command another company in New York. That unit was soon disbanded, however, and Rogers was forced into retirement at half-pay.

No longer preoccupied with military affairs, Rogers returned to New England to marry Elizabeth Browne in June, 1761, and set up housekeeping with her in [Concord, New Hampshire](#). Like many New Englanders, they had [indentured servants](#) and slaves, including a native lad captured at Saint-Francis.

Some historians claim the state of Rogers' finances at this time is not compatible with what he and others professed it to be later. Rogers received large grants of land in southern New Hampshire in compensation for his services. He sold much of it at a profit and was able to purchase and maintain slaves. He did deed much of his land to his wife's family, which served to support her later. These facts are not compatible with the image of the debt-ridden soldier struggling to pay the salaries he had advanced his men at his own expense.

In peacetime, Robert was a restless spirit. The colonists were in the process of quelling native operations piecemeal. Late in 1761, he accepted command of a company of mercenaries for the purpose of pacifying the [Cherokees](#) in North Carolina, after which he returned home.

On 10 February 1763, the [French and Indian War](#) came to an end with the [Treaty of Paris](#) (also known as the *Treaty of 1763*). Rogers found himself once more a soldier of fortune, still on half-pay. Later his worst enemy, General [Thomas Gage](#), remarked that if the army had put him on whole pay, they could have prevented his later unfit employment (Gage's terms).

## **Pontiac's Rebellion**

On 7 May 1763, [Pontiac's Rebellion](#) erupted in [Michigan](#). [Chief Pontiac](#) — with a force of 300 warriors — attempted to capture [Fort Detroit](#) by surprise. However, the British commander was aware of Pontiac's plan and his garrison was armed and ready. Undaunted, Pontiac withdrew and laid siege to the fort. Eventually more than 900 Indian warriors from a half-dozen tribes joined the siege of Fort Detroit.

Upon hearing this news, Rogers offered his services to General [Jeffrey Amherst](#). Rogers then accompanied Captain [James Dalyell](#) with a relief force to [Fort Detroit](#). Their ill-fated mission was terminated at the [Battle of Bloody Run](#) on 31 July 1763.

In an attempt to break [Pontiac's siege of Fort Detroit](#), about 250 British troops led by Dalyell and Rogers attempted a surprise attack on Pontiac's encampment. However, Pontiac was ready — supposedly alerted by French settlers — and defeated the British at Parent's Creek two miles north of the fort. The creek, or *run*, was said to have run red with the blood of the 20 dead and 34 wounded British soldiers and was henceforth known as Bloody Run. Captain James Dalyell was one of those killed.

Soon after these events, Pontiac's rebellion collapsed and [Chief Pontiac](#) himself faded away into obscurity and death. Surprisingly, Rogers would later memorialize Pontiac and his rebellion in a stage play during his sojourn in England.

**Post-war success and failure** - Rogers had brought total dedication to his position as commander of the rangers. As was often the custom in the British and American armies, he had spent his own money to equip the rangers when needed and consequently had gone into debt. In 1764, he was faced with the problem of repaying his creditors.

To recoup his finances, Robert engaged briefly in a business venture with the fur trader, [John Askin](#), near Detroit. After it failed, he hoped to win the money by gambling, with the result that he was totally ruined. His creditors put him in prison for debt in New York, but he escaped.

**Author in Britain** - In 1765, Rogers voyaged to England to obtain pay for his service and capitalize on his fame. His journals and *A Concise Account of North America* were published. Immediately thereafter, he wrote a stage play, *Ponteach [Pontiac]: or the Savages of America* (1766), significant as an early American drama and for its sympathetic portrayal of American Indians. He enjoyed some moderate success with his publications (though *Ponteach* was condemned by the critics) and attracted royal attention. Following an audience with King [George III](#), to whom he proposed to undertake an expedition to find the [Northwest Passage](#), Robert Rogers was bestowed an appointment as governor of [Michilimackinac \(Mackinaw City, Michigan\)](#) with a charter to look for the passage, and returned to North America.

## **Royal Governor**

Upon his return to America, Rogers moved with his wife to the fur-trading outpost of [Fort Michilimackinac](#) and began his duties as royal governor. During Rogers' absence, Amherst had been replaced as commander of the British forces in America by Sir [Thomas Gage](#), a bitter rival of Amherst who despised colonials. As a loyal friend of Amherst and a colonial, Rogers was doubly hated by Gage.

Sir [Thomas Gage](#) bitterly disliked Rogers due to his close friendship with [Jeffrey Amherst](#), Gage's rival. As an aristocrat and political intriguer, Gage viewed Rogers as a provincial upstart who — due to his friendship with Amherst — posed a threat to his newly-acquired power. At the time, Rogers was still a half-pay captain in the British army and, to some degree, under Gage's military jurisdiction. However, Gage could not challenge Rogers — the king's appointee — unless he could find a good reason as the king would countermand any legal process in order to save his favorites. Knowing this, Gage actively set about finding an immutable justification to remove Rogers as royal governor in a way that would forestall royal intervention.

Unaware of Gage's plotting, Rogers continued performing his administrative duties with considerable zest. He dispatched expeditions to search for the fabled [Northwest Passage](#) under [Jonathan Carver](#) and James Tute, but they were unsuccessful and the path to the Pacific Ocean remained undiscovered until the expedition led by [Alexander MacKenzie](#) in 1793.

Perceiving a need for unity and a stronger government, Rogers negotiated with the Indians, parlayed with the French and developed a plan for a province in Michigan to be administered by a governor and Privy Council reporting to the king. This plan was supported by George III, but had little chance of being adopted, since Parliament had no intention of increasing the king's power.

Meanwhile, Gage used every opportunity to defame Rogers, portraying him as an opportunist who had gotten rich on the war only to gamble his money away as a profligate. How many of these allegations were true and how much Gage believed them to be true are difficult to say. Gage apparently saw Rogers as of questionable loyalty — certainly he was not loyal to Gage — and therefore needed watching. Rogers' dealings with the [American Indians](#) troubled Gage, as he and many other British officers in America had come to regard the Indians as treacherous vermin.

## **Arrest for treason**

Gage hired spies to intercept Rogers' mail and suborned his subordinates. Unfortunately, Rogers offended his private secretary, [Nathaniel Potter](#), and Potter gave Gage the excuse he needed. Potter swore in an affidavit that Rogers said he would offer his province to the French if the British government failed to approve his plan of governance.

Potter's claims are questionable. The French were not in any position to receive Rogers, with a British governor sitting in Montreal. Nevertheless, on the strength of Potter's affidavit, Rogers was arrested in 1767, charged with treason and taken to Montreal in chains for trial. This trial was postponed until 1768. Elizabeth, carrying their first and only child, went home to [Portsmouth](#). This son became a lawyer in Portsmouth and had a family that has descended to modern times.

## Vindication

Field Marshal [Jeffrey Amherst](#) was a close friend of Rogers and was instrumental in vindicating him of Gage's charges of treason. Gage sent Rogers to Montreal to stand trial but, once there, Rogers was among friends of Amherst. Due to Amherst's influence, Rogers was acquitted of all charges and the verdict was sent to King George III for approval. The king approved, but could not call Gage a liar openly. Instead, he made a note that there was reason to think Rogers might have been treasonous.

Returning to Michigan under the power of Gage was unthinkable; hence, Rogers went to Britain in 1769 to petition again for debt relief. However, the king had done all he would for Rogers and was preoccupied by the issue of the dissatisfied colonies. Rogers went again to debtor's prison and tried suing Gage for false imprisonment. Gage settled out of court by offering Rogers the half-pay of a Major in return for dropping the suit.

## American Revolutionary War

Because of his legal troubles in Britain, Robert Rogers missed the major events in the disaffected colonies. When he heard that revolution was likely to break out, he returned to America in 1775. The Americans were as out of touch with Rogers as he was with them. Looking upon him as the noted ranger leader, and expecting him to behave as one, they were at a total loss to explain his drunken and licentious behavior. At that time, Rogers was perhaps suffering from the alcoholism that blighted his later life and led to the loss of his family, land, money and friends.

Exactly what transpired between the revolutionary leaders and Rogers is unclear. Rogers was arrested by the local Committee of Safety as a possible spy and released on parole that he would not serve against the colonies. He was offered a commission in the Revolutionary Army by the [Continental Congress](#), but declined on the grounds that he was a British officer. He later wrote to [George Washington](#) asking for a command, but instead Washington had him arrested.

In short, Rogers behaved neither as a returned countryman nor as a potential revolutionary. He did not return to New Hampshire to resume life with Elizabeth. Instead, he wandered the countryside talking with various persons, both loyalist and revolutionary. He claimed to have a pass from Congress and often stated contradictory political views. Perhaps his behavior was not that of a spy, as Washington concluded, but of a broken man, a shadow of his former self. When conversing with others, he always seemed to be in or coming from a tavern, where he drank heavily.

After escaping from Washington's custody and finding revolutionary ranks firm against him, he offered his services to the British Army. They also were hoping he would live up to his reputation. In August 1776, he formed another ranger type unit called the [Queen's Rangers](#) as its Colonel. In September 1776, Rogers assisted in the capture of [Nathan Hale](#), a spy for the [Continental Army](#). A contemporary account of Hale's capture written by Consider Tiffany, a [Connecticut](#) shopkeeper and Loyalist, is in the [Library of Congress](#). In Tiffany's account, Rogers did not believe Hale's cover story (that he was a teacher) and lured him into his own betrayal by pretending to be a patriot spy himself.

In May 1777, Rogers was forcibly retired on grounds of "poor health." A return home now was impossible; Hale's execution and Rogers raising troops against the colonials seemed to confirm Washington's suspicions. At Washington's prompting, the New Hampshire legislature passed two decrees regarding Rogers: one a proscription and the other a divorce from his wife on grounds of abandonment and infidelity. She could not afford any friendship or mercy toward Robert now if she expected to remain in New Hampshire. Later, Elizabeth married an American naval officer John Roche. She died in 1811.

After a brief sojourn in Britain, Rogers returned in 1779 to raise the [King's Rangers](#) in Nova Scotia for [General Sir Henry Clinton](#). He was unable to keep the position due to his alcoholism, but his place was taken by his brother, [James](#). Now, he was of no further use to the British army. Accidentally snared by an American privateer, he spent some time in a prison in New York, escaping in 1782. In 1783, he was evacuated with other British troops to Britain. There, he was unable to earn a living or defeat his disease. He died in obscurity and debt, what little money he had going to pay an arrears in rent.

[http://www.biographi.ca/009004-119.01-e.php?&id\\_nbr=2149&&PHPSESSID=ctaar1ahgmp01t4suf5agqfvf2](http://www.biographi.ca/009004-119.01-e.php?&id_nbr=2149&&PHPSESSID=ctaar1ahgmp01t4suf5agqfvf2)

**Robert Rogers** (early in his career he may have signed Rodgers), army officer and author; b. 8 Nov. 1731 (N.S.) at Methuen, Massachusetts, son of James and Mary Rogers; m. 30 June 1761 Elizabeth Browne at Portsmouth, New Hampshire; d. 18 May 1795 in London, England.

While Robert Rogers was quite young his family moved to the Great Meadow district of New Hampshire, near present Concord, and he grew up on a frontier of settlement where there was constant contact with Indians and which was exposed to raids in time of war. He got his education in village schools; somewhere he learned to write English which was direct and effective, if ill spelled. When still a boy he saw service, but no action, in the New Hampshire militia during the War of the Austrian Succession. He says in his *Journals* that from 1743 to 1755 his pursuits (which he does not specify) made him acquainted with both the British and the French colonies. It is interesting that he could speak French. In 1754 he became involved with a gang of counteifeiters; he was indicted but the case never came to trial.

In 1755 his military career proper began. He recruited men for the New England force being raised to serve under John Winslow, but when a New Hampshire regiment was authorized he took them into it, and was appointed captain and given command of a company. The regiment was sent to the upper Hudson and came under Major-General William JOHNSON. Rogers was recommended to Johnson as a good man for scouting duty, and he carried out a series of reconnaissances with small parties against the French in the area of forts Saint-Frédéric (near Crown Point, N.Y.) and Carillon (Ticonderoga). When his regiment was disbanded in the autumn he remained on duty, and through the bitter winter of 1755–56 he continued to lead scouting operations. In March 1756 William Shirley, acting commander-in-chief, instructed him to raise a company of rangers for scouting and intelligence duties in the Lake Champlain region. Rogers did not invent this type of unit (a ranger company under John Gorham was serving in Nova Scotia as early as 1744) but he became particularly identified with the rangers of the army. Three other ranger companies were formed in 1756, one of them commanded by Rogers' brother Richard (who died the following year).

Robert Rogers won an increasing reputation for daring leadership, though it can be argued that his expeditions sometimes produced misleading information. In January 1757 he set out through the snow to reconnoitre the French forts on Lake Champlain with some 80 men. There was fierce fighting in which both sides lost heavily, Rogers himself being wounded. He was now given authority over all the ranger companies, and in this year he wrote for the army what may be called a manual of forest fighting, which is to be found in his published Journals. In March 1758 another expedition towards Fort Saint-Frédéric, ordered by Colonel William Haviland against Rogers' advice, resulted in a serious reverse to the rangers. Rogers' reputation with the British command remained high, however, and as of 6 April 1758 Major-General James ABERCROMBY, now commander-in-chief, gave him a formal commission both as captain of a ranger company and as "Major of the Rangers in his Majesty's Service." That summer Rogers with four ranger companies and two companies of Indians took part in the campaign on Lac Saint-Sacrement (Lake George) and Lake Champlain which ended with Abercromby's disastrous defeat before Fort Carillon. A month later, on 8 August, Rogers with a mixed force some 700 strong fought a fierce little battle near Fort Ann, New York, with a smaller party of Frenchmen and Indians under Joseph MARIN de La Malgue and forced it to withdraw.

British doubts of the rangers' efficiency, and their frequent indiscipline, led in this year to the formation of the 80th Foot (Gage's Light Infantry), a regular unit intended for bush-fighting. The rangers were nevertheless still considered essential at least for the moment, and Major-General Jeffery AMHERST, who became commander-in-chief late in 1758, was as convinced as his predecessors of Rogers' excellence as a leader of irregulars. Six ranger companies went to Quebec with James Wolfe in 1759, and six more under Rogers himself formed part of Amherst's own army advancing by the Lake Champlain route. In September Amherst ordered Rogers to undertake an expedition deep into Canada, to destroy the Abenaki village of Saint-François-de-Sales (Odanak). Even though the inhabitants had been warned of his approach, Rogers surprised and burned the village; he claims to have killed "at least two hundred" Indians, but French accounts make the number much smaller. His force retreated by the Connecticut River, closely pursued and suffering from hunger. Rogers himself with great energy and resolution rafted his way down to the first British settlement to send provisions back to his starving followers. The expedition cost the lives of about 50 of his officers and men. In 1760 Rogers with 600 rangers formed the advance guard of Haviland's force invading Canada by the Lake Champlain line, and he was present at the capitulation of Montreal.

Immediately after the French surrender, Amherst ordered Rogers to move with two companies of rangers to take over the French posts in the west. He left Montreal on 13 September with his force in whaleboats. Travelling by way of the ruined posts at the sites of Kingston and Toronto (the latter "a proper place for a factory" he reported to Amherst), and visiting Fort Pitt (Pittsburgh, Pa) to obtain the instructions of Brigadier Robert MONCKTON, who was in command in the west, he reached Detroit, the only fort with a large French garrison, at the end of November. After taking it over from François-Marie Picoté de Belestre he attempted to reach Michilimackinac (Mackinaw City, Mich.) and Fort Saint-Joseph (Niles), where there were small French parties, but was prevented by ice on Lake Huron. He states in his later *A concise account of North America* (but not in his report written at the time) that during the march west he met Pontiac\*, who received him in a friendly manner and "attended" him to Detroit.

With the end of hostilities in North America the ranger companies were disbanded. Rogers was appointed captain of one of the independent companies of regulars that had long been stationed in South Carolina. Subsequently he exchanged this appointment for a similar one in an independent company at New York; but the New York companies were disbanded in 1763 and Rogers went on half pay. When Pontiac's uprising broke out he joined the force under Captain James Dalyell (Dalzell), Amherst's aide-de-camp, which was sent to reinforce the beleaguered garrison of Detroit [see Henry GLADWIN]. Rogers fought his last Indian fight, with courage and skill worthy of his reputation, in the sortie from Detroit on 31 July 1763.

By 1764 Rogers was in serious financial trouble. He had encountered at least temporary difficulty in obtaining reimbursement for the funds he had spent on his rangers, and the collapse of a trading venture with **John Askin** at the time of Pontiac's uprising worsened his situation. According to Thomas GAGE he also lost money gambling. In 1764 he was arrested for debt in New York but soon escaped.

Rogers went to England in 1765 in hope of obtaining support for plans of western exploration and expansion. He petitioned for authority to mount a search for an inland northwest passage, an idea which may possibly have been implanted in his mind by Governor Arthur Dobbs of North Carolina. To enable him to pursue this project he asked for the appointment of commandant at Michilimackinac, and in October 1765 instructions were sent to Gage, now commanding in America, that he was to be given this post. He was also to be given a captain's commission in the Royal Americans; this it appears he never got.

While in London Rogers published at least two books. One was his *Journals*, an account of his campaigns which reproduces a good many of his reports and the orders he received, and is a valuable contribution to the history of the Seven Years' War in America. The other, *A concise account Of North America*, is a sort of historical geography of the continent, brief and lively and profiting by Rogers' remarkably wide firsthand knowledge. Both are lucid and forceful, rather extraordinary productions from an author with his education. He doubtless got much editorial help from his secretary, Nathaniel Potter, a graduate of the College of New Jersey (Princeton University) whom he had met shortly before leaving America for England; but Sir William Johnson's description of Rogers in 1767 as "a very illiterate man" was probably malicious exaggeration at best. Both books were very well received by the London critics. A less friendly reception awaited *Ponteach; or, the savages of America: a tragedy*, a play in blank verse published a few months later. It was anonymous but seems to have been generally attributed to Rogers. John R. Cuneo has plausibly suggested that the opening scenes, depicting white traders and hunters preying on Indians, may well reflect the influence of Rogers, but that it is hard to connect him with the highflown artificial tragedy that follows. Doubtless, in Francis Parkman's phrase, he "had a share" in composing the play. The *Monthly Review*: or, *Literary Journal* rudely called *Ponteach* "one of the most absurd productions of the kind that we have seen," and said of the "reputed author", "in turning bard, and writing a tragedy, he makes just as good a figure as would a Grubstreet rhymester at the head of our Author's corps of North-American Rangers." No attempt seems to have been made to produce the play on the stage.

His mission to London having had, on the whole, remarkable success, Rogers returned to North America at the beginning of 1766. He and his wife arrived at Michilimackinac in August, and he lost no time in sending off two exploring parties under Jonathan Carver

and James Tute, the latter being specifically instructed to search for the northwest passage. Nothing important came of these efforts.

Both Johnson, who was now superintendent of northern Indians, and Gage evidently disliked and distrusted Rogers; Gage no doubt resented his having gone to the authorities in London over his head. On hearing of Rogers' appointment Gage wrote to Johnson: "He is wild, vain, of little understanding, and of as little Principle; but withal has a share of Cunning, no Modesty or veracity and sticks at Nothing . . . He deserved Some Notice for his Bravery and readiness on Service and if they had put him on whole Pay. to give him an Income to live upon, they would have done well. But, this employment he is most unfit for, and withal speaks no Indian Language. He made a great deal of money during the War, which was squandered in Vanity and Gaming. and is some Thousands in Debt here [in New York]." Almost immediately Gage received an intercepted letter which could be read as indicating that Rogers might be intriguing with the French. Rogers was certainly ambitious and clearly desired to carve out for himself some sort of semi-independent fiefdom in the west. In 1767 he drafted a plan under which Michilimackinac and its dependencies should be erected into a "Civil Government," with a governor, lieutenant governor, and a council of 12 members chosen from the principal merchants trading in the region. The governor and council would report in all civil and Indian matters direct to the king and the Privy Council in England. This plan was sent to London and Rogers petitioned the Board of Trade for appointment as governor. Such a project was bound to excite still further the hostility of Gage and Johnson, and it got nowhere. Rogers quarrelled with his secretary Potter and the latter reported that his former chief was considering going over to the French if his plan for a separate government was not approved. On the strength of an affidavit by Potter to this effect Gage ordered Rogers arrested and charged with high treason. This was done in December 1767 and in the spring Rogers was taken east in irons. In October 1768 he was tried by court martial at Montreal on charges of "designs . . . of Deserting to the French . . . and stirring up the Indians against His Majesty and His Government"; "holding a correspondence with His Majesty's Enemies"; and disobedience of orders by spending money on "expensive schemes and projects" and among the Indians. Although these charges were supported by **Benjamin Roberts**, the former Indian department commissary at Michilimackinac, Rogers was acquitted. It seems likely that he had been guilty of no crime more serious than loose talk. The verdict was approved by the king the following year, though with the note that there had been "great reason to suspect . . . an improper and dangerous Correspondence." Rogers was not reinstated at Michilimackinac. In the summer of 1769 he went to England seeking redress and payment of various sums which he claimed as due him. He received little satisfaction and spent several periods in debtors' prison, the longest being in 1772-74. He sued Gage for false imprisonment and other injuries; the suit was later withdrawn and Rogers was granted a major's half pay. He returned to America in 1775.

The American Revolutionary War was now raging. Rogers, no politician, might have fought on either side, but for him neutrality was unlikely. His British commission made him an object of suspicion to the rebels. He was arrested in Philadelphia but released on giving his parole not to serve against the colonies. In 1776 he sought a Continental commission, but General George Washington distrusted and imprisoned him. He escaped and offered his services to the British headquarters at New York. In August he was appointed to raise and command with the rank of lieutenant-colonel commandant a battalion which seems to have been known at this stage as the Queen's American Rangers. On 21 October this raw unit was attacked by the Americans near Mamaroneck, New York. A ranger outpost was overrun but Rogers' main force stood firm and the attackers withdrew. Early in 1777 an inspector general appointed to report on the loyalist units found Rogers' in poor condition, and he was retired on half pay. The Queen's Rangers, as they came to be known, later achieved distinction under regular commanders, notably John Graves Simcoe.

Rogers' military career was not quite over. Returning in 1779 from a visit to England, he was commissioned by General Sir Henry Clinton – who may have been encouraged from London – to raise a unit of two battalions, to be recruited in the American colonies but organized in Canada, and known as the King's Rangers. The regiment was never completed and never fought. The burden of recruiting it fell largely on Rogers' brother James, also a ranger officer of the Seven Years' War. Robert by now was drunken and inefficient, and not above lying about the number of men raised. Governor Frederick HALDIMAND wrote of him, "he at once disgraces the Service, & renders himself incapable of being Depended upon." He was in Quebec in 1779-80. At the end of 1780, while on his way to New York by sea, he was captured by an American privateer and spent a long period in prison. By 1782 he was back behind the British lines. At the end of the war he went to England, perhaps leaving New York with the British force at the final evacuation in 1783.

Rogers' last years were spent in England in debt, poverty, and drunkenness. Part of the time he was again in debtors' prison. He lived on his half pay, which was often partly assigned to creditors. He died in London "at his apartments in the Borough [Southwark]," evidently intestate; letters of administration of his estate, estimated at only £100, were granted to John Walker, said to be his landlord. His wife had divorced him by act of the New Hampshire legislature in 1778, asserting that when she last saw him a couple of years before "he was in a situation which, as her peace and safety forced her *then* to shun & fly from him so Decency *now* forbids her to say more upon so indelicate a subject." Their only child, a son named Arthur, stayed with his mother.

The extraordinary career that thus ended in sordid obscurity had reached its climax in the Seven Years' War, before Rogers was 30. American legend has somewhat exaggerated his exploits; for he often met reverses as well as successes in his combats with the French and their Indian allies in the Lake Champlain country. But he was a man of great energy and courage (and, it must be said, of considerable ruthlessness), who had something of a genius for irregular war. No other American frontiersman succeeded so well in coping with the formidable bush-fighters of New France. That the frontiersman was also the author of successful books suggests a highly unusual combination of qualities. His personality remains enigmatic. Much of the evidence against him comes from those who disliked him; but it is pretty clear that his moral character was far from being on the same level as his abilities. Had it been so, he would have been one of the most remarkable Americans of a remarkable generation.

-----

**Samuel Ryerse** – b. 1732; 1782, Lodge No. 169 E.R. (A), New York; New Jersey Volunteers; 1782, Charter member and Master of St. George's Lodge No. 2, New York; 1783, Maugerville, NB; 1789, St. George's Lodge No. 19, Maugerville, NB; 1782-91, Master; 1794, Lodge Island; 1800, London, Upper Canada; d. 1812, Woodhouse, Upper Canada.

For a good genealogical record of the Ryerse and Underhill families see: <http://wc.rootsweb.ancestry.com/cgi-bin/igm.cgi?op=GET&db=sutton-appleton&id=I5880>

<http://barbfittz.tripod.com/id8.html>

**Samuel RYERSE (RYERSON)**, born about 1752, Pequannock, New Jersey, in his father's home. Occupation: Businessman in New Jersey, and first a Captain then a Colonel in the United Empire Loyalists, (UEL), died 12 June 1812, Norfolk County, Port Ryerse, Ontario, Canada, buried: Port Ryerse, Memorial Churchyard.

Samuel recruited and received an officer's commission in Skinner's brigade, of the New Jersey Loyalists. At the end of the American Revolution many who had fought for the British had a very rough time of it trying to make a home and a honest wage for themselves and their families. Many families headed for Upper Canada.

In 1793 the family fled to New Brunswick, Canada. In 1794 he met with Gov. Simcoe who persuaded him to start a new settlement at Long Point, in Canada. He built a log house on the lake shore at the mouth of Young's Creek. He named this spot Port Ryerse. He built a grist mill, in the early 1800's. Samuel was the first Judge of Norfolk County, April 1800.

He married (1) Helena UNKNOWN

*Children:*

- i Elizabeth (Betsy) RYERSE b. 1774.
- ii Jacob RYERSE, b. 1776; d. 1779.
- iii Infant RYERSE, b. ca Aug 1780.
- iv Samuel RYERSE, JR., b. 23 Oct 1782.

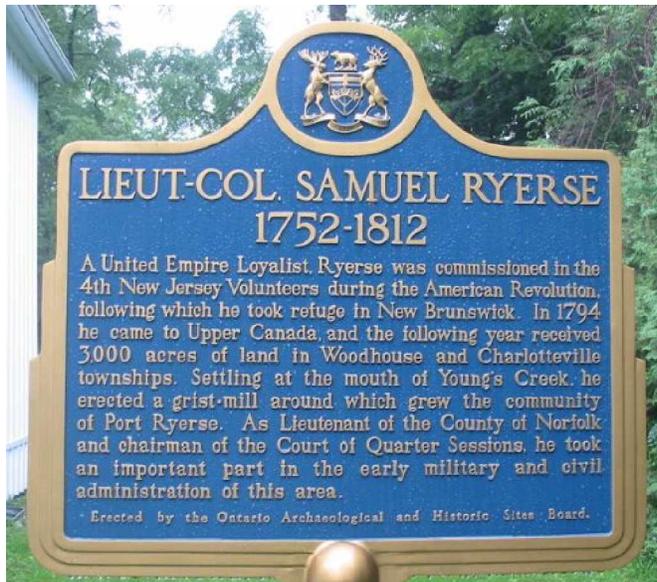
He married (2) Sarah UNDERHILL, 22 Jan 1784, in Maugerville, New Brunswick, Canada, born 28 Aug 1758, died 11 Oct 1838, London, Norfolk County, Ontario, Canada. Sarah is buried: Port Ryerse, Churchyard Memorial Church Burial Ground. Sarah died while at her daughter Amelia's home.

*Children:*

- v Infant RYERSE, b. ca 1784, Sunbury Co., New Brunswick.
- vi Infant RYERSE, b. ca 1786, Sunbury Co., New Brunswick.
- vii Rebeckah RYERSE, b. ca 1787, Sunbury Co., New Brunswick
- viii Sarah Ellison RYERSE, b. ca 1789, Sunbury Co., New Brunswick; d. there 23 Jun 1790.
- ix Sarah Clowe RYERSE, b. 1790, Sunbury Co., New Brunswick; died probably in New York City, New York.
- x George RYERSE, b. ca 1791, Sunbury Co., New Brunswick; died probably in New York City, New York.
- xi George Joseph RYERSE, b. 27 Apr 1794; d. 01 Feb 1876.
- xii Amelia RYERSE, b. 19 Feb 1798; d. 24 Mar 1882.
- xiii Edward Powers RYERSE, b. 14 Nov 1800; d. 27 Mar 1882.

For a further sketch of the Ryerse / Ryerson family see **Appendix III** below.

[http://www.njstatelib.org/NJ\\_Information/Digital\\_Collections/NJInTheAmericanRevolution1763-1783/8.12.pdf](http://www.njstatelib.org/NJ_Information/Digital_Collections/NJInTheAmericanRevolution1763-1783/8.12.pdf)



[http://www.archive.org/stream/ryersongenealogy00ryer/ryersongenealogy00ryer\\_djvu.txt](http://www.archive.org/stream/ryersongenealogy00ryer/ryersongenealogy00ryer_djvu.txt)

COL. SAMUEL RYERSE, (Lucas,3 Joris,2 Martin,1), son of Lucas and Johanna (Van der Hoff) Ryerson, was b. in New Jersey in 1752 and d. at Port Ryerse, Ont., Can. (the town he founded and which still bears his name), in 1812. He was twice m., first, to a lady whose name is unknown; second, in 1783, to **Sarah Underhill**, of New Brunswick, widow of Capt. Davenport. He retained the older form of the name "Ryerse" though in some of his letters to his half-brother, George Luke Ryerson, as also in some of the deeds drawn by himself he signed himself "S. Ryerson."

At the outbreak of the Revolutionary War he was known to be in sympathy with the British and was consequently imprisoned. He made his escape, however, and joined the Loyalist forces as a captain under Col. Ferguson. At the battle of Kings Mountain, Oct. 7, 1780, he was wounded and taken prisoner by the Revolutionary forces under Col. Campbell. He was later exchanged and again took the field. Before the end of hostilities he had been advanced to the rank of colonel.

After the close of the war Col. Ryerse found his property confiscated and himself exiled. The British government, however, in reward for his services as an officer granted him 3000 acres of land in New Brunswick, and later 5000, to himself and family, in Upper Canada. Thus he possessed at that time 8000 acres of land. He finally settled on part of this land, in Ontario, on the shores of Lake Erie and founded the town of Port Ryerse. He was appointed a judge of the District and Surrogate Courts, also colonel in the militia. At one time he was Deputy Governor-General, of Upper Canada. The late Rev. Adolphus Egerton Ryerson, of Toronto, nephew of Col. Samuel Ryerse, wrote a history of the U. E. Loyalists and in this will be found a most interesting account of the family as told by Col. Ryerse's daughter, the late Mrs. John Harris, of Eldon House, London, Ont.

A number of letters which Col. Ryerse wrote from the front during the Revolutionary war are still preserved, the originals now in possession of Dr. John Ryerson of Boonton, N. J. The author has copies of these letters which teem with interest, being first-hand history of many incidents in that memorable campaign including the battle of Kings Mountain.

So far as definitely known, Col. Ryerse had thirteen children, although there may have been another, named Jacob (who probably died young), for we find recorded in the baptismal records of the Pompton Church one Jacob Ryerson, b., or bap., Nov. 9, 1777, child of Samuel Ryerson and wife. In his letter, written 1779, to his half-brother George L. Ryerson, he states he has just lost his youngest child, which may have been Jacob. The children by his first wife were:

- I. ELIZABETH (Betsy), b. about 1778, or, perhaps, 1776. She was twice m., first, to Elijah St. Liger, a retired officer of the British Army. They resided in Havana, Cuba. She m., second, a Mr. Roulette. She had children:
- II. A daughter, b. about 1780; probably d. y.
- III. SAMUEL, Jr., b. Oct. 23, 1782; d. Aug. 29, 1874; m. Sarah Cyphor.

Mrs. Ryerse died, no doubt, shortly after this child was born. The children by the second marriage were ten in number, seven of whom died in New York when young. The surviving children were:

- IV. REV. GEORGE JOSEPH, b. April 27, 1794; d. Feb. i, 1876; m. twice.
- V. AMELIA, b. Feb., 1798; d. Mar. 24, 1882; m. about 1816, **Capt. John Harris** of the British Navy. He was b. in 1782 and was a native of County Devon, England.
- VI. MAJOR EDWARD POWERS, b. Nov. 14, 1800; d. Mar. 27, 1882. He was a magistrate, harbor master, vessel owner, and Inland Revenue Inspector at Port Ryerse. He also held commissions as Major and Colonel in the Canadian Militia. Major Ryerse m. Martha Underbill. She d. Mar. 21, 1879. They had no children of their own.

-----

The first trace of Masonic activity in New Brunswick dates from 29 Jan 1783. That year, the Provincial Grand Lodge of New York granted a warrant to **Samuel Ryerse** and others to form **St. George's Lodge No. 2**, in the 3rd Battalion of the New Jersey Volunteers. The warrant was signed by [Rev.] **William Walter** [q.v.], Grand Master, chaplain of that regiment. The Lodge was located at Maugerville. In 1788 the lodge received a warrant from the Provincial Grand Lodge of Nova Scotia, as [St. George's Lodge] **No. 19**. It conferred the Mark and Royal Arch, as well as the Craft degrees. [ref. - A History of the Royal Arch – Part Two, by Everett R. Turnbull and Ray V. Denslow].

[http://www.eldonhouse.ca/d.aspx?s=/The\\_Family/default.htm](http://www.eldonhouse.ca/d.aspx?s=/The_Family/default.htm)

### ***The Builders of Eldon House***

#### **John Harris b. 1782 d. 1850 and Amelia Ryerse Harris b. 1798 d. 1882**

John Harris, the builder of Eldon House, was born in Devon, England and, after a brief service in the merchant marine, was "impressed" (ordered) into the Royal Navy in 1803. Through active service on several ships, he rose to the rank of Master which, while not an officer's rank, was a key position on board. He was responsible for maintaining, outfitting and navigating the ship and was required to note and describe features of coastlines that had not yet been recorded on charts. In 1813 he was assigned to a force accompanying Sir James Lucas Yeo to North America to fight the Americans on the Great Lakes. He served throughout the war, and was eventually appointed Master of the Prince Regent, a frigate nearly the size of the USS Constitution, carrying 58 guns. Following the end of the war in 1814, he was ordered to assist with a survey of the Great Lakes under Commodore Edward Owen. One of his first assignments was to survey the north shore of Lake Erie for a shipbuilding site. In the course of this work he arrived at Port Ryerse on April 10, 1815, where he met Amelia, the daughter of the Port's founder, a United Empire Loyalist named **Samuel Ryerse**.



**Samuel Ryerse** had fought for the Loyalists in the American War of Independence (1776 to 1783). Both he and **his brother Joseph** fought with the New Jersey Volunteers. During the war he became acquainted with Colonel John Simcoe, the British commander of the Queens Rangers, also a Loyalist unit.

Following the end of the war, **Samuel** left for New Brunswick, where he remarried and settled for several years before he was encouraged by his friend Simcoe, now the Lieutenant-Governor of the new colony of Upper Canada, to settle in the Long Point area. He arrived there in 1795 and was soon appointed a Justice of the Peace for the London District. The Justices met four times a year in the district court house, where they administered the District government and heard court cases. **Joseph** was appointed District Sheriff, a position which, together with that of the Treasurer and the Clerk of the Peace, controlled the local government. Samuels' daughter, Amelia, was born at Port Ryerse. She and John were married on June 28, 1815. They lived in Kingston until 1817, when

John retired on half-pay from the Navy. They then moved to a farm near Long Point in Woodhouse Township. In 1821 he was appointed Treasurer of the London District, which made him responsible for tax collecting as well as overseeing public expenditures such as bridge construction. The District court house was only a short distance away in Vittoria until 1825, when it was moved to London, then just a crown reserve at the forks of the Thames. John journeyed regularly to London with the Justices and other officers of the court until 1834, when his splendid new house was ready for the family.

-----

#### Joseph Ryerson –

[http://www.archive.org/stream/ryersongenealogy00ryer/ryersongenealogy00ryer\\_djvu.txt](http://www.archive.org/stream/ryersongenealogy00ryer/ryersongenealogy00ryer_djvu.txt)

COL. JOSEPH RYERSON, (Lucas,3, Joris,2, Martin,1), son of Lucas and Johanna (Van der Hoff) Ryerson, was b. in Paterson, NJ, 28 Feb 1761, d. near Vittoria, Ontario, Canada, 9 Aug 1854. He married, in New Brunswick, Nov. 18, 1784, Mehetable, dau. of Isaac and Elizabeth (Barker) Stickney, of Rowley, MA, descendants of William Stickney the early Puritan settler. She was born in Marysville, N. B., 7 Oct 1766, and d. 10 Jun 1850.

At the outbreak of the Revolutionary War, Joseph with his brother Samuel espoused the British cause and entered the army as a cadet at the age of fifteen years. Despite his extreme youth he won rapid promotion. Col. Sabine, in his history of the U. E. Loyalists mentions him as one of the eighty-six who returned safely from the siege of Charleston when the British force was completely cut to pieces and nearly all either killed or taken prisoners. At the close of the war he went to New Brunswick, where he married and remained until 1799. In that year he moved to the shores of Lake Erie and settled near his brother, Samuel, between Vittoria and Port Ryerse on a land grant from the British government comprising some 2500 acres. Here he lived for over 50 years.

He was a member of the first commission of magistrates; for many years chairman of the Court of Quarter Sessions; treasurer of the London District; and was a colonel in the Canadian Militia. At the outbreak of hostilities between the U. S. and England he, and his sons George, William and John immediately took the field and remained in active service throughout the war, 1812-15. He was **master of the first Masonic Lodge in Upper Canada**. Of his six sons, five became ministers of the Gospel and prominent in the affairs of the Dominion. The children of Col. Joseph and Mehetable (Stickney) Ryerson were:

- I. REV. GEORGE, b. 17 Mar 1791 or 2; d. 19 Dec 1882; m. three times.
- II. SAMUEL, b. ca 1794; d. about 1830; m. Eliza McMichael.
- III. MARY (Polly), at Mangerville, N. B.; d. 13 Jun 1821, at Port Stanley, Ont.; m. Col. John Bostwick, of Port Stanley, 11 Dec 1808. He was b. at Great Barrington, MA, 24 Feb 1750, son of Rev. Gideon Bostwick, an Episcopal clergyman. Was elected High Sheriff of the London District and also member of Parliament for Middlesex Co. He died in Port Stanley, Ont., on 9 Sep 1849. He served in the war of 1812-15, in the British Army, rising to rank of Colonel. After the war, he resided many years at Long Point, Ont. He also took an active part in the Rebellion of 1837.
- IV. MEHETABLE, m. John Williams; both d. ca 1850.
- V. REV. WILLIAM, b. 1798; d. 13 Sep 1873; m. Mary Griffin.
- VI. REV. JOHN, b. 12 Jun 1800; d. 9 Oct 1878; m. Mary Lewis.
- VII. REV. ADOLPHUS EGERTON, b. 24 Mar 1803; d. 19 Feb 1882; m. twice.
- VIII. ELIZABETH, b. ca 1805; m. Judge James Mitchell.
- IX. REV. EDWAY M., b. 1811; d. ca, 1858; m. twice.

-----

**John Sanxay** – 1780 Lodge No. 210 E.R. (A), New York; 1783, Shelburne, NS; 1785, Hiram Lodge No. 10, Shelburne, NS; 1787, Returned to New York; 1790 Petitioned Grand Steward's Lodge for relief; 1795, Petitioner for Trinity Lodge No. 10, New York.

"The Sanxay family: and descendants of Rev. Jacques Sanxay, Huguenot refugee ...," by Theodore Frederic Sanxay, page 86-  
[http://books.google.com/books?id=0ilPAAAAMAAJ&pg=PA89&lpg=PA89&dq=%22john+sanxay%22&source=bl&ots=WWWyNVylz9d&sig=QnNKG90e5UuKI\\_DJ9LOotiXKIAY&hl=en&ei=5umMTMb6LIWdlqeU2tBI&sa=X&oi=book\\_result&ct=result&resnum=4&ved=0CBwQ6AEwAw#v=onepage&q=%22john%20sanxay%22&f=false](http://books.google.com/books?id=0ilPAAAAMAAJ&pg=PA89&lpg=PA89&dq=%22john+sanxay%22&source=bl&ots=WWWyNVylz9d&sig=QnNKG90e5UuKI_DJ9LOotiXKIAY&hl=en&ei=5umMTMb6LIWdlqeU2tBI&sa=X&oi=book_result&ct=result&resnum=4&ved=0CBwQ6AEwAw#v=onepage&q=%22john%20sanxay%22&f=false)

The only surviving son of Rev. James Sanxay, Rector of Tetcott, was John, and he came to America. He was the youngest child, and when his father died he was just merging into manhood. His mother had passed away ten years before. None of his brothers were living, and his sisters, who survived, had all left the old home at Tetcott. Charlotte had married, and was living in London. Mary, unmarried, was living at Swindon with her cousin, Jane Sanxay, who married Rev. Dr. Smyth, the rector there. Of his early youth, little is known, but he seems to have deflected from the course of his ancestral line, and to have had a passion for the sea. How this was acquired is not known, but for a time in Devonshire, where he lived, all that was most charming and lustrous of adventurous and sea-loving England was centred. It has been said of him, that he had some official connection with the British Navy; but, if so, it is not known what. He is known, however, to have been intimate with officers on the British warships stationed at the port of New York just before the war of the Revolution, including among others those of the "Swan" This was the vessel designated by Governor General Tryon to enforce, in case of resistance, the landing of the tea from the tea ships which were to arrive, at that port.

The precise time when John Sanxay came to New York is not known, but it was as early as about 1772, and while the spirit of '76 was being born. He, nevertheless, remained a loyalist, staunch and true. He could not forget that country and government that had furnished an asylum and protection to his ancestors, who had been driven from France. He married at New York in 1775 Sarah Devoe (Devaux), who was also of Huguenot descent. The marriage ceremony was performed by Rev. Dr. Inglis, the Rector of Trinity Church, who was also an unrelenting loyalist, and insisted, in spite of the commotion thereby created, upon using the prayers for the King in the regular services of the church, and who also defended the home government with his pen. At the close of the war the feeling against the loyalists was intensely bitter. The Legislature of New York, in many cases, went so far as to pass acts of attainder against them, and confiscated their property. Sir **Guy Carleton**, the British commander, describing the situation at that

time, in a letter to Lord North, the original of which I recently saw in London, intimated that **General Washington** was about their only friend. John Sanxay and Dr. Inglis, in common with thousands, were compelled to leave the country to escape the wrath of the people. So great was the number of these loyalists, that Sir Guy Carleton undertook to provide for their transportation, and their **removal cost the British Government \$1,250,000**. As a result of the exodus, New York was reduced to nearly half its population. Dr. Inglis went to Nova Scotia, and settled in Halifax, and he was subsequently made bishop of that province. John Sanxay also left for Nova Scotia, **in the fall of 1783**, with his wife and two children, and went to Shelburne, a new place, made up almost entirely of the loyalist refugees. One of his children was born at sea while on the way, and another was born while he sojourned at Shelburne. He remained at that place three years, returning to New York in 1786. Here, for about fourteen years, he struggled, during the intense business depression that followed the war, to maintain his growing family, until 1801, when he lost his wife by death. His place of business at one time was on Broadway, opposite the present St. Paul's Church. In its church-yard his wife and several of his children are buried. Rather broken in health he survived his wife about ten years, and died at Mt. Pleasant, Westchester County, New York, in 1811, and he was buried there.

John Sanxay was **one of the petitioners for the granting of a charter for the Masonic Lodge, Trinity Lodge No. 10**, organized in New York City in March, 1795. It is now known as Trinity Lodge No. 12, becoming such in 1839, but it has become distinctively German in its membership. This lodge was an offshoot of the New Jerusalem No. 4, and the latter of Lodge No. 210, Registry of England, ancients.

Of the children of John Sanxay who reared families, John, the eldest, alone remained in New York. In health he seems to have been greatly afflicted. He married Miss Anna Nutt, of New Jersey, 22 Jun 1815, and, besides several daughters, left two sons, Skeffington, the elder, and Joseph Frederic, the younger. . .

---

JOHN SANXAY born at Tetcott, County of Devon, England, Sep 1746, came to New York prior to 1773, and was married at New York, 14 Feb 1775, to Sarah Devoe (Devou or Devaux), d/o Frederick Devou and Elizabeth Angevine, by Rev. Dr. Charles Inglis of Trinity Church. He died at Mt. Pleasant, Westchester County, NY, 10 Mar 1811. She was born 8 Dec 1756; died 18 Feb 1801. She is buried in St. Paul's Churchyard, New York. John was a prominent upolsherer in New York City. At the time of their marriage he was listerd as a mariner and she as a 'spinster.'

Children:

- |    |                    |  |
|----|--------------------|--|
| 1  | Robert,            | b. 26 Oct 1775; d. 18 Nov 1775.  |
| 2  | Elizabeth,         | b. 15 Feb 1778; d. — Sep 1783.   |
| 3  | Charlotte,         | b. 19 Jan 1779; d. 24 Jun 1860.  |
| 4  | James Littleton,   | b. 06 Aug 1780; d. 19 Aug 1811.  |
| 5  | Catharine,         | b. 18 Mar 1782; d. 07 Jun 1783.  |
| 6  | Thomas Price,      | b. 09 Sep 1783, at sea; d. 30 Sep 1788.  |
| 7  | Mary,              | b. 18 Aug 1785, at Shelburne, Nova Scotia; d. 7 Sep 1787.                                      |
| 8  | John,              | b. 18 Jul 1787; d. 05 Dec 1842; m. Anna Nutt 26. Jun. 1815 at Nottingham Twp., Burlington, NJ. |
| 9  | Edmund Davenport,  | b. 09 Jun 1789; d. 04 Sep 1835; m. Lydia Belknap.  |
| 10 | Frederic,          | b. 27 Oct 1791; d. 07 Feb 1875.  |
| 11 | Richard Davenport, | b. 10 Aug 1794; d. 01 Jan 1870; m. Emily Tabitha, dau. of Alexander George Gordon.             |
| 12 | Joseph,            | b. 11 Apr 1796; d. 12 Apr 1796.  |

All these children, except as above mentioned, were born in the city of New York. Of these, John, Edmund Davenport, Frederic, and Richard Davenport, reared families.

-----

**Abraham Savage** – Boston; Tax Gatherer; 1757, First Lodge, Boston; Masters' Lodge, Boston; 1759. Charter Member and Master, Lodge at Lake George, NY, under Mass. Warrant [?]; 1767 Grand Secretary, PGL, New York; 1771-72 Grand Junior Warden, PGL, New York; 1773-74 Senior Grand Warden, PGL, New York; 1773 Deputy Grand Master, PGL, NY; Proscribed; 1775, Halifax, NS.

Note: the present writer has not found anything at this time to substantiate that Bro. Savage was a Grand anything in the Provincial Grand Lodge of New York. There is evidence, from the below that he was active in the Lodge and in the Grand line in Massachusetts . . .

[http://www.qmhs.org/general/provincial\\_period.htm](http://www.qmhs.org/general/provincial_period.htm)

During this Provincial period many field Lodges were established. **One such Lodge is listed on the NY Grand Lodge roster as Lake George Lodge No. 4 April 23, 1756**. It was established by Richard Gridley [Provincial GM of North America, 1755-67], younger brother of Jeremy Gridley (Boston), the then Provincial Grand Master of Massachusetts. During the infamous massacre at Fort William Henry, all records were destroyed.

Crown Point Lodge No. 5 1759 - In 1759 (April 13) Crown Point Lodge was authorized by Grand Master Gridley to congregate all Masons into one or more Lodges that participated in the expedition at Crown Point. He gave this authority to **Abraham Savage**.

[http://www.themasonictrowel.com/Articles/History/england\\_files/freemasonry\\_in\\_the\\_british\\_army.htm](http://www.themasonictrowel.com/Articles/History/england_files/freemasonry_in_the_british_army.htm)

In 1756, the R. W. RICHARD GRIDLEY, was commissioned by his brother, JEREMY GRIDLEY, Esq. "to congregate all Free and Accepted Masons in the expedition against Crown Point, and form them into one or more Lodges;" and a Lodge was subsequently held at Crown Point, under Col. JOSEPH INGERSOL. In 1738, a warrant was granted by St. John's Grand Lodge, (Boston), to hold a Lodge in His Majesty's 28th regiment, stationed at Louisburg. And on the April following, the **R. W. ABRAHAM SAVAGE** was authorised to congregate all Free and Accepted Masons in the expedition intended against Canada, at Lake George, or elsewhere, into one or more Lodges."

Abraham Savage, tax gatherer of Boston, an Addresser of Hutchinson, went to Halifax with the British Army, and was proscribed and banished.

[http://books.google.com/books?id=y2L4G2ip1LYC&pg=PA141&lpg=PA141&dq=%22abraham+savage%22+%22grand+secretary%22&source=bl&ots=B4hA3KqoxC&sig=JfzRRcTSSBePqwR69SpVO0xjr\\_q&hl=en&ei=OAGNTKaRBMHflqe0t71q&sa=X&oi=book\\_result&ct=result&resnum=10&ved=0CCsQ6AEwCTgK#v=onepage&q=%22abraham%20savage%22%20%22grand%20secretary%22&f=false](http://books.google.com/books?id=y2L4G2ip1LYC&pg=PA141&lpg=PA141&dq=%22abraham+savage%22+%22grand+secretary%22&source=bl&ots=B4hA3KqoxC&sig=JfzRRcTSSBePqwR69SpVO0xjr_q&hl=en&ei=OAGNTKaRBMHflqe0t71q&sa=X&oi=book_result&ct=result&resnum=10&ved=0CCsQ6AEwCTgK#v=onepage&q=%22abraham%20savage%22%20%22grand%20secretary%22&f=false) page 56.

The records of the "Special Lodge Held at the British Coffee House in Boston Decem<sup>r</sup> 23<sup>d</sup> 5766." And of "a Meeting of the Second Lodge of Free and Accepted Masons at the British Coffee House 21<sup>st</sup> Jan<sup>y</sup> 1767," and of a Meeting of the Second Lodge of Free & Accepted Masons at the British Coffee House February 18 5767" and of "a Meeting of the Second Lodge of Free & Accepted Masons at the British Coffee House Boston March 18 1757," name among the brethren present "Abraham Savage M. 1<sup>st</sup> Lodge," being withing the period of the missing records of the First Lodge and proof of its continued existence.

Subsequently Brother Savage became Grand Secretary of the Grand Lodge and his name is recorded in both capacities among those present at the "Meeting of the Second Lodge at the British Coffee House in Boston N. E." June 17, 5767. August 19, 1767, when John Cutler of the First Lodge also was present, and Sept. 16, 1767.

Note: Abraham's name also appear on page 61 of the above referenced work on a charter for Rising Sun Lodge {Massachusetts}, dated 10 Aug 1772, as Junior Grand Warden.

-----

**Jacob Schiefflin** – b. 1757 Philadelphia; 1760, Montreal; 1775, Montreal Militia; 1777, Detroit Volunteers; 1779, Captured at Vincennes, Ind, but escaped; 1780, New York; 1781, Lodge No. 169 E.R. (A), New York; 1781, Queen's Rangers; 1782, visitor St. Peter's Lodge No. 4, PGL Montreal, Quebec; 1793, New York; d. 1835 New York.

secretary of the Indian Department at Detroit; an officer in the British Army, who was captured at Vincennes, and escaped from Williamsburg, Va., to New York, where he married in 1780, Hannah, daughter of John Lawrence.

"The old merchants of New York City, Volume V," by Walter Barrett, page 108-112.

[http://books.google.com/books?id=thwAAAIAAJ&pg=PA110&dq=%22jacob+schieffelin%22&hl=en&ei=jxCNTLuLE8OB8gbFh4SYCw&sa=X&oi=book\\_result&ct=result&resnum=1&ved=0CCKQ6AEwAA#v=onepage&q=%22jacob%20schieffelin%22&f=false](http://books.google.com/books?id=thwAAAIAAJ&pg=PA110&dq=%22jacob+schieffelin%22&hl=en&ei=jxCNTLuLE8OB8gbFh4SYCw&sa=X&oi=book_result&ct=result&resnum=1&ved=0CCKQ6AEwAA#v=onepage&q=%22jacob%20schieffelin%22&f=false)

For eighty and odd years there has never been a year or a day that the name of Schieffelin has not been upon the list of our most honored merchants.

The first of the name in this city was Jacob Schieffelin. He was born in Philadelphia in 1757. When quite a youth he went to Detroit, being on the staff of the British Governor, Henry Hamilton. He had been offered a commission by Sir Henry Clinton in the Queen's Rangers, a royal regiment in the time of the British Colonies. Having considerable property in Detroit, he remained there to improve it. Shortly after, he married Hannah, a daughter of John Lawrence of New York. Mr. Schieffelin took his wife to Detroit, where his two eldest sons, Edward Lawrence and Henry Hamilton, were born, and visited Europe about 1785. Jacob had another son, Effingham, who married a young lady of one of our old Dutch families, which had the good fortune to own many broad acres near the city, which became town lots, and a gold mine to the descendants in after years.

Effingham was a lawyer by profession, and after retiring from practice was for many years President of the Seventh Ward Bank. After retiring from active life, he left the city, living at his country-seat in Westchester, where he died not long ago at an advanced age, leaving a son who studied law, but I believe does not practice, and also several grandchildren.

Jacob settled in Montreal, and his other children, Jacob, Jr., John L., Maria, were all born there. About 1793 he decided to return to New York and enter business with his brother-in-law. John B. Lawrence, at 195 Pearl street.

One of his earliest acts was to join the German Society. It was started Oct. 9th, 1784. Old David Grimm joined at that time, as did also John B. Dash, Sen., and John B. Dash, Jr. Henry Astor and Jacob Mark joined it in 1785. John Jacob Astor did not join it till 1787. Jacob Schieffelin joined it in 1794. It was not incorporated until 1804. Lawrence and Schieffelin were in business five years, and then separated.

Mr. Schieffelin had great faith in the profits of ship-owning; but his partner being very prudent, had no idea of hazarding his property upon the ocean; so they dissolved. Mr. Schieffelin shortly after purchased several ships on his own account. After some very successful voyages, one of these ships was captured by the British under the "Orders in Council," and two more were taken by the French under the Berlin and Milan Decrees of Bonaparte, thus seriously checking his energetic career.

He had a country-seat on the banks of the Hudson, near those of his brothers-in-law, John B. Lawrence and Thomas Buckley, who also married a Miss Lawrence. Mr. Schieffelin occupied as his city residence for many years the spacious "Walton House in Pearl street. In those days, the gardens of this house extended all the way to the East River. The house was for a long time the finest private dwelling in the city, and was built by that prince of old-time merchants, William AVulton.

I ought to mention that Manhattanville was laid out by Buckley, Lawrence, and Schieffelin, and embraced a portion of each of their lands.

When in 1800 Mr. Schieffelin dissolved with Mr. Lawrence, he took in his son Henry Hamilton under the linn of Jacob Schieffelin & Son. In 1803 he bought No. 193 Pearl street, although he continued to use 195. About this time Edward L. Schieffelin entered the drug business at 21S Water street. Edward L. was married in 1801 by old Dr. Rodgers of the Wall street church, to Susan Ann Stewart, a daughter of Alexander Stewart, one of our old-time merchants. His firm was A. Stewart & Co., ship chandlers, G8 Wall street, and he lived in Garden street. Mr. Stewart was a most worthy man and much respected. He died January, 1808, aged sixtythree.

About this time Maria, daughter of Jacob Schieffelin, married Benjamin Ferris, a lawyer in large practice. Mr. Ferris left a family of daughters and one son. Jacob Schieffelin in 1804, and for many years was a director in the old Washington Assurance Company.

The business that Jacob Schieffelin & Son did was very heavy in those days. They had several buildings filled with drugs and other goods besides the one they occupied at 193 Pearl street.

I find by my files of old newspapers that they advertised largely, and that they did not confine their attention solely to drugs. An advertisement before me offers for sale "Muscovado sugars," "Coffee in hogsheads," [in those days they had a primitive way of packing coffee, it seems.] Also, a shipment of "Cotton, just received from Guadaloupe." "Also, just received from Loudon per 'Oneida Chief,' one hundred barrels double refined saltpetre." They also advertise "for export three hundred barrels gunpowder and four hundred casks brimstone." Such quantities were unusually large for a merchant in those days.

In 1808, Thomas Schieffelin was taken in business by his brother Jonathan at 197 Pearl street under the firm of J. & T. Schieffelin. They were brothers of Jacob, and did a large business up to 1810. In fact, no house did a larger business than they.

This Thomas must have been an active man, as he was one of the commissioners for the introduction of water into Montreal. Thomas had an office at 177 Pearl street, where his son Charles had also an office, being a physician and surgeon. Charles went South, and was adjutant-general of the State of North Carolina.

Jonathan, the brother of the elder Jacob, died a bachelor. He was one of the politest men in New York, He was a polished old-school gentleman. He died in 1836.

In 1813, Jacob, senior, retired from business, and was succeeded by his sons, Henry II. and Jacob, Jr., under the firm of H. H. Schieffelin & Co. Old Jacob Schieffelin died in 1835, and was buried at Manhattanville, near his former country residence.

There is a vault in front of old St. Mary's Episcopal Church where many of his descendants are buried; it adjoined his lands, and I have the impression he gave the site of the church, or that he or some of his family were in some way benefactors of the parish.

I have seen a vault in old Trinity churchyard marked "Schieffelin, 1812;" but I believe that the old merchant rests with others of his family at Manhattanville.

Note: In 1806, the village of Manhattanville was established in this valley around the crossroads of Bloomingdale Road and Manhattan Street, now roughly Broadway and 125th Street. The village's original streets were laid out by **Jacob Schieffelin** and other wealthy merchants, mostly Quakers, who had country seats in the area.

[http://gbl.indiana.edu/ethnohistory/archives/miamis21/M78\\_4a.html](http://gbl.indiana.edu/ethnohistory/archives/miamis21/M78_4a.html)

#### JACOB SCHIEFFELIN'S MEMORIAL TO BRIG. GEN. ALLAN MACLEAN

To Brigadier General McLean commanding the Upper Posts &c. &c. &c.

The Memorial of Jacob Schieffelin Lieutenant of the Detroit Volunteers and Secretary to the Indian Dept.

Your memorialist having been appointed since June 1777 a first Lieutenant of Detroit Volunteers, and continued as such ever since, having accompanied Lieut Gov. Hamilton to **St. Vincennes where he, your memorialist, was made a Prisoner and carried to Williamsburg Prison in Virginia**, and suffered a most rigorous confinement until he effected his escape from thence and got to New York, at which place His Excellency Sir Henry Clinton appointed him to act as Lieut to the Queen's Rangers until your memorialist could have conveyance to Quebec which was in September 1780. On his arrival there, His Excellency General Haldimand was pleased to continue your Memorialist in pay as Lieut of the Detroit Volunteers altho' the men were no longer in existence as soldiers, and recommended him for his former office of secretary, should such be necessary. Your memorialist on the 28th October 1780 left Quebec with two Letters from His Excellency the Commander in Chief, to the Commanding Officer of Detroit one of which was under cover, with a flying seal, to your Predecessor General Powell as they so nearly concerned your memorialist he could wish that you had seen them.

Your memorialist when in Quebec . applied for an allowance of Bat and Forage from the time he went on service, but as none of the new Levies had received any, as he was told at Head quarters, he could not then expect it, since your memorialist arrived here, Capt Lamothe of the same corps came round from New York having received Bat & Forage as Captain of the Detroit Volunteers by virtue of Sir Henry Clinton's Order . through his Adj. General Major Delancey and even draws it here from time to time which is pass'd in the Public Accounts by order of the Commanding Officer. Your memorialist having applied to the commanding officer for his Proportion as a subaltern appointed by the same authority in that corps, to which application your memorialist received for answer that Capt. Lamothe had been on service in the Indian country since he came up last and that your memorialist acted as Secretary here, therefore could not have it; that he had also particular Instructions with regard to Captain Lamothe from the Brig. General. Your Memorialist receives his pay as Lieutenant by order of His Excellency the Commander in Chief and was continued in his office as secretary, he has been twice ordered into the Indian Country since he returned, as can be made to appear by the written Instructions in his possession. Your memorialist cannot conceive that altho' he acts as secretary he ought to lose any advantage he is entitled to as Lieut, which it is his Excellency's pleasure he should continue as such. Your memorialist therefore with great submission, Requests that you will take his case and long services, into consideration, and as he is equally entitled with his Captain to his proportion as Lieut, he humbly submits to your Justice the propriety of his claim. In reliance on which, your memorialist has the honor to be with great Respect

Your most obedient Humble Servant  
Detroit July 6h 1783. J. Schieffelin

[http://books.google.com/books?id=fxniAAAAAAJ&pg=PA585&dq=%22jacob+schiefflin%22&hl=en&ei=RF2NTMmYDYT48AbBsazpCW&sa=X&oi=book\\_result&ct=result&resnum=9&ved=0CE8Q6AEwCA#v=onepage&q=%22jacob%20schiefflin%22&f=false](http://books.google.com/books?id=fxniAAAAAAJ&pg=PA585&dq=%22jacob+schiefflin%22&hl=en&ei=RF2NTMmYDYT48AbBsazpCW&sa=X&oi=book_result&ct=result&resnum=9&ved=0CE8Q6AEwCA#v=onepage&q=%22jacob%20schiefflin%22&f=false) page 585.

#### MEMORIAL OF JACOB SCHIEFFLIN.

To His Excellency the Right Honourable Guy Lord Dorchester Captain General & Governor in Chief of the Colonies of Quebec, Nova Scotia, and New Brunswick & their Dependencies, Vice Admiral of the Same. &c. &c. &c.

The Memorial of Jonathan Schiefflin Gentleman late a Lieutenant in a Company of Detroit Volunteers.

Humbly Sheweth,

That Your Lordship's memorialist during the late contest between Great Britain and her Revolted Colonies, ever ready to support the unity of the Empire and the Rights of the Crown over her Rebel Subjects in the year 1777 abandoned his Home & embarked on an Expedition under the conduct and command of Heury Hamilton Esquire, heretofore Lieut Governor of the Province of Quebec against the Post of St. Vincents, a Rebel Garrison on the River Wabash, and was actually present at the surrender of the said Post to the British Flag; That your memorialist in the year 1780 was honored with a Commission of a Lieutenant of a company of Detroit Volunteers, under the command of Captain Joncaire Du Chabert to co-operate with a body of the Kings or 8 th & 47 th Regiments commanded by Capt Heury Bird on an Expedition into the Rebel Country on the other side of the River Ohio.

That the Zeal & Loyalty of your Lordship's Memorialist to his Sovereign was manifested on divers occasions in time of public danger & that he continued to serve as a Lieutenant in the said Volunteers until they were disbanded & honorably dismissed by Your Lordships Predecessor Sir Frederick Haldimand.

That on the first information of Your Lordship's having convened a Board of Field Officers to examine into the merits & pretensions of officers to half pay he embraced the earliest opportunity of addressing a memorial to Your Excellency which however he has reason to believe was never presented and have to this moment remained in total ignorance of the event thereof, although Joncaire Du Chabert Esqr who memorialled Your Lordship at the same period has been recommended & actually as your memorialist is informed receives half pay.

Your Lordship's Memorialist therefore humbly begs that after taking into your consideration the merits of his past services you will be pleased to grant him half Pay or such reward as Your Excellency in your great wisdom and benevolence shall think meet.

And as in duty bound shall ever pray &c

J. SCHIEFFLIN

Detroit 20th August 1790

<http://www.fundinguniverse.com/company-histories/Schieffelin-amp--Somerset-Co-Company-History.html>

#### Company History:

Operating out of New York City, Schieffelin & Somerset Co. (S&S) is a major American importer of premium wines and spirits, maintaining regional centers in California, Florida, Georgia, Illinois, Massachusetts, New Jersey, and Texas. The S&S portfolio includes such prestigious brands as Hennessy, Dom Perignon, Moët & Chandon, Chandon Estates, Tanqueray, Johnnie Walker, Grand Marnier, J&B, Pinch, Buchanan's, The Classic Malts, Rufino, and Casa Lapostolle. The company is co-owned by Diageo PLC and Moët Hennessy Louis Vuitton (LVMH). S&S is one of the United States' five oldest continuously operating companies.

#### Tracing Company Roots Back to Colonial America

Although the Somerset portion of S&S is only 40 years old, the Schieffelin side dates back to the foundation of the United States to a man named **Jacob Schieffelin**, who if given the choice would not have had the republic come into existence at all. Schieffelin was born in 1857, the son of a German immigrant who settled in Philadelphia in 1745. During the Revolutionary War he remained loyal to the Crown of England and served in the loyalist army. Captured in 1779 he was imprisoned in Virginia before escaping to New York--which was held by the British--and then following the English army to Canada. In Montreal he became a merchant and importer, and after the war he returned to the States, settling in New York, where in 1894 he bought out the business of a brother-in-law, Effingham Lawrence, who had been a New York drug merchant since 1781. Schieffelin then took into partnership another brother-in-law, John B. Lawrence, and established Lawrence & Schieffelin, the distant ancestor to today's Schieffelin & Somerset. The pharmaceutical business that Schieffelin entered was in its infancy. At the time, pharmacists had no standing, and most physicians mixed their own medicines and even rolled their own pills. Lawrence & Schieffelin served as a wholesaler to druggist's shops, which did little more than supply raw materials to physicians, and also sold items such as varnish, paint ingredients, and glass. The first college of pharmacy was founded in 1821 in Philadelphia, and it was not until this period that the line between retail and wholesale druggists became blurred, as prescriptions began to be filled by trained pharmacists.

Located on Pearl Street in lower Manhattan, Lawrence & Schieffelin not only bought, sold, and imported drugs and medicines, it also traded fancy goods, perfumes, and other merchandise. Schieffelin dominated the company and was instrumental in the firm becoming involved in lucrative, yet risky, shipping ventures. His first such investment in 1795 netted a princely sum of \$25,000. A few years later, as Napoleon entered the world stage and France and England were trying to deny the other's trade with the United States, the shipping business became highly dangerous. Some of Schieffelin's ships were captured, prompting Lawrence in 1799 to strike out on his own, leaving the firm to change its name to Lawrence Schieffelin. In 1805, it would become Jacob Schieffelin & Son when Henry Hamilton Schieffelin was taken into partnership. (The younger Schieffelin was a graduate of Columbia College in 1801 and then studied law with a prominent New York attorney. By all accounts he was something of a renaissance man, versed in most of the arts and sciences, regarded as a "living encyclopedia.") Again, Schieffelin did not limit his activities to drugs and medicines. Old newspaper advertisements indicate that the firm dealt in "Muscovado sugars," "coffee in hogsheads," cotton from Guadaloupe, "double refined saltpeter," brimstone, and even gunpowder. The elder Schieffelin remained the head of the business through the

War of 1812. Despite the loss of two ships, one seized by the French in Amsterdam and another by the English in the West Indies, the firm was able to carry on. In 1814 Schieffelin retired (he died in 1835) and son Henry took over the business, which for the next 35 years would be called H.H. Schieffelin & Co. . .

[http://haldimand-collection.ca/?page\\_id=1393](http://haldimand-collection.ca/?page_id=1393)

Correspondence with Brigadier General Sir John Johnson, 1782 – 1784.

11 Oct 1783 – Detroit – McKee to Sir John Johnson: Giving notice that Jacob Schiefflin has obtained, in a clandestine manner, a deed from a few drunken Indians for a tract of land at the mouth of the Detroit. A number of officers and loyalists want land to settle there, hut Schieffiin's object is speculation. Hopes that tho deed will not be confirmed.

[http://books.google.com/books?id=qYMOAAAYAAJ&pg=PA13&dq=%22jacob+schiefflin%22&hl=en&ei=TQ6NTOzpLIOB8qaC6JXhCg&sa=X&oi=book\\_result&ct=result&resnum=2&ved=0CC8Q6AEwAQ#v=onepage&q=%22jacob%20schiefflin%22&f=false](http://books.google.com/books?id=qYMOAAAYAAJ&pg=PA13&dq=%22jacob+schiefflin%22&hl=en&ei=TQ6NTOzpLIOB8qaC6JXhCg&sa=X&oi=book_result&ct=result&resnum=2&ved=0CC8Q6AEwAQ#v=onepage&q=%22jacob%20schiefflin%22&f=false) pg 13.

In conversation with Mr. C. M. Burton, President of the " Michigan Pioneer and Historical Society," in Detroit, a few days ago, I mentioned that the first grant of land for what is now the Township of Maiden was made by the Huron and Ottawa Indians, on June 7th, 1784, to British officers or fighters, who had been associated with them in the recent war, namely, Alexander McKee, William Caldwell, Charles McCormack, Robin Eurphleet, Anthony St. Martin, Mathew Elliott, Henry Bird, Thomas McKee, and Simon Girty, and that the grant was afterwards confirmed by the crown.

He said that I was in error—that there was a prior grant by the Indians to Lieut. Jacob Schiefflin, of the British Army, but that the grant was not confirmed by the crown on account of some irregularities. Even the Indians themselves who signed the deed objected to its confirmation when they became sober.

Lieut. Schiefflin, however, did not relinquish his claim without a long and determined effort to have it held valid. The matter led to much correspondence, and was the subject of a thorough investigation.

Mr. Burton was kind enough to permit a copy to be made of his copy that was made from the original, which he had in his possession at one time, and will, perhaps, be of interest:

DETROIT, 16th October, 1783.

KNOW ALL MEN BY THESE PRESENTS, That we, the principal village chiefs, and war chiefs of the Ottawa nation, residing near Detroit, for and in consideration of our affection and esteem which we the said chiefs have and bear unto Lieut . Jacob Schiefflin, of the District of Detroit, as also for the better support, livelihood, and preferment of him, the said Lieut . Jacob Schiefflin, have given, granted, delineated, feoffed, and confirmed, and by these presents, do give, grant, alien, feoff, and confirm unto the said Lieut. Jacob Schiefflin, his heirs and assigns, all that tract of land of seven miles in front, and seven miles in depth, bearing the same width throughout, and lying and situate on the south side of the Detroit River, and opposite the island called the Isle Aux Bois Blanc, near the mouth of the said river, bounded on the front by the Detroit River, on the rear by unlocated lands, on the north-east side by unlocated lands; along Lake Erie the front of said tract is partly bounded by Lake Erie. Together with all and singular lands, tenements, meadows, pastures, feedings, woods, trees, underwoods, commons of pastures ways, paths, passages, waters, water-courses, easements, profits, commodities, royalties,, privileges, franchises, liberties, advantages, emoluments, hereditaments, and appurtenances, whatsoever to the said tract of land and premises hereby mentioned and intended to be granted and confirmed unto the said Lieut. Jacob Schiefflin as aforesaid, or any part and parcel thereof, belonging to br in any wise appertaining or therewithal commonly held, used, occupied or enjoyed or accepted,, reputed, taken or known, as part or parcel of or belonging to the same, and reversion and reversions, or remainder, rents, services, issues, and profits of all and singular, the estate, right, title, interest, property claim, or demand whatsoever of us, the said chiefs of and to the said capital, lands, tenements, and premises, and of in and to, every part and parcel thereof:

To HAVE AND TO HOLD the said capital, lands, tenements, hereditaments, and all and singular other the premises hereby granted, and confirmed or mentioned, or intended so to be, them or their appurtenances under the said Lieut. Jacob Schiefflin, his heirs and assigns, for the only proper use and behoof, of the said Lieut. Jacob Schiefflin, his heirs and assigns forever, and the said chiefs for themselves, their nations, their heirs, and successors, do covenant, grant, and agree, to and with the said Lieut . Jacob Schiefflin, his heirs and assigns, that they shall, and lawfully may from henceforth, from time to time, and at all times peaceably and quietly, have, hold, use, occupy, possess, and enjoy the said capital, lands, tenements, hereditaments, and premises, hereby given and confirmed, with their and every of their appurtenances, free,, clear, and fully discharged, or well and sufficiently saved, kept harmless .and undiminished, of, from and against all former and other gifts, grants, bargains, sales, jointures, feoffments, dowers, estates, entails, rents, rent charges, statutes, judgments, recognizances, execution, statute merchant, and of staple extents, and of, from and against all and other uses, troubles, charges, and encumbrances whatsoever, had done or suffered, or to be had done or suffered, by them, or we, the said chiefs of the Ottawa nation, their heirs, successors or assigns, or any other person or persons carefully claiming or to claim, by, from or under them, or any of them.

IN WITNESS WHEREOF, we, the several chiefs, have hereunto affixed our hands and seals, at Detroit, the 13th day of October, 1783, one thousand seven hundred and eighty-three:

Sealed and delivered in presence of witnesses:  
CICOT,  
FRANCOIS LAFONTAINE,  
ARCHIBALD THOMSON,  
J. PORTIER BENAC.  
DAVID GRAY,

KENITCHENINE	(Seal)	Eagle Tribe.
NECANIGO	"	Fork.
NEGIO	"	Sturgeon.
ROGUASH	"	Sturgeon.
CHEMENINTONA	"	Sturgeon.
ASSOGAWSO	"	Bear.
OKILHAVANAN	"	Wolf.

YOU will, of course, have noticed that the description in this grant is in some particulars ambiguous, but taken in its entirety it is easily understood. It lacks nothing in legal form, and is probably the first conveyance of land in South Essex, as it is prior to the grant mentioned in Mr. C. C. James' "Early History of the Town of Amherstburg," by about eight months.

-----

**Johannes Wilhelmus von der Schmall** – b. 1756; 1782, Initiated St. John's Lodge No. 4, PGL NY; settled in Bedeque area of Prince Edward Island; d. 1830.

<http://www.archives.pe.ca/peia/fondsdetail.php3?number=1030124&lang=E&fonds=Acc2968>

United Empire Loyalist John Small, or "Johannes Wilhelmus Von der Schmall" was born in Philadelphia in 1756 to Johannes Wilhelmus (1731-1795) and Mary (?-1782) Von der Schmall. He entered the Bridgemaster's Department under Robert Fenwick, Captain of Artillery on 15 June 1778 and saw action during the American War of Independence at various locations such as Schulykil, Kingsferry, Fort Muterry, etc. Leaving New York on the 12 July 1783, John arrived in St. John, New Brunswick fourteen days later. He was given a grant of land and established a home in Carleton. Small married Jemime Ogden on the 6 November 1785, who died soon after the birth of their first son John Small Junior (1787-1876). On the 11 June 1790, John arrived at Bedeque, Prince Edward Island. He worked as a shipwright and built schooners and flats for the Schurman, Darby, Chappel, Baker, Mabey, Owen, and Green families. In 1803 he married Frances Brimble, daughter of loyalists Sarah Brimble and Benjamin Darby. They had one daughter Sarah (1804-1908). John was a freemason, initiated in New York in May 1783. He had at least one brother, Thomas, who lived in the Miramichi region of New Brunswick. John died on the 18 December 1830. He and Fanny are buried in unmarked graves on their farm in Bedeque.

<http://www.freemasonry.pe.ca/modules/xfsection/article.php?articleid=272>

There were Freemasons among the groups of British Loyalists who settled on St. John's Island following the American Revolution. One of the Loyalists of German decent was Johannes Wilhelmus von der Schmall. He settled in the Bedeque area where he was known as John Small. In his diary under date 10 Jul 1782 he wrote "I was made a brother in the Most Right and Honourable St. John's Lodge in New York." Bro. Schmall was the great, great grandfather of V.W.Bro. A. Ennis Small and M.W.Bro. J. Bruce Small PGM. and the great, great, great grandfather of W.Bro. Keith Small PM all of Hiram and Lebanon Lodge No. 3.

W.Bro. A. Ennis Small PM was honoured by Grand Lodge as Mason of the Year in 1988 in recognition of his service as Secretary for eleven years (1977-1988). Bro. Small is in possession of perhaps the oldest piece of Masonic woodcraft in the Jurisdiction. The item in the form of an ornamental wall-shelf was crafted by Bro. Johannes Wilhelmus von der Schmall (1756-1830) the great, great grandfather of V.W.Bro. A. Ennis Small and M.W.Bro. J. Bruce Small PGM. The piece was hand crafted with a knife from a single piece of wood and measures approximately 10" X 18". It features several of the Masonic emblems including Square and Compasses, open Bible, acacia, hour glass, trowel, plumb, level, twenty-four inch gauge, pillars and letter G. The item once appeared in an auction sale and was acquired by Bro. Hugh Smith PM of Alexandra Lodge No. 5 who gave it to Bro. Small thus enabling it to remain in the family. Bro. Small also has a Masonic Apron belonging to Bro. Schmall. (Interview with Bro. Small June 13, 2000) Bro Schmall, who was of German ancestry, came to the Island as a Loyalist following the Revolutionary War and settled in the Bedeque area. He had been 'made a brother' in New York in 1782. (Gordon, p. 10) Mrs. Vaniah Milligan has a copy of Bro. Schmall's Demit that was issued by the Lodge in New York. (Gordon File)

<http://www.ancestraltrails.ca/walker%20for%20web-o/p863.htm#i71355>

**Johannes Willelmus von Der Schmall**, b. 1731, d. 1795; m. Mary Small d. 29 Dec 1782

Children

John Small b. 1756, d. 18 Dec 1830

Thomas Small b. 1776, d. 14 Aug 1851

-----

**Alexander Selkrig** – . Glasgow, Scotland; 1775, Lodge No. 169 E.R. (A), Boston; Glasgow; 1776, Lodge No. 169 (A), New York; 1776, Halifax; 1779-84, Lodge of Hope NO. 4 E.R. London, England; 1784, visitor Solomon's Lodge No. 14, PGL Shelburne, NS.

[http://books.google.com/books?id=2FhdYdLnkoC&pg=PA145&lpg=PA145&dq=%22Alexander+selkrig%22&source=bl&ots=aLCJLdRyzY&sig=iDd6MRs\\_Uu4MV2318JcrFU1tBkE&hl=en&ei=R32NTLOYE4KdlqfaxNlg&sa=X&oi=book\\_result&ct=result&resnum=2&ved=0CBQQ6AEwATgK#v=onepage&q=%22Alexander%20selkrig%22&f=false](http://books.google.com/books?id=2FhdYdLnkoC&pg=PA145&lpg=PA145&dq=%22Alexander+selkrig%22&source=bl&ots=aLCJLdRyzY&sig=iDd6MRs_Uu4MV2318JcrFU1tBkE&hl=en&ei=R32NTLOYE4KdlqfaxNlg&sa=X&oi=book_result&ct=result&resnum=2&ved=0CBQQ6AEwATgK#v=onepage&q=%22Alexander%20selkrig%22&f=false) page 145.

Memorial of Alexander Selkrig – 26<sup>th</sup> of June 1784

Alexander Selkrig – the Claimant- sworn - Is a Native of Glasgow & went from Glasgow to America in 176. He went to carry on trade. He was fix'd in business in partnership with his Brother [James] at Boston when the troubles commenced. He & his Brother sold Dry Goods. He took the Govt side. He left Boston the 2d of Feby 1775 & came home to Glasgow. He staid in Great Britain 1776 & then went out to New York. His Brother was a Loyalist & was obliged to leave Boston at the Evacuation. His Brother is since dad – in Jany last.

He claims for nothing but Debts which as he says are about L5,500 S. He does not know that the House owed L20. These consist of Notes of hand & Book Debts.

He says he is a Bankrupt & has gone thro' the whole of his Examination & he disclosed this to the Commisrs. He says he is sensible that this belongs to the Creditors but the Assignees have appointed him to receive & collect these Debts & he apprehends there will be an Overplus. His Brother has left a Widow & 2 sons.

-----

## Justus Sherwood –

[http://www.ripnet.com/sites/colonel\\_edward\\_jessup/uel\\_col\\_j/justus\\_sherwood\\_loyalist\\_spy.html](http://www.ripnet.com/sites/colonel_edward_jessup/uel_col_j/justus_sherwood_loyalist_spy.html)

An Augusta Loyalist with more than an average involvement in the Revolution, Justus Sherwood made major contributions to the building of the new country which was to become Canada. The Sherwood family left England for America in 1634, settling in Connecticut, where Justus, his father and grandfather were born. By 1772, at the age of 25, Justus moved to Vermont and then settled on a New Hampshire land grant, in New Haven Township. His trade of surveyor was much in demand. He was soon a leader in the community.

He married **Sarah Bothum** [sister of **Bro. Elijah Bottum/Bothum**] in 1774 and eventually they had six children; Diana, Sarah, Samuel, Levius, Harriet and Sophia. Justus was one of Ethan Allen's "Green Mountain Boys", a rugged lot. Justus remained loyal to Britain and was imprisoned for about a month in the Simsbury Mines. He escaped before he was sentenced to life imprisonment. He left his family, making his way through approximately 200 miles of wilderness to join Carleton at Crown Point, October, 1776. Later his wife and two children joined him.

His house had been ransacked and many of his possessions destroyed. It was rumoured that Justus had hidden the town records in an iron pot, covered it with a potash kettle and buried it on his farm. The records apparently never found. He planted an orchard that survived long after he had left the country. By the time of the outbreak of the Revolution, Justus had acquired close to 3,000 acres of land. Before leaving to join the British forces, he transferred 50 acres to his father-in-law to prevent confiscation and this land was still owned by the Bottum family in 1955.

Governor Haldimand (Quebec) appointed Justus a Commissioner of Prisoners (Exchanges) and Refugees and he was in charge of sending out all scouting parties from Isle aux Noir, and all the scouts around Lake Champlain were under him. He was also ordered to build a post at the Northern end of Lake Champlain, known as the Loyal Blockhouse.

At the close of the war, Justus made a trip to the Maritimes and later to Cataraqui and the Bay of Quinte areas searching for land suitable for the settlement of the Loyalist soldiers and their families. He received a grant of farm land in Augusta Township, along the St. Lawrence River. Because of his rank and services, he was granted 3,000 acres with some being in Oxford township along with that close to the river. There was a violent struggle between New York and New Hampshire over the land grants which is now Vermont. Haldimand had negotiations with Ethan Allen, trying to keep Vermont loyal to Britain.

Justus was a Captain in the Queen's Loyal Rangers serving in the same unit as his cousin, **Thomas Sherwood**, his brother-in-law, **Elijah Bothum** and a Lieutenant John Dulmage. With a re-organization of the Provincial Corps in 1781, Sherwood was under Jessup's command as a Captain in the Jessup's Rangers. He later settled in Augusta Township (Maynard) with his family and a Negro servant, Ceasar Congo.

Ceasar Congo served as Sarah's house servant and had assisted her on her trek from Vermont to the army outpost during the war. He stood by her when the men escorting her had abandoned them as they neared the fort for fear of capture by the British. In the new settlement, he helped build their log cabin while Justus was away attending to allotting land to the disbanded troops. Justus and Sarah's first son, Samuel, was born before the war began, sent to school in Montreal when they lived at the army post. He became a lawyer in Prescott and Montreal. The eldest daughter, born during the conflict, married Samuel Smades, an Augusta farmer.

Shortly after making the dangerous journey from Vermont, Sarah gave birth to a second son, Levius Peters, who also became a lawyer. In addition, he was Lieutenant-Colonel of the 1st Leeds Militia, member for Leeds in the Assembly, Judge of the Court of the King's Bench for Upper Canada and Speaker for the Legislative Council of Upper and Lower Canada. Levius married Charlotte, daughter of Ephraim Jones and Charlotte Coursel. Three daughters were born in Augusta-Sarah who married Augusta farmer, Andrew McCollum; Harriet, wife of Dr. Benjamin Trask of Montreal and Sophia, who after marrying Jonathan Jones, died at the age of 22 years.

Colonel Jessup was often absent for long periods of time either due to illness or business which often took him to England. Justus was left to run the affairs of the settlement. He became the founder of the Township of Augusta's first hamlet. In 1784, June 5th, Justus laid out the town. He was also involved in the lumber trade.

Having endured imprisonment, secret service work, small pox and many hardships, Justus died in 1798 at 51 years of age. He fell off a raft and drown in the St. Lawrence River near Trois Rivieres. It was thought that he may have suffered a heart attack, as with his agility it was not very likely that he had accidentally fallen off the raft.

Sarah sold the farm to Levius. Leaving the house they had built on the property where the Blue Church stands, she went to Montreal to live with her daughter, Harriot. Succeeding generations of this Sherwood family have carried on the tradition of leadership in law and government positions found in their Loyalist ancestors.

Justus Sherwood certainly led a very tough life full of excitement, intrigue, adventure and hardships. He also was a surveyor. He was courageous, determined, hard working, dependable, generous, intelligent and a first rate soldier.

<http://archiver.rootsweb.ancestry.com/th/read/UPPER-CANADA/2000-02/0950948283>

Justus Sherwood became a Loyalist Spy. Mary Beacock Fryer wrote a book called the "Buckskin Pimpernel" The following excerpt, which is taken directly from this book, of interest: Ref.

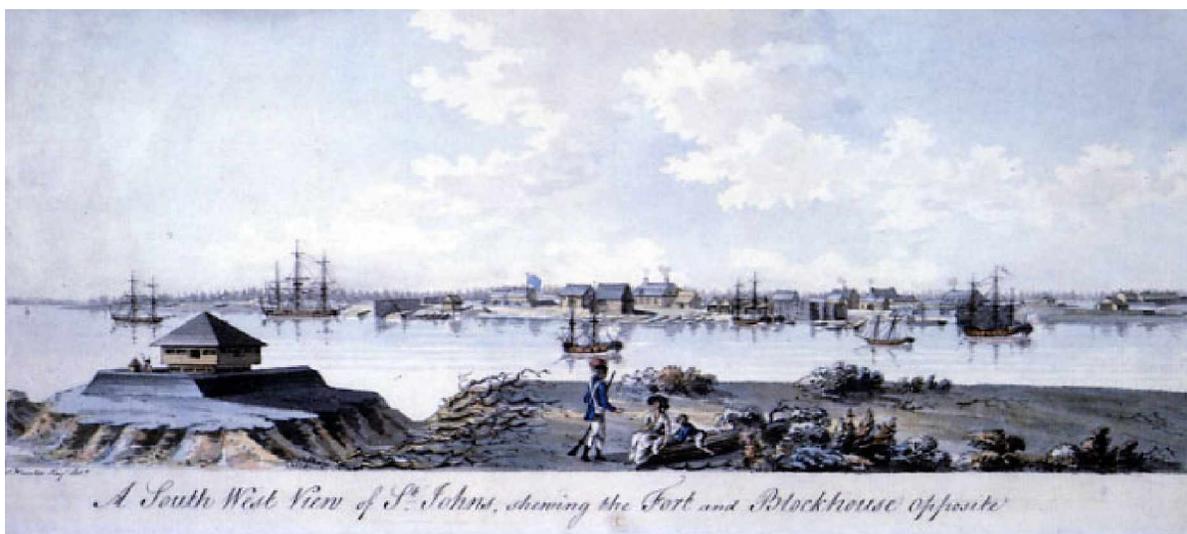
[http://books.google.com/books?id=O0ruwA1DqaoC&printsec=frontcover&dq=%22Buckskin+Pimpernel%22&source=bl&ots=qTZFAp3PUj&sig=f5YpYxgKwMnBq2T1J5AesMsBW1o&hl=en&ei=kCeETP3yCcXflge9tOQy&sa=X&oi=book\\_result&ct=result&resnum=1&ved=0CBoQ6AEwAA#v=onepage&q&f=false](http://books.google.com/books?id=O0ruwA1DqaoC&printsec=frontcover&dq=%22Buckskin+Pimpernel%22&source=bl&ots=qTZFAp3PUj&sig=f5YpYxgKwMnBq2T1J5AesMsBW1o&hl=en&ei=kCeETP3yCcXflge9tOQy&sa=X&oi=book_result&ct=result&resnum=1&ved=0CBoQ6AEwAA#v=onepage&q&f=false)

"On October 4, 1777....Towards dusk the Queen's Loyal Rangers and the other provincials were sent to reinforce Colonel von Breyman --- the officer who had been leading the reinforcements near Bennington --- at a redoubt on the north side of the British camp. The Germans were under attack by the Kentuckian Daniel Morgan and his corps of rifleman, and a few snipers of provincials

might help turn the tide. As night fell the rebels overran the men at von Breymann's redoubt. Justus was ordering his men back within the camp when he felt hot iron pierce his thigh and he staggered and lost his balance. Lieutenant John Dulmage, swimming before his eyes, aided by a German soldier, was lifting him from the redoubt. As the second Battle of Freeman's Farm was ending, Dulmage, aided by men from the company, carried Justus past Burgoyne's own headquarters to the hospital tents on the north side of the camp, near the bank of the Hudson where the provision of bateaux were tied up.

The hospital was a madhouse of shrieking men, surgeons sawing shattered limbs on tables slimy with blood. Dulmage found an empty straw palliase, and joined by Thomas Sherwood and Elijah Bothum, both very alarmed, they laid Justus down gently. With a knife his lieutenant cut away the breeches from around the bloody hole. In his agony Justus heard John say that he had stopped a musket ball but the bone was intact. Elijah brought a tumbler full of rum, which Justus sipped while awaiting a surgeon to attend to him. Dulmage left to look after the company, while Thomas and Elijah sat with Justus and held him steady until the surgeon had extracted the ball. With teeth clenched, Justus wondered why the rum was doing so little good.

Throughout the night Justus lay comforted by more doses of rum. In the morning **Thomas Sherwood** came in, and on asking about Brigadier Fraser, Justus was saddened to learn that he had died before dawn at the house where the Baroness von Riedesel was staying. The army's present predicament was not Fraser's doing. After a moment's silence Thomas reported that Burgoyne had ordered a withdrawal up the Hudson. The vanguard was leaving, although rain teemed down, beating on the walls of the tent. Outside the road was a sea of mud, guns towed by emaciated horses and oxen, pushed by men who had scarcely the strength to walk, let alone salvage the artillery. The most severely wounded men would be left behind, but John Dulmage had men making a litter for Justus. All refused to forsake their captain."



[http://www.uelac.org/education/QuebecResource/Chapters/The\\_Sherwood\\_Family.html](http://www.uelac.org/education/QuebecResource/Chapters/The_Sherwood_Family.html)

#### THE SHERWOOD FAMILY

After his home was invaded by a group of his Patriot neighbours and he narrowly escaped a sentence of life imprisonment for his political beliefs, Justus Sherwood served in the Loyalist forces, negotiated with Patriots on behalf of the British, was involved in secret service activities, and ultimately was a leader of Loyalist settlers in what became Upper Canada.

Sherwood was born in Newtown, Connecticut on 7 March 1747, the tenth child of John and Hannah Sherwood. He moved to Vermont about 1771 and married Sarah Bottum about 1774. They had three daughters and two sons.

He was a frontier farmer, dedicated to his family, community and king. He knew, and sympathized with, Ethan Allen and his Green Mountain Boys who carried on a long struggle to attain Vermont's independence from New York. He did not however, support their revolutionary activities. As a result, in 1776, local Patriots raided his home, destroyed his belongings, and arrested him. After a revolutionary court condemned him to life imprisonment in Simsbury Mines in Connecticut, he escaped and fled to Bennington where his wife had gone to be with her family. Here he spoke out against the rebels who subsequently captured him and had him publicly flogged.

In 1777, he made a getaway, this time with a group of Loyalists among whom was his cousin, Thomas. They went to Crown Point where they met Sir Guy Carleton who assisted them in reaching Quebec. The next year, he and Thomas joined the Queen's Loyal Rangers under the command of Colonel John Peters. After the regiment's defeat at Saratoga, Justus spent three years with his wife and family at St. John's, Quebec doing secret service work. Thomas was also living at St. John's with his family, including his son, Reuben, who enlisted in the Loyal Rangers in 1782 at age 14. Thomas was a scout for the British at this time, as well.

In 1780, Governor General Frederick Haldimand sent Justus back to Vermont to negotiate with Ethan Allen for the exchange of prisoners and the eventual return of Vermont to the British Empire. The British defeat at Yorktown destroyed whatever feeble hope there was for reconciliation, although Sherwood seems to have continued on good terms with the Allens.

For the next two years, Justus Sherwood continued to carry out intelligence work in Northern New York and New England. The Treaty of Paris, which officially brought peace, found Sherwood involved in settling Loyalists in what was left of British North America.

He carried out an extensive inspection of the Gaspé shoreline as far as New Brunswick and, in 1783 led a party of Loyalists to the Kingston-Bay of Quinte area where he began the surveys of the new townships. Reuben Sherwood was one of his assistants.

The decision to open the area along the St. Lawrence west of Montreal is a reflection of adamant opposition to any plan to locate Loyalists on the seigneuries of Quebec. Loyalists preferred settling on the new lands to the west. Thomas Sherwood's family also settled in the new townships along the St., Lawrence. Reuben received 200 acres in Elizabeth Township as a veteran and began clearing land and building timber rafts with his father and cousin, Justus.

By 1785, Justus had installed his family on a new farm in Augusta Township, just west of present-day Prescott. By 1792, he had constructed a grist mill on one of his properties. He served as Land Commissioner for Lunenburg District and Justice of the Peace. He died in the summer of 1798 at Trois Rivières while taking one of the timber rafts to Quebec.

Reuben served as captain of guides on the St. Lawrence during the War of 1812. In February 1813, Americans raided Brockville and captured approximately 50 men including his younger brother, Adiel, a captain in the Leeds Militia. Through trickery, Reuben was able to capture two American officers and arrange for the release of his brother and another officer in exchange for their release.

For many years, Reuben earned his living as a government surveyor. His survey records are preserved in the Archives of Ontario.

Originally published in United Empire Loyalists- Pioneers and Settlers, A Teacher's Resource. For further information: Fryer, Mary Beacock, Buckskin Pimpernel – The Exploits of Justus Sherwood, Loyalist Spy, Toronto: Dundurn Press, 1981

-----

**Thomas Sherwood** – Jessup's Corps; 1776, St. John's, Lower Canada; 1787, New Oswegatchie Lodge No. 7, PGL New York; New Oswegatchie Lodge No. 14, PGL Quebec; 1789 Master.

[http://books.google.com/books?id=sxprqtyjLF0C&pg=PA289&lpg=PA289&dq=%22thomas+sherwood%22+%22oswegatchie%22&source=bl&ots=8UQE3dzdnB&sig=RKkDM9DbfkAyYo4qIbbqYbm80XI&hl=en&ei=tYeNTN7qKIP6lweaqp1i&sa=X&oi=book\\_result&ct=result&resnum=1&sqi=2&ved=0CBIQ6AEwAA#v=onepage&q=%22thomas%20sherwood%22%20%22oswegatchie%22&f=false](http://books.google.com/books?id=sxprqtyjLF0C&pg=PA289&lpg=PA289&dq=%22thomas+sherwood%22+%22oswegatchie%22&source=bl&ots=8UQE3dzdnB&sig=RKkDM9DbfkAyYo4qIbbqYbm80XI&hl=en&ei=tYeNTN7qKIP6lweaqp1i&sa=X&oi=book_result&ct=result&resnum=1&sqi=2&ved=0CBIQ6AEwAA#v=onepage&q=%22thomas%20sherwood%22%20%22oswegatchie%22&f=false) page 289.

Further evidence that the lodge was a military one is furnished by a letter to Mr. Adiel Sherwood, son of Bro. Thomas Sherwood, to Dr. Canniff, of Toronto, which is quoted later on.

In February, 1789, at a regular meeting of the lodge the minutes state, "proceeded to make a return to the Grand Lodge from July to December 27th, 1788." This is the first allusion to a Grand Lodge, which must have been that at Quebec.

At the meeting of 9th February, 1790, another entry of importance occurs. It was "voted that Br. Secretary make a return of the proceedings and forward it, together with all arrears due to the Grand Lodge, as also a letter requesting to be numbered on the warrant of Establishment for this Lodge."

This minute refers to the Grand Lodge at Quebec. The request to be numbered is not intelligible, unless it meant that the lodge desired to have the original notation of No. 7 changed to its proper number on the register of the Provincial Grand Lodge. Against this, however, is the fact that in an official list of the provincial lodges, dated 1787, New Oswegatchie is No. 14, and in another list it is given as No. 520 on the register of the Grand Lodge of England. The minute book of the lodge concludes with the record of the meeting of 13th September, 1791.

There was quite a number of half-pay British officers in the lodge. They knew that the lodge was of American origin, and consequently made application to the Grand Lodge of England (Moderns) for a new warrant, which was issued in 1786. The local number of the lodge, Bro. Adiel Sherwood stated, was "No. 2," and was styled "Harmony lodge." The first thirty-five pages of the minute book are devoted to the records of New Oswegatchie, but on the thirty-sixth page is a memo, of an account of "Harmony Masonic Lodge, Dr. 1839 to Bro. Wm. W. Howard for expenses of sd. lodge and clearances from Farmersville, £8 15 0." This village was in the township of Yonge, county of Leeds. It is said that the lodge was continued here, and was eventually broken up through the introduction of political feeling.

In the same book are the minutes of lodge No. 13, in the county of Leeds, on the register of the Provincial Grand Lodge of Upper Canada under R. W. Bro. William Jarvis. The first minutes were those of a meeting held in Elizabethtown, a township in the county of Leeds, at the house of **Thomas Sherwood**. Elizabethtown was named after Elizabeth, one of the fifteen children of George III. The members of the Sherwood family were enthusiastic Masons. At the conclusion of the revolutionary war, in 1783, the first settlers in Upper Canada, and especially the counties of Leeds and Grenville, were ex-soldiers of the provincial military regiments, which, under Major Jessup, of "The Royal Rangers," and Major Rogers, of "Rogers' Rangers," had been stationed at the frontier post of St. John's, twenty-seven miles from Montreal, on the south side of the River St. Lawrence. About June of 1784. these settlers came up, and located on the banks of the St. Lawrence, a short distance west of the provincial line, and along the shores of the Bay of Quinte.

**Thomas Sherwood**, at whose house the first meeting, of which we have record, was held, was the first settler in the county of Leeds. His house was on lot No. 1, in the first concession of Elizabethtown, and was built in June of 1784. He was one of a family of **three brothers, Seth, Thomas, and Adiel Sherwood**. **Thomas** was a native of old Stratford, Connecticut, and was born in 1745. He emigrated to the State of New York, and located on a farm five miles north of Fort Edward, a short distance from the spot where Burgoyne surrendered. At the beginning of the American revolution, **Thomas Sherwood** remained loyal to Britain, made his way to St. John's, Lower Canada, where he was employed by the military authorities in secret work, going into the United States to enlist men for the service of George III.

The Sherwood family, in 1779, removed from the States to St John's, and **Thomas Sherwood** received a commission as a subaltern in Major Jessup's corps. Both his brothers entered the revolutionary army as officers. **Thomas Sherwood** was made captain of the first provincial regiment raised in Leeds, and received the first commission issued to a magistrate in that county. At that early period, magistrates were legally qualified to perform the marriage ceremony, and **Bro. Sherwood** probably united in the holy bonds more individuals than even the regularly licensed clergyman.

There is no trace of the initiation of Thomas, but his brothers, **Seth and Adiel, were initiated in Master's lodge, which was warranted 5th March, 1768, at Albany, NY.** The lodge opened for work on 4th April, 1768, and in 1776 the brothers, **Seth and Adiel, were duly initiated** into the mysteries of Freemasonry.

Adiel Sherwood was one of the leading men of the Johnstown district, and filled the positions of colonel in the first regiment of Leeds, military paymaster, treasurer, and finally sheriff of the district. We hear of his Masonic connection at a much later date. In alluding, however, to the first Craft lodge, Adiel Sherwood writes to Dr. Canniff. of Toronto, the author of "The Settlement of Upper Canada." as follows:

"The first Lodge of Freemasons that I am aware of, was held in the township of Elizabethtown, near Brockville. I am unable to give the precise date. The members consisted principally of half-pay officers, who were located along the bank of the St. Lawrence. I understood that they met under a travelling warrant. It was some years after the settlement of the Province that the regular organization of the fraternity took place. I believe it was accomplished by Mr. Jarvis, who came out as Secretary of the Province, and acted under the appointment of the Duke of Sussex, then Grand Master. Mr. Jarvis assuming the duties of Provincial Grand Master, and issuing the necessary warrants."

(Signed) "Adiel Sherwood."

Adiel Sherwood refers in this letter to the lodge of which his father was a member. Young Adiel, for he was only a boy of eight years of age in 1787, had, up to the time of his death an excellent memory, and his statement as to the lodge meeting is borne out by the MSS. extant. He was born at Fort Edward, New York, on the 16th May 1770. was brought to St. John's, in Lower Canada, while at his mother's breast, and, at five years of age, removed to the banks of the St. Lawrence, saw the first tree cut down in the united counties of Leeds and Grenville, and the first hill of corn and potatoes planted. In 1800 he was a member of the Craft, and lodge No. 13, under the Jarvis regime, met at his house. In writing Bro. Sherwood speaks of the lodge as working under "a travelling warrant." This is further confirmation that the warrant alluded to was that of New Oswegatchie, for it met at different places in Elizabethtown and Augusta. There is no evidence in the MSS. of meetings earlier than 1787. If the meeting had been for organization, some reference would have been made to the fact. The minutes, which are also reproduced in fac simile, read:

"Tuesday, October 10th, 1787. New Oswegatchie Lodge Assembled at the house of **Ensign Thos. Sherwood**, in Elizabethtown, and opened in due form at 6 o'clock P.M.

"Present. John Jones, Esq., Master, Ensign William Buell, Sen. Warden, Brother Caleb Closson, as Jun. Warden, Ensign David Breakenridge, acting Secre'y, Brother George Campbell, acting Tyler, Capt. Samuel Wright, **Ensign Thomas Sherwood**, Brother Jeremiah McArthur, Visitor.

<http://wc.rootsweb.ancestry.com/cgi-bin/igm.cgi?op=GET&db=spaceman34&id=16540>

Thomas SHERWOOD b. 1745 in Stratford, Fairfield, CT; d. Dec 1826 in Brockville, Leeds, Ontario, Canada; son of [Seth SHERWOOD](#) b: 18 Jun 1720 in Stratfield, Fairfield, CT, and [Sarah PITCHER](#) b: 20 Aug 1728 in Norwich, CT; m. ca 1788 [Anna BROWNSON](#) b: ca 1757 in Stratford, Fairfield, CT

Children:

1. [Adiel SHERWOOD](#) b: 16 May 1779 in Fort Edwards, Washington, NY
2. [James SHERWOOD](#) b: Sep 1784 in Elizabethtown, Leeds, Ontario, Canada
3. [Seth SHERWOOD](#) b: ca 1786 in Elizabethtown, Leeds, Ontario, Canada
4. [Lois SHERWOOD](#) b: ca 1788 in Elizabethtown, Leeds, Ontario, Canada; **Bemslee BUELL** b. 22 Sep 1765 in Marlborough, CT; d. 22 Feb 1830 in Pittsburg, Ontario (near Kingston); m. **Lois Sherwood** 1788 in Brockville, Ontario, d/o **Thomas Sherwood**. She was b. 1773 in Ontario; d. 19 Jun 1849 in Gates (near Rochester, NY). He m2. Pheobe MANN 24 Mar 1786 in Marlborough, CT, b. Jul 1763; d. 24 Mar 1787.
5. [Reuben SHERWOOD](#) b: 1775 in Elizabethtown, Leeds, Ontario, Canada
6. [George SHERWOOD](#) b: ca 1777 in Elizabethtown, Leeds, Ontario, Canada
7. [Thomas SHERWOOD](#) b: 1789 in Elizabethtown, Leeds, Ontario, Canada
8. [Samuel SHERWOOD](#) b: ca 1791 in Elizabethtown, Leeds, Ontario, Canada
9. [John SHERWOOD](#) b: ca 1793 in Elizabethtown, Leeds, Ontario, Canada

[http://books.google.com/books?id=hTRGY\\_hZ34sC&pg=PA390&dq=%22thomas+sherwood%22+%22saratoga%22&hl=en&ei=FpKNTPvjDYP78AadtKD4Cw&sa=X&oi=book\\_result&ct=result&resnum=2&ved=0CC0Q6AEwATqK#v=onepage&q=%22sherwood%22&f=false](http://books.google.com/books?id=hTRGY_hZ34sC&pg=PA390&dq=%22thomas+sherwood%22+%22saratoga%22&hl=en&ei=FpKNTPvjDYP78AadtKD4Cw&sa=X&oi=book_result&ct=result&resnum=2&ved=0CC0Q6AEwATqK#v=onepage&q=%22sherwood%22&f=false) page 144.

On May 29 [1781], a Secret Service report was received from Ensign Thomas Sherwood, Queens Loyal Rangers, advising there were 250 First New York men building a blockhouse at Saratoga:

"They have no Provision but what they take from the Inhabitants – A Lieutenant & 30 men was sent out last week . . . to take cattle from the Inhabitants. He demanded a Pair of Oxen from a man who was ploughing with them. The poor Farmer pleaded that he had no other Oxen & if he must part with them it would ruin him – The Lieut. Said he would have them – the man asked whether young cattle would not do as well, he said Yes if he could have them within Two hours. The Ploughman promised he should & run'd off to look for them, but . . . returned with 50 Inhabitants armed. The Lieut. Asked where the young Cattle ware, the man pointed to the armed Posse & told him there the[y] ware, they then took the Lieutenant rung his nose, kick and beat him Severely & forced him to Return without any Cattle."

[http://books.google.com/books?id=9cvoX65VkpsC&pg=PA28&dq=%22thomas+sherwood%22+%22saratoga%22&hl=en&ei=4CyOTMPzMMP-8Ab1-JCqCw&sa=X&oi=book\\_result&ct=result&resnum=1&ved=0CCgQ6AEwADgU#v=onepage&q=%22thomas%20sherwood%22%20%22saratoga%22&f=false](http://books.google.com/books?id=9cvoX65VkpsC&pg=PA28&dq=%22thomas+sherwood%22+%22saratoga%22&hl=en&ei=4CyOTMPzMMP-8Ab1-JCqCw&sa=X&oi=book_result&ct=result&resnum=1&ved=0CCgQ6AEwADgU#v=onepage&q=%22thomas%20sherwood%22%20%22saratoga%22&f=false) page 28.

Thomas Sherwood, a former subaltern in the 84th Regiment who had later served in Jessup's Loyal Rangers, was the patriarch of the 'other' Sherwood family. Prior to the outbreak of hostilities, he had farmed in the Fort Edward area of upstate New York, not far from Saratoga where Burgoyne had been forced to concede defeat of his invincible British troops to the upstart Americans. As the war began he made his way up the Mohawk Trail, through Lake George, Lake Champlain, and down the Richelieu River towards Montreal. Crossing in Canada at St. John's, he enlisted in the British regiments then being formed. The revolution tore the Sherwood's family apart. His two brothers took up the patriot cause of freedom from the British rule and saw service as officers in the Continental Army. Thomas, on the other hand, found active duty in the British Secret Service. He operated throughout the Thirteen Colonies recruiting potential Loyalist soldiers for the various British militia units. In 1779, he finally evacuated his family to Canada and was appointed a subaltern with Jessup's Corps. As the defeat of the British became inevitable Sherwood was engaged as a surveyor by Sir John Johnson to prepare the new townships for the arrival of his fellow Loyalist refugees. He ultimately drew land in the first and second concessions of Elizabethtown and became a leading citizen of the new community.

Thomas Sherwood was made a Captain in the First Regiment of the Leeds Militia and was appointed one of the original justices of the peace. He died in 1826 leaving behind him a well-established family including his son, Adiel Sherwood, who became a Colonel in the Leeds Militia, and was, at various times, Paymaster of the Eastern and Johnstown Districts, Treasurer of the Johnstown District, Commissioner of Branch Roads, Member of the Land Board, Clerk of the Crown for the District, Sheriff for the District of Johnstown, and Returning Officer for many of the tumultuous elections of the 1830's. On the local scene, Sheriff Adiel Sherwood was a man to be reckoned with [and a Freemason].

-----

Lieut. **John Simonson** of King's New Brunswick Regiment was born in New York, came to New Brunswick in 1783 and died at Maugerville in 1816. His wife moved to Jacksonville and lived there until she died in 1850. His eldest son John Ness Simonson, was born at Fort Howe 11 Feb 1799.

**SIMONSON: John Simonson** born 28 Jan 1754 on Staten Island, Richmond County, NY, d. 22 Dec 1816: he came to NB in 1783 as a Loyalist and settled at Maugerville, Sunbury County: m. (1st) **Mary/Maria** - b. - , died 24 Sep 1797 at Harrisburg, PA: m. ( 2nd) 31 Mar 1798 at Saint John, NB, **Ann Ness**, born 31 Mar 1775 Needham, MA, d. 8 Nov 1850 at Jacksonville, Wakefield Parish, Carleton County, d/o **John Ness** a native of Yorkshire, England:

Children:

- 1) John Ness Simonson b. 11 Feb 1799 in Saint John; d. 1 Jun 1879 at Jacksonville in Carleton County: had three sons:
- 2) William Henry Simonson b. 23 Nov 1800; m. 5 Nov 1835 Juliette Campbell: settled in Wakefield Parish:
- 3) Thomas Emerson Simonson b. 13 Dec 1805; d. 28 Feb 1894 at Long Settlement, Wilmot Parish, Carleton County, m. 10 Dec 1835 Mary Campbell

-----

**Andrew Hunter Stockton** – b. 1780 Princeton, NJ; Marines; Priv. Industry; New Jersey Volunteers; 1783, St. George's Lodge No. 2, NY; 1785, Parr Town (Saint John, NB; 1792 Petitioner, Lodge No. 21, Kingston, NS; d. 1821, Sussex Vale.

<http://familytreemaker.genealogy.com/users/t/a/y/James-R--Taylor/GENE5-0012.html>

ANDREW HUNTER STOCKTON (*RICHARD WITHAM 5, SAMUEL 4, RICHARD 3, RICHARD 2, JOHN1*) b. 3 Jan 1760 in New Jersey; d. 8 May 1821 in Sussex Vale, NB; m 4 Apr 1784 in St John, NB (Parrrtown, NS), HANNAH LESTER, b. 25 May 1768 in Dutchess County, NY; d. 1 Oct 1793 in Sussex Vale, NB; d/o Mordecai Lester and Amelia Flager.

Lieutenant Andrew Hunter Stockton was commissioned and served as a lieutenant in the British Navy during the Revolution. While officer of mariners on board the privateer sloop *INDUSTRY*, he was captured and carried a prisoner of war to Boston, where he was exchanged, 28 May 1781, for Jeremiah Reed, lieutenant of mariners on board the continental frigate *BOSTON*, captured and made a prisoner of war to His Majesty at the reduction of Charleston. Lt. Stockton was also on board the privateer schooner *HAMPTON*, which was captured, and he was again made prisoner of war and carried to Boston, where he was again exchanged, 10 Oct 1781, for Richard Henry, officer of mariners belonging to the sloop *AURORA*, captured and brought into the port of New York. In 1782, he was a lieutenant in the Royal Foresters. He settled at St. John, NB, in 1783, the year in which it was founded by loyalist refugees, and in the following year received a grant of a lot in that town. On 4 Apr 1784, he was married, by the Hon. George Leonard, at the town of St. John (then called Parrrtown), to Hannah Lester, d/o Mordecai Lester, of Dutchess County, NY. She was born in the state of New York; d. at Sussex Vale, NB, 1 Oct 1793, aged 25 years 4 months and 6 days. This was the first marriage that ever took place in the town. Lieutenant Stockton spent his remaining days in New Brunswick, drawing half pay as long as he lived. He died at Sussex Vale, 8 May 1821. In religion he was an Episcopalian and in politics a Tory.

Children:

- i. GILBERT LESTER<sup>7</sup> STOCKTON, b. 24 May 1785; d. Smith's Creek, Kings County, NB.
- ii. CHARLES WITHAM STOCKTON, b. 04 Apr 1787, Sussex Vale, Kings, NB; d. 12 Jan 1869, Smith's Creek, Kings, NB.
- iii. JAMES HENRY STOCKTON, b. 16 Mar 1789; d. 10 Mar 1872.
- iv. WILLIAM JOHNSON STOCKTON, b. 28 Aug 1791; d. 1 Jul 1870, Ayr, Brandt County, Ontario.
- v. HANNAH GERTRUDE STOCKTON, b. 24 Sep 1793; d. 1 Apr 1871; m. CHRISTOPHER LOCKHART.

His father, Richard William Stockton, Esq., was b. at Princeton, NJ, in 1733. He served, with the rank of major, throughout the American Revolutionary War on the side of the Crown, and was a cousin of the Richard William Stockton who signed the Declaration of Independence. He and his son, Andrew Hunter Stockton, Esq., were among the loyalists who went to the province of New Brunswick at the close of the revolution in 1783, and were among the original grantees of the city of St. John, NB, then known as Parrrtown. All their estates in New Jersey were forfeited. They finally settled in King's co., NB, and became grantees of large

tracts of land in that county. Richard William Stockton *d.* at Sussex, King's co. New Brunswick, Canada, 8th May, 1801, leaving issue,

**Andrew Hunter Stockton**, Esq., *b.* at Princeton, New Jersey, 3rd January, 1760, served on the side of the Crown during the American Revolutionary War, with the rank of lieutenant, and *d.* at Sussex, King's co., N.B., May, 1821.

[http://www.orangenet.org/canadian\\_lodge\\_history.htm](http://www.orangenet.org/canadian_lodge_history.htm)

Newton L.O.L. [Loyal Orange Lodge] 148 [Loyal Orange Institution of Ireland] - While the history of this lodge may not differ greatly from many other lodges in Canada it is the background against which the lodge was built that is of interest, not only to the Orange Order throughout Canada, but to historians in general, for it forms a link in an unbroken chain running back from the Canada of today to the England of 1694.

The first Orange lodge that met in this place, within two miles of the present lodge room, held their meeting under a Charter granted in 1703 to replace one granted in 1694 bearing the name "Colonial Patent No 6" and was granted, not from Ireland the supposed home of Orangeism, but from Guild Hall, London and was signed by Robert Ware and sealed with the Hestercomb Arms, and certified by the Great Seal of the Goldsmiths of Lombard Street. What became of this, no one knows. Two copies were made, one by Robert Sweet, a ship carver and master painter for Sidney Stockton, and one by Robert Pine, an artist and landscape painter for Wesley Stockton. The Sidney Stockton copy was photographed by Climo some thirty years ago, and was in the possession of Robert or Alfred Stockton. This charter was continuously used in the United States and was brought to New Brunswick by **Lieutenant Andrew Hunter Stockton**, the first man to be married in the City of Saint John, then called Paratown. As it conferred the right to hold lodge anywhere in British America it must be conceded that this meeting on July 1, 1814, was a legal meeting.

-----

**Samuel Denny Street** – *b.* 1752 Southwark, England; Lawyer; 1755 HMS Merlin; 1777 Royal Fencible American Regiment; 1783 Fort Howe; 1784 Notary, Saint John, NB; 1788, St. George's Lodge No. 2, NY; 1788-89 Secretary; 1791, Master, St. George's Lodge No. 19, Maugerville, NB; 1793, Demitted; *d.* 1730, Fredericton, NB.

[http://www.biographi.ca/009004-119.01-e.php?&id\\_nbr=3148](http://www.biographi.ca/009004-119.01-e.php?&id_nbr=3148)

"The Hon. Samuel Denny Street was a small man, proud, provoking, and provoked."

"Mr. Samuel Denny Street was a man of small size, about 5 feet 7 inches in height, and a contemporary has described him as 'a regular game-cock, one who would brook no slight from any man.'"

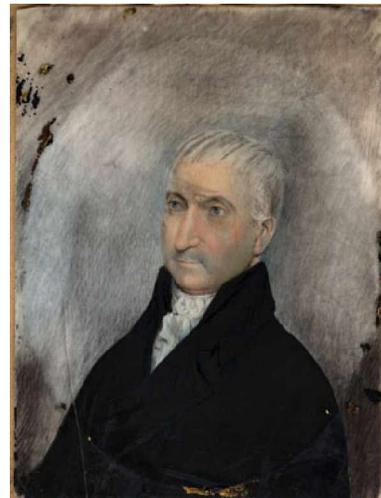
**Samuel Denny Street**, army officer, lawyer, politician, office holder, and poet; *b.* 16 May 1752 in Southwark (London), England, son of Thomas Street and Ann Lee; *d.* 11 Dec. 1830 in Fredericton.

Samuel Denny Street was apprenticed to a London attorney in 1766 and subsequently practised law briefly before joining the Royal Navy in the early 1770s. In 1775 he went to Boston on the *Merlin* and served under Lieutenant-General Thomas Gage\*. After his discharge in Nova Scotia in 1776, he enlisted in Joseph Goreham\*'s Royal Fencible Americans and arrived in Halifax with Captain Gilfred Studholme\*. On 1 May 1776 he went with his regiment to garrison Fort Cumberland (near Sackville, N.B.), and the following year, when he was promoted lieutenant, he assisted Studholme in establishing Fort Howe at the mouth of the Saint John River. While stationed at Fort Cumberland, he married Abigail Freeman on 22 Feb. 1778. They were to have 12 children.

By 1780 Street had been transferred to Fort Howe, and in November of that year he set out by boat with six men on a secret mission to the rebel port of Machias (Maine) under orders from Brigadier Francis McLean. His adventures among the rebels in 1780–81 are described by him in a remarkable and exciting narrative that at times seems more like fiction than fact. Yet there is no reason to doubt its veracity, judging from the carefulness of detail that characterizes the story. It begins on the return trip from Machias, when Street's vessel was chased by a rebel privateer in Passamaquoddy Bay. Finding their escape route was cut off at the narrows of Passamaquoddy, he and his men attempted to run in a small open boat but were forced to land on an island. They defended themselves for three hours and finally drove their pursuers back to their boats, capturing the rebel leader in the process. Street was highly commended for this action by Studholme and McLean.

When in April 1781 Street set out on a similar mission, the rebels had foreknowledge of his coming. Surrounded by superior numbers and taken, he was carried to Machias but, because local rebels feared him, he was quickly sent to Boston, where he was placed on board a prison ship. He immediately began to plot his escape. His plan, which involved the stealing of a boat, went awry, however, and Street and those who had accompanied him were recaptured the next day. They spent six weeks in the town jail before being returned to the prison ship.

At this point two relatively important rebel prisoners were offered in exchange for Street, but the exchange was refused. About the same time his next escape plan was betrayed by fellow prisoners who feared retaliation. Spurred by frustration, Street decided to act alone. He slipped away from the prison ship at night and swam ashore, where he was sheltered by loyalists with whom he had previously made contact. Disguised as a fisherman, he got out of Boston Harbour and boarded a ship sailing east to Fort George (Castine, Maine). From there he returned to Fort Howe. He had spent about five months in imprisonment, but managed to escape with his health and spirits intact. Street's exploits reveal a man of great courage, resourcefulness, and determination. Because McLean had died during his confinement, however, he never received the preferments that might have come his way, and the remainder of his war service was uneventful.



In 1783 Street retired on half pay and was employed in surveying and laying out Partrtown and Carleton (Saint John, N.B.). He applied to Governor John Parr for a substantial grant on the Saint John River at Burton. He settled there and named his estate Elysian Fields. In February 1785 he was amongst the first to be admitted to the bar of the newly formed province of New Brunswick and he became one of the colony's leading lawyers.

Street's political career began inauspiciously with an unsuccessful attempt at winning an assembly seat in the general election of 1792. In 1795, however, he was elected, with James Glenie, to represent Sunbury County, and he served in the assembly until defeated by Elijah MILES in 1802. Street and Glenie were leading figures in the extended struggle between the elected assembly and the appointed administration (Lieutenant Governor Thomas Carleton and his council) over their respective rights and privileges in governing the province. It was a time when the political atmosphere was extremely volatile and tempers ran high. During this period Street was at the centre of two dramatic incidents, one private and one public.

On 16 Jan. 1800 Street challenged John Murray BLISS to a duel as a result of Bliss's implying that Street had lied to the jury in a case they had argued in court that day. The trial had been a test case, and a heated one, involving the ownership of slaves; Street and Ward Chipman had defended the slave, while J. M. Bliss, Thomas WETMORE, Charles Jeffery Peters, William Botsford, and Jonathan Bliss had represented the master, Caleb Jones. The four judges of the Supreme Court split on the issue and no judgement was returned, but the resulting legal ambiguity was sufficient to undermine the value of slaves as property and stop the development of any trade in slaves. Shortly after eight o'clock in the evening on the day the trial ended, Street and Bliss met at the court-house in Fredericton with their seconds. They took up positions nine paces apart and, upon receiving the word, fired almost together. Both shots missed. Street was eager to reload and fire again, but the seconds were able to persuade Bliss to offer an apology, which Street finally accepted.

Street was again the centre of attention in 1802 when, upon the death of the clerk of the House of Assembly, he was elected to that position by a majority of the members. Lieutenant Governor Carleton refused to ratify the decision because he had his own candidate, Dugald Campbell. The assembly refused to recognize the lieutenant governor's appointee and Street served out the session as clerk. In the appropriations bill of 1802 the assembly specified that Street be paid the clerk's salary to make sure it went to the right man. On 3 March, when the Council sent the bill back requesting that Street's name be deleted, most of the "opposition" clique absented themselves from the assembly in the expectation that the lack of a quorum would force the adjournment of the house for the year. However, the speaker, Amos Botsford, called the house to order the next day and, in spite of the lack of a quorum, allowed the remaining members (mostly the "governor's friends") to change the money bill to suit the administration before adjournment. In May, Carleton called a general election and the campaign that followed was a lively one, highlighted by a pamphlet war, vitriolic letters in the newspapers, and a verse satire (entitled "Creon") by Street on the events of the last session. "Creon" was perhaps more effective as propaganda than as poetry, but none the less stands as one of the more interesting pieces of local narrative verse satire, a genre that occupied a significant place in the early literary culture of Maritime Canada. In the end, the election was won overwhelmingly by the "governor's friends." Street and most of the "opposition" members lost their seats.

In 1803 Street applied for a position in the Supreme Court, was turned down, so pursued his legal business. Six years later he was re-elected to the assembly for Sunbury, his fellow representative being James TAYLOR, and he served, uneventfully, until defeated in September 1816. That year he was again refused a Supreme Court position, but in 1819 he was appointed to the Council by the lieutenant governor, George Stracey SMYTH. In 1821, after his son, George Frederick, had killed George Ludlow Wetmore in a duel, Street went about Fredericton tearing down the hue-and-cry notices posted by the coroner, William TAYLOR. On 20 Dec. 1824 his wife died; six years later he himself died and was interred beside her in the Old Burying Ground, Fredericton.

Throughout his political life, in spite of the often partisan nature of his activities, Street appears to have had a clear and consistent political philosophy. At a time when many New Brunswickers were prepared to invest almost all political power in the governor and his council, Street agitated for a responsible role for the elected assembly, a role which would reflect the rights and privileges accorded parliament within the British constitution, in particular its control over appropriations. But in the wake of the American and French revolutions and in the face of the Napoleonic threat, New Brunswick opted in 1802 for the apparent security of a paternalistic, hierarchical form of authority with power clearly concentrated in the representatives of the crown. To most New Brunswickers, it was a question of loyalty, plain and simple; any distribution of authority smacked of republicanism. It would be another generation before Maritimers developed a desire for responsible government.

One of Street's greatest contributions to New Brunswick was his children. Of the 12, George Frederick became a judge of the Supreme Court of New Brunswick, William Henry and John Ambrose Sharman were elected to the assembly, Samuel Denny Lee was Anglican rector of Woodstock for 40 years, and daughter Ann Frances married George Duncan Berton, sheriff of York County. In addition to their own offspring, the Streets raised the three orphan children of Dr Ambrose Sharman, who had served with Street in the Royal Fencible Americans and who drowned at Burton in 1793. His daughter Ann married William Carman and was the grandmother of William Bliss Carman, the poet.

-----

**Isaac Swayze** – b. 1751, New Jersey; 1776, Initiated Lodge No. 7, New Jersey; 1801, Third Degree, St. John's Lodge No. 2, PGL, Niagara, Upper Canada. d. 1828.

"Where'er down Tiber garbage floats, the greedy pike ye see;  
And wheresoe'er such lord is found, such client still will be."

"The history of freemasonry in Canada, from its ..., Volume 1, Part 2." by John Ross Robertson, page 616.

[http://books.google.com/books?id=aCEqQedbOv0C&pg=PA616&lpq=PA616&dq=%22ISAAC+SWAYZE%22+%22lodge%22&source=bl&ots=gYUjirbWLG&sig=qowYuDsSAC0-P9tI50Nk63aKraU&hl=en&ei=IN-LTizwKoX7lwfCj6lq&sa=X&oi=book\\_result&ct=result&resnum=1&ved=0CBIQ6AEwAA#v=onepage&q=%22ISAAC%20SWAYZE%22+%22lodge%22&f=false](http://books.google.com/books?id=aCEqQedbOv0C&pg=PA616&lpq=PA616&dq=%22ISAAC+SWAYZE%22+%22lodge%22&source=bl&ots=gYUjirbWLG&sig=qowYuDsSAC0-P9tI50Nk63aKraU&hl=en&ei=IN-LTizwKoX7lwfCj6lq&sa=X&oi=book_result&ct=result&resnum=1&ved=0CBIQ6AEwAA#v=onepage&q=%22ISAAC%20SWAYZE%22+%22lodge%22&f=false)

Bro. Isaac Swayze, or Sweazy, and Bro. Parshall Terry, had the monopoly of contracts for the supply of the fort at York. Bro. Swayze was originally a member of lodge No. 7, New Jersey, and was initiated in 1776, receiving his E. A. and F. C. in the United States, and affiliating as an F. C., was raised to the sublime degree of a M. M. in 1801, in lodge No. 2, at Niagara. This was the original "St. John's Lodge of Friendship," No. 2, at Niagara.

On 26th January, 1809, the **R. W. Bros. Robert Kerr, the G. M.**, Christopher Danby, D. G. M., **Isaac Swayze, G. S. W.**, Benjamin Middough, G. S. W., and Bro. Adam Bowman, the Grand-Treasurer of the irregular Grand Lodge, were present.

[http://www.biographi.ca/009004-119.01-e.php?&id\\_nbr=3152&interval=25&&PHPSESSID=ctaar1ahgmp01t4suf5agqvf2](http://www.biographi.ca/009004-119.01-e.php?&id_nbr=3152&interval=25&&PHPSESSID=ctaar1ahgmp01t4suf5agqvf2)

**Isaac Swayze (Swayzie, Sweezey)**, politician, JP, office holder, and militia officer; b. 1751 in Morris County, N.J., son of Caleb Swayze and Miriam Drake; m. first Bethia Luce; m. secondly Sarah Secord; m. thirdly 18 Sept. 1806 Lena Ferris, a widow; d. 11 Feb. 1828 near Niagara (Niagara-on-the-Lake), Upper Canada.

The Swayze family emigrated from Germany in the early 17th century and settled in Salem, Mass. Isaac Swayze's forebears moved to Long Island, N.Y., and then to Morris County where he was living at the outbreak of the American revolution. He claimed early participation by his family in the royal cause and he himself was employed on secret service, twice made prisoner, and badly wounded during the course of the conflict. Tradition has it that during one incarceration he was sentenced to death. Apparently his wife visited him on the day of the execution and exchanged clothes with him; he escaped, never seeing her again. What is known for certain is that he broke out of jail on 4 Sept. 1780 in Morristown and a \$5,000 reward was put on his head. He was described as 5 feet 8 or 9 inches, with a sandy complexion, and a bullet scar on one temple. In June 1783 Swayze was thrown into prison by the British authorities in New York on suspicion of having committed a robbery on Long Island. He was freed the following month, but ordered to leave the city immediately. Suspicions of criminality swirled around him for the rest of his life.

In 1784 Swayze removed to the Niagara peninsula, where he eventually settled at St Davids. His fellow settlers there had doubts about his allegiance during the revolution; it was not until he had produced proof of misrepresentation of character that he was allowed his loyalist grant of land. Despite his neighbours' suspicions, Swayze was elected for the riding of 3rd Lincoln to Upper Canada's first parliament in 1792. Initially he was something of a populist leader and was considered by the more established elements in society to be a demagogue. He later contended that he had been elected by the "farmers and genral classes" who had "more confidence in my attachment to their interests, than they had in the nobles." Because of his "integrity" in that anti-commercial House of Assembly, Swayze claimed, he was a victim of "shafts of malice incessantly hurled from some who ranked themselves high." In 1795 he shocked provincial officials by assuming leadership of a popular agitation against the form of wording in which deeds were made out. There were widespread fears that the deeds would prohibit the sale of land. To put a stop to the discontent, the government charged Swayze with sedition. On 5 April 1795 Peter Russell noted in a letter to Lieutenant Governor Simcoe, "I am told too that Mr. Swazey is to be informed against to the next Grand Jury as an Exciter of Sedition." He was tried, convicted, and forced to find sureties for good behaviour for two years. On 1 July 1796 he was commissioned a justice of the peace.

If Swayze ran for the second parliament, he was not re-elected. By 1799 he was campaigning in earnest for the election of 1800. The focus of public concern was the proposal by **Robert Hamilton** and his associates to finance improvements of the Niagara portage by higher charges. Swayze emerged as a leader of the coalition of interests that challenged the commercial élite. He soon became the centre of a controversy. Accusations were made that he had been a horse thief in Pennsylvania. His supporters asserted that the story had been inspired by the "Caledonian Friends" of the *Canada Constellation's* editor, Silvester Tiffany. The reference was to the major Scots merchants of the peninsula led by Hamilton. When the voting took place, Swayze and Ralfe CLENCH defeated the merchant candidates Samuel Street\* and William Dickson\*.

In spite of his election, the allegations of horse theft against Swayze continued in the columns of Tiffany's new paper, the *Niagara Herald*. Swayze declared that the "attachment of the community to me did not decrease with the increase of the enmity of the few" and promised to return to the House of Assembly "unawed." He finally quashed the rumours with a legal suit against a voter who had accused him before three political gatherings of horse theft. The consequences of this action were sufficient to cause Tiffany to let the matter die. Within the assembly Swayze and Clench worked closely on legislation favourable to small merchants, farmers, loyalists, and local office holders; nothing of importance, however, was passed. In 1803 Swayze's erstwhile opponents found he could be influenced: he was persuaded to support an assessment act favouring large land speculators in exchange for aid in securing a local appointment at Niagara.

Swayze was returned for the riding of 2nd, 3rd and 4th Lincoln in 1804. His politics, however, had become notably more conservative since 1803 and he gradually earned a reputation as a rabid anti-republican. The rise of a parliamentary and extra-parliamentary opposition, with a strong base in the Niagara peninsula, ended the antagonisms between the large merchants and their local opponents led by Swayze and Clench.

Swayze's admission into local circles of power did not diminish his capacity for generating controversy or alter the aura of illegality that hung over his career. Some time before 1806 he was appointed inspector of shop, still, and tavern licences for the Niagara District. In January 1806 he reported that three men with blackened faces had broken into his house and stolen £500 in licence and land fees. Doubts were cast on his story and he later withdrew his petition to the assembly in which he asked to be excused from restoring the money.

Unscrupulous in his methods, Swayze curried favour by tackling the dirty work of politics, apparently with relish. In 1808 he chaired the committee of the assembly which resolved that Joseph Willcocks\*'s language had been "false, slanderous and highly derogatory to the dignity of this house"; as a result, Willcocks was later jailed. In 1810 Willcocks urged Lieutenant Governor Francis Gore\* to prosecute Swayze for circulating counterfeit banknotes.

Although he appears not to have previously held a militia commission, Swayze was appointed captain of a troop he raised at the outbreak of the War of 1812 known as the Provincial Royal Artillery Drivers. William Hamilton Merritt commented, in his memoir of the war, that Swayze deserved "the greatest credit for his indefatigable exertions." He was mentioned in dispatches after the battle

of Queenston Heights. When the retreating American army burned Niagara in December 1813, Swayze lost his house and barn, which he valued at £200.

In January 1816 Swayze was briefly involved with Timothy Street and Richard COCKRELL in their attempt to establish a newspaper at St Davids. That same year he was elected in 4th Lincoln. He became a vociferous opponent of Robert Gourlay and acted as the eyes and ears of civil authorities in the Niagara peninsula. He was, for instance, sent to the Credit River during the summer of 1818 to investigate rumours of preparations for an armed insurrection. In December 1818 he provided the information that led to Bartemas Ferguson, editor of the Niagara Spectator, being charged with seditious libel for printing Gourlay's article, "Gagg'd-Gagg'd, by Jingo!" More important, he swore an affidavit that Gourlay was not an inhabitant of Upper Canada, thereby opening the way for charges against him under the Sedition Act of 1804. Gourlay's attempt to prosecute Swayze for defamation of character proved abortive.

Gourlay once posed the question, "How could such a man as Isaac Swayze be elected, and repeatedly elected?" His answer was that Swayze "could cover all the stains upon his character, before my time, with hypocrisy." The old tactic, however, failed abjectly in the election of 1820. His opponent, Robert RANDAL, portrayed him as a stooge of executive government and won an easy victory. The defeat in 1820 was Swayze's last political campaign. A member of the Presbyterian church and a proprietor of the Niagara Library, he appears to have spent his last years quietly.

<http://www.uppercanadahistory.ca/ucfel/ucfel3.html>

**ISAAC SWAYZE** [b.1751 - d.1828]

#### **History records the crimes, follies and misfortunes of humanity.**

Isaac Swayze, a noted British secret agent during the American Revolution, was elected member for the 3rd Riding of Lincoln in the Assembly in Upper Canada's first Legislature. According to Lord Dorchester, Swayze also served as a scout for the British army in New York and was known as "*the pilot to the New York army.*"

His services for the 'Tories' and the King made him a marked man in the rebellious colonies and he had many narrow escapes. On one occasion he was concealed in a cellar when Americans broke into the house. Failing to find him the frustrated rebels wounded his younger brother whose blood dripped down on Isaac secluded in the cellar below.

Called a "spy" by his enemies of whom he had many, Swayze was badly wounded and twice made prisoner during the war. On the first occasion he was sentenced to death. While awaiting execution was visited by his wife. Tradition has it that he exchanged clothes with her and so escaped. He eluded his captors by slipping out a side door silent as a ghost except for the faint jingle of his spurs and fled with a \$5,000 reward on his head. Swayze led a troubled life and suspicions of criminality swirled about the man for most of his existence. Described as a spry man with a swarthy, sandy complexion, Swayze was 5 ft. 8 or 9 in. tall and had a bullet scar on one temple. Prior to coming to Niagara he had been arrested on a robbery charge and was released on condition that he leave town immediately.

Isaac Swayze's (Swasey, Sweezey) original ancestor, John Swasey, was born in Bridgport, Dorset County, England in 1619. John arrived in America on the ship *Recovery* from London in 1633 and eventually settled in Salem, Essex County, Massachusetts where he married Catherine Kinge. They had seven children one of whom was Joseph, Isaac's grandfather. Joseph married Mary Betts and the couple had eleven children one of whom was Caleb, Isaac's father. Caleb married Penelope Horton. They had ten children and settled in Roxbury, Morris county, New Jersey where Isaac was born in 1751.

Isaac came to Niagara in 1784 and settled at St. Davids. He was married three times and fathered eight children. After his house was destroyed by fire in the war of 1812, Swayze is thought to have lived for a time in Thorold on land which is now part of Brock University. Fellow settlers doubted his loyalty, but he successfully proved his allegiance and was granted land as a Loyalist. He was married three times to Bethia Luce, Sarah Secord and Lena Ferris.

In the first Legislature Swayze had the reputation as something of a radical and was considered by the conservatives as a leader of the common people. He claimed to have the confidence of the "*farmers and the general classes*" because he had their interests at heart. When he was scorned and criticized by the Tories, he said it was because of his "*integrity that shafts of malice were hurled at him by those who ranked themselves high.*" Swayze led the popular fight against the wording of deeds which some people feared would prohibit the sale of their land.

Times were tense in the exposed little colony because of fears of republicanism from both France and the United States. For this reason anyone at all critical of the government for any reason was suspected of subversive activity. For his rebellious behaviour, Swayze was charged and tried as "*an Exciter of Sedition.*" He was convicted and fined 10 pounds and forced to find sureties for good behaviour for two years. His light penalty was probably indicative of the fact that Swayze's criticism of the government was thought to be due more to personal disgruntlement than traitorous thinking. Despite his conviction Swayze later received a commission as justice of the peace.

Swayze was not elected to the second parliament, but campaigned in earnest for election in 1800 to the third. Prominent merchants led by Robert Hamilton of Queenston advocated financing extensive and costly improvements to the Niagara portage by levying higher charges for their goods. This caused widespread anger and opposition and Swayze emerged as leader of this group. He opposed the powerful commercial leaders of the province and won. He supported legislation favourable to small merchants, farmers, Loyalists and small office holders.

During one election campaign, Swayze became the centre of a controversy when he was accused of having been a horse thief. In spite of this accusation, he was elected. Even after his election the allegations continued in the columns of the Niagara Herald. Swayze sued the paper and the accusations stopped. By the time he was elected for the riding of 2nd, 3rd, and 4th Lincoln in 1804, Swayze had become considerably more conservative. In fact, he had established a reputation as a rabid anti-republican. The

reformer had suddenly become a conformist, and before long he found himself within the circles of power. However, his former allies discovered that his support had a price.

Swayze still attracted trouble. When he was appointed inspector of 'shop, still and tavern licences' for the Niagara District, he reported that three men had broken into his house and stolen 500 pounds in licence fees. He petitioned the Assembly to be excused from restoring the money, but when his story of the theft was met with outright suspicion, he quickly withdrew his petition. Swayze's son repaid the licence money in four annual installments after his father's death.

Swayze became a 'hatchet' man and tackled with relish the dirty work of politics. He chaired a committee which found an opposing member's language "*false, slanderous and highly derogatory*" for which the member was jailed. In return the member pressed for Swayze's prosecution for circulating counterfeit bank notes. To ingratiate himself with the establishment, Swayze named his first son Francis Gore Swayze after the lieutenant-governor and his second son, William Dickson Swayze after an important personage in Upper Canada society.

At the outbreak of the War of 1812 Swayze was appointed captain of a troop of men he raised called the *Royal Artillery Drivers*. The appointment of this famous or infamous individual appeared to be of great interest to the Americans, one of whom reported on it as he carefully observed British preparations for war taking place across the river. "*The noted Isaac Swayze has received a captain's commission for the flying artillery of which they have a number of pieces.*" Despite resigning his command at a crucial moment during the war, he was cited as deserving of "*the greatest credit for his indefatigable exertions.*" After the Battle of Queenston Heights, he was mentioned in dispatches for his daring. When Niagara was burned by retreating Americans in 1813, Swayze lost his house valued by him at 200 pounds. Many of his war claims were returned to him marked "*Not Allowed*" in red ink because there was a strong suspicion that Swayze, characteristically, was attempting to get more than his due. For his services he was granted 1200 acres of land in Pelham Township and Niagara Township.

Following the war Swayze resumed his role as a dependable government gofer and hater of republicanism. When the Assembly moved to question Governor Gore about the disbursement of a 2,500 pound civil list, Swayze voted against calling him to account. He also opposed taxing "*wild lands,*" a measure directed against absentee landlords, many of whom were government officials. Swayze was a stooge of the executive government and became the eyes and ears of civil authorities in the Niagara peninsula. He became a vocal opponent of reformer Robert Gourlay, an outspoken critic of the government, whose attempts to get information from settlers for an 'Immigrant Guidebook' were thought to be tantamount to treason. Swayze's allegations against Gourlay were carefully framed to fit the provisions of the Sedition Act. Swayze swore before the legislature that Gourlay was "*an evil-minded and seditious person*" and he promised the governor's secretary that Gourlay would soon be "*in safe keeping or sent across the river.*" Swayze also informed on the editor of the *Niagara Spectator* for printing Gourlay's article titled, "*Gagged, Gagged, by Jingo!*" [See Below \*]

Swayze was quite prepared to perjure himself to please the circles of power into which he wished to be accepted. He became a fanatical anti-democrat who spent the rest of his life as a sycophant dutifully doing unpleasant tasks for others.

Swayze himself narrowly escaped prosecution for the murder of a man named William Morgan who had threatened to disclose the secrets of Freemasonry and then mysteriously disappeared. It was determined that Swayze, who was a Freemason, had nothing to do with the disappearance despite having boasted about it. Morgan's disappearance was never satisfactorily explained.

Swayze narrowly escaped prosecution for the murder of Captain William Morgan, who is presumed to have been slain for his threatened disclosure of the Masonic Ritual. Swayze openly boasted that he had been concerned in the abduction of Morgan, and in the execution of Masonic vengeance upon him. He professed to be able to indicate the precise spot where the body was buried—which spot, he declared, was not far from the bottom of his garden. Upon investigation these vainglorious boastings proved to be utterly without any foundation in fact.

Amazed that such a rascal could regularly be re-elected, Gourlay asked the question, "*How could such a man as Isaac Swayze be elected and repeatedly elected?*" He answered his own question. "*Swayze covered all the stains upon his character with hypocrisy.*" Whatever his formula for electoral success, it failed to work in 1820 when Swayze, "*the puppet of executive influence,*" was soundly defeated. It was his final political campaign. He retired from the fray after the election and spent the last years of his life quietly as a member of the Presbyterian church and proprietor of the Niagara Library. He died near Niagara in 1828.

From Obituary notices: "*1828. Died, Isaac Swayzie aged 77. He suffered imprisonment for being loyal to his king and country, escaped to the British lines and has been the representative in Parliament for several years.*" [\*] When the Legislature passed a law "*to prevent certain meetings within this province,*" Gourlay wrote an article of protest which he titled, 'Gagg'd, Gagg'd by Jingo.'  
"*Dear sweet Canada! Thou art gagg'd at last,  
A babe of mighty Wellington, come o'er the sea,  
Has, with thy own foul fingers, gagg'd thee.*"

The following appeared in the "The New Jersey Revolutionary War Documents"  
Five Thousand Dollars Reward.

BROKE out of the goal of this county, on the night of Monday the 4th instant, a certain Isaac Sweezy, about thirty years of age, five feet eight or nine inches high, sandy complexion, and had a scar of a bullet or swan shot in one of his temples.--Also on the night of Tuesday the 12th instant, Caleb Sweezy, jun. John Swan, Thomas Douglass, and Nathan Horton, jun.--Caleb Sweezy, jun. is about six feet high, thirty-two or thirty-three years of age, has a clear skin, and black beard, and altogether a well made, good looking man.--John Swan is a small man, of a dark complexion, and about thirty-six years of age.--Thomas Douglass is about six feet high, has black hair and beard, is something ruddy in his cheeks, thick lips, is about twenty-eight years of age.--Nathan Horton, jun. is about twenty-two years of age, quite a small man, rather slender, and of a light complexion.--All of whom were confined on charges of felony for passing counterfeit money. Whoever takes up and secures the above described persons in any goal of this state, or delivers them to the subscriber, shall have the above reward; or one thousand dollars for either of them that shall be so apprehended or delivered to

RICHARD JOHNSON, Sheriff of Morris County.  
Morris-Town, Sept. 19, 1780  
[Caleb was Isaac's brother.]

-----

**Oliver Templeton** – Capt. Loyal North British Volunteers; 1782, Lodge No. 169 E.R.(A), New York; 1783, SW Union Lodge No. 8, New York; 1783 Grand Deacon, New York; d. 1792.

<http://www.georgeglazer.com/prints/landscape/templetonbridge.html>

Oliver Templeton was a New York City merchant and auctioneer who served in the British Loyalist forces as a captain during the American Revolution. In 1786, he wrote to the British government asking for financial assistance because punitive laws passed after the Revolution targeting Loyalists made it impossible for him to get a business license or recover his debts. In the letter, he claimed that before the Revolution he was earning 1000 pounds a year, the equivalent of about \$116,000 in today's money.

<http://www.royalprovincial.com/military/mems/ny/clmtemp.htm>

### Claims and Memorials Memorial of Oliver Templeton of New York

To the Honourable Colonel Thomas DUNDAS and Jeremy PEMBERTON Esquires Commissioners appointed by Act of Parliament to Enquire into the Services, Losses and Sufferings of the Loyalists in Nova Scotia, &c.

The Memorial of Oliver TEMPLETON formerly of the City of New York Merchant and Auctioneer, Captain in the Regiment of Loyal New York Volunteers lately Commanded by His Excellency Lieutenant General ROBERTSON.

Most Humbly Sheweth,

That Your Memorialist being ever most firmly attached to His Majesty's Person and Government, and wholly detesting the principles and practices of the late Rebellion did at the beginning of the Disturbances take an Active and decided part in Support of his Sovereign and the Constitution as will appear by the annexed Certificate No. 1 given by Lieut. Colonel VAN BUSKIRK of His Majesty's late New Jersey Volunteers- and that in Consequence of such his Adherence he Suffered greatly in his Person and sustained great and heavy Losses the particulars of which he is ready to Exhibit and Verify upon Oath.

That immediately after the unfortunate Convention of Saratoga Your Memorialist proposed to raise a Company of Volunteers to assist in the Defence of the Garrison of New York which Proposal acquiring the Approbation of His Majesty's Governor and Generals; Your Memorialist was honoured with a Letter from General ROBERTSON then Commandant of New York (a Copy of which No. 2 is herewith Submitted) in Consequence whereof he afterward received his Commission of Captain dated the 2d November 1777, previous to which his Company was raised, Completely equipped and regimented, and did Garrison duty.

That in such Duty his said Company was continued during the War, and altho' it was productive of much heavy Expence and attended with great personal fatigue to Your Memorialist as will appear by the Copy of Mr. Mayor MATHEWS' Certificate No. 3 the Lieutenant Colonel of said Volunter Regiment herewith also inclosed; yet he Submitted thereto with Chearfulness, consoled with the reflection of his being instrumental in promoting the King's Service. And that for such his Services and Expences he hath not as yet received any Pay or Compensation whatever.

That in addition to his Losses since the Epocha of the Evacuation of New York by His Majesty's Sea and Land Forces; altho' obliged by a Chain of Family Occurences to remain in New York and on Long Island; he hath been totally precluded the benefit of Exercising his Occupation of a Broker and Auctioneer, a Business which he had for many Years pursued with much reputation the annual Profits whereof during the last Eleven Years he was in Business amounted to upwards of One Thousand Pounds New York Currency That such his Preclusion was in Consequence of an Act of the Legislature of the now State of New York passed the 20th of February 1784, manifestly levelled at the Loyalists whereby among other things it is Enacted,

"That no Person shall sell Goods at Vendue without Licence under the Penalty of £ 50 for each Article that he shall so expose to Sale- and that no Licence shall be granted to any Person until he shall have produced a Certificate from at least Six reputable Inhabitants of the City or County of known and undoubted Attachment to the American Cause (of the Truth of which they are to make Oath) that the Person in whose favour such Certificate is given, hath uniformly and unequivocally since the Ninth day of July 1776 demeaned himself as friendly and well affected to the Independence of the United States and hath taken an Active and decided part to Establish and support the same."

Qualifications which Your Memorialist glories in never having possessed.

That Your Memorialist together with all other Loyalists who resided within the Royal Lines during the Rebellion, is by another Act of the Legislature passed the 12th July 1782 debarred the right of recovering his just Debts in Specie it being by the said Law Enacted that every Defendant may pay in Discharge of any such Debt Loan-Office Certificates or Notes or any State Certificates, which are not worth at their highest rate above five Shillings in the Pound so that your Memorialist must incur a Loss of at least Seventy five per Cent upon all his outstanding Debts.

That Your Memorialist guided by his Wishes and actuated by that natural partiality which he must always feel for the Government of his Mother Country would have long since removed with his Family from New York either to Great Britain or Nova Scotia- but that the unsettled State of his Affairs and his desire to secure his Property if possible and avoid the necessity of throwing himself upon the Bounty of Government; added to the perplexed and intricate Situation of an Estate descended to him in right of his Wife, have Combined to Enforce him hitherto to defer the Completion of such his design of removal.

Your Memorialist therefor most humbly prays that his Case may be taken into your Consideration in order that he may be enabled under Your report to receive such Aid or Relief as his Losses and Services may be found to deserve.

And Your Memorialist shall ever pray

Oliver TEMPLETON

Shelburne, June 21st 1786

---

No. 1 Copy

Parr's Grove Shelburne April 5th 1786.

I do hereby Certify that I was well acquainted with Mr. Oliver TEMPLETON of New York Merchant from the Commencement of the Rebellion unto the Evacuation of New-York by His Majesty's Forces in 1783.

That during the whole period he exerted himself as a Steady firm Loyalist and by his warmth of Attachment to the King and Government rendered himself in the Early parts of the day so very obnoxious to the Rebel Inhabitants that he was forced to flee from the City to avoid ill usage, and came to my House at New Bridge in Jersey as a place of Refuge where he stay'd for some time and was useful to me on many occasions in supporting the King's interest and Authority in that part of the Country.

He sent up a large Quantity of Liquors and Goods to my said House which were stored for Safety in my Store House- these Liquors (which I imagine were of considerable value) were plundered by a Party of the Rebel Army together with some Goods and Household Furniture and Mr. TEMPLETON thereby totally lost them.

In the Autumn of 1777 Mr. TEMPLETON was Captain of One of the [Independent Voluntier Companies at New York](#) well equipped and regimented and he did Duty with them, when called upon with the greatest Chearfulness and Alacrity during the whole time that New York was a British Garrison.

Abrm. VAN BUSKIRK [q.v]  
Lt. Col. N. J. V.

[http://books.google.com/books?id=M1hV8FjIHYkC&pg=RA1-PA165&dq=%22Oliver+templeton%22&hl=en&ei=ZGaPTP2RN4G78gaYtLWKDg&sa=X&oi=book\\_result&ct=result&resnum=5&ved=0CD0Q6AEwBA#v=onepage&q=%22Oliver%20templeton%22&f=false](http://books.google.com/books?id=M1hV8FjIHYkC&pg=RA1-PA165&dq=%22Oliver+templeton%22&hl=en&ei=ZGaPTP2RN4G78gaYtLWKDg&sa=X&oi=book_result&ct=result&resnum=5&ved=0CD0Q6AEwBA#v=onepage&q=%22Oliver%20templeton%22&f=false) page 165.

TEMPLETON OLIVER.— Of the house of "Templeton & [Alexander] Stewart," Vendue Markers, one of the most prominent auction houses of the time [on King Street, opposite the Coffee House Bridge]. The partnership was dissolved by mutual consent, by public advertisement, September 1, 1783. OLIVER TEMPLETON was an old merchant of New York. His advertisements of English goods are to be found in 1764. On the 13th June, 1774, it was announced in the New York Gazette that "last week Mr. OLIVER TEMPLETON was married by the Rev. Dr. [Miles] Cooper, President of King's College, to **Miss Betty Brownjohn**, daughter of Mr. William Brownjohn, an eminent druggist in this city." MR. TEMPLETON died in New York, in November, 1792. [1784, Member of the Friendly Sons of St. Patrick; Member and Committeeman of the New York Chamber of Commerce]

Nnote: he appears to have married Catherine Brownjohn, before the death of William Brownjohn whose will was proved 14 June 1785, wherein he records Catherine as the wife of Oliver Templeton. When Oliver died, his will left his estate, among others, to his widow Catherine. Hence Oliver either married twice, Catherine was also known as Betty, or his biographers messed up so that at this date we would find some confusion as to whom his wife was. At the time of his will, Oliver noted four children by Catherine: Maria, Eliza, Catherine and Oliver (jr.). In one account his wife is noted at 'Kitty' Brownson, d/o of William Brownson, druggist, which could be the source of the Betty/Catherine confusion. It is but a small slip in reading handwriting from Betty to Kitty, and Kitty is a nickname for Catherine.

**Oliver Templeton** became a freeman of New York City in 1769, and five years later the New York Gazette and Weekly Mercury announced his wedding to **Catherine Brownejohn**, the daughter of a prominent Manhattan druggist.

----

**Ensign John Thompson** – 1761, Trinity Lodge No. 4, NY; 1781, Joined Lodge No. 169 E.R. (A), New York.

**JOHN THOMPSON** (Lieutenant) He was Ensign from December 1, 1776, and Lieutenant from 1780, in the 1st New Jersey Volunteers. He was born in America about 1745/51 and, on November 1, 1781, was married to Phoebe [Femmetje] Ryers(z) [or Ryerss] in Richmond county, d/o of Adrian Ryerss and Ester Dubois; Taken Prisoner 25 July 1780. Previously a farmer in New Jersey, he served 7 years in Provincial Corps. He died in Rochester, NY, 23 Jan 1801.

<http://www.royalprovincial.com/military/courts/cmlawr.htm>

### General Court Martial of John Lawrence *Tuesday the 22d Feby. 1780.*

The Court being met pursuant to Adjournment.

Capt. FARQUHAR of the 20th Regiment being ordered to the Southward; Capt. Patk. TYTLER of the 80th Regt. was Sworn in his room— and the members and President took their Seats as follows.

Major John SMALL of [His Majesty's 84th Regt. of Foot](#) President.

Members:

Major James COUSSEAU 37th  
Major David FERGUSON 43d Regt.  
Capt. Thomas BRADY R. Artillery  
Capt. Patrick TYTLER 80th Regt.  
Capt. Stephen COOK 37th  
Capt. Alexr. McDONALD 76th Regt.

Capt. David ANSTRUTHER 42nd  
Capt. Willm. RICHARDSON 43d Regt.  
Lt. John ROBERTSON 42nd  
Lt. Norman McLEOD 42d Regt  
1st Lt. Francis LAYE R. Artillery  
2d Lt. Charles FRAZER 23d Regt.

Ensn. Mattw. WOODD, of His Majesty's 64th Regt. of Foot D: Judge Advocate

The President, Members, and Judge Advocate being duly Sworn.

**Tuesday the 22d Feby. 1780.**

The Court met pursuant to Adjournment.

Ensign John LAWRENCE of the [1st Battalion of New Jersey Volunteers](#), came Prisoner before the Court accused of the Murder of Ensign John MOFFATT of the [Queens Rangers](#), on, or about the 14th day of Jany. 1780.

Ensign John THOMPSON of the 1st Battalion of New Jersey Volunteers being duly sworn deposed that about about [sic] the 13th Jany. 1780, the Prisoner went to him (the Witness) and desired him to go with him, as he had appointed to meet Ensign MOFFATT; that they accordingly went to the place of appointment, and waited there for near two hours, and upon Ensign MOFFATT not coming they went away;

that between 8 and 9 o'Clock the same Evening (to the best of his recollection) the Prisoner received [a message from Ens. MOFFATT](#), desiring him to meet him that Evening, and the Witness advised him not to go that night as probably the affair might be accommodated, upon which the Prisoner (Ensn. LAWRENCE) sent him word that he would not meet him that Evening, but would, the next morning;

that they accordingly met, and went to the side of a hill, and they each, (Ensn. MOFFATT and the Prisoner) fired a Pistol, and Ensn. MOFFATT immediately fell, and said that he was killed, upon which the Witness went up to him, and found that he was mortally wounded & that he (Ensn. MOFFATT) had received a Wound from a Ball, which went through the lower part of his Belly.

**Q:(by the Court)—** Was the Body of Ensign MOFFATT examined by any surgeon after he fell?

**A:** Not that he knows of.

**Q:** Did he (the Witness) see the body examined?

**A:** He examined it himself, and saw where the Ball went in, and where it went out.

**Q:** Did he (the Witness) see the Pistols loaded, and in what manner?

**A:** He saw both the Pistols loaded with one Ball each.

**Q:** Was the ground marked out?

**A:** Yes, near Six Yards distance.

**Q:** Did he (the Witness) know the cause of their dispute?

**A:** No.

**Q:** Did Ensign MOFFATT and the Prisoner both fire at the same time?

**A:** Exactly at the same time.

**Q:** Was there any efforts made, to accommodate their dispute previous to their going to the ground where the Duel was fought?

**A:** On going towards the ground, the Witness mentioned to Lt. PENDRED of the Queens Rangers that he thought it was a pity that the dispute could not be settled without a Duel, and Lt. PENDRED answered that Ensn. MOFFATT thought himself injured, and that he would not make it up, unless the Prisoner (Ensn. LAWRENCE) would make him some acknowledgement, upon which he (the Witness) told Lt. PENDRED that he had previously advised the Prisoner to make an acknowledgement if he was in the wrong, and the Prisoner answered that he thought himself the injured person, and that he would make no apology.

**Q:** Was there any conversation passed between Ensn. MOFFATT and the Prisoner previous to their getting to the place of appointment?

**A:** There was some conversation passed, but not relative to the dispute, and they seemed friendly.

**Q:** Was their [sic] any thing said to the Parties after they got to the place of appointment, or on the way to it concerning the accommodation?

**A:** No, not that he knows of.

**Q:(by the Priser.)—** Was he (the Priser.) Wounded at the same time that Ensign MOFFATT fell?

**A:** Yes, he was wounded in the right side of his body.

Lieut. John PENDRED, of the Queens Rangers being duly Sworn deposed that on the Evening of the 13th Jany. last Ensn. MOFFATT desired him (the Witness) to carry a note to the Priser. (Ensn. LAWRENCE) which he did;

and carried back Ensn. MOFFATT back an answer, which was that he would meet him at 9 o'Clock the next morning with Pistols at the Widow PRYANs, at the same time he (the Witness) endeavoured every thing in his power to Settle the Dispute amicably;

that they met at the hour and place appointed and the ground was marked, and the Pistols were loaded in his (the Witness) presence, with one Ball each;

that Ensign MOFFATT and the Prisoner stood to their ground, and they both fired at the same time and Ensign MOFFATT immediately fell, and he (the Witness) went up to him, and Ensn. MOFFATT said "My dear fellow I am killed" and immediately expired—;

that he (the Witness) examined the body, and found that he was wounded in the lower part of his Belly, and that the Ball had entered on one side, & gone out the other.

**Q:***(by the Court)*— Was the body examined by any Surgeon?

**A:** No.

**Q:** What was the reason why the Body was not examined by a Surgeon?

**A:** Because the Rebels were on the Island the next day.

**Q:** What was the reason the Body was not examined by a Surgeon immediately after the Duel?

**A:** Because there was no Surgeon present at the time.

**Q:** How long was it from the time Ensn. MOFFATT was killed to the time that he was burried?

**A:** Two days.

**Q:** Were the Rebels all that time on Staten Island?

**A:** They were there one Evening, and went away the next morning.

**Q:** Where was the Body interr'd?

**A:** At Richmond Church.

**Q:** Where was the Body carried to after the Duel?

**A:** He (the Witness) and Ensign THOMPSON carried the Body in a Sleigh to the Rose and Crown Tavern & left it there, and they afterwards sent a Serjeant and one man to bring the Body to WILSONs Tavern at Richmond where it remained till it was buried.

**Q:** Were the Pistols equal in length & Size?

**A:** Ensign MOFFATT's seemed to him (the Witness) to be the longest.

**Q:** Was there any proposal for interchanging Pistols?

**A:** The Prisoner (Ensn. LAURENCE) ask'd Ensign MOFFATT, if he chused one of his Pistols, and he answered no, that he would keep his own.

**Q:** What was the reason that they would not Settle the dispute at the time he (the Witness) endeavoured to do it?

**A:** Because Ensn. MOFFATT told him (the Witness) that he would not make it up unless the Prisoner (Ensn. LAURENCE) would make him an apology for the Treatment he had received from him.

**Q:** Does he (the Witness) recollect any conversation, between Ensn. THOMPSON, and himself previous to their going to the place of appointment?

**A:** He (the Witness) told Ensn. THOMPSON that he was very sorry that it should go such lengths, as he had endeavoured every thing in his power to Settle the affair, & Ensn. THOMPSON told him (the Witness) that he had likewise used every thing in his power to make up the dispute.

The Court adjourned 'till [Wednesday morning 11 o'Clock](#).

#### **Wednesday the 23rd Feby. 1780**

The Court being met pursuant to Adjournment.

The Court Adjourned 'till Thursday morning 11 o'Clock.

#### **Thursday the 24th Feby. 1780.**

The Court being met pursuant to Adjournment.

Lieut. John PENDRED was again examined.

**Q:***(by the Court)*— Was the ground measured?

**A:** Yes, the ground was measured about the distance of Six Yards, but Ensn. MOFFET wanted it to be only four Yards.

**Q:** Did they fire by word of Command?

**A:** Yes.

**Q:** Where was Ensn. MOFFET quartered previous to the Duel?

**A:** In one of the Huts in Richmond redoubt.

**Q:** What distance is it from the Redoubt, to the place where the Duel was fought?

**A:** About four miles.

**Q:***(by the Prisoner)*— Did not he (the Witness) carry him (the Prisoner) the note produced in Court previous to the Duel Vizt.

Richmond 13th Jany. 1780

(Sir)

In consequence of your behaviour last night to me (when totally intoxicated) requires that satisfaction due by one Gentleman to another. Mr. McNABB sends you your side arms, and wishes that you should not consider yourself longer under an arrest by him. I now call upon you as a Gentleman and a Soldier with your Sword & Pistols to wipe off any Odium I might have received by your Ungentlemanlike behaviour to

Yrs

John MOFFET

Ensn. LAURENCE.

**A:** Yes.

**Q:** Did not Ensn. MOFFET go to him (the Prisoner) on the Evening of the 13th Jany. Six miles to fight him?

**A:** Yes.

**Q:** Was not he (the Prisoner) wounded at the same time that Ensign MOFFET fell?

**A:** The skin was raised on the right side, just under his breast.

The Court Adjourned till Friday the 25th Feby. 1780.

**Friday the 25th Feby. 1780.**

The Court being met pursuant to Adjournment.

The Prisoner (Ensn. LAWRENCE) being put upon his Defence, delivered himself to the Court in the following manner—Vizt.

Mr. President and Gentlemen of the Court

I stand charged before this Court for the Crime of Murder. I am very unhappy that I have been under the necessity of acting a part that has subjected me to such a Charge.

Ensn. MOFFET (the unhappy Gentleman who fell) sent me a Challenge on the Evening of the 13th Jany. to meet him immediately—I declined it—but as I was compell'd by the words of the Challenge, promised to meet him the next morning.

I considered myself bound by the Laws of honor, to give him the Satisfaction he demanded. My repputation as an Officer and a Gentleman, in short my all was at stake—had I omitted meeting him in the manner he requested, I must ever after been treated as a Rascal and Coward—unhappy alternative—

Called upon as I was, I humbly conceive (by the Evidence of Mr. THOMPSON, Mr. PENDRED, and the Tenor of the Note of the 13th Jany. that Ensn. MOFFET sent me) it has appeared to the Court, that I only acted in my own Defence and that I was not guilty of any unjust or ungentlemanlike behaviour on that occasion.

I humbly ask the Courts pardon for taking up so much of their time in my Defence. I have been careful to make it as short as possible, Knowing that justice will govern your Decrees, I chearfully submit to your determination.

John WILSON, Tavern keeper at Richmond on Staten Island, being duly sworn deposed that about Six Weeks ago, Ensn. MOFFET of the [Queens Rangers](#), and the Prisoner (Ensn. LAURENCE) were drinking at his (the Witness's) house,

and they had some words upon which the Prisoner desired Ensn. MOFFET not to impose upon him, as he did not want to have any words, and Ensn. MOFFET said to him (the Prisoner) "What are you"—and he answered that he was a Gentleman, and said that he would always take his own part as such;

and Ensn. MOFFET rubbed the Prisoner on the face, & asked him if he knew what it meant? and the Prisoner answered "dont rub too hard or I shall rub too,"

after which his (the Witness) business called him out, and he went out of the room, in the mean time he heard some high words, and he went into the room again and saw Ensn. MOFFET pulling off his Coat, upon which he (the Witness) took hold of him, and told him that he hoped that they were not going to Box,

and Ensn. MOFFET shov'd him (the Witness) back and told him to go out of the Room, and immediately made a Stroke at the Prisoner and they both fell on the Table and the Candle was put out;

In the mean time that he (the Witness) called for a Candle; he laid hold of one of them in dark, and he desired him to let him go, who the Witness took to be the Prisoner (Ensn. LAURENCE) by his voice; and Ensn. MOFFET asked him (the Witness) whether he would see him imposed upon;

and upon a light being brought into the room, Mr. SEAMAN and the Witness parted them, and the Prisoner went into another room and left Ensn. MOFFET where the dispute first began.

After which Ensn. MOFFET followed the Prisoner into the Room and still persisted to fight with him; upon which Lt. McNABB went into the room, and put them both in Arrest.

**Q:***(by the Prisoner)*— Did not Ensn. MOFFET tell the Prisoner when the dispute first began that he could and would punish him in two minutes, and what was the Prisoners answer?

**A:** He said that he could punish any on[e] in two minutes, but dont remember that he said so of the Prisoner—and the Prisoner (Ensn. LAURENCE) asked Ensn. MOFFET if he meant him, and he answered that he would any man, and asked him in a disdainful manner “pray who are you.”

**Q:** Did he (the witness) see the Prisoner give Ensn. MOFFET any provocation, or offer to Strike him, only what he was obliged to do in his own Defence?

**A:** No.

**Q:** Did he (the Witness) see Ensn. MOFFET next morning and whether he said any thing concerning what passed the preceeding Evening?

**A:** Ensn. MOFFET went into his (the Witness's) Room the next morning and asked him if he had been to blame; and he answered that he was very much to blame, and Ensn. MOFFET made answer that he would never see his (the Witness's) face again excepting he killed Ensign LAURENCE.

**Q:(by the Court)—** Had Ensn. MOFFET, or the Prisoner side arms on, at the time that the dispute began?

**A:** Ensn. MOFFETs Sword was laying on the Table, and the Prisoner had a Bayonet on.

**Q:** Was Ensn. MOFFET or the Prisoner drunk at the time of the dispute?

**A:** He thought them both so.

**Q:** Was the Candle put out on accidently or on purpose?

**A:** Accidently.

**Q:** Did Ensn. MOFFET live at his (the Witness's) house?

**A:** Yes.

**Q:** Did Ensn. MOFFET or the Prisoner endeavour to make use of their side arms?

**A:** No.

**Q:** Did the Prisoner frequent his (the Witness) house before the dispute?

**A:** Yes.

**Q:** Does he know whether Ensn. MOFFET and the Prisoner were acquainted with each other before the dispute?

**A:** He has seen them several times together.

**Q:** Does he know whether they ever had any dispute previous to the one they had at his house?

**A:** No.

Henry SEAMAN (of New York) being duly sworn deposed that about Six Weeks ago he was upon Staten Island, and Ensn. MOFFET asked him and the Prisoner (Ensn. LAURENCE) to go with him to his room at WILSONs Tavern to drink a Glass of Wine; that after drinking two Bottles of Wine Ensign MOFFET began to boast of his Strength, and said that he would finish any man in two minutes, and spoke very disrespectfully of the Battalion that the Prisoner belonged to;

upon which the Prisoner asked him if he meant him, and Ensn. MOFFET said, “him or any other Person that resented it;”

The Prisoner answered that he would resent it in a Genteel manner and not like a Black Guard;

After which he the Witness went out of the room, and Mr. WILSON went in , and was absent three or four minutes, and when he returned he saw Ensn. MOFFET Stripping, and Swearing that he would punish the Prisoner.

That Mr. WILSON was endeavouring to put on Ensn. MOFFETs Coat and he (Ensn. MOFFET) pushed away Mr. WILSON with one hand, and Struck the Prisoner with the other, after which many blows were exchanged, and Ensn. MOFFET was on the ground, and desired Mr. WILSON to take off the Prisoner (Ensn. LAURENCE) and hoped that he would not see him Wronged;

that afterwards Ensn. LAURENCE went into another room, and Ensn. MOFFET followed him and called him a Rascal and Scoundrel, upon which more blows ensued—and Lt. McNABB hearing the Noise went into the Room and put them both in arrest.

**Q:(by the Court)—** Was Ensn. MOFFET, or the Prisoner intoxicated at the time?

**A:** A good deal so.

**Q:** Had they any side arms on, and did they offer to make use of them?

**A:** Ensn. MOFFET had a Hanger on, which Mr. WILSON took from him, upon which he attempted to draw Lt. McNABB's Sword, just before they were put in arrest; and the Prisoner had a Bayonet on, but did not attempt to make use of it.

**Q:** Was Ensn. MOFFET, or the prisoner intoxicated at the time that he the Witness was invited?

**A:** They were both intoxicated.

Major Thomas MILLIGE of the [1st Battalion of New Jersey Volunteers](#) being duly sworn was examined.

**Q:(by the Prisoner)—** How long has he known the Prisoner?

**A:** About two Years and a half.

**Q:** Did he ever know the prisoner's being addicted to drinking or Quarreling?

**A:** Not at all.

**Q:** What has been his general conduct in the Regiment since he (the Witness) has known him?

**A:** He has always behaved himself very well.

Lieut. Col. Joseph BARTON, Commanding the 1st Battalion of New Jersey Volunteers being duly Sworn was examined.

**Q:** *(by the Prisoner)*— How long has he known him the Prisoner?

**A:** About a Year & ten months.

**Q:** Did he ever know of the prisoner's being addicted to drinking or Quarreling?

**A:** He never did, before the unhappy affair with Ensn. MOFFET.

**Q:** What has been his (the Prisoners) general conduct and Character, since he has been in the Regiment?

**A:** He has been a quiet Officer, and ever willing to do his Duty.

The Court having considered the Evidence for, and against the priosner Ensn. John LAWRENCE together with what he had to offer in his Defence is of Opinion that he is Not Guilty of the Crime laid to his Charge and doth therefore Acquit him.

John SMALL Majr. Comdt.  
2nd Battn. 84th (or Sir Henry  
CLINTON's) Regt. of Highldrs.  
President Gl. C. Martial

Mattw. WOODD  
D. Judge Advocate

Approved  
Wm. TRYON M: G: H CLINTON

===

1792, *Jan.*—Gabriel William and Cary Ludlow offer for sale the farm, now in oecupation of **Oliver Templeton**, consisting of two hundred and eighty acres, forty of which is wood-land and thirty saltmeadow. One hundred loads of salt hay and thirty of timothy and clover may be cut in common seasons. It is in a pleasant part of the country, three miles from Jamaica, four from Newtown, six from Flatbush and nine from Brooklyn ferry, and in the neighborhood of the best fishing and fowling, where great supplies may be procured with little trouble.

----

**Captain Gilbert Tice** – b. 1738, New Jersey; Tavern Keeper; Johnstown, New York; 1766, St. Patrick's Lodge No. 4, Johnstown; 1776, to England with Joseph Brant; 1777, Fort Stanwix and Oriskany; Captain in Butler's Rangers; 1783, Niagara; d. 1791.

m. Christina (Christian) Van Slyke, b. 21 Sep 1739, d/o Cornelius (Cornelis) Van Slyke.

At three o'clock in the afternoon, Sunday, 3 Aug 1777, Barry St. Leger formally invaded Fort Stanwix, sending Captain Gilbert Tice to visit the garrison's commandant, Peter Gansevoort.

Among the earliest records in the county clerk's office is the certificate of the commissioner of highways for the laying out of a highway from Johnson Hall to Stone Arabia ; also one from the house of **Gilbert Tice**, in the village of Johnstown, to the highway leading through the Caughnawaga patent to East Canada creek. The former is dated August, 1768, and the latter April 2d, 1770. These must have been among the very first roads leading out of Johnstown, though one to the southward was probably opened at a still earlier date—perhaps the same on which was located the farm bought of Sir Wm. Johnson by John Boshart, now the Fonda plank road.

<http://boards.ancestry.it/surnames.bastedo/91/mb.ashx>

David Tice Bastedo was born 3 Dec 1769 in Schenectady, NY. He was the son of Jacob Bastedo and Clara Jean "Clary" Van Slyke. David's middle name came from his Uncle, **Gilbert Tice**, whom David was very close to. David's mother's sister, **Christina Van Slyke** was married to **Gilbert Tice**, a well known Loyalist. He was in Butler's Rangers, a well known Loyalist unit. He is officially listed on The Old United Empire Loyalists' List, Appendix B, Page 265 as **Captain Gilbert Tice**. He is listed also on Page 136 of the List as being the Uncle of David Bastedo. They came to Canada together in 1783-84. David was only 14 years old at the time.

**Gilbert Tice, aka Geysbert Tyce** was a Loyalist officer who came to Upper Canada with his brother-in-law, Jacob Bastedo during the American Revolution. He was an officer with the Indian Department at Niagara. In 1775 he was a guide for Joseph Brant, the Mohawk leader, on his trip to England.

In 1796, David Bastedo married Elizabeth McMicking. Elizabeth's father, Peter McMicking is also listed on the Old United Empire Loyalist List Appendix B, Page 228-as a Captain in Butler's Rangers. Jacob Bastedo (1743-1829) is buried at Waterdown Union Municipal Cemetery in Flamborough East. Ref.# HM-209. David Tice Bastedo, his son is also buried at the Waterdown Union Municipal Cemetery - Ref#HM-209. This makes sense because for many years, David had made his home in Flamborough East, Ontario, after moving from Stamford around 1830.

----

**Andrew Hodges Tracy** – 1777, Maj. Ebenezer Steven's Rhode Island Artillery Battalion; 1778, Union Lodge No. 1, New York.

Andrew Hodges Tracy, (N. Y). Sergeant and Sergeant-Major of Stevens' Battalion Continental Artillery. 19th November, 1776, to June, 1777; 2d Lieutenant, 1st June, 1777; resigned 13th September, 1778, and joined the enemy.

Captain Johnson, posing as a captured "loyalist lieutenant" named **Andrew H. Tracy**, he was ushered into the prison cell. Soon "Tracy" produced a small liquor bottle which soon loosened the tongue of a British grenadier concerning Burgoyne's army.

-----

**Nathaniel Underhill** – 1777 DeLancey's Brigade; Tarleton's Legion; 1781, River Saint John, NB; Parr Town (Saint John), NB; 1789, Maugerville, NB; 1789, St. George's Lodge No. 2, New York; St. George's Lodge No. 19, Maugerville, NB; d. ca 1807, Fredericton.

The first trace of Masonic activity in New Brunswick dates from 29 Jan 1783. That year, the Provincial Grand Lodge of New York granted a warrant to **Samuel Ryerse** and others to form **St. George's Lodge No. 2**, in the 3rd Battalion of the New Jersey Volunteers. The warrant was signed by [Rev.] **William Walter** [q.v.], Grand Master, chaplain of that regiment. The Lodge was located at Maugerville. In 1788 the lodge received a warrant from the Provincial Grand Lodge of Nova Scotia, as [St. George's Lodge] **No. 19**. It conferred the Mark and Royal Arch, as well as the Craft degrees. [ref. - A History of the Royal Arch – Part Two, by Everett R. Turnbull and Ray V. Denslow].

**Nathaniel Underhill** b. 1751 in Eastchester, Westchester, NY; chr. 30 Dec 1787 Anglican Church, Maugerville, , New Brunswick; d. 1807 in Francklyn, Franklin, New Brunswick; bur. 1 Mar 1807 Old Burial Ground, Fredericton, York, New Brunswick. Phillipsbury (Phillipsburgh Manor), Westchester, New York; Capt Vernon's Dragoons, British Legion guide during Rev War Loyalist; Jan 1783, to Maugerville,, New Brunswick; Underhill's Tavern, Maugerville,, New Brunswick; died 1808 Fredericton, York, New Burnswick

**Father:** [John UNDERHILL](#) b: 2 Aug 1718 in New York, , New York

**Mother:** [Ann Elizabeth BOWNE](#) b: 13 Jun 1722 in Flushing, Long Island, New York

Married bef 1773 [Rebecca WARD](#) b: 1759 in New York

Children

1. [Jemima UNDERHILL](#) b: 1767

2. [Hannah UNDERHILL](#) b: 1770 in , Westchester, NY; m. **Abraham Vanderbeck** [q.v.]

3. [British Nathaniel UNDERHILL](#) b: 22 Jun 1773 in Westchester, NY; c: 30 Dec 1787 in Maugerville, Sunbury, New Brunswick

<http://boards.ancestry.com/localities.northam.canada.newbrunswick.general/853/mb.ashx?pt=1>

Nathaniel Underhill, 1751 of Eastchester, MA (Westchester Co, NY), Chr. 30 Dec 1787 / adult, Maugerville Ang Church, d. 1808 / ae 57 yrs, Fredericton, York Co, NB, bur. Old Burial Ground, Fredericton, York Co, NB, s/o John Underhill & Ann Bowne, m. pre 1773, Rebecca Ward, b. New York, d. pre 1806, Fredericton, York Co, NB, bur. Old Burial Ground, Fredericton, York Co, NB, d/o Thomas Ward & Freelove Pinckney. In his claim for losses, Nathaniel Underhill states he was of Phillipsburgh Manor, Westchester Co, NY. Served as guide during war and was Private in Capt Vernon's troop of Dragoons, British Legion, before being discharged. Left NY Jun 1783 and now resides with family at Maugerville. Claims house and 2 farms containing 204 acres. (10 Mar 1786, Saint John) In Bell's we see he came to NB aboard the LITTLEDALÉ with unit 21. There was 1 woman, 2 children over 10 and 2 under ten in his party. He apparently left two servants in NY.

----

**William Van Allen** – b. ca 1744, of New Bridge, NJ; New Jersey Volunteers; 1789, St. George's Lodge No. 2, NY; St. George's Lodge No. 19, Maugerville, NB; 1783 River Saint John.

He was one of those men who had served in the American militia before joining the British and was commissioned captain in the Fourth Battalion, New Jersey Volunteers, 23 Nov 1776. In 1780 he is found in the same office in the Third Battalion and served until peace was declared. July 23, 1779. Party of **New Jersey Volunteers** under Capt. **William Van Allen** captured two rebels.

----

**Peter Van Broeck [Ten Broeck]** – King's Rangers; 1771 St. Patrick's Lodge No. 4, Johnstown, NY; 1783 Niagara.

<http://webcache.googleusercontent.com/search?q=cache:6O9oWXNrfmQJ:www.iaw.on.ca/~awoolley/brang/brptbcoy.html+%22pet+er+ten+broeck%22&cd=3&hl=en&ct=clnk&gl=us>

**Peter Ten Broeck** was a member of a prominent Mohawk Valley family who was taken prisoner with Walter Butler after Oriskany. There was considerable argument as to his seniority in the Corps, for he refused to escape with Walter Butler, and refused assistance to escape when a party was sent specifically to secure his liberty. He was eventually exchanged, but had lost credibility as a leader. It is not known which company he was given to command. It might have been John McKinnon's company, as McKinnon had returned to England on sick leave and never returned. The date of the first muster and the service of this company has yet to be determined. After the war, Ten Broeck settled in Niagara and rose to the rank of Lieutenant Colonel and commanded the 1st Battalion Nassau Militia and the 1st Regiment Lincoln Militia.

----

Peter Ten Broeck possessed considerable property in Tryon Valley which was confiscated by the revolutionists. He held a captain's commission in Butler's Rangers. He settled on the Niagara River after the war. There he associated on the Nassau Land Board in Oct 1789-1791 with Bros. Col. John Butler, Sir John Johnson and Hon. Robert Hamilton.

<http://freepages.genealogy.rootsweb.ancestry.com/~ancestorsofcedric/familypaf/pafg127.htm>

**Peter [Petrus] Ten Broeck Capt.** b. 1737; d. 1804; bur. 18 Sep 1804; son of Abraham Ten Broeck, the Albany Co. Militia Brigadier [see below for a different parentage]; m. 1750 **Anna [Annatje] Herkimer** in 1750, b. 1739 in Little Falls, NY, daughter of **Johan Jost Erghemar [Herkimer]** b. 20 Jun 1700 in Sandhausen, Palatine, Rhine, Germany; d. 25 Aug 1775 in Burnetsfield, Albany, NY, and Anna Catharine Petrie. She was the sister of General Nicholas Herkimer, and Peter ran off to British with Hans Jost Herkimer, Nicholas' elder brother.

Peter was listed on the Roster of Butler's Corps of Rangers as a Captain.

In the census taken on 30 Nov 1783 at Niagara for his own Company of the Corps of Rangers:

Capt. Peter TenBroek	age 46	Gitty TenBroeck	age 15	Hanna TenBroek	age 8
Mrs. TenBroek	age 44	Nickles TenBroek	age 13	John TenBroeck	age 4
Jacob TenBroeck	age 22	Cathrine TenBroek	age 10		

Children:

- i Jacob Ten Broeck Maj. b. 1761; d. 1830. m. Priscilla Read on 9 Jul 1797.
- ii Gitty Ten Broeck b. 1768.
- iii Nicholas Herkimer Ten Broeck b. 1770.
- iv Catherine Ten Broeck b. 1773. m. George Forsythe on 25 Jul 1804.
- v Hanna Ten Broeck b. 1775. m. Thomas Butler.
- vi John Ten Broeck b. 1779.

[http://www.archive.org/stream/tenbroeckgenealo00runk/tenbroeckgenealo00runk\\_djvu.txt](http://www.archive.org/stream/tenbroeckgenealo00runk/tenbroeckgenealo00runk_djvu.txt)

THE TEN BROECK GENEALOGY – Being the Records and Annals of Dirck Wesselse Ten Broeck of Albany and his Descendants ,  
Compiled by Emma Ten Broeck Runk, New York, Printed at the De Vinne Press, 1897

PETRUS TEN BROECK

Petrus, the son of Jacob Ten Broeck (26) and Christina Van Alen, married on the thirty-first of March, 1750, Annatje Herchheimer (Herkimer). Through his marriage he was allied to the most influential Germans in the Mohawk Valley, as his wife was a sister of General Nicholas Herkimer, of Revolutionary fame.

The residence was in Montgomery County, NY, as the names and dates of baptism of several of his children stand on the register of the church at Stone Arabia. His name is entered as Major Petrus Ten Broeck at the baptism of the third son, in 1771, showing his standing in the militia at that date.

Under date of October, 1776, he is unfortunately found associated with Johan Jost Schuyler in the following:

"Peter Ten Broeck, of the Fall Kill, joined the enemy. He, with Han Yost Schuyler and about twelve others, went to Oswego, hoping to meet the enemy there." A shade more light is thrown on this event by a letter to General Schuyler, which relates how, " After a consultation at Canajoharie Castle among the Indians and Tories, they absconded to the enemy."

It is doubtful if this plan carried, as Schuyler and others, to the number of twenty-eight, were captured. Major Ten Broeck probably even found a way to avoid being a refugee, as on January the tenth, 1780, he presented his youngest child for baptism at the Germantown Church, Columbia County.

These few unconnected facts regarding the life of Petrus Ten Broeck leave many unsolved problems in their wake, and trace of his children, beyond the following list, cannot be found.

Children of Petrus Ten Broeck and Annatje Herkimer.

- i. Annatje, bapt. at Kaatsbaan 5 Jul 1760.
- ii. Jacobus, b. at Stone Arabia, Dec 1761.
- iii. Johannes, b. at Stone Arabia, 26 Oct 1764; died young.
- iv. Anna, bapt. 8 Feb 1769.
- v. Gertrude, bapt. 8 Feb 1769,
- vi. John Nicholas Herkimer, b. at Stone Arabia, 10 Jan 1771; m. Delia, d/o Colonel Peter Billinger and **Delia Catherine Herkimer [sister of General Nicholas Herkimer]**.

----

**Ancestry from the Herkimer Family to Grand Maste John Wright Vrooman:**

- Son of Col. **John Wright Vrooman, Grand Master** - 1889-90 (26/28 Mar 1844-24 Nov 1929 )
- Grandson of Nicholas Vrooman (1809-1887) and Christina Wright
- GGrSon of Jacob Vrooman (1760-1810) and Delany (Lena) Casler [Kessler] (1789-1871)
- GGGrSon of Nichols Casler [Kessler] (1763-1828) and Gertrude Bellinger (1764-1821)
- GGGGrSon of **Col. Peter P. Bellinger and Delia Herkimer [sister of General Nicholas Herkimer]** – noted above
- GGGGGrSon of Johan Jost Herkimer (1700-1775) and Anna Catherine Petrie (1700/04-1775)

----

**Col. Abraham Van Buskirk** – b. 1735, New Jersey; Physician; 1776, New Jersey Volunteers; 1782, Lodge No. 169 E.R. (A), NY; 1782, Charter Member, St. George's Lodge No. 2, NY; 1783, Shelburne, NS; d. 1799.

<http://familytreemaker.genealogy.com/users/m/c/n/Thomas-E-Mcneill/BOOK-0001/0003-0011.html>

**Col. Abraham Van Buskirk** (Jacobus<sup>3</sup>, Thomas<sup>2</sup>, Laurens Andriessen<sup>1</sup>) b. 1735 in Bergen Co., NJ; d. 6 Jun 1799 in Shelbourne, Nova Scotia; m1. 22 Nov 1760 in Hackensack, Bergen, NJ, Sophia Van Dam, b. 1740 in Bergen, NJ; d. bef. 1770; m2. 6 Apr 1770 in Albany, NY, Jane Dey, b. 16 Mar 1749/50 in Preakness, NJ; d. 26 Feb 1789 in Shelbourne, Nova Scotia. Abraham Van Buskirk was a physician, surgeon and apothecary at Hackensack, NJ and owned a farm at Paramus, NJ. On 16 Nov 1776 he was commissioned Lt. Colonel of 3rd Battalion of NJ Volunteers and later was a Colonel commanding the 4th Battalion of NJ Volunteers. He was active in the Revolutionary War until 15 Sep 1783 when he and his battalion were evacuated to Nova Scotia from New York. There are many reports of his activities in NJ and NY records. None of them are complimentary. He was blamed for burning the Elizabethtown, NJ church in 1780. George Washington wrote a letter to Congress on 16 May 1777 in which he reports an attack by Col. V. Buskirk and 300 Tory levies from Bergen on the morning of the 13th. There are other letters to and from George Washington referring to Abraham Van Buskirk prior to that.

Abraham Van Buskirk and his family settled in Nova Scotia where he became the first mayor of Shelburne.

Children of Abraham Van Buskirk and Sophia Van Dam are:

- i. Jacobus Van Buskirk, b. 1762 in Bergen Co., NJ; d. 27 Nov 1834 in Yarmouth, Nova Scotia, Canada.
- ii. Sophia Van Buskirk, b. 1763 in NJ.

Children of Abraham Van Buskirk and Jane Dey are:

- i. Maria Van Buskirk, b. 1771; d. 8 Dec 1796; m. prob. Shelburne, N. S. 23 Feb. 1791 **Lynde Walter** (1767-1844) **son of Rev. William Walter, Prov. Grand Master of New York** [see below].
- ii. Mary Van Buskirk,
- iii. Anne Van Buskirk, b. 1773; m. James McMasters 9 Oct 1794.
- iv. John Van Buskirk, m. Mary Phillips.
- v. Elizabeth Van Buskirk, b. bef. 26 Dec 1777.
- vi. Cornelius Van Buskirk,

Abraham Van Buskirk was colonel in the 4th battalion of New Jersey Volunteers, and second in command to Brigadier-General Arnold at the siege of Saratoga (being specially mentioned in his dispatches for active exertions), and who, at the close of the revolutionary war, in 1784, settled in Shelburne. Shelburne was then a city of some ten thousand inhabitants, and Abraham Van Buskirk was its first mayor.

Dr. Abraham Van Buskirk lived at Paramus and was surgeon in the first militia of Bergen County, February 17, 1776. In July, of that year, the Provincial Congress ordered that the treasurer pay to Dr. Van Buskirk and two others the sum of 335 pounds, 10 shillings, being the amount of 79 stands of arms at 4 pounds, 10 shillings apiece. But before the year was out he had gone over to the British, bag and baggage, family and all. He was the leader of many Tory raids in Bergen County, one raid through Closter in 1779.

The winter of 1780 was an unusually bitter one, and in January of that year the British, taking advantage of the intense cold, sent two raiding expeditions into Jersey. Colonel Abraham van Buskirk led his force of four hundred men across the ice from Staten Island into Elizabethtown, where during the night he burned the town-hall, "Parson" Caldwell's church, and captured nearly half a hundred of the post-guard.

-----

**John Van Buskirk** – b. 1755, New Jersey; 1776, New Jersey Volunteers; 1782, Lodge No. 169 E.R. (A), NY; 1782, Charter Member St. George's Lodge No. 2, NY; 1783, Shelburne, NS.

'Gone For a Soldier,' by Jeffry S. Hepple, is a novel [664 pages] set in the time of the American Revolutionary War as seen mostly through the eyes of **John Van Buskirk** and his wife, Anna. Think you know about the Founding Fathers? Wait until you read the real stories of the political intrigues and personality clashes surrounding the events leading up to the Declaration of Independence! Patriots, Loyalists, British and French officers, women of easy virtue, and spies of all persuasions figure in this story of the turbulent events surrounding the difficult birth of the United States of America.

Is this a perfect book? Of course not- the long direct quotations from historical documents included for accuracy may not be to all reader's tastes and the detailed battle descriptions may not interest every reader but these are minor faults in a sweeping and colorful tapestry created by Mr. Hepple. He gives us characters we can care about, some based on members of his family in Revolutionary America. The research that went into this novel must have been mind boggling- a labor of love.

This is a story well worth reading and the characters will stay with you long after you turn the final page. A preview may be read at:

[http://books.google.com/books?id=q5mbVR4TzZYC&pg=PA18&lpg=PA18&dq=%22john+van+buskirk%22+%22loyalist%22&source=bl&ots=tp0diRhqai&sig=5bw4EF32K8HveHTk7C4qDi1oCqo&hl=en&ei=CkqSTO6XG8OBIAeE4d2mCq&sa=X&oi=book\\_result&ct=result&resnum=3&ved=0CBwQ6AEwAjgK#v=onepage&q=%22john%20van%20buskirk%22%20%22loyalist%22&f=false](http://books.google.com/books?id=q5mbVR4TzZYC&pg=PA18&lpg=PA18&dq=%22john+van+buskirk%22+%22loyalist%22&source=bl&ots=tp0diRhqai&sig=5bw4EF32K8HveHTk7C4qDi1oCqo&hl=en&ei=CkqSTO6XG8OBIAeE4d2mCq&sa=X&oi=book_result&ct=result&resnum=3&ved=0CBwQ6AEwAjgK#v=onepage&q=%22john%20van%20buskirk%22%20%22loyalist%22&f=false)

-----

**Gabriel VanHorne** – Captain; Innkeeper; 1789, St. George's Lodge No. 2, NY; St. George's Lodge No. 19, Mougerviller, NB; 1801 Master, Solomon's Lodge No. 22, Fredericton, NB; d. 1815.

**Gabriel VanHorne** born 1749, d. 3 Mar 1815: was a Loyalist from New Jersey who came to NB in 1783 and settled at Fredericton in York County: he m. Mary Hanselpacker, d. 1818, d/o Philip Hanselpacker.

-----

**John Van Norden** – b. 1756, New Jersey; New Jersey Volunteers; 1782, Lodge No. 169 E.R. (A), NY; St. George's Lodge No. 2, NY; 1783, Shelburne, NS; 1784, Windsor, NS; 1788, Joined Windsor Lodge No. 15, NS; 1792 Master; 1795, Joined Lodge No. 155 E.R. (A), Halifax, NS; 1796, Bermuda; 1797, Charter Member St. George's Lodge No. 266, Scottish Constitutions, Bermuda; 1800-01, Master; 1800 St. George's Lodge No. 307, E.R. (A), Bermuda; 1801 Master; d. 1823 Bermuda.

John Van Norden was an Ensign in the 3rd NJ Volunteers. He settled in Nova Scotia, where he was an instructor at Kings College; he removed later to Bermuda where he was 19 years mayor of St. Georges, and died there. The official, ceremonial center in Bermuda of St. George's, King's Square — also known as Market Square — acquired its dignified name in 1818 when then mayor of the town, John Van Norden, named it in honor of George III. There is a tablet to him in the church of St. George and St. Peter:

To the memory of John Van Norden, Esquire, late Deputy Grand-Master of the Provincial Grand Lodge, of Bermuda, and 19 years Mayor of the town of St. George's, who departed this life 30 Sep 1823, aged 67 years. In testimony of their high regard and approbation of his conduct while acting as Master, this tablet is erected by the brethren of St. George's Lodge No. 266.

Men of prominence in St. George sought to establish a second 'civilian' Lodge in 1797. The prime mover behind this Lodge was John Van Norde, a Loyalist who had lived in New Jersey and Nova Scotia (where he had been a Master of Windsor Lodge No. 13) before arriving in Bermuda in 1796 as Naval Storekeeper. Van Norden and seven other prominent Bermudians successfully applied to the Grand Lodge of Scotland for a warrant, and St. George's Lodge No. 266 came into being in May 1798.

[http://books.google.com/books?id=cBhOAAAAMAAJ&pg=PA202&dq=%22john+van+norden%22+%22bermuda%22&hl=en&ei=C3iSTJbdllK78gb0lvzPBq&sa=X&oi=book\\_result&ct=result&resnum=4&ved=0CD8Q6AEwAw#v=onepage&q=%22john%20van%20norden%22%20%22bermuda%22&f=false](http://books.google.com/books?id=cBhOAAAAMAAJ&pg=PA202&dq=%22john+van+norden%22+%22bermuda%22&hl=en&ei=C3iSTJbdllK78gb0lvzPBq&sa=X&oi=book_result&ct=result&resnum=4&ved=0CD8Q6AEwAw#v=onepage&q=%22john%20van%20norden%22%20%22bermuda%22&f=false) page 202.

Constituting a Lodge under the "Antients" - Bro. J. C. Pocock has forwarded me some notes respecting the constitution of No. 224, Bermudas, his mother lodge, which seemed to me to give an unusually full picture of the proceedings. In reply to my enquiry, Bro. Hughan writes: "I believe down to the last it was the custom of the Antients to hold Grand Lodges *pro tem* for the constitution of new Lodges, but I do not remember any Dispensation so full as the one you sent me, and so hope you will publish it as well as the report of the subsequent proceedings. I do not know of any with the note as to the meetings of Grand Lodge."—G. W. SPETH.

#### COPY OF DISPENSATION TO BRO: JOHN VAN NORDEN

To ALL WHOM IT MAY CONCERN

Whereas the Noble and Puissant Prince, John, Duke, Marquis, and Earl of Atholl, &c, Grand Master of the Most Antient and Honourable Fraternity of Free and Accepted Masons of England, hath been pleased to appoint and Constitute me according to Ancient Custom His Grace's Deputy and in His Grace's absence to preside, hear, determine, and transact all matters relative to the Grand Mastership (except His Grace's sign manual) and whereas a sufficient number of worthy brethren Freemasons have assembled at St Georges in the Islands of Bermuda, and from thence have petitioned the Grand Lodge of Ancient Masons for a Warrant and constitution according to ancient custom to be held at St Georges aforesaid.—Now be it known, that by virtue of the aforesaid authority I do hereby order and direct our Trusty and Welbeloved Brother John Van Norden one of our Pastmasters within fourteen days after the receipt of this power, at some convenient place in St Georges aforesaid, to congregate a sufficient number of proper persons, freemasons, and, then and there, in the name of God and the Grand Master to open a Grand Lodge, which Grand Lodge shall be governed by our said Trusty and welbeloved Brother to preside as Deputy Grand Master of Masons in England, and the Masonical Jurisdiction thereunto belonging, for the space of three hours, and no longer, during which time our said trusty and welbeloved brother shall appoint proper persons viz :—Present (or Past) Masters of Lodges to act as Grand Wardens and in the said Grand Lodge, when so opened in St Georges aforesaid, the said Grand Officers (pro tempore) shall in the name of His Grace, the most noble and Puissant Prince, John, Marquis Duke and Earl of Atholl &c &c &c, Grand Master of Masons, constitute and confirm the aforesaid petitioners into a regular Lodge No 307.—And to act and to do all manner of necessary things for the constitution of the said Lodge, but no other business whatsoever. Lastly, I do hereby require and order that a faithful copy of the Transactions of the said Grand Lodge, with the names of all the brethren present be forthwith transmitted, together with this power, to our Grand Secretary in London, to be recorded in the Grand Lodge.

Warranted No 307 must not be constituted upon the 3rd Wednesday in the month, nor upon the 1st Wed : in Mar: June, and December, being the days on which the Grand Lodge meet in London.

Given under my hand and seal in London the 9th day of August 1797 and in the year of Masonry 5797.

WM DICKEY D.G.Master.

The instructions contained in the foregoing dispensation having been carried out, Bro : Past Master John Van Norden forwarded the following letter and proceedings of the temporary Grand Lodge to the Grand Secretary, London:—

St Georges Bermuda  
March 23rd 1800

Sir and Brother

I have the pleasure to inform you that in pursuance of the power vested in me by the Right Worshipful the Grand Master of Ancient Masons in England.—I opened at Masons Hall in St. Georges, a Grand Lodge on Thursday the 20th instant, and there constituted a new Lodge and installed their Officers.—Enclosed are the Proceedings of said Grand Lodge, as also the power granted me.—With the sincerest wish for the welfare of the R.W. the Grand Lodge as a Body and its members individually.

I remain Your Affectionate  
Brother in Masonry

J. V. NORDEN

-----

**Abraham Vanderbeek** [aka Vanderbeck] – b. Aug 1732; d. 26 April 1817; Hackensack, NJ; 1783, New Jersey Volunteers; 1789 St. George's Lodge No. 2, New York; St. George's Lodge No. 19, Maugerville, NS; 1791 Treasurer; d. 1798, Fredericton, NB

<http://www.outwatersmilitia.com/Outwater.html>

Captain John Outwater's militiaman, **Abraham Vanderbeek**, provides us with numerous examples of this spoils system. Although joining the company in January of 1780, "for want of employment and the good of his Country, Vanderbeek managed to combine service to his country with material reward. In one instance, both he and Outwater captured a man attempting to deliver six horses to the British Army in New York; in another, Vanderbeek discovered a boat containing twelve live sheep; a cargo of salt was also seized by Vanderbeek and others. Each time the captured goods were condemned by Justice of the Peace Terhune and were rewarded to the captors.

<http://www.doublegv.com/ggv/battles/Neutral.html>

Abraham Vanderbeek, "being ordered out on the bank of the Hackensack River to watch and detect London traders, at which place he discovered a boat in the said river of which he informed . . . [Captain Outwater] . . . when Vanderbeek, his captain and another of his comrades went with all speed to capture the same, on coming to it, the men had deserted and left the boat with twelve live sheep, which they took as a prize, which boat they towed up the said river and had the prize condemned." At another time Vanderbeek learned that a boat "on board of which was a quantity of salt" was coming up the Hackensack River ". . . in possession of London traders." Outwater, Vanderbeek and a few others went in pursuit of it, "but before they could come up with her they were informed that she had landed her salt at a private house in the neighborhood." They went to the house, seized the salt, and again took their prize before Justice Jacob Terhune to be condemned. Affidavit of Abraham Vanderbeek, Pension Records, S1130.

[http://books.google.com/books?id=tCY-AAAAyAAJ&pg=PA142&dq=%22abraham+vanderbeck%22&hl=en&ei=dVh4TN6zEoT48AbyxpCxBw&sa=X&oi=book\\_result&ct=res ult&resnum=8&ved=0CFMQ6AEwBw#v=onepage&q=%22abraham%20vanderbeck%22&f=false](http://books.google.com/books?id=tCY-AAAAyAAJ&pg=PA142&dq=%22abraham+vanderbeck%22&hl=en&ei=dVh4TN6zEoT48AbyxpCxBw&sa=X&oi=book_result&ct=res ult&resnum=8&ved=0CFMQ6AEwBw#v=onepage&q=%22abraham%20vanderbeck%22&f=false) page 142.

Hannah [Underhill], widow of **Abraham Vanderbeck**. Her husband served in the Revolutionary War in **Col. Abraham VanBuskirk's** [q.v.] Loyalist regiment of New Jersey Volunteers, and was one of the first settlers at Fredericton, where he owned, conjointly with **Cornelius Ackerman(n)**, eight lots on Queen Street, between Regent and St. John Streets. This block of land included the site of the Queen Hotel and adjacent lots on both sides. The Queen Hotel may perhaps be regarded as the legitimate successor of the old Vanderbeck Inn. The following, from the official records, is of interest in this connection:

Ackerman and Vanderbeck, having entered into bonds agreeable to an Act of the General Assembly, are hereby authorized to keep a Publick House and to retail spirituous Liquors from and after the date hereof for and during the full term of one year, they strictly adhering to the regulations prescribed by the said Act of the General Assembly.

Given under my hand and seal at Fredericton this 17th day of January, 1788.

By order of a Court of Special Sessions.

BEV. ROBINSON, *Clerk*.

The license fee was £4 per annum.

-----

John Astle b. c1779, d. 15 Dec 1856 at Nelson, NB, married 29 Sep 1802 Hannah (Underhill) Vanderbeck born c1770 at Fredericton, NB, d. 18 Aug 1841, d/o Nathaniel Underhill and widow of Abraham Vanderbeck: they had three children.

----

Hannah Underhill b: 1770 in Westchester County, NY; d: 1841 in New Brunswick; d/o **Nathaniel Underhill** [q.v.] and Rebecca Ward; m. **Abraham Vanderbeck** b: 1754 d: 1800 in Fredericton, York, New Brunswick m: 27 Jan 1788 in Mauderville Anglican Church, Mauderville, Sunbury, New Brunswick

Children:

3 Abraham Vanderbeck b: 27 Mar 1789 in Fredericton, York, New Brunswick d: 1841; m. Jane Clark b: 1788 d: May 18, 1854 m: October 2, 1809 in Northumberland County, New Brunswick

3 Nathaniel Vanderbeck b: 1790 in Fredericton, York, New Brunswick d: there 1790

3 Sarah Vanderbeck b: 09 Apr 1792 in Fredericton, York, New Brunswick d: there 1883; m. John Clark b: in Scotland d: bef. 1832 m: 1808 in New Brunswick

3 Maria Vanderbeck b: 15 Feb 1797 in Fredericton, York, New Brunswick d: there bef. 1802

3 William Vanderbeck b: bef. 1800 d: bef. 1802

2nd Husband of Hannah Underhill: John Astle b: 1779 d: 15 Dec 1856 m: 29 Sep 1802

3 James Leonard Astle b: 18 Dec 1803 in Miramichi, Northumberland, New Brunswick d: May 1885; m. Nancy Davidson b: 1813 d: aft. 1881 m: 4 Oct 1830

3 Elizabeth Astle b: 01 Jul 1807 in Fredericton, New Brunswick; d: 28 Aug 1807

3 Maria Rebecca Astle b: 1810 in New Brunswick; m. William Walls, b: 1800 in New Brunswick m: 25 Aug 1824

<http://genforum.com/vanderbeck/messages/128.html>

Abraham Vanderbeck and Cornelius Ackerman ran the Golden Ball Hotel in Fredericton, where Theatre New Brunswick stands today. Some of the timber from its construction used to be in the museum by the Post Office.

When there was a need for space for the Legislature to meet, space was commandeered. Later, the land was exchanged for land upriver. Abraham V. married Hanah Underhill; they had a daughter, Sarah. He died when thrown from a horse, according to family tradition, and was buried in the cemetery in the centre of the city. Wife and daughter must have moved to the Miramichi, and the daughter married a John Clark.

The name, Abraham, was carried on through about seven generations.

-----

#### ABRAHAM VANDERBECK to GOVERNOR JAMES ROBERTSON

1781, July 15. New York.—Petition. Has been compelled to fly hither for refuge, having two sons in his Majesty's service. Attested by **Lt. Col. Ab. Buskirk**, John Zabriski and Thos. Outwater, and with note by Thos. Murray, aide de camp, dated 8 August, that Col. Morris will issue rations to petitioner and family for twelve weeks.

-----

Edward Wall –

## Edward Wall, a Loyalist in conflict.

by Peter C. Betz, 178 Noonan Road, Fort Johnson, NY, 12070 - [pbetz@fmcc.suny.edu](mailto:pbetz@fmcc.suny.edu)

Raised, St. Patrick's Lodge No. 4, 6 Sep 1770

<http://www.thefreelibrary.com/Edward+Wall,+a+Loyalist+in+conflict.-a030068601>

Mr. Peter C. Betz, a native of Amsterdam, NY, grew up in the Mohawk Valley, received his BA in English and History from the University of Vermont in 1965 and his Masters of Library and Information Science at SUNY, Albany in 1966. Always interested in New York State history, he wrote a weekly local history column in the Johnstown Patriot newspaper and gives occasional talks to area groups and historical societies. He is an Associate Professor at Fulton-Montgomery Community College, Johnstown.

The author would like to acknowledge the research assistance of Mr. Gavin K. Watt, President of the Museum of Applied Military History and Lt. Col. William Smy, noted Butler's Rangers authority, both of whom provided information not locally available, as well as editorial and very patient computer assistance provided by Mr. Michael Johnson.

The author also wishes to acknowledge the influence of the late Col. Charles B. Briggs, past Superintendent of Johnson Hall State Historic Site, who in the 1960's and early 70's was the first area historian to acknowledge, research and lecture on the lives, hardships and sacrifices of the Loyalists.

### Introduction

If you visit the City of Johnstown, NY, and happen to inquire what colonial era buildings besides Johnson Hall still remain, sooner or later someone will point out a tidy, shake-roofed yellow cottage located at the corner of North William and West Green Streets. You will be informed that this building, long known as the Drumm House, was occupied before the Revolutionary War by Sir William Johnson's first Johnstown teacher, Master Edward Wall.

But if you ask for more specific information, such as where Mr. Wall came from, how long he taught in Johnstown, or what became of him when the Rebellion broke out, your guide will look at you somewhat perplexed, as if to say such questions do not really matter: Edward Wall was Sir William's first schoolmaster; he was allowed to lodge this quaint but comfortable little cottage while he taught here, and that is that. Your local informant, if in a gregarious mood, may embellish the 'facts' further by relating that "Master Wall" was a stern old man and a crop-wielding disciplinarian. Most of this historical 'information' is nonsense: it is an amalgamation of unrealistic assertions dating back no further than the writings of factually-liberal nineteenth century American historians such as Jephtha R. Simms, who in his 1882 opus, *Frontiersmen of New York* describes Wall as the first man to "use the birch", and tells us that, "Wall was a severe disciplinarian, but the Baronet's children were an exception to his clemency." (1) This silly statement, if you reflect on its convoluted grammatical construction, makes no sense to begin with. Simms' description of Wall as a severe disciplinarian is a stereotype extracted from the once-popular 19th century American view of the country-schoolmaster-as-tyrant, a characterization, no doubt sometimes correct in Simms' own era. But on what primary documentation Simms claims any authority for applying this later stereotype to Edward Wall he does not say, simply because there is none. In fairness to Simms, he may have taken as his colonial example Master John Cottgrave, Wall's immediate successor to the Johnstown schoolmastership and an interesting character in his own right, who wrote in November, 1771 that, "I give close attendance to my School - I have already purged many of my Children that they behave much to my satisfaction." (2)

It should be noted that the average, educated Johnstown citizen is very aware of the city's colonial past, but being able to relate to visitors that Edward Wall was the first Schoolmaster of Johnstown and that he supposedly lived in the Drumm House has simply been all anyone desired to know about Wall until now. Local historians have always focused their research efforts on more important people and more significant issues occurring in and around Tryon County during those last, tumultuous months which extended from the death of Sir William in July of 1774 until the sudden exit of Sir John from Johnson Hall in May of 1776. For it was within this narrow time slot of slightly less than two years that the once great agrarian, political and multi-cultural Camelot of Tryon County, Sir William Johnson's life work, agonizingly crumbled and slowly rendered itself asunder.

Yet there has always existed from those very years, sequestered within various documents such as the Papers of Sir William Johnson, the *Minutes of the Commissioners for Detecting and Defeating Conspiracies*, the Minutes of the Tryon County Committee of Safety, and other published and unpublished primary sources, many bits and pieces of biographical information about the so-called 'little people', the cogs in Johnson's great Tryon County wheel, so to speak, those many loyal, intelligent and ambitious retainers and subordinates such as Edward Wall, Gilbert Tice, the Freys, Conynes, Butlers and many others, all grateful for the opportunity to hitch their own wagons to Sir William's rising star. All these men and their families were destined to have their own individual experiences of uprooting and sacrifice during those long years of revolution when the complacent, well-crafted little world of Tryon County was, as well as the world beyond them, turned upside down.

Edward Wall was a Whig-turned-Loyalist, if indeed he ever was a true Whig, just one man among many who, in those early months of the conflict, were torn between the lost altruism, the political hypocrisy and unrealistic idealism that swirled in a great, confusing mix all around them, and which forced every man, sooner or later, to answer the not-so-simple question, "Which side am I on?" Yet there are some curious, presently-unanswerable little mysteries surrounding Wall that may make him a more interesting challenge to historical researchers than some of his contemporaries.

### Part One: Arrival and Progress

The first mystery that surrounds Edward Wall is the question of how, as a relatively late entrant on the prewar Johnstown scene, did he succeed so well in penetrating the Johnson Dynasty inner circle, gradually assuming a much more involved role in the local social, political and mercantile activities than one would ever expect of a village school master. Whatever combination of education and personality he possessed, Wall must also have inspired confidence. Otherwise, he would never have been so rapidly accepted within that comfortable network of select and privileged 'Johnson men' who, each in his own way, earned a place of responsibility

and standing within that smooth-running political machine which will be hereafter referred to as the `Johnson Dynasty'. Exactly how Wall made the status transition from outside hireling to Johnson confidant during the last several swift-flying years of Sir William Johnson's life continues to defy explanation. Much of the first half of this article will be taken up with showing how Wall successfully advanced, but there is no clear explanation as to why.

It is assumed (although not proven) that Wall emigrated from Ireland. Nothing specific is known regarding his birth place, the precise extent or source of his higher education, or even his age. He must be presumed to have been reasonably young, if his ability to survive the arduous activities of his post-Johnstown years are taken into account, and he probably was a Protestant, in as much as he was married in a Protestant church at Caughnawaga. He may also have been English or Scottish. Certainly Sir William, particularly in his last years, encouraged nearly as many men who were not Irish or Protestant as those who were. But the name is essentially Irish and can be found dispersed in various parts of Ireland today. That Wall possessed to a high degree a naive form of honesty of a type which seemed to overflow with unrealistic idealism and good intentions (a dubious combination of assets for anyone desiring to prosper on the colonial frontier), is evident from his known actions, from the contents of his few extant letters to Sir William and from what others wrote to Sir William about him. That Sir William took an interest in Wall and purposely helped advance his career (as he did the careers of many other men, and most always to his own advantage) is very evident. Wall would certainly never have been accepted into **St. Patrick's Lodge** without the Baronet's approval, nor would he very likely have become connected with **Jelles Fonda** in mercantile activities without a Johnson recommendation.

At the same time, the reasons behind Wall's early, active and energetic participation as a Whig member of the Tryon County Committee of Safety, and his unexplained, sudden return to Loyalism and the permanent spurning of the Whig cause are also matters of mystery. Even the details of how he served his King in wartime are scattered and obscure. That he arrived in the Mohawk Valley sometime during 1768 or '69, became well-enough trusted to be included in several of Johnson's larger land-grants, admitted into the exclusive company of St. Patrick's Masonic Lodge, studied to become a trader under Sir William's close associate **Jelles Fonda's** watchful eye, and finally, that he should come to marry into a branch of the Butler clan, the second most powerful family in the eastern end of the valley, are all accomplishments that combine to personify Wall as a man whose presence deserves more scrutiny than does that of a simple colonial schoolmaster.

Admittedly, even after this thorough study there will remain more questions than answers. While Wall obviously spent the pre-Revolutionary War years building a position of trust within the Johnson Dynasty, any circumspect biographer must also strive to explain his appearance in those early months of the Revolution as the trusted and very active member of the Tryon County Committee of Safety. Was he, perhaps, a spy for the Johnson-Butler interests all along, never discovered, yet treated with growing suspicion due to his Butler wife, until it became necessary for him to withdraw or be discovered? While the possibility is interesting, it is the business of honest biographers to present facts `unmuddled' by unprovable theories.

The earliest notice of Edward Wall in America comes to us as it came to Sir William via a letter from John Wetherhead, his factor in Albany, dated November 17th 1768, in which he informs Johnson that, "The bearer of this (letter) Mr. Wall has applyd to me for an Introduction to you - it seems he is very anxious to be employed by you in the capacity of a school master; As I am an entire stranger to him, you will know best what to say to him, as you will very easily find out his qualifications if he has any."(3) Any Johnson scholar familiar with the Johnson Papers is aware of several letters prior to Wall's arrival written by Johnson to various people expressing his frustration over failing to obtain schoolmasters, not only at Johnstown but also at Fort Hunter and `the Mohawks' (Canajoharie). Yet for whatever reason, Johnson apparently did not offer Wall immediate employment at any of these important locations after meeting him in November of '68.

We know this because of the content of the next known reference to Wall's local presence. This reference appears in a most valuable unpublished primary source document, Robert Adem's Merchant's Store Ledger. Through the many pages of this intriguing mercantile ledger, again and again appear upon the stage of pre-revolutionary Tryon County the names of virtually all Sir William's close associates: his own Molly (usually listed as Mary Brant), her brother Joseph, Brain Lafferty, the Butlers, Gilbert Tice, various McDonnals and MacDonalds, the Services, Chews and Freys . . . one day purchasing shrouds, the next maybe cloth to make `pantaloons' or whatever else they had need of. Today Robert Adem's ledger, his unintended chronicle of daily life in colonial Johnstown, resides in the possession of an old local family. Jephtha Simms, helpful for once, informs us that an early member of this family married a daughter of Robert Adems, which may explain the family's present possession of it.(4)

So it happens that the second confirmation of Edward Wall's presence somewhere in the vicinity of Johnstown occurs through his conducting a typical, everyday commercial transaction at Robert Adem's store on March 2nd, 1769, on which date Adems or one of his assistants dutifully recorded what to them was just another daily entry: "To John Butler . . . one yard of cambrick for Mr. Wall."(5) It is therefore very probable, since Wall is being permitted to charge goods for himself under the name of Colonel Butler, that he is most likely somehow in the Colonel's employ. If so, how was he employed? One possible explanation arises from the known fact that Colonel Butler provided a school of his own, separate from any sponsored by Sir William, at Butlersbury for the children of his nearby tenants and perhaps his own younger children as well. While no documentation exists to prove his school was in operation as early as 1769, it is certainly not impossible that it might have been, and if it was, the Colonel might well have employed Wall as a teacher, perhaps even at Johnson's behest, prior to Wall's service with Sir William. It is generally believed that the `Butlersbury' of the 1760s and early 70s was a much more significant entity than the lonely-looking old house of today. Rather, it was a thriving community of Butler's primary tenants and retainers. It is a certainty that Colonel Butler was supporting a school and schoolmaster separate from Johnson's and had been doing so for some time before April of 1775, when he and his oldest son Walter suddenly left the Mohawk Valley. Evidence for this assertion comes from the known interrogation by the Tryon Committee of Safety of his schoolmaster, George Crawford of Butlersbury.(6)

The suggestion that Wall may have been teaching for Butler in early 1769 is, of course, conjecture, and fact would be preferred. There seems to have been almost an undeclared conspiracy to obscure any really accurate information about Wall. Whenever any communicant writes about Edward Wall, it is always in the most general terms, and one is reduced to tracing his chronological trail with a minimum amount of data and a maximum amount of luck to keep from losing it altogether. We can know for certain only that

by early 1769, Edward Wall was residing in Tryon County and was performing some form of professional service for **Colonel John Butler** that would entitle him to charge various necessities such as cambric to the Colonel's general account.

But Robert Adem's ledger book also reveals that by the early fall of 1769, Edward Wall was permitted to charge personal necessities under his own name and account. The first such listing found is on September 30th, 1769, in which entry he is carefully and respectfully recorded as "Edward Wall, Schoolmaster." (7) Thus we can determine with certainty that Edward Wall had begun teaching for Sir William Johnson at the newly-established Johnstown Free School at least by September of 1769. Finally Sir William had his free school in operation. Long had he been grousing over the lack of finding a credible schoolmaster for it in his correspondence with the **Rev. Samuel Auchmuty** and others. This project was clearly important to him and had caused considerable frustration. Indeed he would never find it easy to obtain enough teachers for his schools or ministers for his little churches. As far back as November of 1767 the Reverend Auchmuty wrote Johnson from New York that such a teacher "ought to have a decent living, enough to encourage him to persevere in his duty; and he may also be useful in reading of prayers, etc., in the absence of the Minister". (8) And Johnson would probably not have disagreed as far as the offer of a 'decent living' went, for both men knew the task required special people, not only teachers professionally trained (so as to be acceptable to the governing body of the Society for the Propagation of the Faith [SPF] in Foreign Parts whose charity ultimately paid half their wages) but such teachers also had to be humanistically motivated to accept as personal and spiritual challenges the hardship, danger, sickness and many other frustrations of frontier life. Most of all, surely most paramount of all, Johnson's schoolmasters would have to possess and sincerely demonstrate a compassionate, patient and respectful attitude toward the children of Johnson's greatest allies and friends, his Mohawks.

Now, in a matter of just a few months, Johnson had managed to secure two competent teachers to nurture and develop basic free education programs, one at Johnstown and the other at "the Mohocks" (Canajoharie). And as there is no mention in the Johnson Papers or Adem's ledger of any other teacher serving at Johnstown prior to Wall's employment, we may reliably assign this Fall, 1769 term as the advent of organized public education at Johnstown. As further testimony, we have Sir William's own letter to Daniel Burton written December 6th, 1769, in which Johnson states,

"I have fixed a worthy honest man as a schoolmaster at the Mohawks who tho' there only since March has already 30 Indian children under his tuition who improve very fast and their number will be shortly augmented. I have likewise established a fit person who received a liberal education in Europe at Johnstown near this place, who has at present near 45 children whites and Indians and his school daily increases. The name of the first mentioned School Master is Colin McLelland, of the last is **Edward Wall**. I have already advanced them half a year's salary and propose that they shall soon draw for the amount on Mr. Symonds, agreeable to the advice of Dr. Auchmuty." (9)

"...who received a liberal education in Europe..." Would that for history's sake Sir William had been a little more specific in revealing the details of Wall's education to Burton, but that brief, almost teasing bit of generality is all one may discover about Wall's formal education from the Johnson Papers. Once again, where only one or two additional lines of more specific information about Wall's education might so easily have been recorded for posterity, only hints and inferences are left us.

There is a confirmation of the salaries in the Johnson Papers, a list dated August 18th, 1770 of sums to be rendered various persons, among whom both Colin McLelland and Edward Wall are included. (10) Each are to be rendered 17 pounds/10, drawn on one William Symondson, said sums most likely representing the balance of that 'half a year's salary' Sir William spoke of in his earlier letter to Daniel Burton.

It is no doubt this December, 1769 Burton letter which has caused local Johnstownians to correctly identify Wall as their first schoolmaster, although at the same time accepting him historically in this capacity for simplicity's sake without studying him further. It is more difficult, however, to fathom the origin of a related local notion, the popular assertion that Edward Wall as schoolmaster was allowed to live in such a large and commodious cottage as the preserved colonial residence now known as the Drumm House. Housing was in very short supply. We know that, in the late 1760s, Sir William erected a number (various sources claim anywhere from seven to twelve units) of small but adequate little houses for his most important artisans and retainers as an inducement to draw them to his new town, and the Drumm house by local tradition has long been identified as being one of these buildings. But even these residences were scarcely enough to provide adequate housing for the growing village. With Johnstown expanding daily, the notion that a house large enough to house an entire family should have been turned over for the sole occupancy of an unmarried schoolmaster simply bears no logical credibility. To support this assertion, we need but contrast this old local legend with the known lodging difficulties of Edward Wall's immediate successor, Schoolmaster John Cottgrave, who in November of 1771 wrote to Thomas Flood, Johnson's old friend and Construction Overseer, to complain that "It is impossible for me to describe the dislike I have to the continuing at a tavern for board and lodging." (11) The very next day, Cottgrave again wrote Flood on the issue of housing to inform him that "My wife seems so pressing about coming up that I will be much oblig'd to you if you will inquire of Coll. Johnson if that he expects **Captn. Chew** up this winter, if not I wou'd willingly rent his house near the Bridge...." (12) Given this primary evidence that Schoolmaster Cottgrave was not 'allowed' a house gratis from Johnson's largess but was paying his own room and board and getting nothing better than a small room above a noisy tavern, it is hardly likely, as local tradition has long fancied, that Edward Wall was accorded the comfort of being sole occupant of the Drumm House or any other local residence. And finally, we have Sir William Johnson's own words, written on December 18th, 1767 to Dr. Auchmuty, to the effect that "any other person who comes must be greatly distressed thro' the want of any proper house or lodging, there being no place in the neighbourhood fit for the purpose and any place that could be procured will be held at a dear rate." (13) Thus, with the village constantly growing, it is extremely unlikely that, even with the construction of Johnson's little houses, an entire house could have been assigned, as local tradition persists, to the village schoolmaster. It is certainly possible, however, that Wall and a number of other Johnson employees who were yet bachelors might have been quartered together at one of these residences, thus honouring the persistence of this local tradition in a more realistic manner.

Daniel Burton replied to Sir William's December 1769 letter, writing on May 11th, 1770 to inform him that, "The Society have, in pursuance of your recommendation, appointed Mr. Colin McLelland and **Mr. Edward Wall** their schoolmasters, the former at the

Mohawks and the latter at Johnstown, and will allow them such a salary as you have according to the discretionary power given you last year been pleased to allot them."(14)

It has not been possible to determine whether Edward Wall continued as Johnstown's schoolmaster beyond the Fall 1769 - Spring 1770 academic term. He could have taught for another year, covering the Fall-Winter 1770 term, but there are no accounts extant in the Johnson Papers that show him receiving any payment for that period. As will be related further, he was at Fort Stanwix by May of '71, and so must have turned the school over to John Cottgrave at some earlier time. Cottgrave, who from his own declaration was so unhappily housed somewhere in the garret of Tice's Tavern, was an eccentric opportunist with an empire-building complex not unlike many pioneers. He was certainly, judging from his inexcusably impolite, overly-assertive letters to Sir William and others, not a man of Wall's more politic temperament, but his letters prove he had taken over the school at least by September, 1771, and probably earlier, unless Wall taught a very abbreviated Spring term before removing to Stanwix to begin his next adventure.

Even during 1770, Wall's first full year of local residence, his star began to rise slowly within the Johnson Dynasty. One is hard-put to explain this: a colonial schoolmaster was usually a colonial schoolmaster and remained one. The only judgments we may take liberty to make about Wall's character as a positive factor in his advancement come from but two letters written by him, both to Sir William. But the content of these letters speak volumes to help us assess Wall's general character: they leave us with a reflection of Wall mirrored as a conscientious, reliable, rather idealistic man, the sort to put concentrated energy and determination into whatever project he engaged in. Yet there is also an unspoken naivety in his communications. He seems the type of person whose judgment is sometimes adversely affected by a tendency to believe the best of those around him, so as not to be able to successfully identify potential enemies until too late.

Yet several practical reasons exist to explain **Edward Wall's** advance up the Dynasty's slippery ladder. First of all, he was educated, a man who could teach school, could read, write, and perform mathematical, business-related calculations and many other tasks requiring both intelligence and the ability to think critically and to make decisions. In short, he was a potentially useful man to have around. Certainly Wall's early and continued connection with Sir William's old and trusted associate, **Colonel John Butler**, whatever that connection was, did him no harm, nor could his success in establishing the Johnstown Free School, an accomplishment long on Sir William's local priority list, have earned him anything less than Sir William's gratitude and respect. There is also that singularly strong tone of sincerity arising from his letters which at least suggests another reason for men like Col. John Butler and Sir William Johnson to consider him an asset. If we accept Edward Wall as both Butler and Johnson apparently did, that is, as a man of dependability and integrity and one who could therefore be trusted, we must not forget that the colonial frontier, like all frontiers, was crawling with opportunistic dreamers and schemers ranging all the way from the reasonably scrupulous down to **those totally bereft of any human characteristic beyond intense greed, all of them seeking to emulate this or that "great man" and, like the bond thief in Fitzgerald's *The Great Gatsby*, to "make a connection" any way possible.** The frontier abounded with human leeches and parasites anxious to attach themselves to the fawning retinue of any important, established person like a John Butler or a William Johnson, always in hope of personal advancement.

When we think of such men, we do not need to look any farther than Edward Wall's own replacement, the aforementioned John Cottgrave, who, on November 22nd, 1771, confided in Thomas Flood that,

"I have wrote Collins by Buck to put my name for 2000 acres of the Socandago (Sacandaga) that I may settle some particular families of my own liking thereon - that when done I may establish a store in that quarter and to have an influence at their town meetings." (15)

But as Cottgrave sputtered about his grandiose plan, Wall quietly advanced. As early as April 27th, 1770, we find his name included on a list among forty prominent associates of Sir William designated as "those who are to be inserted in the **Patent for the Northern Tract of 80,000 acres in the rear of Kingsborough, alias Stuart's Purchase.**"(16) The names on this application read like a 'who's who' of Tryon County. Some of them had been born in the valley before Sir William first saw it, while others, like Wall, were relative newcomers, legitimate Johnson retainers riding forward on the coat tails of the great Baronet. Among the older signers of this grant were many who had soldiered with the then Colonel Johnson in the old French war. They had prospered and matured beside Johnson in the decade after, and all of them had discovered and eventually mastered many subtle lessons required to coexist to advantage with the seemingly-unstoppable Johnson Dynasty. They had learned these lessons long before Edward Wall entered their valley and prospered accordingly. Yet it is Wall's signature and not that of the ambitious, conspiring John Cottgrave, which appears on the land grant application. Wall's name was also offered up by Sir William as an alternate for a much smaller land grant application dated September 1, 1770, to be inserted if the grant proved large enough to require extra name.(17) Although Wall's name was later removed from this application because the grant when surveyed was found to be even smaller than anticipated, one may well ponder on the question of what more significant company in all the valley this relatively quiet young man could have been privileged to find both himself and his signature accepted after such a short time in residence? Such evidence of his rapid personal acceptance by the top members of the dynasty fuels the recurring mystery about Edward Wall and about why this apparently amiable, pliant, mannered, intelligent but otherwise unimportant man could be so successful in ingratiating himself so quickly and thoroughly among those "great men" from whose collective power, with Sir William at their head, all important decisions in prewar Tryon County flowed.

At almost the same date, an even more significant and telling event occurred in Wall's rise. **On the 6th of September, 1770, Edward Wall was raised into St. Patrick's Lodge**, Order of Freemasons, along with two other men, **Capt. Norman McLeod** and one **Robert Picken**, a surveyor very actively employed by Johnson.

The signatures of all the prewar inductees are recorded in the original St. Patrick's Lodge Book, which historic document fortunately survived the anarchy of revolution and is carefully preserved by today's St. Patrick's Lodge members.(18) Being raised into a Masonic Lodge was a matter of as much social significance in those times as it is today. The pre-revolutionary lodge roll of St. Patrick's reads, as did the land grant application just mentioned, very much like a who-was-who of Johnson's close associates in Tryon County. One whose signature resided on the Lodge Roll of St. Patrick's could truly claim to have attained a high level of confidence and standing among those whose opinion mattered. And Edward Wall, through whatever combination of circumstance and ability, had with less than two years on the Johnstown scene, somehow arrived at this high social plateau.

As we seek to understand the mystery of this social success, two clues we have to work with are Wall's extant letters, each of which in different ways reinforces the already-mentioned theory that he was imbued with a tendency to mix duty and good intentions with more than a little naivety. But before quoting the letters in proper context, it is necessary to refocus chronologically on Wall's activities.

As mentioned above, by the spring of '71 at the latest, Edward Wall left both Johnstown and its school house behind him: it had all served a purpose, and perhaps as a result of his careful handling of both himself and the school, other opportunities were now extended to him. In an example of what our modern age might call 'apprentice training', Wall now became attached to one of the more successful local business relationships, that ever-active William Johnson/Jelles Fonda trading pipeline. Probably he was invited by one or more of his Lodge brothers. **Jelles Fonda** himself became a member not long after Wall. Though William Johnson was by now the Baronet and one of the greatest of those "great men" of the British colonies, one of his most important character traits, and the one which so successfully helped him retain the allegiance of Tryon County's leading men until his dying day, was that he did not, as he rose in importance, forget or ignore old companions and valley men like Jelles Fonda. They had lain in cold, rain-soaked camps together, traded ball for ball with the French at Lake George, marched west to capture the great prize of Fort Niagara and home again, always planning new trading expeditions while conniving in uncounted land purchase schemes and other personal adventures along the way. Jelles' father Douw was the established merchant-trader at Caughnawaga (now Fonda) before the young William Johnson ever stopped to scrape a clod of Mohawk Valley soil from his boots. No doubt the Fondas, father and son, were among Johnson's earliest acquaintances and commercial associates, and they must have served as positive influences on his development in many ways. And now, while Sir William Johnson, Baronet and Sole Superintendent of His Majesty's Indian allies in the Northern Department, bent his will and his waning body strength to the ever more complicated and impossible obligations of Indian Affairs and empire preservation, he still remained actively involved in all important and lucrative trading activities through partnerships with old and trusted associates such as the Fondas, **George Croghan**, William Printup and others.

Down this new mercantile pathway Edward Wall somehow strayed. Although frontier trading was certainly a more arduous and dangerous vocation than that of colonial schoolmaster, Wall no doubt recognized the opportunity he was being offered via a direct association with Fonda to gain much first-hand experience among the Mohawks and other Iroquois, and by which means he would also increase his value to Sir William as well as to himself. The establishment of reliable trade networks and pursuit of land were the two greatest objectives of the age. Nor should it be forgotten that both William Johnson and Jelles Fonda were now Wall's fellow Masonic Lodge brothers, pledged by the most serious oaths of the time to advance and protect him. Yet while the advantages of such protection and influence would seem an asset, Edward Wall could not have anticipated the extent of the deep-seated, hostile resentment which the advantage of his patronage by Sir William would create against him among the rough, seasoned traders of Fort Stanwix, to which place Johnson and Fonda apparently assigned him.

Fort Stanwix of 1770 was a semi-lawless, rough and tumble trading post attached to a broken-down fort left over from the old French War, manned by a small, listless garrison commanded by an ailing, veteran officer for whom each day was a physical struggle. True, it had experienced considerable physical repairs during the months in 1768 while Sir William and all his Indian Department assistants laboured mightily to hammer out the Stanwix Treaty. But it was going down hill again swiftly, and the only legal authority in camp was the aged and semi-infirm commander of the little garrison, Lt. John Galland. When he was having a bad day, there was really no authority at all. Poor Galland had been commander there since June of 1767 courtesy of General Gage.(19) By 1770, he had probably come to regard the whole, discouraging situation not as a favoured posting awarded him by an old comrade in arms as it was meant to be, but more as the life sentence into which it had slowly degenerated.

For all practical purposes, the real 'boss man' of Fort Stanwix was a weathered, antagonistic boss-trader who made Fort Stanwix, prior to the siege of 1777, his home base and private patrimony. John Ruf, with the help of some hardcase pals, completely dominated trading activities in and around Stanwix, as Wall was soon to discover.

On May 16th, 1771, Edward Wall sat down at his desk at the Johnson-Fonda trading compound, somewhere on the grounds of Fort Stanwix, with quill in hand to acquaint the then-greatest man in colonial America with his progress, informing Sir William that

"Lt. Galland upon your Honour's letter assured me that he would do everything that he could for me or any person you would recommend, but there is very little in the poor old gentleman's power, as he is quite debilitated and for those few days past entirely confin'd to his bed, which I imagine is the reason he is so much despised by the set who live here.

Three of the Chiefs of the Oneidas came here shortly after Stephanus had returned from Johnson Hall, and gave me a name, Awhawhoana or the Great Road, they were very ceremonious upon the occasion, and promis'd they would be friendly and assisting to me, for that they understood that I had been recommended by your Honour, and therefore expected I would be just and kind to them, and indeed I intend to be so, and hope your Honour will be pleased to speak favourably of me to them. The people here who would naturally be willing to discourage any persons in my way, are now spirited to oppose me in everything by **Mr. Phyn and Ellice's** orders for transportation of their own goods and those of Commodore Grant being directed to the wagoners of old standing at Fort Stanwix, which excludes me from my share I might otherwise have in carrying them over, but nevertheless shall have my portion of what is to me made by riding."(20)

This last statement probably means he would haul the goods himself if he had to.

Wall closes with the request that Sir William give his regards to 'Peter and the children', hardly the act of a stern ex-schoolmaster prone to frequent uses of the birch rod, as Simms of the nineteenth century would have us believe. But trouble was brewing for "The Great Road", courtesy of John Ruf, who no doubt desired to see Sir William's new trader take 'the great road' swiftly out of town. Less than a month later, Wall's persistent efforts not to be cheated out of his 'portion' of trading activities brought him to considerable trouble as well as bodily harm.

On the eighth of June, Lt. Galland must have forced himself up from his sick bed, not only to come to rescue Edward Wall, but also to write Sir William an immediate and full account of his own conduct, no doubt to protect his continuance in Sir William's favour. The letter is quoted in full.

"I think it my duty to let you know the late fate of Mr. Wall. Mr. Governor John Ruff being jealous of me in regard to him must needs banish him of (off) the ground he ordered one of his emissaries to breed a coull (quarrel) with Quine at his own house and another of them he employed to nock down Wall which when he saw he got upon him and draged tore and beat him most unmercifully he got him by the heir of his head as he lay on his back and dragged him from Quine's door to his own house where he got a coard and bound him fast and then kept him in confinement which when I hard of sent my Corporal to demand the prisoner he sent me word that I was not capable of taking care of a murderer and that I had no business with him upon which I ordered a file of men to go and brake open every door on his house and bring the prissioner to me. I intend to represent this case to head quarter where I hope his Excellency General Gage will give me immadiant orders to tourn Ruff and all his gang off this ground I assure you Sir his insolence is not to be boren he even toursn off the ground any man he does not like and brings in whom he likes and gives them the best land belonging to the King without my liberty."(21)

Our view of the sickly, perturbed Galland goaded into action by Ruff's deeds, and immediately afterward scribbling-out the above-quoted missive to Sir William to protect his own backside, has its humour. Probably Galland had experienced a long, thankless and debilitating career typically endured by the middle rank professional soldier of the time. General Thomas Gage was responsible for Galland's appointment to Stanwix and remained his guardian angel thereafter. Hugh Wallace made this political fact of life quite clear to Sir William when, on June 15th, 1767, he penned Johnson the following letter.

"The Bearer Lieut. Galland is a Man Genl. Gage has much at Heart to serve, as he was long in the same Corp with him & has appointed him to reside at & take care of Fort Stanwix. As it may be in your power to do him some service & advise him how to make something of the Lands & Houses there I beg you'll be so good as to help him. He is a very honest worthy Man, but has been unfortunate."(22)

And when, not three months into Galland's residency at Stanwix, he apparently managed to provoke a serious quarrel with the local Indians, Gage again wrote a tempering letter to Johnson, proclaiming from the safe distance of New York on September 7th, 1767, that

"If the people who dwell upon the Carrying Place of Fort Stanwix, do not behave properly, or give jealousy to the Indians by an impudent conduct, they must be drove away. Lt. Galland is now of an age in which people's temper generally become cool, I am surprised he is so warm with the Indians."(23)

John Ruff should have known better as well. The Fort Stanwix historian John Scott drawing from Pomroy Jones' earlier work, *Annals of Oneida County* wrote in 1927 that "John Roof had been one of three or four settlers at the Carrying Place known to have been there as far back as 1760. He had been an innkeeper and Indian trader and had assisted in the transportation of bateaux between the two streams." (24) Ruf (or Ruff, as some sources spell it), already had experienced a long trading relationship with Sir William Johnson, frequently supplying both Johnson and his Indian allies, and he shows up regularly in Johnson's account renderings.

But Wall's beating at the instigation of John Ruff was apparently not severe enough to convince him to leave Stanwix. Jelles Fonda, happily announcing that it is "Sunday morning 10 o'clock at Fort Stanwix," but forgetting to include the letter's date, writes to Sir William somewhere near the end of September, 1771, announcing the preliminary results of a trip into the wilderness to scout for good land. Apparently Edward Wall went with him, as Fonda tells Johnson,

"I just now arrive here after being four days in the wouds, reconnoitering the lands and found them very good....Mr. Wall who is not returned yet has our Jurnel and soune as he comes here I will send it to you by Express...the Indians as I send this letter by met me with the Barls as you wrote for to Mr. Wall..." (25)

There was always much business afoot between these two longtime friends, the powerful Baronet and the dependable, half-literate Fonda....always more land to patent, more troubled Indians to placate and feed. Certainly other letters, now long forgotten, pertaining to more important matters than the needed 'barls' Wall was to procure for Sir William, must have travelled back and forth between Fonda, Johnson, and Wall all that summer. Wall's May 16th letter to Sir William is endorsed in the Baronet's own hand as being "received on the 20th by an Indian"(26) and no doubt reliable Indian runners travelled back and forth rapidly on those hot, breathless summer days, anxious to deliver the latest communication between their new brother Awhawhoana at Fort Stanwix and their much more significant older brother Warraghiyagey at his great Hall, where a good meal and perhaps a new blanket or some extra gun powder would be their reward for faithful service.

It is at this point, however, that Edward Wall does the first of several annoying disappearing acts which make accurate chronicling of his life so frustrating. Silence envelops Wall from this late September 1771 letter of Fonda's until he reappears in January, 1772 at Caughnawaga.

It was on January 10th, 1772 that **Ebenezer Jessup** penned a short letter to Sir William from Albany discussing a land transaction and apologizing for being unable to procure for Sir William any decent barrels of 'cyder'. The letter has nothing to do with Edward Wall but for the way it is addressed, "to the Honourable Sir William Johnson Bart. at Johnson Hall, to the care of Majr. Fonda at Caughnawaga."(27) The letter was not delivered to Fonda's headquarters at Caughnawaga until January 15th. Perhaps it was the temporary victim of a winter storms: five days was a long time for a letter to traverse such a short distance even in those times. The relevance of this letter is that it was received at Fonda's and forwarded to Sir William by "Sir, your most Obedt. Hum'l Servt., Edwd. Wall."(28)

This insignificant bit of postal forwarding is nevertheless helpful in once again establishing Wall's whereabouts, for it is obvious he is no longer at Fort Stanwix but has transferred back to Fonda's 'main office,' as it were, in Caughnawaga, just a hill climb south from Butlersbury. Being able to document this relocation contributes somewhat toward understanding when and how Wall found the opportunity to court and win the hand of **Deborah Butler, to whom he was married on July 6th, 1772.**(29)

It is possible that **Edward Wall and Deborah Butler** first met during the period of Wall's earlier association with Col. Butler back in '69. As already suggested, the Colonel may have employed Wall to instruct the younger Butler children. Perhaps he even instructed Debbie while at the same time conveniently and subtly establishing his first important social-political connection in the valley with the

senior Butler, as it was certainly not for nothing that he was allowed to charge sundries in the Colonel's name at Robert Adem's store.

Earlier researchers have assumed that **Deborah Butler Wall** was the same Deborah who was a daughter of John Butler himself. There are, however, two extant primary source documents, either of which would suffice to declare this assumption an error, plus there is the mathematical fact that **Deborah, daughter of Col. John Butler and Catalyntje Bradt Butler**, was baptized May 12th, 1764 and would therefore have been not much older than eight or nine years by 1772.(30) **It is much more likely that Deborah Butler Wall was the Deborah Butler born some years earlier to John's older brother Walter.** The two primary source documents which clearly demonstrate that Deborah Butler, daughter of Walter, and Deborah Butler, daughter of Colonel John, were two different people are as follows.

Firstly, we need only refer to that important wartime letter written by Walter Butler in February 1779 which includes a list of those immediate family members he hopes to have exchanged for prisoners held by Butler's Rangers.(31) Those of his own family he lists, and they are: his mother, Mrs. Butler; his divorced sister, Ann (or Nancy) Sheehan; Ann's son, Walter Butler Sheehan; his younger brothers Thomas, Andrew and William Butler: **Deborah Butler, his unmarried sister and Mrs. Wall -- his cousin, Deborah Butler Wall.** It is obvious from this list, Walter Butler's own enumeration of those intimate family members whom both he and his father spent half the war attempting to release from captivity, that Deborah his sister and Deborah, the wife of Edward Wall, were two separate people, for he lists them one after the other.

Secondly, we have that phonetically amusing letter written in great haste and anxiety by Colonel William Harper of Harpersfield as an express to New York's Governor Clinton in December, 1779, high on the heels of the successful Butler-Brant Raid on Cherry Valley in which Harper reports, "I was informed by several of the prisoners that Butler sate he would keep Mrs. Campbell and Mrs. Moore and thare childring till Mrs. Butler, Mrs. Wall her nese, and his other friends were exchanged for them."(32) It is obvious that, as the daughter of Mrs. Butler's husband's brother Walter, Deborah Butler Wall would indeed, (as Colonel Harper so originally spelled it), have been Mrs. Butler's 'nese'.

Thus, through the unintentional testimony of two prominent contemporary participants in the great conflict, we can not only establish proof of Edward Wall's marriage into the second most significant family in the pre-revolutionary Mohawk Valley, but we can also offer conclusive primary source evidence to define Deborah Butler Wall's genealogical place within the greater Butler family unit. Walter Butler clearly considered Edward Wall's wife Deborah a relative as worthy of exchange as his closer family members and said so each and every time he wrote on the subject of an exchange.

But the war had not yet begun in the summer of 1772 when Edward and Deborah made their vows, and the story of Edward Wall must confine itself to the correct chronology of events.

We must presently address attention to two related question: what gainful employment was Edward Wall now engaged in to support himself and his new wife, and where was he accomplishing it? These questions are readily answered thanks to a second extant letter written by Wall to Sir William that has survived in the Johnson Papers. Dated November 3rd, 1772, the letter is written to Johnson from Burnettsfield and shows Wall to be engaged there in trading, putting what he had learned at Stanwix and with Fonda at Caughnawaga to work on his own. But now he was operating from the safety of a settled village in which the rude likes of a John Ruff did not need to be circumvented. He informs Johnson of his wish to employ "two men with some dry goods to trade amongst the Indians this Fall and Winter, which hope you'll not deny us, as there are two New England men, encouraged by Mr. Kirkland, who are trying to monopolize the trade both here and above."(33)

He then bends to the true purpose of his letter.

"I learned from Mr. Cunningham that you had wrote him respecting building a house on your rights near this place, therefore will be glad to serve you with what nails will be wanted and that at 1/lb. which I believe is the price in your neighbourhood, and farther I hope you will let me serve you with any orders which you'll have occasion to draw on this part of the country & you may depend on my assiduity in completing them and on the best terms. I should have waited on your Honour in person but find I cannot without great prejudice to my business here...I have the pleasure to inform your Honour that this place thus far answers my expectations..." (34)

There is in this last known letter to Johnson an air of confidence and contentment. We may with some accuracy picture Mr. and Mrs. Edward Wall now living with peace of mind and a growing business in a relatively safe and settled location, still on the frontier but not so remote from civilization that they could not, with the eventuality of hiring an assistant or two, occasionally escape back down the valley to visit their friends and her family. And of course when such happy occasions eventually arose, they would pay that respectful call of courtesy upon Sir William Johnson before all other things. Wall's letter hints at his newfound contentment in the role of a young merchant-trader, free to develop his own commercial business and, as this letter to Sir William suggests, he has also become more astute and aggressive in his business solicitations. And there, but for the gathering storm of revolutionary ferment, might both Edward and Deborah Wall have lived out their quiet and progressively successful lives.

## **Part Two: The Conflict**

In an early effort to dampen growing political dissent throughout the valley, the Johnson Dynasty in early December, 1772 circulated to freeholders of Tryon county for their signatures a lengthy document entitled, "**Oath of Allegiance, Abjuration and Test**".(35) Its signers swore their allegiance, among other things agreeing to "bear faith and true allegiance to his Majesty King George."

-----

OATH OF ALLEGIANCE, ABJURATION AND TEST  
<http://www.archive.org/details/papersofsirwilli08johnuoft>

I. A. B. do sincerely promise and swear that I will be faithful and bear true Allegiance to his Majesty, King George the Third so help me God. I. A. B. do swear that I do from my Heart abhor, detest, and abjure as impious and Heretical that damnable Doctrine and Position, that Princes excommunicated or deprived by the Power or any other authority of the See of Rome, may be deposed & murdered by their Subjects or any other whatsoever, and I do declare that no foreign Prince, Person, Prelate, State or potentate hath or ought to have any Jurisdiction, Power, Superiority, Preeminence or Authority, Ecclesiastical or Spiritual within this Realm so help me God. I. A. B. do truly and Sincerely Acknowledge, profess. Testify and Declare in my Conscience before God and the World that our Sovereign Lord King George is Lawful & rightful King of this Realm and all other his Majestys Dominions & Countries thereunto belonging, and I do solemnly and sincerely declare that I do believe in my conscience that not any of the Decendants of the person who pretended to be Prince of Wales during the life Time of the late King James the Second and since his decease pretended to be and took upon himself the State & Title of King James the Third of England or of Scotland by the name of James the Eighth or the Stile and title of King of Great Britain hath any Right or Title whatsoever to the Crown of this Realm or any other the Dominions thereunto belonging and I do renounce, refuse & abjure any Allegiance or Obediance to any of them and I do swear that I will bear faith and true allegiance to his Majesty King George and him will defend to the utmost of my Power against all Traiterous Conspiracies and Attempts whatsoever which shall be made against his Person Crown or Dignity & Title do my utmost endeavour to disclose and make Known to his Majesty and his Successors all Treasons & Traiterous Conspiracies which I shall Know to be against him or any of them and I do faithfully promise to the utmost of my power to Support maintain and defend the Succession of the Crown against the Decendants of the said James & against all other Persons whatsoever with succession by an Act entitiled (an Act for the further limitation of the Crown and better securing the Rights & Liberties of the subjects) is and stand limited to the Princess Sophia Electoress and Dutchess, Dowager of Hanover and the Heirs of her Body being Protestants and all these things I do plainly & Sincerely Acknowledge & Swear according to the express words by me Spoken & according to the plain common Sense & understanding of the same Words without any Equivocation Evasion or secret Reservation whatsoever and I do make this Recognition, Acknowledgement, Abjuration, Remuneration & Promise, heartily, wittingly and Truly upon the true faith of a Christian so help me God. I. A. B. do solemnly & Sincerely in the presence of God profess, testify & Declare that I do believe that in the Sacrament of the Lords supper there is not any Transubstantiation of the Elements of Bread & Wine into the Body and Blood of Jesus Christ or after the Consecration thereof by any Persons whatsoever, & that the invocation or Adoration of the Virgin Mary or any other Saint & the Sacrifices of the Mass as they are now used in The Church of Rome, are superstitious and Idolatrous & I do solemnly in the Presence of God Profess Testify & Declare that I do make this Declaration and every part thereof in the plain & ordinary sense of the Words rid unto me as they are commonly understood by English Protestants without any Evasion, Equivocation or mental Reservation whatsoever & without any dispensation already granted me for this purpose by the Pope or any other Authority or Person whatsoever or without thinking that I can be acquitted before God or Man or absolved of this Declaration or any part thereof altho the Pope or any other Person or Persons or Power whatsoever shoud dispence with or annul the same or declare that it was Null & Void from the beginning.—

Werner Deygert	Johan C <sup>s</sup> Petrie	his	Peter Conyne
Harmanes Van Slyck	his	John X Kline	Robt Adams
John Dielbe	John J D DeMuth	Mark	Peter Ten Broeck
Henri B Merckel Ju <sup>f</sup>	Mark	Nath <sup>el</sup> Hillyer	Frederick Young
Arent Brouwer	Johann Bellinger	his	Hendrick Hansen
Peter Ehl	John Brown	Barent X Dredener	Barent Hansen
John Eisenlond	Barent B Wempel	mark	Gilbert Tice
Adam Laucks	Volket Veder	<b>Edw<sup>d</sup> Wall</b>	Arent Bradt
John Podey	Samuel Pettingell	Dietrich Petri	his
Samel Petri	John Dackstetter	Petter Weber	John + Bowen
Peder Bellinger	Nelles Vroman	Johan Deiem'	Mark
Will <sup>m</sup> Deygert	Frederick Fisher	J. Roorbach	Adam Zeele
George Henrich Ball	Henry Hees	[	John Fonda
Adam Young	Abraham D Quackenbush	Guy Johnson	Will <sup>m</sup> Byme
Fredereck Bellenger	Cornelius Smith	John Butler	Dan <sup>l</sup> Claus
Willem Coningham	Hendrick Vrooman Jun	Hendrick Frey	John Saltsman
his	Peter Cooper Jun <sup>f</sup>	Jelles Fonda	<i>December 8 1772</i>
Adam S Staring'	Peter Groot	Joseph Cheas	John Hansen
Mark	Cornelius Alstine	John Frey	Chris <sup>f</sup> . P. Yates
Nich <sup>s</sup> . Herchemer		John Johnson	
Jacob Res Jur		Peter Martin	

Of the [above] 68 signers, many were names destined to return to the stage of revolutionary conflict on one side or the other over the course of the bloody years to come. Dygerts, Merckells and Petri signatures appear, as do those of the Fondas, Freys, Eisenlords and Klocks, the Nelleses, Waggoners and even **Nicholas Herkimer**. Some of the signers were sincere and would remain loyal to the king, forfeiting their lives and land for him, while others, no doubt already discontented, idealistic, or merely covetous of their Loyalist neighbours' better land, but at the same time wise enough to realize their time to force the issue was not yet come, bowed to pressure from the dynasty and signed anyway, perhaps muttering under their breath the already popular phrase about suffering no taxation without representation, and reminding those who had forgotten that, as long before as May of '69, the Virginia House of Burgesses had proclaimed that the sole right to levy taxes on their citizens lay in their own legislature. Even John Brown, a recent

emigre from Massachusetts, making his brief, halfhearted, prewar attempt at a law practice at Caughnawaga and destined to die on his 36th birthday, October 19th, 1780, while defending Stone Arabia against the small but effective travelling army of **Sir John Johnson**, was caught up in the fervour of the thing and signed it. **John Frey**, named an executor of Sir William's will and later the first postwar Sheriff of the new named Montgomery County dipped his pen and signed. **Christopher P. Yates**, the surveyor and political activist who would later be sent back to Tryon County by the Albany Committee to help organize the Tryon County Committee of Safety, obligingly signed, as did **Col. Frederick Visscher**, who would become commander of Tryon's Third Regiment of Militia, losing his scalp and almost his life one foggy May morning in 1780 to members of Sir John's spring raiding army.

There is an old local legend to the effect that, when General Washington toured the Mohawk Valley at the conclusion of the war, he was given a formal dinner by local Whig leaders in the stone house of Peter Wormouth, which sat across the river from Fort Plain (Rensselaer): that he specifically requested **Col. Visscher** to be seated on his right side in honour of his injuries and that his host, Wormouth, be seated at his left, in recognition of the loss of Wormouth's only son, Lt. Matthew, killed in an ambush while riding dispatches from Fort Plain to Cherry Valley. The old tale is without documentation, yet it persists, having been published in various older local histories, and Rufus Grider, a late nineteenth century valley artist made a water colour of the old building based on the memories of elderly locals. Very likely the story is true, for the dinner at Wormouth's did take place and it is not out of character for Washington to have requested such politic seating arrangements.

Of course all the leading Johnson backers, men such as **Gilbert Tice, John and Guy Johnson, John Butler** and **Daniel Claus, Peter Ten [van] Broek, Joseph Chew**, Peter Conyne and Brian Lafferty signed. The so-called 'common men', freeholders such as the Veeders, Hansens, Docksteaders, Youngs, Bellingers and Dillenbachs were represented, all either quiet dissenters or vocal true believers, ironically lumped together on this hypocritical document as families and neighbours for the very last time before the great conflict openly erupted. Some of these men were no doubt dedicated Loyalists who believed they knew exactly what they were doing and why they were doing it. Others were quiet skeptics, already watching the deteriorating situation in Massachusetts and whispering early, furtive anti-government sentiments in smoky Palatine kitchens and in the dark corners and private rooms of taverns late at night, still not sure who to trust or confide in, gradually gaining belief in the growing notion that nothing further was to be gained by supporting a foreign monarchy. Such discontented men may, as early as '71 or '72, have already begun holding their clandestine little gatherings within the bowels of certain local taverns whose owners were known to be secretly in favour of their cause, and while the rum was passed around and did its work, perhaps they debated whether or not Sir William, their great and good old friend, was, in his new burst of empire building, along with his newly-imported Catholic Highlanders and his ever-increasing gang of Irish sycophants, now moving farther and farther away from them and their commonality of earlier days. And what about those 700 odd, uncommunicative Catholic Highlanders and their priest, Father McKenna, all of whom Sir William was settling right in their midst, offering these 'foreigners' generous inducements to settle in the very Tryon county, their Tryon County, which they had fought for beside Colonel William Johnson and died to protect and preserve for themselves in the old French War?

Still others who signed the Oath must not have known just what to think, and may well have prayed that all the conflicts and hostilities in Massachusetts would simply fade away and not vex them further.

I can find no record of Edward Wall's activities from his signing of this document in December of '72 until the first remaining minutes of the Tryon County Committee of Safety were recorded two and a half years later. Probably he and Debbie continued living quietly in Burnetsfield while he expanded his business and slowly developed a reputation as a man whose opinions were worth considering.

Then suddenly it was May of 1775, with Sir William dead almost a year and his son, Sir John, already losing necessary support around the county by displaying a growing tendency for keeping to the company of himself, his few close friends and relations, his well-armed Catholic Highlanders, his menacing Mohawks, as well as drifting away from the company of many of his father's most influential old friends, all of whom were, admittedly, at least a generation older than himself.

Lists were now being made openly. There is, attached to the extant collection of early Tryon County Committee documents, various census collections of the inhabitants and freeholders of each district. For valid geographic reasons, the list of the Kingsland and German Flatts Districts, which included Burnetsfield, were combined. The list is dated **May 22nd, 1775** and **Edward Wall's** name appears in his usual, confident hand near the beginning. (36)

But there were more important activities brewing than the collecting of lists. Many records of the meetings of the Tryon County Committee of Safety still exist, yet it is not known exactly when the committee, guided by **Chris Yates**, Ebenezer Cox, **Nicholas Herkimer** and others, actually began functioning as an effective, united, county-wide political organization. Probably the grand momentums stimulating its formal organization and propelling it into power were the concurrent military events unfolding in Massachusetts during the epochal months of April and May, coupled with the removal from the valley of several of the most prominent Loyalist 'authority figures' such as **Colonel John Butler** and his son, Walter, **Joseph Brant** and **Guy Johnson**. Guy had made his exit publicly during June, declaring for an Indian council supposedly to the west at Thompson's (Magin's) and decamping amidst a retinue of supply-laden bateaux, while the Butlers, father and eldest son, left under unknown circumstances some time after May 17th, and it is not impossible but that they might have stopped to refresh themselves and change horses at the Burnetsfield home of their in-law Wall, if indeed they travelled in that direction.

1775

The first flurry of these large Committee of Safety meetings of-the-whole that we presently have records of occurred near the end of May, 1775. On May 24th, two days after the gathering of the dated Kingsland/German Flatts Census List, the first known meeting of the "United Committees of Palatine, Conajohary, King'sland and Germanflatts Districts" met at the hopefully-commodious house of William Seeber, somewhere in the Canajoharie District. (37)

**Edward Wall** was the first person listed as an official delegate from German Flatts, his companion representatives being Duncan McDougal, Jacob Weaver and the brothers William, Marcus and John Petry. Those thirty rebel 'delegates' gathered together at Seeber's must have been a very mixed crowd: experienced veterans of the old French war, all landed gentry such as **Nicholas**

**Herkimer**, men possessed with at least some notion of the seriousness of their actions, mixed together with young, untried political idealists like Chris Yates, all afire with youthful, revolutionary zeal and swept up in the romance of the business. No doubt each person in attendance thought he knew at least something of what should be done. Perhaps the only certainty these thirty Whigs really shared completely was the unexpressed, uncomfortable realization that, if they should for some reason fail in the scary, uncertain business of attempting to assume revolutionary governmental power, there was unlikely to be any alternative open to them other than the gallows.

And there in the darkening, candlelit room, **Christopher P. Yates**, Isaac Paris and others urge them all forward with news of what other, more progressive committees have already done to assume power and to begin dragging hypocritical oaths of loyalty to the new order from the mouths of reluctant, frightened Loyalists. At least until Chris Yates bangs his gavel and gains control, consternation and uncertainty must have reigned, and one wonders if the harried Seeber, his slaves or indentured servants dashing around distributing various courage-inducing intoxicants among the multitude of anxious freeholders, did not eventually run short of those strong, home-made varieties of rum, flip and dark beer, standard stimulants of those times, and one of the few pleasures that would remain generally available amidst all the loss and tragedy of the dark years to come.

For Edward Wall, it must have been a month of trial and confusion. The Battle of Lexington took place on April 19th and the news, travelling like lightning in all directions, no doubt spread across the valley general in various inflammatory versions within several days of the event. It would perhaps pray on Wall's mind that, some time during the previous week, his own powerful kin had abruptly and with no warning escaped the valley, intent, it was generally believed, on reappearing swiftly out of the morning mist with a vengeful army to put down the insurrection, much as they had already done once in miniature when successfully breaking up the symbolic raising of a Liberty Pole at Caughnawaga back in '74. These were those same, dramatic weeks of rumour and confusion which **Guy Johnson** and even Mr. Cuyler, then Loyalist Mayor of Albany, used to advantage to head west out of the valley, until they could regroup at Oswego and seek council with their Indian allies from a safe distance.

But in spite of his marital association with the Butlers and his previously close connection with the Johnsons, at the May 24th Committee of Safety Meeting, Edward Wall was much more than a passive observer. The minutes inform us that "**Mr. Wall** laid before the body the proceedings of the Germanflatts and King'sland Districts unitedly, together with speech delivered to the Oneida Indians with their reply." (38) An even more telling indication of Wall's prominent role as a committee man was the following item.

"Resolved unanimously, that four members of this body be sent down to commune with the Committees of Albany and Schenectady upon the present situation of America in general and this county in particular, to obtain all the intelligence possible, and to buy such a quantity of powder and flints and lead as they judge necessary, for the payment of which this body will indemnify them, which powder is to be sold under the inspection of this body and by such persons as this Committee shall appoint out of this brethren. Ordered therefore that Daniel McDougall for Palatine, David Cox for Canajohary, **Edward Wall** and Duncan McDougall for the Districts of the Germanflatts and Kings'land united, be sent down accordingly..." (39)

This contingent of Tryon County Whigs wasted no time undertaking this order, for the Minutes of the Albany Committee inform us that on the very next day.

"Edward Wall, Daniel McDougall, David Cox and Duncan McDougall a committee appointed from the joint Committee of Canajoharry German Flatts and Kingsland Districts to commune with the Committees of Albany and Schenectady requested to be admitted and be present at the debates of this Board, and debates arising, the question being put whether, or no they should be admitted...resolved in the affirmative." (40)

Unless one considers it possible that he could have been acting in the very dangerous capacity of spy for the Loyalist elements, which, together with Sir John, remained reasonably strong but quiet for the time being, Edward Wall appears at this time to give every outward sign of being a confirmed Whig and indeed, as already demonstrated, was trusted to the very point of being selected as one of the receivers and guardians of the committee's most precious commodity, the powder supply. Yet could he, all this time, through unspoken loyalties to his wife and her family, have been playing the spy? The suggestion is mere conjecture, and seems very unlikely: he simply does not appear to possess the duplicity of personality required of a successful double agent. And we must remember that those who trusted Wall and admitted him into their complete confidence, packed together there beside him in those late spring meetings at Seeber's, Van Alstyne's and other places, were such prosperous and influential Mohawk Valley 'rebels' as John Frey, Isaac Paris, Colonel Cox, Dr. William Petry, Colonel Peter Waggoner (whose house still stands just west of the Palatine Church), Jacob Klock, Nicholas Herkimer, Chris Yates and many more. It is also very important to remember that some of these very men were Edward Wall's Masonic Lodge brothers, men who, though respectful and obedient followers of Sir William during his lifetime, had otherwise always been capable leaders and successful acquirers in their own right. Most of them were astute men who would have been hard to fool, and besides, one did not easily or comfortably betray the interests of fellow Masons, then or now. Moreover, if any of these important leaders felt any doubt of Wall's sincerity as a Whig due to his well-known familial connection with the Butlers or his good relations with the late Sir William Johnson, there is no indication of such doubt from the Minutes. On the contrary, we have already seen that he was not only one of four representatives appointed to officially confer behind closed doors with leaders of the Schenectady and Albany Committees, but was also well-enough trusted to bear responsibility for the munitions supply, the very life blood of the local revolutionary organization. Nor did Wall ever inform the Committee, as he had once informed Sir William Johnson back in his letter of November of '72, that he could not wait upon them without prejudice to his own business. Indeed the extent of his involvement in the early activities of the Tryon Committee of Safety strongly suggests he had placed his own business and personal interests on the back burner. He and most of the other men appointed 'District Representatives' must have spent the majority of their waking hours conducting all manner of hurried meetings with the other committee members from their districts, holding other informational meetings for the general populace residing within their districts, answering or sending dispatches, listening to complaints, suspicions, or denunciations of neighbour against neighbour, tracing or squashing rumours and more than likely, attempting to ascertain, through personal observation and the often-prejudiced testimony of others, just whose names were to be recorded as being a true friend or a real enemy of the cause. Debbie and whatever assistants they employed must have been hard put to run the business in his absence.

But this was not the whole of it. The June 2nd United Committee Meeting saw the introduction and approval of a powerful ultimatum written in the guise of a respectful letter of inquiry, probably drafted by Chris Yates, Herkimer and others of the inner circle, which was to be sent immediately to Guy Johnson. This was the oft-quoted, lengthy epistle protesting the searching of travelers on the highway, demanding to know his immediate intentions, listing various general grievances, and attempting to make it clear that governmental authority within Tryon County now belonged to the Committee. Of most immediate concern were the questions of how Guy, as Superintendent of Indian Affairs, intended to handle his Mohawks and whether or not he might be persuaded to forsake the Loyalist cause and peaceably accept the authority of the Committee. Would he, as many feared, call out the Indians to defend Sir John, Daniel Claus and himself, urging them to take the tomahawk to those in revolt? Or would he perhaps actually accept the new order and deal with it for the sake of his own future in the valley?

Once read and approved, the letter had to be delivered, and a Subcommittee was immediately appointed to the task.

"It is ordered that **Edward Wall**, Peter Wagoner, **Nicholas Herkimer**, Adam Fonda and Frederick Fox be a Committee to wait upon **Guy Johnson Esq.** to deliver the same letter, and request his answer, and ask him, when to wait on him for his answer, and request his approbation to appoint a Sub-Committee to attend him at the Congress with the Indians." (41)

Later on at this meeting, an appropriation of twelve pounds to reimburse the four members who attended the recent confab with the Albany Committee was passed and the money apparently distributed.

The little group which constituted this Subcommittee wasted no time delivering the letter to Guy Johnson. The valley remained in a continual state of hyperactive ferment: rumours of the Butler's impending return with some kind of mythical army, of Guy Johnson clandestinely inciting the Mohawks to mayhem and massacre, these rumours and others continued to fly hither and yon, with the Committee meeting every other day or so in a continual state of crisis. On Sunday, June 4th, "**Mr. Nicholas Herkheimer reported that Mr. Wall and him had waited upon Col. Johnson with the letter of yesterday**, who answered, that he would be ready to deliver his answer on Monday next." (42) That day the committee also took a step that launched them a further distance down the road toward permanent disaffection from King George, voting to "embody themselves into Companies and appoint proper officers...with the greatest expedition.." (43) It was time, they decided, to form and command their own militia ranks and to make ready to put their muskets where until now only their mouths had been. Only such an action, Herkimer and the other war veterans among them must have argued, would calm the populace, and besides, it was also the most efficient way to throw cold water on Sir John's militia colonelcy and to discover who was and was not a true Whig.

The next known Committee meeting took place several days later on June 11th, but between the last meeting of June 4th and the eighth of June, another segment of the mystery of Edward Wall began to unfold.

There is in the Johnson Papers an abstract of a pertinent letter, lost, as were many others, in the disastrous New York State Library fire of 1911. The abstract teasingly describes the contents of this missing letter written by "**Edward Wall, German Flats, June 8, to Christopher P. Yates**, declaring he can no longer act on the Committee unless its resolutions are to be respected by all the members of the association." (44) Whatever the whole body of this letter might have revealed to help explain the reasons for Wall's growing discontent, whether it bore on various Committee members using their new authority to take private, injurious vengeance on Tory neighbours or perhaps bore on growing murmurs of personal mistrust arising from his known Butler connection, or on hypocritical ill-treatment of Sir Guy, we can only guess at the letter's full content and the reasons behind the writing of it are lost to us and will remain so. The abstract of this lost letter seems vaguely to suggest Wall was offended by some untoward, hypocritical actions taken by one or more of his fellow committee men, 'throwing their weight around' as we would say today, perhaps spurring the idealistic Wall to develop suspicions as to the true motives of his Whig associates. He is still listed as being in attendance at the meeting of June 11th, but the minutes of that meeting are silent on what if anything he had to say. Perhaps sometime between the 8th and the 11th, he and Chris Yates found time to fill a few glasses of rum and talk things over. Perhaps Yates thought he had Wall all calmed down and everything smoothed away. But if so, he was wrong.

On June 17th, the Minutes inform us tersely that "**Mr. Edward Wall**, a member of the Germanflats Committee, **begged to be excused** from serving any longer in that office and for sufficient reason it was ordered that he shall be discharged."(45)

For what `sufficient reason? Would, for history's sake, that the Secretary of the Committee could have been a little more specific! Yet it is also possible that this very refusal to be more specific may in itself offer some clue to explain this mystery, if only we could fathom that clue and understand or interpret it for what it is. Certainly the situation is unique: in all the extent minutes of all the many Committee meetings, there is no other such vague explanation offered or found, no other committee man politely and quietly discharged from his ongoing obligation to the committee. Read if you will through all those fascinating old Committee of Safety Meeting Minutes. You will find again and again examples where people are brought up on charges before the Committee. You will read that they are fined, punished, or banished, but always it is for a stated offence. Nowhere in all the Minutes can you find the statement that some luckless Loyalist is ordered sent away to the dreaded Connecticut mine-prisons simply "for sufficient reason".

Whatever the logic behind our theories, the truth may simply revert back to the image projected by Wall himself in his few known communications: he is a centred, purposeful person, a bit boring perhaps, but dependable, at relative ease when engaged in well-defined (for him at least) courses of action, while around him, not a few of his Whig neighbours, for years secretly envying the Johnsons and their allies, suddenly arise with the help of the Committee influence to exercise their `freedom' to accuse old neighbours of various Loyalist activities, at least in a few instances for the probable purpose of acquiring their goods and chattels.

Probably Wall left the meeting while it was still in progress, returning home to Debbie and his store at Burnettsfield, leaving his Whig idealism in the dust kicked up by his horse. And what then? Nothing more about him is recorded until another Committee of Safety meeting when, two years later, on **August 25th, 1777**, a battered and disorganized committee, some of its leading decision-makers like General Herkimer and Colonel Cox and Isaac Paris either killed or captured at Oriskany, now fought to reorganize and regain control. One of the first resolutions passed was that the wives and families of certain prominent Tories "be immediately confined in Johnstown at Toice's [Tice's] House, and kept under guard, till further orders from this Board." (46) And among those rounded up were Mrs. Butler, her children, Mrs. Nancy (Butler) Sheehan and son, and **Mrs. Edward Wall**.

Given the continual anti-loyalist watchfulness and paranoia on the part of the leaders of the Committee of Safety, the fact that Deborah Butler Wall and the other Loyalist women were taken up during that particular moment of post-Oriskany political trauma is less surprising than is the fact that none of these women and children had been taken up much earlier, such as when, in early June of 1776, Lady Johnson and family were removed from Johnson Hall. From the very day their husbands had gathered their muskets and essentials to slip away and join the Loyalist forces, these women had no doubt undergone constant disrespect and harassment from former neighbours and friends. And now both the Committee of Safety leadership and Herkimer's Tryon County Militia had been greatly demoralized by the horrendous losses incurred in the Oriskany ravine. No participant or contemporary considered this battle a victory for the American cause: that idea sprung from the minds of 19th century apologist American historians. No doubt the only 'victory' in the minds of the surviving farmer-soldiers of Tryon County was that they had managed to fight their opponents to a respectable draw and retain the field: if successfully executing the predetermined military objective, in this case relieving St. Leger's siege of Fort Stanwix, defines victory, then the results of Herkimer's forced march to Stanwix had been both a political and a military disaster. That some immediate action was instigated, such as this gathering-up of the families of prominent Loyalists, to show the general populace and the still-numerous Loyalist sympathizers that the Committee of Safety was still in control, is not at all surprising. This line of thinking of course included the less than noble intent of taking random revenge against whomever revenge could be achieved. With the exception of Walter Butler, taken at Shoemaker's Tavern a short time after the battle, the Loyalist women, all without resources, counsel or defence, were suddenly the only convenient prey available to mitigate the burning hostility felt by the surviving Committee members toward their husbands and other relations already under Loyalist arms.

While it has been easy to use the Committee's own minutes to determine exactly when Edward Wall severed his connection from the Tryon County Committee of Safety, no information has been uncovered to indicate exactly what pro-Loyalist activities he had become engaged in after the date of his voluntary removal from Committee participation in June of '75, and until the taking-up of the Loyalist wives in post-Oriskany August of '77. But that he must indeed have become seriously involved in Loyalist endeavours is undeniable, for otherwise the Committee would have had no reason to label him a Loyalist enemy of the cause or seize his wife. Perhaps initially he did nothing at all but go home to Burnettsfield and attempt to continue at his business, but it is more likely that his general disillusionment with the Committee, or with specific Committee actions he considered to be an abuse of power, did indeed cause him to become more active in the King's interest. As a frontier trader, there were things he might do for the King's cause other than immediately leaving for Canada. He might have begun actively supplying information on Whig activities to Sir John or Colonel Butler, perhaps through Molly Brant's nearby Indian runners. Supplies for loyal Indian scouting parties or emergency bundles, put up quickly for men heading north in the dead of night to join the Loyalist regiments then forming, might have been provided quickly and quietly from his trader's storehouse. These and other pro-Loyalist activities could have been undertaken surreptitiously by any trader in Wall's situation, at least for a time, but it is also clear from studying the minutes that almost everyone was suspiciously watching someone else for signs of disaffection, and he would have been unable to escape suspicion and accusations in the long run. Certainly Edward Wall, as an ex-committee member with Loyalist relations, would hardly be allowed to function unobserved. Eventually, when conditions became untenable or exposure eminent, Wall, like many other men who had quietly committed themselves to the King, but who had continued to remain at home waiting for the right opportunity to leave, would feel the inevitable necessity of shouldering musket, pack and powder horn, kissing Debbie and their life in Burnettsfield goodbye, and stealing away to join in active service to the Crown.

Nor would he necessarily go alone. Wall could have joined one of the many little packs of men who began drifting away from the valley as early as mid April of 1777, guided toward Niagara or Oswego by loyal Indians. It was apparently no secret to those quiet Loyalists who still resided covertly up and down the Mohawk and Schoharie valleys in the Spring of 1777, that an army was forming in the north, and that a great sweep down the valley from Stanwix was contemplated. One John Casselman of Stone Arabia, troubled in conscience, came before Committee man Isaac Paris on April 29th, 1777 to swear

"that on Monday the 21st. day of April in the evening after supper, Richard his brother looked for his gun, powder, horn, tomhauck and cloaths, asking for a pillar case to put them in, and then laid ready to take them away; when the Deponent asked him if he was going away [and] on what condition or where, and said tell me, perhaps I will go with you, or give you a good advice, you know I always were for your best, then said Richard said, they do not trust you, and owned they were to go to the enemy.....the Deponent asked where they were to meet, to which he was answer[ed]; at Oswego, we are to meet twenty thousand men; the Deponent then asked where they were to attack, to which Richard replied, we are to attack on this river, some of the British forces at Tye and the rest up the north river, then the Deponent asked him how he could be so, saying my son must go to Fort Scuyler, and if you come I must go likewise, as soon as we see each other we will fire, then I may kill you or you me, to which said Richard replied he could not help it, the Lord had put it so into his mind; and the Deponent said to him he should stay, but he would not; the deponent than asked him the said Richard who were to give them notice and be their pilate, to which said Richard replied an Indian, who brought powder and lead to the people at Dorlag (New Dorlach) all last winter, and who had brought Philip Fry (Frey) through the woods, which Indian they expected every minute..." (47)

So it was to be with Edward Wall as it was with Richard Casselman, the valuing of loyalty, honour and sacrifice over comfort, convenience and the self-serving 'law' of John Casselman's Committee.

### **Part Three: Loyalist service**

Just when Edward Wall found it necessary to leave Burnettsfield and whether or not he fell in with such a party as Richard Casselman's for safe conduct along the way is, of course, unknown. But some things are common sense. He would have made whatever arrangements he could for his business and for Debbie's care, and in their tearful, parting moments, she no doubt told him how glad she was he had finally made the commitment to follow the politics of her uncle John and cousin Walter. Handing him his hat, coat and a sack of foodstuffs carefully chosen to last as long as possible, she would have watched him turn away, shouldering his musket and heading out into the darkening night. She would have watched him until he either disappeared into a nearby woods or became a mere speck on the far hillside. She would have been bravely resigned to her own situation through the knowledge that, whatever unknown hardships they would both endure before meeting again, at least he would now keep faith with his King. Probably both Edward and Debbie believed, as did many valley Loyalists, even as late as July of 1777, that it would all be settled that

summer; that stalwart, experienced soldiers like John Butler and young firebrands like Joseph Brant, sufficiently backed up by a British army or two, would come riding back down the valley in triumph to put down the insurrection and restore order in the King's name. Word may already have arrived through the Loyalist underground that Colonel Butler intended eventually to finance a corps of his own to be known as Butler's Rangers, that he was presently gathering a company of Indian Department Rangers, that Sir John Johnson would soon organize a regiment, and that every able-bodied Tryon County loyalist who could escape the valley and survive the trip to Canada would be welcomed into the ranks of one or another official corps. Outfitting his new regiment would eventually cost Colonel Butler most of what he had amassed in his lifetime, but of course it would be worth all the effort and expense; he and his oldest son Walter would no doubt be paid back and honoured by a grateful king. How could it be otherwise? With the enemy defeated, they would all return to their homes and greet their liberated families in triumph, and senior men like Butler, already one of the high judges of Tryon County, would establish special courts to punish the rebels with the King's justice and set things right again. He could not ever have imagined that in the end, he would accomplish nothing but the exhaustion of his body, his credit, and the death of his most favoured son. Sir John Johnson, not to be outdone, was also calling on his vast, inherited credit to secretly muster a corps called the King's Royal Regiment of New York.

**Edward Wall, however, did not wait until the spring of 1777. Rather, he was commissioned on February 23rd, 1777, in Sir John's King's Royal Regiment of New York, as an ensign in Major James Gray's company of the First Battalion.** (48) Mr. Gavin Watt, noted Canadian military historian, forwarded the additional information from the Orderly Book of Sir John Johnson that **Wall was transferred to Captain Richard Duncan's Company on June 15th, 1777. He was promoted to lieutenant on the 23rd of September but resigned on October 13th.** But there is yet another unexplained movement in Wall's odyssey, for a note attached to this record indicates that **he was "apparently transferred to the Indian Department"** (49). There is, as usual, no indication of when he was transferred, to where, or under whom he was to serve. It was, however, a logical transfer, for doubtless his experience with Indians as a trader at Stanwix, as a merchant in Burnettsfield and as **Awhawhoana, 'the great road', a man with his own Indian name**, known by the King's Indian allies to have been a respected associate of their late Sir William, all gave Wall useful experience with both commissary duties and the ways of the Indians. But beyond the knowledge that Edward Wall had become a member of the Indian Department by the end of 1776, his whereabouts and activities during the explosive year of 1777 and early 1778 are entirely unknown.

Our main reference to Wall's 1778 activities, mysterious and inconclusive as usual, would not have existed at all but for the character and courage of Debbie Butler Wall, and it may also shed some indirect light on Edward's activity in the Indian Department, at least during part of the year 1778. For **on August 31st, 1778, Deborah Wall, then in protective custody in Albany** along with the other Butler women and children, made bold to appear in person before the Commissioners for Detecting and Defeating Conspiracies. We may surmise how she must have stood there, for certainly the commissioners did not offer comfortable chairs to the wives of Loyalists, facing that all-powerful committee of frowning Whigs. She would have been hot and uncomfortable in the late August heat, but, true to her purpose, she would also have been unfazed by the obvious hostility directed toward her, knowing these men would see her first as a mere woman, secondly as the abandoned relict of a Loyalist and thirdly, perhaps worst of all, as a possessor of the hated Butler bloodline that linked her inexorably in their eyes to everything they secretly feared and openly detested. She would look into their faces and know before she spoke that it was an exercise in futility. But Debbie Butler Wall nevertheless addressed them, **boldly requesting they not only release her from captivity but also issue her a pass to go to join her husband at Unadilla.**(50)

From this brave act it may be inferred that Edward Wall, as a member of the Indian Department, was serving the King's cause in some capacity at Unadilla in August of '78. One is drawn to remember a letter written June 5th of that same year by Colonel Jacob Klock of the Tryon County Militia to Governor Clinton on the subject of Unadilla, advising that a military force be sent there and telling the Governor that, "unless a body of troops is marched directly to Unadilla in order to drive the enemy from hence and destroy the place, the enemy will constantly make such depredations upon the settlements." (51) The American Colonel William Butler would eventually be sent there to effect this purpose, but not until early October.

On the British side, it was the summer of the destruction of Wyoming, of Andrustown and German Flats, and Cherry Valley was in the offing. Unadilla comes into the picture over and over as the various Indian and Loyalist contingents, executing their planned movements in pursuit of their military objectives, march back and forth across the map of New York's southern tier. One may only conjecture what Edward Wall's specific duties were while at Unadilla, but as he was now a member of the Indian Department, and with his background experience in trading and prior Indian associations, he may well have been involved in supplying and reprovisioning the Indians and their Loyalist allies as their fast-moving raiding armies swiftly and effectively tore up the back country settlements all that summer and into the fall. It is to be hoped that diligent Canadian researchers who possess access to Indian Department primary source material may eventually uncover factual information regarding Wall's Indian Department activity.

But Deborah Butler Wall, brave as she must have been to face the hostile committee, had yet to wait many months before rushing into the tender embrace of her husband Edward. The Albany Committee's reply to her request for release and safe passage into Indian country was both immediate and terse. **"Ordered that she be informed that no permit or indulgence can be given by the Board to any part of a family whereof the Husband or Master has so far deviated from humane principles or to associate with Barbarians and assisting in imbruing his hands in the blood of women and children and peaceable inhabitants."** (52) No doubt the Committee was particularly incensed at the successes which Butler, Brant, Caldwell and others had been experiencing all that summer, and as if to top it all off, there was also Butler's demoralizing achievement at Wyoming on the 3rd of July. All of these reverses must have stung far too painfully for the Albany Committee to allow even the smallest of Loyalist fishes to swim back upstream.

Certainly Unadilla as well as Oquaga had been important stations of Loyalist aid and comfort that summer. As late as September 21st, Captain William Caldwell, fresh from the destruction of German Flats, addressed John Butler from there. "We returned to this place (Unadilla) yesterday morning after destroying all the buildings and grain at the German Flatts . . . **Mr. Wall** enquired particularly about your family but could learn nothing but that Mrs. Butler had been seen about three months ago at Schenectady." (53) The latter part of this statement has led to the generally-accepted view that Wall was a member of this raiding expedition.

The American Colonel William Butler's destruction of Unadilla would occur during mid October, not more than twenty days after Caldwell's letter to Butler. Yet almost until the last moment, effective Loyalist frontier leaders such as Caldwell would continue to use Unadilla as a place for respite, resupply and communication. Caldwell was no doubt anxious to provide John Butler with any accurate news of his wife and family and their general condition during their continued captivity, but certainly no more so than was Edward Wall, whose own wife Debbie remained among them. The exact time and circumstances of the release of Debbie Wall and the other Butler women and children is unknown. The early twentieth century Butler historian Howard Swiggett informs us that, "The date of their arrival in Canada is not definitely known, but was probably with the flag out of Skenesborough, November 15th the previous year (1780)."(54)

From establishing his presence at Unadilla in August and September of '78, no references to Edward Wall's location or activities are presently known for the next two years. His activities during the entire year of 1779 are a particularly annoying historic blank. Where was he, for example, when Joseph Brant attacked Minisink on July 22nd, or in late August when his own in-law, Colonel John Butler, bravely faced 4,000 of Clinton's troops at Chemung with fewer than 300 assorted Rangers and Indians, and yet managed somehow to skillfully withdraw with his miniature army intact? If Wall remained with the Indian Department through '79, he could have served and supported his native brothers in many places and capacities. But Wall does not turn up again until, inexplicably as usual, **he appears in the First Battalion, 84th Foot, Royal Highland Emigrants as a private in Major John A. Harris's Company. The Muster Roll is dated at Sorel, 16 April, 1781, but it supposedly covers a period from June 1780 through December, 1781.** (55) Why or how Edward Wall found his way out of Indian Department Service and into this regiment, when he joined it, where and how he served it, is all presently unknown: it simply creates one more series of unanswered questions. There is no doubt, however, but that he survived the war, **for his name appears on Muster Roll 21, "Settlers at Carlisle, Bay of Chaleur (New Carlisle, Quebec), 1785.**(56)

Wall's survival, of course, simply raises more presently unanswerable questions. For example, was Debbie also still living, and if so, were there children, now that the war was finished and at last the opportunity to raise a family and make a new life finally presented itself? When and where did they die? Where are they buried? Perhaps most interesting is the question of whether they are represented today in the blood lines of the more than 120 people named Wall presently, according to Internet telephone listings, living in Quebec Province, a cluster of whom reside in the immediate vicinity of New Carlisle? Or did Edward and Debbie once again remove themselves from the Chaleur area and move back west into Ontario at some later date? In support of this possibility, Crowder informs us in his "Notes on the Sources" that "I have reproduced the document in its entirety, including the Quebec location, as some of those who settled initially in Quebec later came to Ontario" (57), where incidentally, there are even more Walls listed in the phone directories!

Crowder's observation regarding some Quebec Loyalists removing to Ontario leads us to the last reference to Edward Wall, for he does indeed turn up in the Upper Canada (Ontario) District Loyalist Rolls, 1796-1803. (58) In all three lists on which his name appears, and which were compiled during 1796 on order of Governor Simcoe, Wall is listed as being deceased. But of course there is no indication as to the date of his death. Due to the fact that these lists are "of persons who have satisfied the Justice of the Peace for the Home District, in Sessions assembled, that they joined the Royal Standard in America before the year 1783"(59), one is left to assume **Wall could have died any time from 1783 to the making of the lists in 1796.**

Thus it is that, for now at least, the facts regarding Edward Wall's resettlement and postwar activities remain unclear, and without them this article is admittedly incomplete. Did Edward and Debbie Wall remove themselves from New Carlisle, Quebec and, turning westward, eventually establish a permanent home somewhere within Upper Canada's Home District? The presence of his name on the Home District lists would seem to indicate as much. We are told that "This large district included Lincoln, York, Northumberland and Durham counties and part of Oxford and Norfolk counties. The original district town was Niagara and it was replaced by York in 1801."(60)

There may yet lie, sequestered within some early Canadian historical sources such as land, tax or burial records, information which would bring true biographical closure to the lives of Edward and Deborah Butler Wall. It is hoped this present study will stimulate experienced Canadian researchers who reside in closer physical proximity to Canadian primary source materials to unearth the answers.

## Conclusion

This study was not undertaken to suggest that Edward Wall was either a unique or an important Loyalist. It is perhaps the rather ironic truth that he was neither particularly important nor unique, and certain aspects of his story have a commonality shared by many other Loyalists. Although he may have been imbued with more intelligence, conscience and integrity than many, his story is just one of thousands in which the necessity to choose a side brought great conflict and sacrifice to ordinary people. Pushed and pulled in both directions like many others in those confusing, early months of the rebellion, Edward Wall nevertheless made an eventual and irrevocable commitment to the Crown, staking his destiny thereon.

-----

**Patrick Wall** – b. Ireland; Tailor; 1772, Lodge No. 169 E.R. (A), Boston; 1776, Lodge No. 169 E.R. (A), New York; 1776, Halifax, NS; 1777, New York; 1874, Sherburne, NS; 1784-85; Master Parr Lodge No. 3, Sherburne, NS.

<http://www.usgennet.org/usa/vt/town/westminster/pwall.html>

Patrick Wall, Esq. was born in Ireland about 1740 and died 12 May 1815 age 75 yrs. He was a tailor in Boston during the American Revolution. He married (1) MARGARET T. SCHO(O)LCRAFT. Margaret was born about 1737/1741 and died in Apr 1805 or 1809 age 68 yrs. They are buried in the Old Cemetery in Westminster. It is believed that this was the Mrs. MARGARET MONTRESOR, the widow of [CREAN BRUSH](#) of Ireland, New York City, and Westminster VT that he is said to have married. After their marriage, they lived in New York City and then removed to Westminster VT, where they lived in Crean Brush's house.

Mr. Wall married (2) ELIZABETH ERWIN of Westminster on 7 Jan 1812 in Westminster.

His widow, Elizabeth (Erwin) Wall married (2) ASA AVERILL on 2 May 1819 in Westminster. Elizabeth Erwin was born about 1767 and died 6 Feb 1830 age 63 yrs. Asa, the son of John Sr. and Mary (Phippen) Averill, was born in 1739 and died 25 Aug 1825 age 86 yrs [87th yr]. Asa married (1) ANNA CHAFFEE and (2) the Widow of PETER LOVEJOY.

Mrs. MARGARET MONTRESOR (aka Margaret Montuzan). According to Barr, she was widow of Captain JOHN MONTRESOR. She had a daughter, Frances, known as "Fanny," who came to Westminster with her mother and **married Ethan Allen**.

According to Hall (p. 604), "There is a tradition that Brush was not legally married to his second wife [Margaret]. The story goes that she, in her maiden days, had been much admired by Brush, who had paid her his addresses, but without success. She married, in preference, a colonel in the British service, who was the father of her child Frances. He was killed in the Old French war, or in some of the battles immediately subsequent to the year 1755. The widow and the widower having met, they agreed to live together as husband and wife, and did so, but the connection was not lawfully established. Resort was had to this alliance in order that Mrs. Brush might be enabled to draw the pension due her as the widow of an officer, which right she forfeited in the event of a second marriage." [Editor's note: There are some questions that arise with the dates presented here. If true, Brush was certainly in America before 1760 in order to court Fanny's mother before her marriage and subsequent birth of Fanny in 1760. The death date of 1755 for John Montresor, seems unlikely, again because of Fanny's birth in 1760.]



#### Mrs. Frances 'Fanny' Montresor Buchanan

Frances, known as "Fanny," was the daughter of Widow Margaret Brush (Hall, gives her name as Margaret Montuzan; also called Margaret Montresor). Fanny was born on 4 Apr 1760. It is has been thought that she was the daughter of Capt. John Montresor. Fanny is said to have come to Westminster with her mother and her mother's new husband, **Patrick Wall**, probably between 1779 and 1783. Fanny was remembered by the people of Westminster as a "dashing" young woman.

"Fanny" married (1) Capt. **JOHN BUCHANAN** about 1776 at the age of sixteen (named Frances Buchanan, wife of Capt. Buchanan in will of Crean Brush, Boston, 1777). Buchanan was a British Naval Officer who died during the American Revolution.

Fanny married (2) as Frances Montresor to Gen. **ETHAN ALLEN** at the home of Gen. Stephen R. Bradley of Westminster VT on 16 Feb 1784 at the age of 24 in Westminster. Ethan, the son of Joseph and Mary (Baker) Allen, was born 10 Jan 1737/8 in Litchfield CT and died 12 Feb 1789. He married (1) **MARY BROWNSON** on 23 Jun 1762 Woodbury CT. Mary, the daughter of Cornelius Brownsong died in 1783 in Sunderland, Bennington Co., VT and was buried in the Arlington VT Cemetery.

Fanny married (3) **DR. HON. JABEZ PENNIMAN** of Burlington VT on 28 Oct 1793 in Westminster.

Fairbanks gives us the following account of Mrs. Buchanan (p 588):

Mrs. Buchanan is spoken of as a "dashing woman," with an "imperious bearing," which attracted the attention of the quiet people of Westminster. She is said to have been a "fascinating woman, endowed with an ease of manner, which she had acquired from intercourse with polite society, and possessed of a refined taste and many accomplishments.

During one of his frequent visits to Westminster, Gen. Ethan Allen, who was at that time a widower, formed an acquaintance with Mrs. Buchanan, which afterwards "ripened into a warm, but singularly intermittent friendship."

John Norton, keeper of the tavern, playfully remarked to her one day, with reference to the prospective alliance, "Fanny, if you marry General Allen, you will be the queen of the new State." "Yes," she replied, "if I should marry the devil, I should be the queen of hell."

The aversion, however, with which she at times held the character of the man "whom all feared and few loved," appears to have given place to the admiration of his nobler traits, and she consented to become his wife. The novel wedding, which is admirably described by Mr. Hall, took place at the residence of Gen. Stephen R. Bradley, of Westminster.



"Thus did the step-daughter of Crean Brush become the wife of the man for whose apprehension Governor Tyron, at the instigation of Brush, had on the 9th of March 1774, offered a reward of 100 pounds sterling."

"History of eastern Vermont: from its earliest settlement . . .," by Benjamin Homer Hall. page 603.

[http://books.google.com/books?id=G3kFAAAAQAAJ&pg=PA628&dq=%22patrick+wall%22+%22loyalist%22&hl=en&ei=bcSTTKbZH8L58AakrLmQDA&sa=X&oi=book\\_result&ct=result&resnum=1&ved=0CCgQ6AEwADgU#v=onepage&q&f=false](http://books.google.com/books?id=G3kFAAAAQAAJ&pg=PA628&dq=%22patrick+wall%22+%22loyalist%22&hl=en&ei=bcSTTKbZH8L58AakrLmQDA&sa=X&oi=book_result&ct=result&resnum=1&ved=0CCgQ6AEwADgU#v=onepage&q&f=false)

#### MRS. BRUSH.

< Margaret Schoolcraft – wife of Crean Brush and **Patrick Wall** – reproduced from a painting by Copley

After her second bereavement, it is not known how long Mrs. Brush remained a widow. In 1783 she was the wife of **Patrick Wall**,\* and, with her husband, resided in New York city. They afterwards removed to "Westminster, at which place she spent the remainder of her life. In the will of Crean Brush, his step-daughter, Frances, is referred to as the wife of Captain Buchanan. On the marriage of her mother with **Patrick Wall**, one-third of the

estate of her step-father came into her possession, by virtue of the will, whose main provisions have been already cited. When **Mrs. Wall** came to reside at "Westminster, Mrs. Buchanan, then a widow, accompanied her. She was a dashing woman, and early attracted the attention of the quiet town's-people, to whom a bearing as imperious as that which she exhibited was wholly new. During some one of his frequent visits to Westminster, Gen. Ethan Allen, at that time a widower, formed an acquaintance with Mrs. Buchanan, which subsequently ripened into a warm, but, for a time, singularly intermittent friendship. Pleased with the originality of his views and conversation; flattered at her own ability to arrest the attention of a man whom all feared, but whom few loved; and imagining that she should find more sympathy in the companionship of his strong, active nature, than in the society of those by whom she was surrounded, Mrs. Buchanan found herself, on some occasions, irresistibly attracted towards him. At other times, his rough manners would render him equally repulsive to her. Aware of the feelings with which she regarded the General, and hoping to induce her to effect an alliance with a man whose boundless ambition was at all times apparent, save when overshadowed by passions as violent as they were unrebuked, John Norton, the tavern keeper at "Westminster, and a man of considerable note, said to her one day, in a familiar manner, "Fanny, if you marry General Allen, you will be the queen of a new state!" "Yes," she replied, turning upon him a look which accorded well with her words, "if I should marry the devil, I would be the queen of hell!"

\* Though a tailor by occupation, **Patrick Wall** was a man of education, kind in disposition, courteous in manners, and, as John Kelly declared of him, one who knew "a good deal of the world." He was an Irishman by birth, but at the time of the revolution, was practising his craft in Boston. His situation during a portion of that period may be inferred from the annexed petition:—

"To the Honorable the Council of the State of Massachusetts Bay.

"The Petition of **Patrick Wall** of Boston, Taylor, Humbly sheweth—

"That your Petitioner is in very great distress, as he cannot find business sufficient to support himself and family, and having already exhausted his whole substance for his subsistence hitherto, hath the melancholy prospect of an approaching winter, wherein he must inevitably suffer the utmost hardships from his incapacity to procure the common necessaries of life.

"That your Petitioner in addition to the calamities which threaten him with extreme poverty and distress, hath many months been afflicted with violent pains in his limbs and for want of proper exercise finds himself falling into a dropsical habit of body.

"That in order to avoid the gloomy prospect with which he is surrounded, your petitioner, as the only means which promises relief, is willing and desirous of taking a passage for New York, being advised that the voyage thither would tend towards his finding means of getting a passage home to his native country, and laying his bones amongst those of his fathers.

"Your Petitioner therefore humbly prays that your Honours in tender consideration of the premises, may be favourably pleased to pass an order permitting your Petitioner to depart with his family for New York in the next cartel bound to that place.

"Boston, 29 Sept'r, 1777."

His request was granted by an order of the Council, and the commissary of prisoners was directed to examine all the letters, papers, etc., which he and his family might desire to take with them. Subsequent events proved that he did not long entertain the idea of "laying his bones amongst those of his fathers." After his marriage with the widow Brush, his worldly prospects assumed a more cheerful aspect. At her death, he married Elizabeth Erwin, of Westminster, on the 7th of January, 1812.

There is and interest, more complete account of Crean Brush in the book which may be read in the above referenced URL, a copy of which is in the digital archives of the OMDHS.

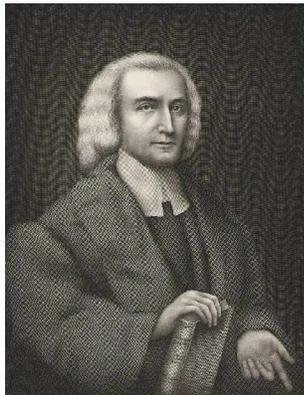
-----

**Rev. William Walter** – b. 1737 Roxbury, MA; 1764 Ordained in England; 1766 Rector Trinity Church, Boston; 1768, Chaplain De Lancey's Brigade; 1776, New York; 1776, Halifax, NS; 1779, Lodge No. 169 E.R. (A), NY; 1779, Provincial Grand Master, PGL NY; 1781-83, Grand Master, Grand Lodge NY; 1783 Shelburne, NS; 1784 England; 1791 Boston; d. 1817.

Rev. William Walter was appointed by John Murray (30 Jun 1755-29 Sep 1830), 4th Duke of Atholl, Grand Master of the Antient (Atholl) Grand Lodge of England, 1775-81. A warrant authorizing the new Grand Lodge was sent to New York in the fall of 1782, with the date of 5 Sep 1781.

#### **Grand Master 1781-83**

**Rev. William Walter (7 Oct 1737-5 Dec 1800)**



< Engraving by W. T. Bather, NY, from the 1912 Grand Lodge Proceedings

<http://anglicanhistory.org/canada/ns/eaton/10.html>

Reverend William Walter, D.D., born 7 Oct 1737, was the eldest son of the Reverend Nathaniel Walter, pastor of the Second Church in Roxbury, MA, who died in 1776. He was graduated at Harvard College in 1756. One of his sisters was married to Sir Robert Haslrigge, Bart., and another to the Reverend Mather Byles, D.D., Junior. In 1764, in company with Abraham Jarvis, afterward bishop of Connecticut, and others, he went to England for ordination, and on his return, 22 Jul 1764, was installed rector of Trinity Church, Boston. 30 Sep 1766, he married Lydia, daughter of the Honorable Benjamin Lynde, Junior, of Salem, who bore him seven children. His grandson Lynde Minshall Walter was the founder and first editor of the *Boston Evening Transcript*.

In March, 1776, Dr. Walter resigned his rectorship and left with the British troops for Halifax. His youngest daughter, Harriet Tyng, was born in Shelburne, May 16, 1776. Although his family remained in Nova Scotia, he himself returned with General Howe and the fleet to New York,

where he was on 31 Oct 1776. Later, in August, 1783, he went back to Nova Scotia and was settled at Shelburne. He perhaps came to Shelburne with the New York people who settled there in 1783. In 1791, he returned to Boston, where he purchased a house in Charter Street, built by Sir William Phipps, and destroyed in 1837. 28 May 1792, he became rector of Christ Church, Boston, which office he held until 5 Dec 1800. He was "a remarkably handsome man, tall and well-proportioned. When in the street he always wore a long blue cloth cloak over his cassock and gown; a full-bottomed wig, dressed and powdered; a three-cornered hat; knee breeches of fine black cloth, with black silk hose; and square-quartered shoes, with silver buckles. His countenance was always serene; his temper always cheerful."

See also

<http://books.google.com/books?id=K0AOAAAAIAAJ&pg=PA443&lpg=PA443&dq=%22nathaniel+walter%22+%22rebecca+abbott%22&source=web&ots=XfnpgG3LNj&sig=btDTUfrlGWJztWh93kCEd7dPg#PPA442.M1> for further information on Nathaniel Walter.

Rev. William Walter, D. D., of Boston, was invited to deliver the Artillery election sermon in 1800, but declined, on account of illness. He was a son of Rev. Nathaniel (son of Rev. Nehemiah Walter) and Rebecca (Abbott) Walter, and was born in Roxbury, Oct. 7, 1737. He graduated at Harvard College in 1756. He married, Sept. 30, 1766, Lydia Lynde, of Salem. He was inducted into office as assistant rector of Trinity Church, Boston, July 22, 1764. In 1767 he succeeded to the rectorship, and occupied that position until March 17, 1776, when he resigned, and accompanied Gen. Howe to Yarmouth, N. S. At one period of the Revolution he appears to have been chaplain of De Lancey's Third Battalion, and in 1785 was in charge of an Episcopal church at Shelburne, N. S. He returned to Boston in 1791, became rector of Christ Church May 28, 1792, and occupied that position until his decease. He died 5 Dec 1800, and his remains were buried under Christ Church, Boston. His son joined the Artillery Company in 1791.

*History of the Military Company of the Massachusetts, Now Called the Ancient, by Oliver Ayer Roberts, Volume II, 1897. page 311*

[http://www.nbmaa.org/Gallery\\_htmls/copley.html#](http://www.nbmaa.org/Gallery_htmls/copley.html#)

Lydia Lynde was born in Salem or Boston in 1741 and married Reverend William Walter, minister of Boston's Trinity Church, in 1766. To avoid the Revolution, Lydia and her Loyalist husband fled with their six children to Nova Scotia, returning to Boston in 1792. Lydia was the only known member of the Lynde or Walter family to sit for a Copley portrait, which may confirm speculation that Lydia's portrait marked a special occasion in the young woman's life.

[http://www.newenglandancestors.org/research/services/articles\\_7695.asp](http://www.newenglandancestors.org/research/services/articles_7695.asp)



**Lydia Lynde** (*Mary Bowles*<sup>4</sup>, *Lydia Checkley*<sup>3</sup>, *Mary Scottow*<sup>2</sup>, *Lydia*<sup>1</sup>), was born in Salem on 14 Nov 1741; died at Boston 25 Sep 1798; She married (recorded at Boston) 30 Sep 1766 **Rev. William Walter**, a Church of England minister, b. Roxbury 7 Oct 1737, d. Boston 5 Dec 1800, son of Rev. Nathaniel and Rebecca (Abbot) Walter, a great-grandson of Rev. **Increase Mather**, and a 1756 Harvard graduate. "This long and happy marriage nearly had a premature conclusion, for when [Lydia] was seven months pregnant with their first child, she and her husband were blown off a Salem wharf by the wind but were fished out unharmed." A loyalist, Rev. Walter served as rector of three Trinity Churches (in Boston, New York City, and Shelburne, Nova Scotia); and of Christ Church, Boston. An ardent Mason, he was known for his great charm and loved by many who did not share his politics.



*Increase Mather, 1639-1723 >*

Children, most b. Boston:

- i. Lynde Walter (1767-1844), d. Boston; m1. prob. Shelburne, N. S. 23 Feb 1791 **Maria Van Buskirk** (ca. 1771-96), **dau. of Col. Abraham & Jane (Dey) Van Buskirk of Bergen Co., NJ** and Shelburne NS. Shoemaker, *Van Buskirk: A Legacy from New Amsterdam*, vol. 2 [1990], 1081; m2. New York City 5 Jun 1798 **Ann Minshull** (1773-1853), dau. of John & Mary Minshull of N.Y. (*Mass. VRs* 77:90).
- ii. Thomas Walter (b. 1769-d.y.);
- iii. William Walter, Jr. (1771-1814), a merchant, m. Boston 23 Apr 1794 Sarah Bicker (ca. 1774-1811);
- iv. Thomas Walter (1772-1803), d. in Jamaica, unm.;
- v. Mary "Polly" Lynde Walter (1773-1847), d. Ipswich, MA, m. Boston 28 Nov 1797 Dr. Nathaniel Smith (ca. 1770-1823) (*no ch.*); \*
- vi. Harriet Tyng Walter (1776-1847), b. Shelburne, d. prob. Boston, m. Boston 4 Jan 1804 John Odin, Jr. (1774-1854), son of John & Esther (Kettell) Odin of Charlestown (*Register* 12 [1858]:223-4, for their ch. also);
- vii. Arthur Maynard Walter (1780-1807), b. prob. N.Y. City, d. Boston, unm. Harvard 1798.

From the book by James H. Stark; J.H. Stark, "The Loyalists of Massachusetts and the Other Side of the American Revolution." 1910. <http://www.questia.com/PM.qst?a=o&d=53260614>

ref also: <http://wc.rootsweb.ancestry.com/cgi-bin/igm.cgi?op=GET&db=michelotti&id=I433811>

[http://www.newenglandancestors.org/research/services/articles\\_7695.asp](http://www.newenglandancestors.org/research/services/articles_7695.asp)

Note: see Loyalist Col. Abraham Van Buskirk above . . .

**Lynde Walter** (1767-1844), d. Boston; m. (1) prob. Shelburne, N. S. 23 Feb. 1791 **Maria Van Buskirk** (ca. 1771-96), **dau. of Col. Abraham & Jane (Dey) Van Buskirk of Bergen Co., N.J. and Shelburne NS.** Shoemaker, *Van Buskirk: A Legacy from New Amsterdam*, vol. 2 [1990], 1081; m(2) N.Y. City 5 June 1798 **Ann Minshull** (1773-1853), dau. of John & Mary Minshull of N.Y. (*Mass. VRs* 77:90).

<http://anglicanhistory.org/canada/ns/eaton/10.html>

William Walter - eldest son of the Reverend Nathaniel Walter, pastor of the Second Church in Roxbury, MA, who died in 1776 He was graduated at Harvard College in 1756. One of his sisters was married to Sir Robert Hasilrigge, Bart., and another to the Reverend Mather Byles, D.D., Junior. In 1764, in company with Abraham Jarvis, afterward bishop of Connecticut, and others, he went to England for ordination, and on his return, 22 Jul 1764, was installed rector of Trinity Church, Boston. 30 Sep 1766, he married Lydia, daughter of the Honorable Benjamin Lynde, Junior, of Salem, who bore him seven children. His grandson Lynde Minshall Walter was the founder and first editor of the Boston Evening Transcript.

In March, 1776, Dr. Walter resigned his rectorship and left with the British troops for Halifax. His youngest daughter, Harriet Tyng, was born in Shelburne, May 16, 1776. Although his family remained in Nova Scotia, he himself returned with General Howe and the fleet to New York, where he was on 31 Oct 1776. Later, in August, 1783, he went back to Nova Scotia and was settled at Shelburne. He perhaps came to Shelburne with the New York people who settled there in 1783. In 1791, he returned to Boston, where he purchased a house in Charter Street, built by Sir William Phipps, and destroyed in 1837. 28 May 1792, he became rector of Christ Church, Boston, which office he held until 5 Dec 1800. He was "a remarkably handsome man, tall and well-proportioned. When in the street he always wore a long blue cloth cloak over his cassock and gown; a full-bottomed wig, dressed and powdered; a three-cornered hat; knee breeches of fine black cloth, with black silk hose; and square-quartered shoes, with silver buckles. His countenance was always serene; his temper always cheerful."

[http://books.google.com/books?id=ikgSAAAAYAAJ&pg=PA338&pg=PA338&dq=%22rev.+william+walter%22+%22roxbury%22&source=bl&ots=EgeQRsmPu6&sig=cN7kh89kyVtbNNRieTK4NWWajbc&hl=en&ei=Opp3TOztBYSCIAeBksjsCw&sa=X&oi=book\\_result&ct=result&resnum=1&ved=0CBgQ6AEwAA#v=onepage&q=%22rev.%20william%20walter%22%20%22roxbury%22&f=false](http://books.google.com/books?id=ikgSAAAAYAAJ&pg=PA338&pg=PA338&dq=%22rev.+william+walter%22+%22roxbury%22&source=bl&ots=EgeQRsmPu6&sig=cN7kh89kyVtbNNRieTK4NWWajbc&hl=en&ei=Opp3TOztBYSCIAeBksjsCw&sa=X&oi=book_result&ct=result&resnum=1&ved=0CBgQ6AEwAA#v=onepage&q=%22rev.%20william%20walter%22%20%22roxbury%22&f=false) page 338-43.

REV. WILLIAM WALTER. RECTOR OF TRINITY CHURCH, BOSTON.

Thomas Walter, an Attorney at Law, came to America from Youghall, Ireland, about 1679, bringing a recommendatory letter to the churches in New England from a Congregational church in Youghall,—and by virtue thereof was admitted a member of the Second church, Boston, November 2, 1680. His family were originally of Lancashire, England, and were of gentle blood. He died before the year 1698.

REV. NEHEMIAH WALTER, son of the former, was born in Ireland. December, 1663, and came to America with his father. He early distinguished himself by proficiency in his studies at school, and by the age of thirteen was a master of the Latin tongue. It soon became evident that his genius pointed to a professional life, and he was sent to Harvard University where he graduated with honors in 1684. Shortly thereafter he removed to Nova Scotia where he resided some months for the purpose of acquiring the French language. He became a distinguished scholar and became noted among the literati of the day. After a careful and impartial examination and great deliberation, "he fell in the way of the Churches of New England, as thinking their constitution practice in general, with respect to worship, discipline and order, most comfortable to gospel institution and primitive practice." He was ordained a colleague of the Rev. John Eliot October 17, 1688 at the age of twenty-five. The first church at Roxbury had, at the earnest request of the venerable Apostle Eliot, been seeking a colleague to share the duties which increasing infirmity rendered irksome to him; and Nehemiah Walter was chosen. Mr. Eliot died soon after this after a life crowned with glory, honors, and labor, and it was a great consolation to him in his latter days to see his people so happily settled under Mr. Walter. For more than sixty years his successor faithfully discharged the duties of his office always to the acceptance of his people. He married Sarah, the daughter of Rev. Increase Mather by Maria, daughter of the distinguished Rev. John Cotton. Nehemiah Walter died September 17, 1750, and he was buried in the ministerial vault in the old burial ground, corner of Washington and Eustis Streets, Roxbury.

REV. THOMAS WALTER, second son of Nehemiah Walter, was born in Roxbury, December 13, 1696, and early gave evidence of most extraordinary genius. He graduated from Harvard University in 1713 and was ordained October 29th, 1718, and December 25th of the same year was married to Rebeckah, daughter of Rev. Joseph Belcher. He was a man who combined great wit and humor with infinite learning and excelled in the science of harmony. He published works on music, and one of his sermons upon the 2nd Samuel XXIII 1 "The Sweet psalmist of Israel" which was delivered at the Boston Lecture, has been pronounced "the most beautiful composition among the sermons which have been handed down to us by our fathers." Others of his sermons were also published. Thomas Walter was one of the most distinguished scholars and disputants of the day. "He had all his father's vivacity and richness of imagination with more vigor of intellect." For his genius and powers he was reckoned to be one of the ablest clergymen that New England up to that time had produced. His death occurred on Sunday, January 10, 1724-5, and he expressed his hope that he might die on that day, when lying prostrate with consumption. His tomb is in the old burying ground, Roxbury. His daughter Rebeckah, who was born in 1722, died unmarried January 11, 1780.

**Rev. William Walter**, the subject of this sketch, was a nephew of Thomas Walter. He was born in 1739, and graduated at Harvard College in 1756. Up to the time of the Revolution the preachers in the Episcopal church occupied the position of missionaries in the American colonies. They were sent here and were in the pay of the "Society for the Propagation of the Gospel in Foreign Parts." The following extracts are from letters written to the Secretary of the Society, and they explain themselves.

"Copy of a letter written to the Reverend Mr. Hooper of Trinity church in Boston, by Mr. Barnard, an eminent dissenting clergyman, in answer to one from the former desiring the latter would be so good as to send him a just and honest character of Mr. William Walter, who was talked of as a fit person to be assistant Minister at said church."

"He came out of our College with the reputation of one of the best classical scholars of his class. He lived first in this town in the business of a Grammar Schoolmaster, which trust he executed for several years to universal acceptance, faithful, and careful. I have reason to believe, in forming the tender minds of his pupils to virtue and religion, as well as forwarding them in their scholastic exercise. When to the sorrow of the town, he quitted that employ, he became connected with the Custom House. This business naturally raised complaints against him among trading people. But all I have heard were of his not being so flexible in some matters as they wished, none of oppression, much less of mean fraudulent ways of filling his own pockets.

"His temper is innocently cheerful, open, and friendly. He has a tender and delicate sense of honor, a just idea of the truest honor. He is kind and compassionate, etc." This letter had the desired effect. It was written Oct. 15th, 1763. He was ordained by the Bishop of London the following year and became an assistant to the Rev. Mr. Hooper, whom he succeeded as rector of Trinity church, the third Episcopal church in Boston, being opened in 1735. It stood on the corner of Summer and Hawley Streets. It was a plain wooden structure without steeple or tower.

In 1767 he joined with the Clergy of Massachusetts and Rhode Island in sending a letter to England requesting that a Bishop be sent to America. The letter says, "We are too remote and inconsiderable to approach the Throne, yet could His Majesty hear the voice of so distant a people the request for American Bishops would appear to be the cry of many of his most faithful subjects."

"We do, however, think ourselves happy in this, that the Society will omit no favorable opportunity of representing the advantage that may accrue to these Colonies, to religion and to the British Interests, by condescending to this one request." The Episcopal form of worship was always disagreeable to the Congregationalists, and when they discovered that the ministry entertained the design of sending over a bishop to the colonies, a controversy for years ran high on the subject. So resolute was the opposition to this project that it was abandoned. This controversy John Adams says contributed as much as any other cause to arouse attention to the claims of Parliament. The spirit of the times is well represented in a cartoon in the Political Register of 1769 which is here reproduced. >



LANDING A BISHOP.

The Rev. William Walter was a firm Loyalist. At the evacuation of Boston he was obliged to leave his house and accompanied by his family he went to Halifax. In 1776 he went to England, then returned and went to New York, and acted for some time as Chaplain of a British regiment. While in New York he sent a letter to the Secretary of the S. P. G. F. P., dated Dec. 8, 1781. It is interesting as it shows the trials and difficulties of the ministers of the Church of England during the Revolution. It is in part as follows: "I disbelieve that Mr. Bass ever preached a sermon for cloathing a rebel battalion, or ever read the Declarative Act for independence in his church, or has altered his sentiments since his dismissal, but that he opens his church on the days appointed by Congress as Public days, is most certain, and if this is to be criminal, then every clergyman within the rebel lines is criminal, and among others. Dr. Inglis, of this city, who did the same when Mr. Washington's army was here, yet no clergyman stands higher in the esteem of the Society for his loyalty. The occasion of this letter was the stopping of Mr. Bass's salary by the Society, as it had been reported to it that Mr. Bass had gone over to the rebels.

At the peace, accompanied by his family of six persons and by three servants, he went from New York to Shelburne, N. S., where the Crown granted him one town and one water lot. His losses in consequence of his loyalty were estimated at £7,000. In 1791 he returned to Boston and the next year was chosen Rector of Christ church.

William Walter was a zealous supporter of the church and crown, and vindicated his sincerity by the sacrifices he made for them. His discourses are described as rational and judicious, "recommended by an eloquence, graceful and majestic." He was no knight errant, but while adhering to his own convictions with quiet persistency, he exercised a large charity towards all forms of faith and Christian worship. The degree of D. D. was conferred on him by Kings College, Aberdeen, in 1784. In 1796 he was invited to deliver the Dupleian lecture at Harvard College and in 1798 he pronounced the anniversary discourse before the Massachusetts Humane Society, which was published. Dr. Walter was a remarkably handsome man; tall and well proportioned. When in the street, he wore a long blue coat over his cassock and gown, wig dressed and powdered, a three-cornered hat, knee breeches of fine black cloth, and with silk hose, and square quartered sleeves with silver buckles. His countenance was always serene, his temper always cheerful; happy himself, he communicated happiness to all around him. In the desk he read the glorious service like one inspired; his voice was clear, musical and well modulated. In his family he was loved, revered and admired. His heart, his house, his purse, were ever open to the needy. He married Lydia, daughter of Benjamin Lynde, the younger, of Salem, and by her had seven children. Her death occurred in 1798.

Dr. Walter continued his rectorship at Christ church until his death in 1800, at the age of sixty-one. The Rev. Dr. Parker, who preached his funeral sermon, delineated his character as ornamental to religion and to the church, to literature and humanity. Dr. Walter's grandson, Lynde Minshall Walter, born in 1799. graduated at Harvard University in 1817. He established the Boston Evening Transcript in 1830, and was the first editor of the paper. His death occurred in 1842. Another grandson, William Bicker was born in Boston, April 19, 1796, and graduated at Bowdoin College in 1818. He studied divinity at Cambridge but did not preach. He

became best known as an author, possessing an active fancy and a great faculty of versification. He contributed odes and sonnets and translations to the newspapers and in 1821 in Boston, he published "Poems", and "Sukey" a poem. In 1822 he went to the southern states to give lectures on poetry, but he died shortly after his arrival in Charleston, South Carolina, April 23, 1822.

This family so distinguished in ecclesiastical history of New England is believed now to be extinct. There were others of the name in Boston at an early period, who have perhaps left descendants, but they are not known to have any connection with this family.

LIST OF CONFISCATED ESTATES BELONGING TO REV. WILLIAM WALTER IN SUFFOLK COUNTY AND TO WHOM SOLD.

To Leonard Jarvis. Sept. 27, 1784; Lib. 145. fol. 32: Land and buildings In Boston, South St. W.; Samuel Quincy. an absentee, S.; Robert Robbins and heirs of Benjamin Clark, deceased, E.; Samuel Connant N. and E.; Nathaniel Taylor, an absentee, N.

-----

**Benjamin Ward** – b. 1750 Peekskill, NY; Royal American Regiment; 1789 St. George's Lodge No. 2, NY; St. George's Lodge No. 19, Maugerville, NB; 1812 Returned to U.S.; d. 1817.

[http://books.google.com/books?id=ZG9ZAAAAMAAJ&pg=PA504&dq=%22benjamin+ward%22+%22peekskill%22&hl=en&ei=QUUp4TJuzJcGC8gaT6aDEBw&sa=X&oi=book\\_result&ct=result&resnum=1&ved=0CCgQ6AEwAA#v=onepage&q=%22benjamin%20ward%22%20%22peekskill%22&f=false](http://books.google.com/books?id=ZG9ZAAAAMAAJ&pg=PA504&dq=%22benjamin+ward%22+%22peekskill%22&hl=en&ei=QUUp4TJuzJcGC8gaT6aDEBw&sa=X&oi=book_result&ct=result&resnum=1&ved=0CCgQ6AEwAA#v=onepage&q=%22benjamin%20ward%22%20%22peekskill%22&f=false) page 504.

The Ward family were residents of Peekskill in colonial times, and at the time of the Revolutionary War, Benjamin Ward became Captain of a company of Loyalists, or Tories, and entered the British service. He was pre-ent at the storming of Fort Montgomery in 1777, being one of the first to scale the walls. After the war he became reconciled to the new order of things and lived in Peekskill the remainder of his life. John Paulding, one of the captors of Major Andre, married a sister of Benjamin Ward, and one of the children, Hiram Paulding, became a rear-admiral in the U. S. Navy about the time of the Civil War. Benjamin Ward's daughter, Rebecca, was born in 1776 and died in 1864. She married Thomas Currey in 1796, and they had a large family of children.

-----

**George Warden** – b. ca 1755 Scotland; Master Maston, Engineering Department; 1774 Boston; 1775 Bunker Hill; 1779, Lodge No. 169 E.R. (A), NY; 1782, Junior Warden; 1782, Senior Warden; 1782 England; 1785, Joined Parr Lodge No. 3, Shelburne, NS.

#### GEORGE WARDEN

was a Scotsman who had served his time as a mason in Edinburgh before emigrating to Boston at the age of 15 in 1774. In 1775 he volunteered to serve as master mason in the Engineer Department of the British army, at a moment when no American would assist in face of the violent threats of committees and "unlawful associations." He served in the battle of **Bunker Hill** and other engagements, at frequent risk to his life, and

-----

**Captain Gideon White** – b. 1751, Plymouth, MA; King's American Rangers; Captain, Duke of Cumberland's Regiment; 1779 Lodge No.169 E.R. (A), NY; 1781, Royal American Rangers; Jamaica; 1783, Shelburne, NS; 1784, Parr Lodge No. 3, Shelburne; d. 1833.

<http://www.blupete.com/Hist/BiosNS/1800-67/White.htm>



< Captain Gideon White (1752-1833):

Gideon White came to Shelburne in 1784 and became a successful merchant and farmer. He had not come directly up from New York as most of the settlers did in 1783. He had first come up with the men of the Duke of Cumberland regiment to Chebucto (Guysborough). Well, for whatever reason, White took a dislike to the place and felt he might do better if he were located elsewhere in the province. "On April 6 he with 14 Shelburne Loyalists and disbanded soldiers petitioned Governor Parr for 15 fifty acre lots on the east side of the Port Roseway River ..." [Marion Robertson, *King's Bounty*, (Halifax: N.S. Museum, 1983), p. 77.] We can only at this stage but touch upon the life of Gideon White. For further research, see *A Calendar of the White Collection of Manuscripts in the Public Archives of Nova Scotia* Pub. #5 (Halifax: PANS, 1940); and see, *Gideon White: Loyalist* (Petheric Press, 1975), my copy has a visitor's guide to the "Ross-Thomson House tipped in.

<http://www.uelac.org/Loyalist-Info/extras/White-Gideon/White-Gideon-bio.pdf>

#### Gideon White Family Papers: Loyalists at Shelburne

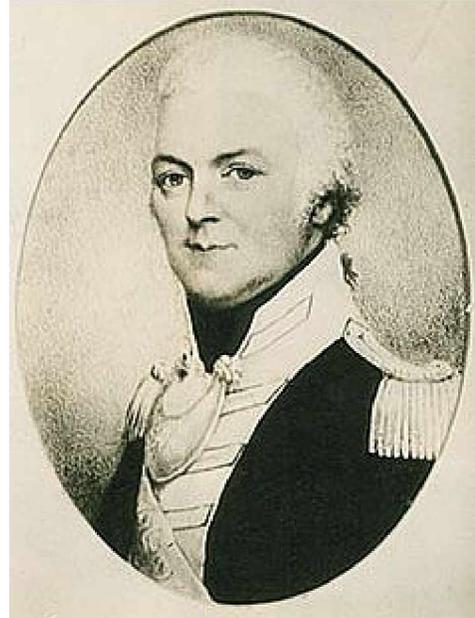
*Introduction given by Eleanor Robertson Smith at the launching of the Gideon White Family Papers: Loyalists at Shelburne on 18 July 2008. Website*

<http://www.gov.ns.ca/nsarm/virtual/white/>

Peregrine White, the first born New England child of English parents, was born in a cabin on the Mayflower as she lay in the Cape Cod Harbour. His descendant Gideon White, one of Shelburne's founding fathers, was born in March 1753 in Plymouth, Massachusetts to Captain Gideon and Joanne Howland White. His mother was also a descendant of Mayflower passenger, John Howland.

Gideon, proud of his heritage, was both a **maker** and a **preserver** of history, as were his descendants. The papers of this "historically-minded" family were donated to the Public Archives of Nova Scotia in 1938. To-day, two hundred and forty-nine years after Captain Gideon White arrived in Shelburne his **varied, valued and unique** *Gideon White Family Papers: Loyalists at Shelburne* are presented in digitalized format to the delight of researchers of the prelude to the Revolution, the American Revolution era and the Loyalist era in Nova Scotia.

Captain Gideon White arrived in Shelburne in the spring of 1784 with twenty-two men of his Duke of Cumberland Regiment. He married at Christ Church, Shelburne, on 17 April 1787, Deborah Whitworth, daughter of Dr. Miles Whitworth of Boston. They had nine children all of whom lived to adulthood and descendants have continuously lived in Shelburne County. In spite of natural disasters and adverse trade laws Gideon retained a positive attitude about Shelburne. A few months after his arrival Gideon wrote to a friend in Jamaica. ""You I suppose are Anxious to hear what kind of Situation we are in - in this Quarter - be assured it is dam'd hard 'tho in the Course of a few years it will be a very Eligible Situation. I am here securing my little Land &c - but shall not build 'till matters are better Regulated - We have about 15,000 Inhabitants here and but very little Justice, Owing to the misconduct or folly of those in power - In this Town are 2700 Houses - Above 2000 are framed - And business will soon be sprightly. the Whale and Cod fishys. are now attended too - One Whaleman has Arrived with 500 Barrels - next Year I expect to see great exertions - but at present every Man seems intent on a House, Wharfe, Stores &c."



This quote shows the importance of the papers. Guesstimates of the population range from 10 to 16,000. Also It is amazing the number of houses, twenty seven hundred, which were built out of the forest in a year, on the other hand the comment about every man's ambition was to build a home , wharf and store led to one of the real problems in the settlement – the owners became real estate poor.

A friend from New York wrote to Gideon about the many erroneous reports that are circulated respecting your settlements – permit me to assure you that the present situation here is very unpleasant and our future prospects gloomy with the rents and enormous taxes we poor Tories have to pay.

There are details re shipments to and from the New England – for example White received a shipment on 20 October 1788, from Boston, of fourteen oxen aboard the sloop *Agnes*.

Examples of negligent government officials, hotly contested elections, patronage appointments, bartering fish in exchange for scare salt, or clearing land in exchange for free rent of a property are provided. There are heart rendering descriptions of the fifteen days of disastrous forest fires in 1792. Gideon White described a dreadful scene of desolation and added - When you are informed that fifty Dwelling Houses besides Mills Barns and other Outhouse are destroyed - which belonged to the Loyal Industries Husbandmen who have for Nine Years been contending with this unfriendly Soil - to gain a subsistence - to have all these Labour and Prospects blasted in One Hour - I say knowing this to be fact - you may form some faint Idea of Shelburne" "such is my situation that it is impossible for ever to replace my Loss. This last stroke has completely knock'd down this Settlement, the 800 Negros who were carried to Serea Leone was a serious loss but more so to me than any One - I had Eight Negro Families Tenants which had each a quantity of my Land and allow'd me rent - each had his House &c. those are all gone & the Houses destroyed - but the most serious matter is my Grist Mill - No Grist - enough of Dissagreeables - I will make the best of it - ".

Deborah, the wife of Gideon wrote to her son, Miles, "you would be hurt indeed to see the Distress of your native Town, occasioned by drough & fire...your Papa is out for the Night commanding Watch to Guard the Town, as fire is all round us, Dean is at the farm with a Party everything is out of the House (Distressing indeed) it would be a heavy stroke to your Father to Lose his House & orchard...

These few examples of the 1561 items in this digitalized collection give you a bird's eye view of the contents. Some family researchers will find information they would prefer to ignore. all researchers will find useful data and statistics. Students at secondary, post secondary and graduate levels will be able to augment the official documents with additional facts, such as the purpose or need for the regulation and the reactions which follow from the implementation.

Gid White, whose distinctive signature is on many deeds and other records, served his community well in many capacities and has left a lasting contribution for the generations which follow him.

Gideon wrote a simple will on 13 April 1833 leaving unto my four sons Nathaniel Whitworth, Cornelius, John Dean Whitworth and Thomas Howland (Share and Share alike) to them and their heirs and assigns forever his real and personal estate. The epitaph on his Christ Church Cemetery gravestone reads: "He died in a good old age Full of years and honour".

-----  
**Captain Samuel Wright** – 1787, Joined New Oswegatchie Lodge No. 14, PGL Quebec.

"Tuesday, October 10th, 1787. New Oswegatchie Lodge Assembled at the house of Ensign Thos. Sherwood, in Elizabethtown, and opened in due form at 6 o'clock P.M.

"Present. John Jones, Esq., Master, **Ensign William Buell, Sen. Warden**, Brother Caleb Closson, as Jun. Warden, Ensign David Breakenridge, acting Sec'y, Brother George Campbell, acting Tyler, **Capt. Samuel Wright**, Ensign Thomas Sherwood, Brother Jeremiah McArthur, Visitor.

He also appeared in several meetings in 1788 and 1789. He served as an officer in one of the Provincial Corps.

<http://www.findagrave.com/cgi-bin/fg.cgi?page=gr&GRid=30689388>

On or about May 1, 1775, at Pownal, a group of men destined for the taking of Fort Ticonderoga in the Province of New York. Being without Officers to command their lot, they made choice of and appointed **Samuel Wright, of Pownal, Captain**. Soon thereafter, the Company marched to Castleton, on the New Hampshire Grants (now Rutland County, Vermont) where Ethan Allen took charge of the expedition and led them against Fort Ticonderoga then under British control. Fort Ticonderoga surrendered on the morning of May 10, 1775.

Capt. Samuel Wright b. 8 Feb 1744/45 in Pownal VT; d. 9 Aug 1815 in Oswegatchie, St Lawrence, NY; m. **Mercy Buell**, b. 15 Oct 1753 in Marlborough, CT. Mercy was the sister of **Bro. William Buell** of the same Lodge [q.v.]

Children:

- i. Ruth.
- ii. Sarah.
- iii. Hannah.
- iv. Seth.

v. Timothy Buell Wright, b. 21 Dec 1784, Bennington, VT; d. 24 Feb 1853, Oswegatchie, St Lawrence Co, NY.

<http://genforum.genealogy.com/broadhead/messages/247.html>

Timothy Jr. BUELL b. 20 Nov 1732 in Hebron, CT; d. Mar 1789 in Elizabethtown, Ontario, son of Timothy BUELL and Hannah BRADFORD. He married Mercy PETERS, b. 26 Mar 1730 in Hebron, Tolland, CT; d. 25 Dec 1813 in Tin Cap (Brockville) Ontario, the daughter of John PETERS and Mary MARKS.

Children of Mercy PETERS and Timothy Jr. BUEL:

- i. **Bemslee BUELL** b. 22 Sep 1765 in Marlborough, CT; d. 22 Feb 1830 in Pittsburg, Ontario (near Kingston); m. **Lois Sherwood** 1788 in Brockville, Ontario,, d/o **Thomas Sherwood**. She was b. 1773 in Ontario; d. 19 Jun 1849 in Gates (near Rochester, NY). He m2. Pheobe MANN 24 Mar 1786 in Marlborough, CT, b. Jul 1763; d. 24 Mar 1787.
8. ii. **William BUELL** b. 5 Oct 1751 in Hebron, CT; d. 8 Aug 1832 in Brockville, Ontario; m. Martha NAUGHTON 10 Mar 1782 in St. John's, Lower Canada, d/o Andrew NAUGHTON. She was b. 27 Feb 1762 in Farmingham, CT; d. 7 Dec 1832 in Brockville, Ontario; m2. Margaret Barley BERNARD 31 Mar 1827 in Brockville, Ontario. She died 1880.
- iii. **Mercy BUELL** b. 15 Oct 1753 in Hebron, CT; d. 1855 in Oswegatchie, NY; m. **Samuel WRIGHT** 7 Mar 1784 in St. Therese (Montreal), Quebec, son of Charles WRIGHT and Ruth BOLTWOOD. He was b. 8 Feb 1744/45 in North Hampton, Amherst, MA; d. 9 Aug 1815 in Oswegatchie, St. Lawrence, NY. She m2. Peter MCLAREN.
- iv. Hannah BUELL b. ca 1754 in Marlborough, CT; d. 29 Jul 1826 in Elizabethtown, Ontario; m. Joseph MCNISH 1773 in Marlborough, CT, b. ca 1755; d. 18 Oct 1816 in Elizabethtown, Ontario (S. Augusta Cem.).
- v. Timothy BUELL b. 28 Jun 1760 in Marlborough, CT; d. in Greensburg, PA (near Pittsburg); m. Catherine COLYAN 1789 in Greensburg PA (near Pittsburg).
- vi. Jonathan BUELL b. 1762 in Marlborough, CT; d. 31 Jan 1837 near Elizabethtown, Ontario; m. Hannah SMITH, b. ca 1775; d. ca 1850 in Canada.
- vii. Samuel Peters BUELL b. 1767 in Marlborough, CT; d. in Chateaugay, Lower Canada; m. Mary Elizabeth SPRAGUE in NY.
- viii. Sabina BUELL b. 1770 in Marlborough, CT; m. David FLYNN, born in Cedars, Lower Canada.

-----  
**Appendix I**

**New York Petition of 16 Oct 1776 to Lord Richard Howe and Gen. William Howe.**

History of New York during the Revolutionary War: and of the ..., Volume 2, by Thomas Jones, Edward Floyd De Lancey, page 433.  
[http://books.google.com/books?id=h4crAAAAMAAJ&pg=PA440&dq=%22john+davan%22+%22leather+dresser%22&hl=en&ei=iQ9oTPzRJoL78Aa2h\\_2zBA&sa=X&oi=book\\_result&ct=result&resnum=1&ved=0CDQQ6AEwAA#v=onepage&q=%22john%20davan%22%20%22leather%20dresser%22&f=false](http://books.google.com/books?id=h4crAAAAMAAJ&pg=PA440&dq=%22john+davan%22+%22leather+dresser%22&hl=en&ei=iQ9oTPzRJoL78Aa2h_2zBA&sa=X&oi=book_result&ct=result&resnum=1&ved=0CDQQ6AEwAA#v=onepage&q=%22john%20davan%22%20%22leather%20dresser%22&f=false)

THE EFFORT OF ITS INHABITANTS TO HAVE CIVIL GOVERNMENT RESTORED IN NEW YORK, IN OCTOBER, 1776—  
PETITION TO THE HOWES FOR THAT OBJECT— ITS SIGNERS' NAMES—MISREPRESENTED BY HISTORIANS AS A  
LETTER OF SUBMISSION TO THE BRITISH COMMANDERS.

*Vol. II., p. 117.*

No single incident in the Revolution has been more misunderstood, and none more misrepresented, than the attempt of the people of New York to obtain the re-establishment of constitutional civil power, in place of military rule, in October, 1776. The text states the true reasons and the real objects of the Petition to the Howes "to be restored to the King's peace." It was presented in October,

1776, was dated the 16th—just a month after the recapture of the city by the British army. It was signed by nearly 1,000 of the male inhabitants of the city and neighborhood, of all degrees and conditions in life, and of all denominations of Christians. It was the first step they could take toward the renewal of civil government. The Declaration of Independence destroyed it in the preceding July. And when, in the following September, the city and vicinity were again under the Crown, its inhabitants, for their own protection, naturally desired their old constitutional government restored and put again in operation, as the text states. Historical writers, however, have represented this petition, so numerous signed, as "a letter of submission," or, as a mere complimentary address to the British chiefs—an offering of adulation to the Howes — "a specimen," in the words of the brief introduction to the document and its list of signers, in a volume of miscellaneous Revolutionary papers issued in 1861, by the Mercantile Library Association of New York, "of that class of papers so popular among the subjects of European rulers." Hence its signers have been termed Ministerial Tools, Howe's Addressers, Tory Villains, and the list of their names "The Black List."

These misrepresentations, it is believed, in the case of later writers especially, have been simply the result of mistake and misapprehension of the object and purport of the petition. The customary terms then in use in America, when referring to the Sovereign in public documents, have been erroneously interpreted as evidence of slavishness. Chief Justice Horsmanden's letter to Governor Tryon, and the latter's reply which accompany the document, clearly show the real object aimed at.

The petition is dated October 16, 1776, and so is Chief Justice Horsmanden's letter to Governor Tryon, asking him to present it. The names were signed during the next eight days, the certificate of their being signed voluntarily, of William Waddell and James Downes, who superintended the signing, being dated on the 24th, and Governor Tryon's reply to the Chief Justice stating that he had presented it to Lord Howe, being dated the next day, the 25th, the day of the presentation. It will be noted how very accurately the author has stated the evasive reply of Lord Howe, as proven by this official letter of Governor Tryon. The private views of the Howes on the subject are given on page 118. The reader will understand the matter better, if the letter of Chief Justice Horsmanden to Governor Tryon, and the reply of the latter, both of which will be found at the end of the list of names, are read immediately after reading the petition itself. The petition, the names of the signers, and the accompanying letters of Horsmanden and Tryon, are given below in full. They were published in Gaine's *New York Gazette and Weekly Mercury* just after they were presented. Unfortunately, no file of that paper for the latter part of 1776 exists in any of the Public Libraries of New York. Two or three numbers only of September, 1776, are in that of the Historical Society, but all are previous in date to the Petition. In 1859, Abraham Tomlinson, of Poughkeepsie, New York, an antiquarian, who once had a sort of museum in that city, brought to the writer's house in New York for examination, a collection of MS. Revolutionary papers, chiefly found by him at Kingston, New York, most of which had evidently been papers of the New York Provincial Convention, which sat for some time at that place. In the collection was an old written copy of this Petition, and the names signed to it and the letters of Horsmanden and Tryon, with the following note at the end in a different hand-writing:

"The above is extracted from Gaine's *New York Gazette*, No. 1,306, November 4, 1776.

CHAS. TILLINGHAST."

Tomlinson's collection was subsequently bought by a subscription among a few gentlemen, of whom the writer was one, and presented to the Mercantile Library Association of New York. This institution subsequently printed privately, in 1861, a selection from the collection with a few other papers, in a thin quarto volume of 184 pages, 1 in which were included the petition, the names and the accompanying letters. From this volume, and from a MS. copy of the documents and the names of the signers, which Mr. Tomlinson permitted to be taken while he owned them, and which is now in the possession of the gentleman who made them, and with his permission, these interesting and valuable documents are here reprinted. The names are arranged alphabetically in the printed volume, though they were not so, of course, in the original paper. This arrangement, with corrections from the copy, has been followed here, for unfortunately, the original papers have disappeared from the Library of the Mercantile Association, as the writer found on making a personal search, and the custodian of the Library informed him that it was not known what had become of them. The notes of identification of the signers are taken from the printed volume, except those marked with small letters, which have been added by the writer of this note.

1 Under the direction of a Committee of the Association. The title of the volume—not very correct—is "New York City During the American Revolution." The preface states that the introduction and the historical notes are by Mr. Henry 8. Dawson, the well-known editor of the *Historical Magazine*.

As the author's brief note at the foot of page 117 of the text, mentions a few names of signers which are not on this list, it is probable that there may have been copies of it circulated for signature on Long Island and Staten Island. The Petition and letters are also printed in the third volume of Almon's "Remembrancer," pages 122 to 124. The precise number of signers is 948. The first name on the written list as signed, was "Daniel Horsmanden," and the last "Lawe Bayard." The last is probably a copyist's mistake for "Lewis Bayard."

#### PETITION.

To the Right Honorable, Richard, Lord Viscount Howe— of the Kingdom of Ireland—

And to His Excellency the Honorable William Howe Esq' General of his Majesty's Forces in America; the King's Commissioners for restoring Peace to his Majesty's Colonies in North America

Your Excellencies, by your declaration, bearing date July 14th, 1776, having signified, that "the King is desirous to deliver his American Subjects from the Calamities of War and " other Oppressions which they now undergo; and to restore "the Colonies to his protection and peace"— and by a subsequent Declaration, dated Sepr. 19th 1776, having also been pleased to express your desire "to Confer with his Majesty's" well affected subjects, upon the means of restoring the "public Tranquility and establishing a permanent union with" every Colony, as a part of the British Empire.—We Therefore, whose names are hereunto Subscribed, Inhabitants of the City and County of New York, in the province of New York, reflecting with the tenderest emotions of Gratitude on this Instance of his Majesty's paternal Goodness; and encouraged by the Affectionate manner in which his Majesty's gracious purpose hath been conveyed to us by your Excellencies, who have thereby evinced that Humanity, is inseparable from that true

Magnanimity and those enlarged sentiments which form the most Shining Characters—beg leave to represent to your Excellencies—

That we bear true allegiance to our Rightful Sovereign George the Third as well as warm affection to his sacred person Crown and Dignity.— That we Esteem the constitutional Supremacy of Great Britain, over these Colonies, and other depending parts of his Majesty's dominions, as Essential to the Union, Security, and Welfare, of the whole Empire, and sincerely lament the Interruption of that Harmony, which formerly subsisted between the Parent State and these her Colonies—That many of the Loyal Citizens have been driven away by the Calamities of War and the Spirit of Persecution which lately prevailed ; or sent to New England, and other distant Parts. We therefore hoping that the sufferings which our absent fellow citizens undergo for their Attachment to the Royal Cause may plead in their behalf; humbly pray that Your Excellencies would be pleased on these our dutiful representations to Restore this City & County to his Majesty's Protection and Peace

NEW YORK Oct 16th—1776

WILLIAM WADDELL  
JAMES DOWNES

-----

ADDRESS TO GOVERNOR TRYON.

To His Excellency WTM Tryon Esq', Captain General and Governor in Chief in, and over, the province of New York, and the territories depending thereon in America Chancellor & Vice Admiral of the Same

We the Inhabitants of the City & County of New York, beg leave to Congratulate your Excellency on your return to the Capital of your Government; and to assure you, that we feel the sincerest Joy on this happy Event, which opens a Prospect that we shall once more experience the Blessings of Peace and Security under his Majesty's auspicious Government & Protection—blessings which we formerly enjoyed under your Excellency's mild Administration, and which we Ardently wish to have renewed.

Persevering in our Loyalty and Unshaken attachment to our Gracious Sovereign, in this time of Distress and trial, and anxious to testify our affection for him, we have embraced the Earliest Opportunity to Petition the Kings Commissioners they would restore this City & County to his Majestys Peace. Although many of the most respectable Citizens, and a much greater number of the Inferior Classes, have been driven Off by the Calamities of War, or sent Prisoners to new England, and other distant parts ; yet we hope that the numbers still remaining, and who have voluntarily subscribed, may be deemed sufficient to intitle this district to his Majesty's grace —whilst the sufferings which our absent Fellow Citizens undergo for the Royal Cause plead in their behalf with the Commissioners From whose well known humanity, benevolence, and enlarged Sentiments, we have the most flattering Expectations. To your Excellency we naturally look up for Assistance ; we therefore request, that you would be pleased to present our Petition to the Commissioners, and otherwise Exert yourself, that the Prayer of it may be granted ; as it is our present desire, and what we Esteem the Greatest earthly Felicity, to remain Subjects of the British Government in union with the Parent State

Signed by Desire, and in behalf of the  
Inhabitants by

DANIEL HORSMANDEN

NEW YORK Oct 16th, 1776

To which his Excellency was pleased to write the following Letter in answer

NEW YORK 25th October—1776.

Sir

The Address you deliver'd to me in behalf of the Inhabitants of the City & County of New York, cannot fail of being highly agreeable to me, as it was, accompanied, with a dutiful Petition & representation from them to the Kings Commissioners, for restoring peace to his Majestys Colonies— testifying their Loyalty, to our most Gracious Sovereign, professing a Zealous attachment to the british Constitution, and declaring the warmest desire, for a lasting union with the parent state.

Still solicitous as I am for the welfare of the Inhabitants of this Colony in General, and earnestly wishing for a restoration of Public Harmony, and the re-establishment of the ancient Constitutional authority of Government, I have cheerfully embraced the Opportunity of presenting this Day, the Address to Lord Howe, who was pleased to signify to me " he would take the earliest opportunity of communicating " with General Howe on the Occasion."

The Inhabitants may be assured I shall support their wishes with my best Endeavours, although the Completion of it must be left to the decision of his Majestys Commissioners, in whom the highest National confidence is reposed.

I am with regard  
Sir, your most Obedient Servant  
WM TRYON.

To the Hon"" Chief Justice Horsmanden.

-----

## Appendix II

### The Frey Family

<http://www.fortklock.com/simmsfirst.htm>

*The Frontiersmen of New York*, by Jephtha R. Simms, Albany, NY 1883, Volume I, page 95.

*First Settling of the Whites in Central New York.* --Only here and there a white man, it is believed, had the temerity to plant his family in the Mohawk valley very distant from Schenectada, until the German colonists came hither under the patronage of the British crown. Here and there an Indian trader may have taken a squaw to wife, and dwelt among the Mohawks, and now and then a Dutchman or an Englishman may have pitched his tent among them; but such cases were rare any distance above Schenectada as early as the year 1700. The earliest settlers generally went in and squatted upon desired lands, without any title at first, except a verbal or written one from the Indian proprietors. A map, (Doc. His., Vol. 1) drawn by the Surveyor-General of the State, Simeon De Witt, and published in 1790, marking the land patents upon the south side of the Mohawk, gives no date west of Schoharie creek earlier than that of Capt. John Scott, who, soon after its erection, commanded Fort Hunter, and that was for lands on the west side of Aries' kill in 1722, if we except the Oriskany Patent, which granted 27, 527 acres to Peter Schuyler and others, of Albany, April 18, 1705. This was evidently secured as a matter of speculation, for no sane white man would have thought of going to reside there then. The Gov. Tryon map, (Doc. Hist., vol. 1.) prepared by Claude Joseph Sauthier, and published in London in 1779, gave the names of patentees in this territory but no dates. John Peterson Meebee, July 20, 1705, took a patent for 160 acres of land on the south side of Schoharie creek, a couple of miles above its mouth, at a place now known as Cadaughrita, spelled on the patents *Ka-da-ro-de*, and pronounced as though written *Ka-daugh-ro-de*. The patent of Hendrick and Hans Hansen for lands below Fonda, was dated July 17, 1713, and it is believed they went upon the tract about that time.

The first European family to locate as far west, of which I have satisfactory evidence, was that of Hendrick-Henry Frey, a native of Zurich, Switzerland, who came to the colony of New York in 1689, and is said to have located a little distance west of Palatine Bridge some few years later, and prior to 1700, where he erected a log dwelling, and lived on terms of friendship with his Indian neighbors. Some interesting facts in the history of this pioneer family were communicated to the writer by an antiquarian member of it, under date of July 30, 1876.

In 1739 the log tenement gave place to a stone dwelling now standing in good condition; which is said to have been prepared for defense in the early Canadian wars. The first Frey settler was drowned in the river whither he had gone to water his horses, and was supposed to have had a fit, as he was found in water scarcely a foot deep. His age is unknown. He left a son, a namesake who died intestate at Schenectada, where he had gone upon business, at the age of about forty years, leaving three sons, Henry, John and Bernard; and three daughters, Elizabeth, Catharine and Maria, who married respectively Henry Deihl, (A son and name sake of this man went to Canada with the enemy, and is known to have been among the fire and blood fiends at Cherry Valley.) John Loucks and **Christopher P. Yates**.

(A custom prevailed in the Colony of New York at an early day of obtaining marriage licenses from the secretary of the colony, who, for a fee, received a bond, granted the license, and recorded the proceedings in a book. A bond in the sum of £500 was lodged with the secretary, asserting that there was no legal impediment to hinder the parties from being united. Those records fill 40 volumes; and Dr. O'Callaghan arranged them for publication, which took place in 1860. Those records commence with 1736 and end with 1783, when the custom fell into disrepute. The records are given in single lines, but would average some 40 to a page, and filling 480 pages, making a record of over 19,000 licenses. That granted for the nuptials of *Richard Montgomery, of the outward of New York, Gentleman, and Jennet Livingston, of Dutchess county, Spinster*, is inserted in the introduction to the published document, to show the usual form of the bond and obligation. This Richard Montgomery was Gen. Montgomery, who fell at Quebec. It was granted to Henry B. Livingston, of Dutchess county, and John Livingston, of New York, and was dated August 4, 1773. In this book of licenses are the following records: October 19, 1761, Elizabeth Fry and Thomas North; January 31, 1774, Maria Fry and Christopher P. Yates; December 11, 1775, Catharine Fry and David Cox. We may reasonably suppose, therefore (unless there was a slip between the cup and lip), that those Fry sisters, Elizabeth and Catharine, had been married and were widows when they married Deihl and Loucks, who are remembered as their husbands by the aged of our day. Nor is this all: this book of records discloses the further fact that, June 12, 1770, **Christopher P. Yates** was licensed to marry Rebecca Van Santford. Hence, we may infer that Miss Fry was his second wife.)

**Henry [Hendrick] Frey**, by the English law of primogeniture, inherited all his father's real estate, being 3,200 acres in Freysbush, 300 acres at the Palatine homestead, and a Canajoharie mill site with 800 acres of land adjoining, etc. Of his estate he gave his brothers the homestead, and to each of his brothers-in-law a good farm of 100 acres, still retaining a large property. He was an officer in the French war, some say a Colonel, under Sir William Johnson: certainly a Colonel of militia before the Revolution. On the Tryon map, the Frey place is marked Capt. Frey; intended, no doubt, for his brother John, as the Colonel was then living in his stone dwelling at the upper Canajoharie mills. At the commencement of the Revolution the Colonel warmly espoused the cause of the mother country; and although he did not take up arms in her defense, his position gave him a world of trouble, for he was arrested, imprisoned, and finally freed on parole, but his estate was not confiscated.

**Col. Henry Frey married Elizabeth, a daughter of John Jost (Joseph) Herkimer, sister of Gen. Nicholas Herkimer**, by whom he had one son, Philip Rockel, and one daughter, Margaret, who married Edward Cox, who was killed in the war, while defending the Colonel's gristmill against the depredation of his Whig neighbors; leaving one son Henry Frey Cox, who inherited the mill site and several hundred acres of land adjoining, from his grandfather Frey. Mr. Cox married a Miss Nazro, and raised one of the best families Canajoharie has produced. Mrs. Cox, Col. Frey's daughter, afterward married Capt. Cockburn, a half pay officer in the British army, who died from an accident in jumping from a horse. Capt. C. left a daughter Eliza, who married Alfred Conkling, Esq., father of Hon. Roscoe Conkling.

**Maj. John Frey**, brother of Col. Henry, was a staunch Whig, and zealous patriot through the Revolutionary contest. He, too, although young, is said to have seen service in the French war, was an efficient member of the Tryon county Committee of Safety,

was a Brigade Major at Oriskany, from whence he was taken a wounded prisoner to Canada. He filled many active positions in life. **He married Gertrude Shoemaker, a niece of Gen. Herkimer, then the widow of Lieut. Matthew Wormuth, who was shot from his horse near Cherry Valley, in the summer of 1778, while bearing dispatches from thence to Fort Plain.**

(Lieut. Wormuth (not Wormwood) was a son of Peter Wormuth, an early German settler and trusty Whig, who resided in a stone house now demolished, which stood over a mile westward of the Fort Plain railroad depot. Speaking of this soldier's death, Mr. Campbell says, when he fell from his horse: "Brant, rushing up, tomahawked him with his own hand. They had been personal friends before the war, and Brant is said to have lamented his death; at the time, he supposed him to be a Continental officer." This statement is true, except the tomahawking, to which some other writers have added scalping. Reliable tradition says that when the Lieutenant fell from his horse, Brant, from his concealment, ran to him, and recognizing him as a warm personal friend, expressed his sincere regret at his misfortune, and asked him if he thought he could survive his wounds, in which case he would have him tenderly cared for. No, replied the dying man, there is no hope for me; my wounds are mortal. That he was then dispatched and scalped is no doubt true, but not by Brant in person. I know that he has been presented as a human fiend by persons who could have known little of his true character; and, although a successful and crafty leader, I have been unable to fasten upon his person such atrocities as the Butlers, and many of his white coadjutors were guilty of. He certainly was not the monster some writers have represented him to have been; and although he was literally a captain of demons, yet, because himself an Indian, I am not disposed to misrepresent his true character: he certainly gave repeated evidences, during the war, of possessing a generous nature. As a writer I would fain do justice to either friend or foe, whether white, red or black his skin. Lieut. Wormuth was born in August, 1744, making him about 33 years of age at his death. He was buried from the residence of his father, Peter Wormuth, near Palatine stone church. His memory is very properly commemorated on the Leander Fox monument, in the Fort Plain cemetery.)

He died without issue. Maj. Frey was a prominent citizen in the community, and at an advanced age he died in 1833, at the present Frey mansion, from which he was buried on a pleasant Sabbath day, as the writer remembers. This mansion was erected by his only son, Henry I. Frey, Esq., in 1808. The last gentleman dying not many years after, left several children, of which number his son John still survives. S. Ludlow Frey, a son of John Frey is the present proprietor of the homestead.

Capt. Bernard Frey, youngest of the three Palatine brothers, and his nephew Philip R., only son of Col. Henry Frey, then a young man in his teens, joined the Tories and went to Canada (not together however), and how much they were influenced to do so by the senior Frey, can only be conjectured; but it is said that the mother of Philip furnished him an outfit to flee to Canada, and sent him with Tom, an Indian guide, who at Onondaga gave him in charge of another party. On arriving in Canada, Bernard Frey received a captain's commission in the regiment known as Butler's Rangers, a corps celebrated for its cruelty, and his nephew became a cadet in the 8th or King's Regiment; and at the end of a year he was given an ensign's commission, in which capacities they were at the siege of Fort Stanwix. Bernard Frey on the approach of hostilities, sold his interest in the homestead to his brother John, before he went to Canada. Having well married in Canada, at the close of the war, he became a permanent settler there, receiving from the British government a landed estate in the town of Whitby, below Toronto, of 3000 acres. He was also retired from the army as a half pay captain. Thus was he liberally rewarded for imbruing his hand in the blood of his countrymen. He had an only daughter, Margaret, who married John C. Ball, and at her father's death she and her husband each received 200 acres of land as the children of a loyalist captain. Mrs. Ball, a widow, was still living at the age of 86, at Therold, on the Welland canal, as late as 1879. Capt. Frey was yet residing in Canada with all his strong political prejudices against the American government, until the war of 1812 was inaugurated; when he met a tragic fate. Some time in 1814, the Americans and British were cannonading each other in a long range across the St. Lawrence, the former from Fort Niagara, when Frey observed a ball plow up the ground and roll some distance beyond; and picking it up he tossed it to a British gunner near, with the exclamation; "send it back and perhaps it may kill a d-d rebel!" He had scarcely uttered the sentence, when another American shot had severed his own body.

(My informant of this incident, Nicholas Steller, a native of Palatine, now an octogenarian, was a boy standing by, when Archibald Anderson, P.M. at Palatine Bridge, with a letter for Maj. John Frey, found him sitting upon the stoop of the public house kept by Jacob Hees, at the corner of the turnpike and Stone Arabia road. "Please open the letter and read it to me," said the old patriot. Anderson did so, reading the tragic fate of his kinsman. He patiently heard the letter read, when firing with the zeal of his early manhood the Maj. exclaimed: "Just good enough for the d-- rascal, he had no business there!")

## Appendix III

### Ryerse and Ryerson Family

[http://www.biographi.ca/009004-119.01-e.php?&id\\_nbr=2644&interval=25&&PHPSESSID=hqc099p5qj8h5pjgfd3luoq0](http://www.biographi.ca/009004-119.01-e.php?&id_nbr=2644&interval=25&&PHPSESSID=hqc099p5qj8h5pjgfd3luoq0)

**Samuel Ryerse (Ryerson)**, army officer, miller, office holder, judge, and militia officer; b. 1752 in Saddle River Township, N.J., son of Luke (Luyckes) Ryerse (Ryerson) and Johanna Van der Hoff, m. first Elizabeth Colwell, and they had four children, of whom a son and a daughter survived infancy; m. secondly 22 Jan. 1784 Sarah Davenport, *née* Underhill, and they had ten children, of whom two sons and one daughter survived infancy; d. 12 June 1812 in Port Ryerse, Upper Canada.

Samuel Ryerse's forebears emigrated from Holland to America in the mid 17th century. They later moved to what became Bergen County, N.J., where young Samuel was raised and presumably educated. According to one family historian, on the outbreak of the American revolution Ryerse was imprisoned for his loyalty. He later escaped and joined the loyalist forces along with his younger brother Joseph\*. Samuel became a captain in the New Jersey Volunteers on 25 March 1777. During the next two years he played a conspicuous role in raids into his native province from New York City. On one occasion a rebel newspaper lauded his efforts to prevent plundering by his men and judged him to be "actuated by principles of honour and humanity." Early in 1779 his lands were confiscated and sold.

In the autumn of that year Ryerse was recruited by Major Patrick Ferguson to join an élite force for service in a campaign the following spring against Charleston, S.C. Later Ferguson's force was badly beaten, on 7 Oct. 1780, at the battle of Kings Mountain. Ryerse was wounded in the left hand and wrist and ultimately lost "the ring finger and in great measure the use of my hand." He was taken prisoner and paroled the following February. Of his treatment by the rebels, he wrote to an unknown correspondent: "You

would hardly believe it possible that any of the human species could be possessed of so much barbarity. If you will call to mind the most horrid cruelties that have ever been affected by savages you will then in some measure be able to judge what we have seen and suffered." Following his release, he returned to New York City where he rejoined his old unit.

At the conclusion of the war, Ryerse went on half pay. Up to this point he had almost consistently spelt his name Ryerson (on occasion he used Ryerse). Now he began to sign Ryerse. The change has often been ascribed to a clerical error on the army rolls that necessitated his adopting the variant in order to obtain his pay. The most recent study indicates that this interpretation cannot be sustained and suggests that Ryerse probably used the variant to distinguish himself from the rebel branch of his family. His brother Joseph, however, continued to use Ryerson.

The New Jersey Volunteers left New York City in September 1783, arriving in what is now the province of New Brunswick the following month. Ryerse and others in his battalion refused to settle on their designated block of land, the most remote spot then surveyed on the Saint John River. Instead he apparently squatted in the vicinity of St Anne's Point (Fredericton) until June 1784. In 1784 he repeatedly petitioned Governor Thomas Carleton for land in Sunbury County. Finally, in December 1786, he received 600 acres on the south bank of the Little River where he farmed and pressed, unsuccessfully, for compensation for his wartime losses. His brother Joseph, who had come with him to New Brunswick, received 400 acres at the same site.

Ryerse was not happy in New Brunswick, "being disappointed both in [its] soil and climate, finding it to be sterile and uncongenial." His wife, too, was unhappy away from her native city of New York. Thus he sold his land and by early 1793 had taken up residence in Brooklyn, N.Y. He then had four children by his second marriage; within eight weeks of his arrival, all had died. In April he returned to New Jersey and purchased land in Morris County, but animosity lingering from the revolution prompted him to seek land in Upper Canada. In the summer of 1794 he travelled to Newark (Niagara-on-the-Lake), where he met with Lieutenant Governor SIMCOE. Ryerse decided to move yet again and returned to the province with his family in the summer of 1795.

Simcoe was struck by Ryerse's "private character and fidelity to the King." Certain that the foundations of loyalty and adherence to the British constitution could be instilled in the population by force of example, Simcoe sought permission from the authorities in Great Britain to extend the boundaries of the settlement at Long Point, Norfolk County, to include Ryerse and others. Moreover, the lieutenant governor went out of his way to enhance Ryerse's status with land and offices. On 1 July 1796 he was named a justice of the peace; he was reappointed continuously until his death. On 15 July the Executive Council granted him the 3,000 acres his military rank entitled him to, and he located them in Norfolk County. He settled at the mouth of Young Creek in Woodhouse Township; there he built a sawmill and a grist-mill which formed the nucleus of the village of Port Ryerse. Unlike the former, the latter mill proved unprofitable; it was burned on 14 May 1814 by a party of American marauders including Abraham Markle\*. Before his departure from Upper Canada, Simcoe had directed that Ryerse "may be placed at the head" of the militia with the rank of major at least. In the event, on 17 July 1797, Ryerse received the most important local office, that of county lieutenant [see Hazelton SPENCER], and was commissioned colonel of the 1st Norfolk Militia.

Ryerse was the pre-eminent office holder in the area and played a leading role in the administrative and military affairs of the increasingly populous eastern portion of the Western District. With the formation of the London District on 1 Jan. 1800, he was appointed the first district court judge and, presumably, the first surrogate court judge as well. The following month he became, with Thomas WELCH and Thomas Hornor\*, a commissioner of the Court of King's Bench. In August he was included as one of three commissioners responsible for administering the oath of allegiance to individuals claiming land in the district. He performed his duties assiduously. Until June 1803, for instance, he attended and chaired all but one meeting of the Court of Quarter Sessions. Other lesser offices followed: road commissioner in March 1805, trustee of the district school in 1807, and judge of the Court of Requests in 1807, and again in 1809.

Samuel Ryerse was thus part of a regional élite based on office-holding and dominated by the local assemblyman, Surveyor General David William Smith\*. Smith had close ties with the powerful merchants of the Niagara peninsula such as Robert HAMILTON. But that interest did not prevent Ryerse in 1800 from heading a petition from 105 inhabitants of Norfolk County protesting "as monopolous and oppressive" the proposed bill to allow Hamilton and his partners to make improvements to the Niagara portage and pay for them by increased freight charges. Late in 1803 Smith decided not to stand for re-election in the riding of Norfolk, Oxford and Middlesex. The resulting power vacuum led to a bitter contest between rival factions.

Ryerse decided to stand, and his candidacy was opposed by Benajah Mallory\*. In late May 1804 Lord Selkirk [DOUGLAS] observed that the electioneering "seems here to go on with no small sharpness." In spite of the support of fellow office holders such as Welch, Ryerse was defeated 166 votes to 77. Buoyed by this success his rivals called for the removal of Ryerse and others from office. Tension between the two groups heightened and in January 1805 several shots were fired at Mallory's home. He charged that the attempted assassination was the work of either Ryerse or John Backhouse. Ryerse, in turn, claimed the accusation was part of a conspiracy against him. Several months later the conflict was taken up in the Court of Quarter Sessions and resulted in a welter of charges and counter-charges. Office holders such as Ryerse and Welch characterized their opponents as a Methodist faction motivated by sedition. Indeed, in February 1806, Ryerse petitioned the House of Assembly to declare Mallory ineligible to sit in parliament, "having . . . been a preacher and teacher of the Religious Society or Sect called Methodists." Ryerse's counsel subpoenaed several witnesses who refused to appear; thus one year later the petition was dismissed, on the motion of Solicitor General D'Arcy Boulton\*, for lack of evidence.

In 1809 the deputy paymaster general suspended Ryerse's half pay because he held government appointments. Ryerse notified Lieutenant Governor Francis Gore\*'s office that he would have to obtain a certificate indicating he had received no remuneration from those offices or ask to "be removed from [them] . . . immediately . . . as they have never paid me for the loss of my time and the Stationary that I have used on Public Business." Apparently the matter was not resolved in Ryerse's favour; in a letter dated 24 Feb. 1810 he wrote, "Some Embarrassments that I have Unluckily got into with respect to my half Pay have obliged me to resign my Several Provincial Appointments. . . ."

Even after his retirement Ryerse retained a concern for public affairs: He had, as he told Chief Justice Thomas Scott\* in 1810, "the good of the Country and the Prosperity of the Province equally at heart in a private Capacity." Ryerse was disturbed about the

qualifications of certain men recommended for local office. Few were fit for the situations and some were "Unfriendly" to the Gore administration. He dismissed Duncan McCall\* as a trader who occasionally resided in the United States. Moreover, he had been seen in a tavern "deeply Engaged in a game of Chance (throwing Dice and pitching Dollars) which would seem to indicate a partiality for low Company." He considered Abraham A. Rapelje a better candidate for office but noted, "He has no landed Property nor any fixed residence, and during Judge [Robert Thorpe\*s] residence in this Country was a Strong Advocate of his politiks. . . ."

More than two years after his retirement Samuel Ryerse died of tuberculosis. He had been many things in his life: a soldier, a freemason, a farmer, and a miller. But his enduring reputation was based on his prominence as an office holder. Simcoe had hoped that the principles Ryerse personified – staunch loyalism, toryism, and adherence to the Church of England – would be emulated. As the election of 1804 proved, however, these qualities could not win him the support of the majority of settlers in Norfolk, who were overwhelmingly Methodist and non-loyalist American.

[http://books.google.com/books?id=nMFYAAAAAAAJ&pg=PA83&dq=%22Samuel+Ryerse%22&hl=en&ei=Lyh5TOrcIoL68Abbt4TD&sa=X&oi=book\\_result&ct=result&resnum=3&ved=0CC8Q6AEwAg#v=onepage&q=%22Samuel%20Ryerse%22&f=false](http://books.google.com/books?id=nMFYAAAAAAAJ&pg=PA83&dq=%22Samuel+Ryerse%22&hl=en&ei=Lyh5TOrcIoL68Abbt4TD&sa=X&oi=book_result&ct=result&resnum=3&ved=0CC8Q6AEwAg#v=onepage&q=%22Samuel%20Ryerse%22&f=false) page 83.

#### SAMUEL RYERSE.

Of this family there were two brothers, Samuel, the elder, and Joseph. They were descendants of an old Dutch family, and their ancestors had held judicial appointments under Kings George II. and III. At the opening of the Revolutionary War, Samuel Ryerse enlisted a company of over a hundred men for the service of the king, and was appointed captain thereof, his company being designated as the Fourth Battalion New Jersey Volunteers.

The original spelling of the name is Ryerson, but on making out his commission a mistake of spelling was made, and the form Ryerse continued through sundry despatches, commissions and patents, and was finally retained by this branch of the family.

After the war the Legislature of New Jersey having confiscated his property, he, in company with others, moved to New Brunswick and was given a grant of land near Fredericton, being assigned three thousand acres of the new survey.

\* For a full account the reader is referred to the official despatch of Brigadier-General McArthur to the Secretary of War, 18th November, 1814, published in " Documentary History of Canada, 1812-14," edited by Colonel Cruickshank. (Part II., pp. 308-312.)

In 1794 he took his family (for he had been married in New Brunswick and had four children) back to Long Island, New York, in the hope of being able to settle there, but he soon found that the bitter hatred of the Americans for the Loyalists had not died away in the slightest, and so determined to come back to Canada. Before removing his family Captain Ryerse and a friend came to this part of the country on a prospecting tour. At Niagara he was welcomed by Lieutenant-Governor Simcoe, who promised him a liberal grant of land, amounting in all, with that given to the members of the family on coming of age, to over eight thousand acres.

Late in that fall he returned to New York and made preparations to move his family the following spring. At the opening of navigation they started in a sloop up the Hudson in company with the family of Captain Bouta, and from Albany portaged across to Schenectady, where they procured one of the Schenectady boats, which have been described in a previous chapter.

In this flat-bottomed boat they made their way against the current up the Mohawk, and thence up Wood Creek. Between the head of navigation on Wood Creek and the Oswego river, which flows into Lake Ontario, is a portage of ten miles, over which their boat had to be drawn by hand on a kind of a rude waggon, the wheels being simply slices of a round beech tree.

They skirted the southern shore of Lake Ontario to Niagara, then up the Niagara to Queenston, from which place they had a long and wearisome portage of nine miles, till Chippawa was reached. From that place all was smooth sailing to the Long Point district, which they had chosen. The long journey was completed on the last day of June, 1795. The spot selected by Captain Ryerse was the land surrounding a creek, towards which the forest-covered acres sloped gently down. This was called Ryerse Creek, and the little settlement which grew up at its mouth, Port Ryerse.

Before the fall a comfortable log-house was erected with the help of the settlers already there, a more pretentious building than was common, for it contained a parlor, two bedrooms, a kitchen and a garret. As there were valuable water facilities on his land, one condition of his patent right was that he erect both a saw mill and a grist mill. In 1797 the former was built and the latter the following year. This milling enterprise (the flour mill) was almost the ruin of Captain Ryerse, for he did not understand flour milling, and for some years no one arrived in the settlement that could properly manage his mill. In addition, the cost of repair was heavy, as much of the supplies and machinery necessary could only be procured for cash, which was exceedingly scarce in the Ryerse family at that time, for he had to sell part of his land at a dollar an acre to assist in building it. The dam broke, the machinery got out of order, bolting cloths and other supplies were continually needed, and it was certainly a financial loss for many years. The toll was only one bushel in twelve, and the settlers had not much wheat to grind, what they raised being intended solely for their own consumption. During the summer season the mill was absolutely idle. However, *experientia docet*, and in any case it was a very great benefit to the little settlement, for no other mill at that time existed nearer than at Niagara Falls, a hundred miles away.

The saw-mill, on the contrary, brought in better returns. The machinery was simpler and less apt to get out of order, and it did not require skilled operators. Sawn lumber was a staple article of trade, and the toll was half the lumber sawn. The lumber found a ready sale, not so much for cash, as for whatever the settlers had to barter. Consequently, the saw-mill was remunerative, but the flour-mill a heavy loss.

In 1800 Capt. Ryerse was appointed his Majesty's Commissioner of the Peace for the District of London. He was first Chairman of the courts of Quarter Sessions, and Judge of the District and Surrogate courts.

The duties of magistrates in those days were not simply judicial. They had to solemnize marriages, register births, bury the dead, prescribe for the sick, and read the Church service on Sundays. They were the judges, lawyers, doctors, ministers, and even the

dentists of the community. Virtual paragons they must have been to have attended to the various wants of all ranks and conditions of men.

About the beginning of the century the militia of the district was organized, and Mr. Ryerse was appointed Lieutenant-Colonel of Militia. The regiment used to meet annually on the 4th June, the King's Birthday, for training. It was a motley company, the majority being big slouching, round-shouldered young men, armed with old flint-lock muskets. These could be easily distinguished from the few spruce, upright and military-looking soldiers who had served a quarter of a century before in the war of American Independence.

In 1804, the log-house mentioned was burned, having caught fire from the rudely constructed chimney, and all the books and keepsakes, articles of plate and bric-a-brac, brought from New York and prized beyond all price, were burned. For some time thereafter the family lived in the house of the miller who managed the grist mill for Mr. Kyerse.

The later years of Mr. Ryerse's life were spent in the weakness of failing health. That dread disease consumption had laid its icy fingers on a constitution never too strong. In 1810 he was compelled to resign the military and political offices he held, and in June, 1812, passed away at the age of sixty. He was buried in the little plot of ground on which was afterwards erected a church (as he had designed) to mark his resting-place.

The mills and property of Mr. Ryerse were destroyed in the war of 1812. On the 14th of May, 1814, an American force crossed Lake Erie, and, after plundering and burning the town of Dover, marched along the Lake Shore to Port Ryerse. When it appeared there Mrs. Ryerse entreated the officer in command to spare her property, for she was a widow and defenceless. But she only succeeded in saving her house. The mills and all other buildings were remorselessly given to the flames. The excuse argued was that the buildings had been used as a barracks and the mills had furnished flour to British troops. The militia of the district, under Colonel Talbot, was near Brantford at the time, and in his unfortunate absence the labors of the late Captain Ryerse were destroyed.

[http://books.google.com/books?id=LIMIAAAAMAJ&pg=PA66&dq=%22Samuel+Ryerse%22&hl=en&ei=Lyh5TOrcIol68Abbt4TDBw&sa=X&oi=book\\_result&ct=result&resnum=4&ved=0CDQQ6AEwAw#v=onepage&q=%22Samuel%20Ryerse%22&f=false](http://books.google.com/books?id=LIMIAAAAMAJ&pg=PA66&dq=%22Samuel+Ryerse%22&hl=en&ei=Lyh5TOrcIol68Abbt4TDBw&sa=X&oi=book_result&ct=result&resnum=4&ved=0CDQQ6AEwAw#v=onepage&q=%22Samuel%20Ryerse%22&f=false) page 62.

#### RYERSON AND RYERSE.

VERY few people in Norfolk can give a true explanation of this riddle in family nomenclature. Many foolish stories have been told from time to time, and each, in turn, was said to be the proper solution of the mystery. That the Ryersons and Ryerses are one and the same family is generally understood, but as to which of the two forms is the correct one, and why the name was changed by one branch of the family, are matters not generally understood. The explanation given here is that of one of the oldest living members of the Ryerson branch, and is, no doubt, the correct one.

The correct form of the family name is Ryerson—a name that stands for one of the most distinguished New Jersey families in old colonial times. The Ryersons were U. E. Loyalists. In fact, a majority of the leading families in all the colonies were Loyalists, and impartial history informs us that the greater portion of the brains and wealth of the colonies was on the side of the Mother Country. This is admitted by all American writers. Mr. Dudley Warner says, "I confess that I never could rid myself of the schoolboy idea that the terms British red-coat and enemy were synonymous, and that a Tory was the worst character Providence ever permitted to exist; but those people who were deported or went voluntarily away for an idea, were among the best material we had in staunch moral traits, intellectual leadership, social position and wealth; their crime was superior attachment to England and utter want of sympathy with the cause of liberty of the hour. It is to them, at any rate, that Ontario owes its solid basis of character, vigor and prosperity."

Professor Hosmer, in his "Life of Samuel Adams," states that at the evacuation of Boston, 1,100 Loyalists retired to Nova Scotia with the British army, of whom 102 were men in official station, 18 were clergymen, 213 were merchants and traders of Boston, and 382 were farmers and mechanics. He says, "There were, in fact, no better men or women in America as regards intelligence, substantive good purpose and piety." He says, "They loved beauty, dignity and refinement," and that "their estates were among the fairest."

Shortly after General Howe entered the city of New York, he was presented with an address signed by one thousand New York and New Jersey Loyalists, and steps were immediately taken for recruiting them into service. Oliver De Lancy, one of the most distinguished New York colonists, was commissioned a brigadier-general, with authority to enlist three battalions of volunteers. This troop numbered two thousand, and was officered by New York's wealthiest and most prominent citizens. Another well-known and influential Loyalist, Cortlandt Skinner, was authorized to recruit a brigade of five battalions, called the New Jersey Loyalists. Among the commissioned officers of Skinner's brigade were the heads of some of our most distinguished Ontario families, two of whom were Samuel and Joseph Ryerson, of New Jersey. It will be observed that Samuel Ryerse, of Norfolk, was Samuel Ryerson, of New Jersey, when he received his commission as an officer in this troop of New Jersey Loyalists. But when his name was enrolled it was written "Ryerse" through a clerical error. It was overlooked at the time, and when he came to draw his pay he was compelled to adopt the error and sign his name as it had been recorded on the army roll. In the war records he was known only as Samuel Ryerse, and as a U. E. Loyalist entitled to a grant of land in Upper Canada, he could be no other than Samuel Ryerse, and thus we have the Ryerse family of Norfolk.

Before the war Col. Samuel Ryerse, who was older than **his brother Joseph**, was a prosperous business man of New Jersey. He was well educated and exerted considerable influence in colonial affairs; and his wife, being a woman of more than ordinary intelligence, was a distinguished leader in colonial society. In 1783 the family fled to New Brunswick, where, in 1794, the Colonel met Governor Simcoe, who induced him to start a settlement at Long Point, Upper Canada. He came to the new country at once and built a log house on the lake shore at the mouth of the creek known as Young's Creek. This spot he named Port Ryerse, thus indelibly stamping his adopted name upon the map of the new province. Early in the present century he built a grist mill, and the port that bears his name became a trade centre of considerable importance during the lives of his children.

**Col. Samuel Ryerse** was a prominent character in the early pioneer times of the country's history. It was through him that Long Point settlement was first organized into a separate district, and this historical fact will always keep his name at the head of the list of

our old pioneers who settled in Norfolk in the last decade of last century. In the month of March, 1800, Colonel Ryerse received a packet from the Executive office at York, containing a Commission of the Peace for the new District of London, naming himself and sixteen others to be Justices of the Peace for the said district. The packet also contained commissions for the appointment of a Clerk of the Peace, Clerk of the District Court, Registrar of the Surrogate Court, Commissioners for the taking of acknowledgments of recognizances of bail or bails for the Court of the King's Bench, and a *Dtdi-mus Potestatem* appointing Samuel Ryerse and two other commissioners for administering the oaths prescribed by law to the officers of the Government. Being thus constituted his Majesty's Commissioner of the Peace for the District of London, he called together those of the newly-appointed magistrates who resided in Woodhouse and Charlotteville, and administered to them and the Clerk of the Peace the oath of office as prescribed by law. This meeting was held April 2nd, 1800, at the house of James Monroe, in Charlotteville. William Spurgin was the first to take the oath, and then he, in turn, administered it to Colonel Ryerse, after which the latter proceeded in administering it to the others. The newly sworn justices at once held a special Session of the Peace, with Colonel Ryerse in the chair. After taking the necessary steps for the holding of a Court of the General Quarter Sessions of the Peace, they adjourned. The first Court convened, April 8th, 1800, at Monroe's house, and Samuel Ryerse, being chairman, was Norfolk's first judge. In the history of pioneer times in our county, it will be thus seen that Colonel Ryerse played an important part. He was not only at the head of affairs at the beginning, but he remained a leader after the machinery of the district had been set in motion. He was the most prominent man on the Bench during the time the courts were held at Turkey Point. The old court record shows that he served as Justice of one of the Divisional Courts of Request almost continuously for years. In 1805, on November 16th, a special session of the Quarter Sessions was held at his own house at Port Ryerse, at which time a Commission bearing the great Seal of the Province was read, whereby John Bostwick was made Sheriff of London District.

A story is told of a very funny thing that happened at Port Ryerse in the early times. A family by the name of Sprague had settled there, one member of whom was a bright girl of fourteen or fifteen, named Polly. Buckskin was the only kind of dress goods obtainable by the poor settlers at this time. In mild weather a single garment made of this material constituted the entire wardrobe of more than one buxom young lass in those times, and Polly Sprague was one of them. She had often been in the kitchen of the Ryerse home, which was a sort of headquarters for all Long Point settlement at this time, and she had witnessed the operation of washing clothing in boiling soap suds, and she resolved to treat her "buckskin slip" to the same process at the first opportunity. One day she was left in sole charge of the Sprague cabin, and, taking advantage of the situation, she gave effect to her resolution. The reader may imagine the result. When the elder Spragues returned to the cabin they found the shrunken and ruined garment lying on the floor, and they found the unfortunate Polly in the potato hole under the floor. The situation was a bad one. There was no more buckskin in the Sprague household, and the Ryerse home was the only place in the entire settlement where a covering of some kind might be loaned until a new supply of buckskin could be obtained. The luckless Polly was put into a barrel and carted to the home of Mrs. Amelia Ryerse-Harris, with an ox team, where her needs were attended to.

Col. Samuel Ryerse had three sons—Samuel, George and Edward; and two daughters, one of whom, Amelia, married John Harris, Treasurer of London District, and settled in London. The other daughter married a retired British officer and settled in one of the West India islands.

Samuel Ryerse, eldest son of Colonel Samuel, was about eleven years old when the family came to Long Point. He married Sarah Cypher, of Newton, N.J., and, in 1808, settled on 365 acres of land located on Black Creek, a short distance above Port Dover. He had seven sons—Peter, Robert, Samuel H., Edward, Arthur, Isaac and George Collin; and four daughters—Eleanor, Sarah Ann, Harriet and Hannah.

Peter Ryerse, eldest son of Samuel, was thrice married. By his first wife, Mariah Kniffin, he had four sons—William, John, Thomas and George; and one daughter, Elizabeth. By his second wife, Elizabeth Starks, he had two daughters, and the name of his third wife was Mrs. Mary Butler.

Robert Ryerse, second son of Samuel, married Eliza Underbill, and settled on part of the homestead. He had three sons—Philander, Alfred and James; and five daughters—Sarah, Cynthia, Helen, Malissa and Erie.

Samuel H. Ryerse, third son of Samuel, married Elizabeth Mandiville, settled on part of the homestead, and had one son, Samuel, and four daughters—Sarah Ann, Harriet, Rase and Martha.

Edward Ryerse, fourth son of Samuel, married Elizabeth Bishoprick, settled on part of the homestead, and left no children.

Arthur Ryerse, fifth son of Samuel, married Ann Donly, settled in Woodhouse, and had one daughter, Sarah Ann. Subsequently, he married Julia Marks as his second wife, by whom he had two daughters, Martha and Linnie.

Isaac Ryerse, sixth son of Samuel, married Mary Chamberlain, settled on part of the homestead, and had two sons—Eugene and Frank; and three daughters—Anna, Emma and Elna.

George Collin Ryerse, youngest son of Samuel, married Sarah Jane Orr, settled on part of the homestead, and had three sons—Norman, Elmer and Arthur; and one daughter, Laura.

Eleanor Ryerse, eldest daughter of Samuel, married George Kniffin and settled in Woodhouse.

Sarah Ann Ryerse, the second daughter, married Frederick Fick and settled in Houghton. She had three sons—Collin, Wesley and Clinton; and four daughters—Cecilia, Amelia, Valdora and Naoma.

Harriet Ryerse, the third daughter, married John Birdsall, settled in Townsend, and had two sons—John and Edward.

Hannah Ryerse, youngest daughter of Samuel, married Samuel Chamberlain, and settled in Woodhouse. She had two sons—Samuel and Harvey, both of whom reside in Michigan.

Samuel Ryerse, the father of this large family, died in 1844, in his 62nd year.

Rev. George Ryerse, second son of Colonel Samuel, was a Baptist preacher. He married Elizabeth Vail and settled at Port Ryerse. Many of the old people of Windham and other back townships will remember with pleasure the old house on the hill where they used to go for cherry and other fruit supplies. Elder Ryerse subsequently married Nancy Shaw for his second wife. He had five sons—William, James, Francis, Lewis and George; and six daughters—Maria, Sarah, Amelia, Ida, Bessie and Helen. WILLIAM married a daughter of the late Col Isaac Gilbert and settled in Port Ryerse. JAMES married Sarah Ann, daughter of Emmanuel Winter, and settled near Port Ryerse. FRANCIS married Elizabeth Potts, of Woodhouse, and settled near Port Ryerse. LEWIS married Kate Kelly and settled at Point St. Ignace, Mich. GEORGE married Caroline Lee, granddaughter of the late John Chadwick, of Charlotteville, and settled on the old homestead. MARIA married John Austin, the carriage builder, and settled in Simcoe. SARAH married Charles Mabee and settled in Delhi. AMELIA married a dentist named Barrett and settled in Buffalo. IDA married Captain Wesley Hazen. BESSIE married in Saginaw, and HELEN married J. Bottomly and settled in Lynedoch.

Major Edward Ryerse, youngest son of Colonel Samuel, married Martha, daughter of Elnathen Underhill, and settled in Port Ryerse. He left no children.

**Colonel Joseph Ryerson** fled into the Maritime Provinces after the war, and in 1799, came with his family to Long Point. He was awarded lots 23 and 24 in the lake front of Charlotteville.

Col. Ryerson was Norfolk's first Sheriff, or, rather, the first Sheriff of Old London District, being in attendance as such at the first District Court held at "Fort Monroe," April 8th, 1800. He held the office, consecutively, for about five years, being succeeded by John Bostwick. He was the first Treasurer of the district, holding the office about eight years. In 1807 the district received a grant from the Provincial Treasury, and Col. Ryerson was paid £5 for bringing the money from York to Turkey Point. The record shows that he received \$470 for summoning the eight justices who served in the several courts for the year 1801. In 1807 he and his brother Samuel were associate justices for the Court of Request for Windham, Townsend, Woodhouse, Walpole and Rainham; and in 1809 they acted as justices in the Court of Request for the three latter townships.

When the township was surveyed, a blunder was committed which caused a shortage in these lots, and by way of compensation the Government made the Colonel a grant of the island known as Ryerson's Island. Col. Ryerson married Mehetabel Stickney in New Jersey, and when he came to Long Point he was thirty-nine, and his wife thirty-three years old. He died in 1854, in his ninety-fifth year, and Mrs. Ryerson died in 1850, in her eighty-fifth year.

**Col. Joseph Ryerson** had six sons—George, Samuel, William, John, Egerton and Edway M.; and three daughters—Mary, Mehetabel and Elizabeth. Of these sons, Samuel was the only farmer; all the others were preachers. This generation of Ryersons seems to have been endowed with a passionate fondness for books and "book larnin'," as the Colonel used to express it. He used to say that "Sam." was the only one that was any good, and that when he sent the others out on the farm to work he would find them lying in a fence-corner or under a shade-tree, reading books. He used to say that whenever he bought a new book he was compelled to hide it, to keep his "good-for-nothing boys" from fighting over it. At last the old Colonel gave up in despair and let them have their own way. This meant attendance at Judge Mitchell's District Grammar School, and the reader may rest assured that the old register contained no dilatory marks against the Ryerson boys. Five of them became Methodist preachers—John and William being noted divines. Egerton's life work is a part of our public history, and need occupy no space here.

Rev. George Ryerson, eldest son of Col. Joseph, was married three times. He was at the battle of Fort Erie as lieutenant in Capt. Rapelje's company, and received a shot in the mouth as he was about to give utterance to a fearful oath. This made a serious impression on his mind, and led to his conversion. By his first wife, Sarah, sister of Dr. John Rolph, he had one daughter, Frances, and one son, Joseph. The daughter married John McLaughlin and settled in Wheatland, Iowa; and the son was killed in the American civil war. By his second wife, Sofia Wyatt, he had one daughter; and by his third wife, Isabella Sterling, of Rochester, he had one son, Dr. George, the Toronto politician.

Samuel Ryerson, second son of Col. Joseph, married Eliza, daughter of Capt. McMichael, and settled on Lot 24, adjoining the old homestead. He died in 1826, leaving three daughters—Jane, Elizabeth and Sarah; and one son, Henry. JANE married Russell Clark, and settled near Buffalo, N.Y. ELIZABETH married Lorenzo Mitchell, in 1841. Her children are enumerated in the Mitchell genealogy. SARAH married George Dresser, and settled in Beloit, Wis. HENRY, the only son, went to sea in 1843, and was captain of a whaling ship.

Rev. William Ryerson, third son of Col. Joseph, married May Griffin, of Grimsby. Of this union there were three sons—Joseph Edway, Smith and William; and three daughters, the names of the two youngest being Phoebe and Matilda. JOSEPH EDWAY was a Baptist minister, and at the time of his death (1864) was pastor of the Baptist church in Simcoe. He married Mary, daughter of Elder Shoaf. SMITH died on board ship while on his way to Australia. He left no family. WILLIAM married Eliza Thorn, and settled in Brantford, where he died, in 1886. The eldest daughter married Andrew L. Wilson, and settled in Brantford. PHOEBE married Allen Wilcox, and settled in Virginia City, Montana; and MATILDA married David Burch, of Brantford, and settled in Chicago.

Rev. John Ryerson, fourth son of Col. Joseph, married Mary Lewis, of Hamilton. He had one son, Egerton, who opened a law office in Stratford, where he died, single; and one daughter, Mercia, who married Henry Hardy, of Brantford, who was Prosecuting Attorney for Norfolk County at the time of his death.

Dr. Egerton Ryerson, fifth son of Col. Joseph, married Hannah Akeman, daughter of a farmer living near Hamilton. Of this union, the children died in infancy. Subsequently, he married the widow of a clergyman named Armstrong, and one son and one daughter were the issue of this union. Charles E., the son, is a lawyer, of Toronto; the daughter is the wife of Edward Harris, of London.

Rev. Edway M. Ryerson, youngest son of Col. Joseph, married Emily, daughter of Rev. Daniel Freeman, and subsequently he married her sister Phoebe. There was no issue from the first marriage. He had one daughter, Josephine, by his second wife, who married one Fitzgerald, a lawyer, of Ottawa.

Mary Ryerson, the Colonel's eldest daughter, married Col. John Bostwick, and had four sons—Joseph, John, George and Henry; and three daughters—Augusta, Mehetabel and Frances. Col. Bostwick settled in Port Stanley.

Mehetabel Ryerson, the second daughter, married John Williams, a teacher, of Port Dover.

Elizabeth Ryerson, the Colonel's youngest daughter, married Judge Mitchell. Her children are enumerated in the Mitchell genealogy.

## Appendix IV

### Masonic Beginnings in Colonial New York

"History of Free Masonry in the State of New York" by Ossian Lang, page 37-75

[http://books.google.com/books?id=ZE8uAAAAYAAJ&pg=PA62&dq=%22inchoate+grand+lodge%22&hl=en&ei=YSd-TOO3G4XGIQeC6OnuCW&sa=X&oi=book\\_result&ct=result&resnum=5&ved=0CDwQ6AEwBA#v=onepage&q=%22inchoate%20grand%20lodge%22&f=false](http://books.google.com/books?id=ZE8uAAAAYAAJ&pg=PA62&dq=%22inchoate+grand+lodge%22&hl=en&ei=YSd-TOO3G4XGIQeC6OnuCW&sa=X&oi=book_result&ct=result&resnum=5&ved=0CDwQ6AEwBA#v=onepage&q=%22inchoate%20grand%20lodge%22&f=false)

#### Contents

Introduction	Earliest Duly Constituted Lodges Outside of New York City,
The Coxe Deputation	1758 to the Beginning of the Revolution
Richard Riggs and Francis Goelet	Union No. 1, now Mount Vernon Lodge No. 3
Newspaper Items	St. Patrick's Lodge No. 8
Establishment of Duly Organized Masonry in the Province of New York 1753 To 1781	Masters' Lodge No. 2
Sir John Johnson, Last Provincial Grand Master	Solomon's Lodge No. 1
Earliest Duly Constituted Lodges in New York City	St. George's No. 1
St. John's Lodge No. 2	Military Lodges
Union Lodge	St. John's Regimental Lodge
Temple, Trinity and Hiram	American Union Lodge No. 1
King Solomon's Lodge No. 7	Close of the First Provincial Grand Lodge
Independent Royal Arch No. 8	The Atholl Provincial Grand Lodge, 1781 to 1784
King David's Lodge	<b>The Inchoate Grand Lodge of New York</b>
Other Lodges	Close of the Atholl Organization
	Establishment of the Sovereign Grand Lodge of New York



#### INTRODUCTION

WHEN AND WHERE Masonic Lodges first came into existence in Colonial New York, is one of the many unsolved questions in the history of beginnings of the Fraternity in various parts of the world. It is more than likely that there were Freemasons among the Colonists, at least from 1721 onward and before any notice of Lodge meetings appeared in print. We do know that the Province of New York was mentioned in the first official document emanating from the Grand Lodge of England. The patent issued to Daniel Coxe creating him Provincial Grand Master for New York, New Jersey and Pennsylvania, states in so many words that there were "Free and Accepted Masons residing and about to reside" in these Provinces, and that several of them had joined in a petition to the Duke of Norfolk, Grand Master of the Grand Lodge of England, in 1730, asking him "to nominate and appoint a Provincial Grand Master of the said Provinces."

With the appointment of Colonel Coxe as the first Provincial Grand Master to be "nominated, ordained, constituted and appointed" for any part of America, begins the official history of duly constituted Freemasonry in the New World in general and the Provinces of New York, New Jersey and Pennsylvania in particular, however disappointing the extant information may be as regards results traceable to this deputation. And yet, while we cannot tell of lodges set at work and Masonic meetings held, we have abundant reason, as American freemen, to keep in grateful veneration the name of our first Grand Master. It was this same Daniel Coxe who first proposed, in 1727, a Union of the British Colonies on the Continent of North America. The plan he advocated was, a half century later, revived and adapted to new conditions by Benjamin Franklin, another Freemason, and became the groundwork of the Constitution of the United States of America. Thus, though he could not have foreseen the course of events, Daniel Coxe helped to blaze the trail for the establishment of the Union which was destined to achieve independence and become one of the great Powers in the world. As his share in preparing the way for the building of our federal Constitution has been accorded little, if any, consideration by the historians of America, I may be pardoned for introducing the subject here somewhat more fully than otherwise would be justifiable.

The father of Colonel Coxe was Dr. Daniel Coxe, a native of London, who served as physician to Katherine of Portugal, wife of King Charles II, and later to Queen Anne. Some time between these royal appointments, he came to America and was Governor of West Jersey from 1687 to 1690. King James II granted him a patent making him proprietor of that vast territory then known as the

Province of Carolana and described as "extending from 31 to 36 degrees of North Latitude inclusive, on the Continent of America and to several adjacent islands."

The younger Daniel—our Daniel—was born in America, in 1673, and appears to have been educated in England, where he passed the greater part of his life. At the age of thirty, he was made Colonel of the military forces in West Jersey, and, two years later, became a member of the Provincial Council. In 1716, he was elected Speaker of the Assembly. The next year we find him in London, after a stay of fourteen years in America. His efforts in the British capital were devoted chiefly to the writing of the remarkable book which forever establishes his claim upon the interest of students of American history. This book was published at London, in 1729,\* and shortly after appeared in a French translation at Paris. Its title is a rather lengthy one:

A Description of the English Province of Carolana,  
By the Spaniards call'd Florida, and  
By the French La Louisiane.  
As also of the Great and Famous River  
Meschacebe or Mississippi  
The Five vast Navigable Lakes of Fresh Water,  
and the Parts Adjacent.  
Together with an Account of the Commodities  
of the Growth and Production of the said Province.  
And a Preface containing some Considerations on  
the French making Settlements there.

The Preface is replete with interesting historical notes and keen observations on the welfare of the British Colonists in America. Coxe refers to his "about fourteen years residence on the Continent of America" and how he had visited a number of the Colonies, particularly the more important ones. He explains that there are "500,000 British subjects inhabiting the several Colonies on the East Side of the Continent of North America, along the Sea Shore, from the Gulf of St. Lawrence to that of Florida, all contiguous to each other", and proposes a Union of these Colonies under a plan of government, which in its essential features suggested the later organization of the United States. The "Expedient" is outlined by him, as follows:

\* There may have been an earlier edition, as some writers say the book was published in 1716. I doubt it. The copy used by me bears the imprint of 1729. **{Note a fine 'facsimile reproduction' of the 1722 edition of this book is in the archives of the OMDHS Library in Liverpool, New York}.**

All Colonies appertaining to the Crown of Great Britain on the Northern Continent of America be *United* under a Legal, Regular, and *firm* Establishment, over which, it's proposed, a Lieutenant, or Supreme Governour may be *constituted* and *appointed* to *preside* on the Spot, to whom the Governours of each Colony shall be subordinatess.

It is further "humbly proposed" that

Two Deputies shall be annually elected by the Council and the Assembly of each Province (Senators), who are to be in the nature of a Great Council, or General Convention of the Estates of the Colonies; and by the Order, Consent or Approbation of the Lieutenant or Governour General, shall meet together, consult and advise for the Good of the *whole*, settle and appoint particular quota's or proportions of money, men, provisions, &c., that each respective government is to raise, for their *mutual defense and safety*, as well as, if necessary, for Offence and Invasion of their enemies; in all which cases the Governour General or Lieutenant is to have a *Negative*, but *not to enact* anything without their *concurrence*, or that of the Majority of them.

The Quota or Proportion, as above allotted and charg'd on each Colony, may, nevertheless, be levy'd and raised by its own Assembly, in such manner, as they shall judge most easy and convenient, and the circumstances of their affairs will permit.

Other Jurisdictions, Powers and Authorities, respecting the Honor of His Majesty, the Interest of the Plantations, and the Liberty and Property of the Proprietors, Traders, Planters and Inhabitants in them, may be vested in and cognizable in the above said Governour General or Lieutenant, and *Grand Convention of the Estates*, according to the Laws of England. . . .

A *Coalition* or *Union* of this nature, temper'd with and grounded on *Prudence, Moderation and Justice*, and a generous Incouragement given to the Labour, Industry and good Management of *all sorts and conditions of Persons* inhabiting, or anyways concerned or interested in the several Colonies above mentioned, will in all probability lay a *sure and tasting Foundation* of Dominion, Strength and Trade, sufficient not only to secure and promote the Prosperity of the Plantations, but to revive and greatly increase the late Flourishing Estate and Condition of Great Britain.

Coxe refers to his proposal as "being *general* and submitted with humility." Considering the time at which it was written, the measure of freedom and self-determination accorded to the Colonies marks a considerable step forward toward final independence.

Daniel Coxe returned to America shortly after the publication of his book, as is clear from a letter written by him from Trenton, New Jersey, in 1728. In 1730 he was again in London looking after the settlement of his extensive property claims. He was fifty-seven years of age when he was appointed Provincial Grand Master by the Duke of Norfolk, then Grand Master of the Grand Lodge of England. The following year he attended a meeting of the Grand Lodge and was there toasted as "Provincial Grand Master of North America." He may have departed for America before the close of 1731. It is not at all improbable that he authorized the formation of Lodges in his Masonic jurisdiction, but there is no convincing testimony to show that he did. He became one of the Justices of the Supreme Court of the Province of New Jersey, in 1734, and continued in office until the day of his death, at Trenton, on April 25th, 1739. His body was interred in front of the chancel of St. Mary's Church (Anglican), at Burlington, New Jersey.

Benjamin Franklin published in his paper a brief notice of the death of Daniel Coxe, in which he refers to this distinguished American as a Justice of the Supreme Court, but makes no mention of him as a Mason. Franklin quite likely had never heard of Coxe's exalted official station in the craft.

## THE COXE DEPUTATION

The text of the deputation issued to Daniel Coxe by the Duke of Norfolk is given below in full, as it was the first document of its kind ever granting official authority to constitute Masonic lodges in any part of America:

To all and every our Right Worshipful, Worshipful, and loving brethren now residing or may hereafter reside in the Provinces of New York, New Jersey and Pennsylvania, His Grace, Thomas, Duke of Norfolk, Earl Marshal and Hereditary Marshal of England, Earl of Arundel, Surry, Norfolk and Norwich, Baron Mowbray, Howard Segrave, Brewse of Gower, Fitz Allen, Warren Clau Oswald, estre Maltravers Graystock, Furnival Verdon, Lovelot, Straugo of Blackmere, and Howard of Castle Rising, after the Princess of the Royal Blood, first Duke Earl and Baron of England, Chief of the illustrious family of Howards, Grand Master of the Free and Accepted Masons of England,

Sendeth Greeting:

Whereas, application has been made unto us by our Rt. Worshipful and well beloved Brother, Daniel Coxe, of New Jersey, Esq'r., and by several, other brethren, free and accepted Masons, residing and about to reside in the said Provinces of New York, New Jersey and Pennsylvania, that we should be pleased to nominate and appoint a Provincial Grand Master of the said Provinces: Now Know Ye, that we have nominated, ordained, constituted, and appointed and do by these Presents, nominate, ordain, constitute, and appoint, our Right Worshipful and well beloved Brother, the said Daniel Coxe, Provincial Grand Master of the said Provinces of New York, New Jersey, and Pensilvania, with full Power and Authority to nominate and appoint his Dep. Grand Master and Grand Wardens, for the space of two years from the feast of St. John the Baptist, now next ensuing, after which time it is our Will and Pleasure, and we do hereby ordain that the brethren who do now reside, or may hereafter reside, in all or any of the said Provinces, shall and they are hereby empowered every other year on the feast of St. John the Baptist to elect a Provincial Grand Master, who shall have the power of nominating and appointing his Dep. Grand Master and Grand Wardens.

And we do hereby empower our said Provincial Grand Master, and the Grand Master, Deputy Grand Master and Grand Wardens for the time being, for us and in our place and stead constitute the Brethren (free and accepted Masons) now residing, or who shall hereafter reside in those parts into one or more regular Lodge or Lodges, as he shall think fit, and as often as occasion shall require,—

He, the said Daniel Coxe, and the Provincial Grand Master, Deputy Grand Master and Grand Wardens, for the time being, taking special care that all and every member of any Lodge or Lodges so to be constituted have or shall be made regular Masons, and that they do cause all and every the Regulations contained in the printed Book of Constitutions, except so far as they have been altered by the Grand Lodge at their Quarterly Meetings, to be kept and observed, and also all such other Rules and Instructions as shall from time to time be transmitted to him or them by us, or Nath'l. Blackerly, Esq'r., our Deputy Grand Master, or the Grand Master or his Deputy for the time being,—

And that he, the said Daniel Coxe, our Provincial Grand Master of the said Provinces, and the Provincial Grand Master for the time being, or his Deputy, do send to U8 or our Deputy Grand Master, and to the Grand Master of England or his Deputy for the time being, annually an account in writing of the number of Lodges so constituted, with the names of the several members of each particular Lodge, together with such other matters and things as he or they shall think fit to be communicated for the benefit of the Craft.

And lastly we will and require that our said Provincial Grand Master, and the Grand Master, for the time being, or his Deputy, do annually cause the Brethren to keep the feast of St. John the Evangelist, and dine together on that day, or (in case any accident should happen to prevent their dining together on that day) on any other day near that time, as the Provincial Grand Master for the time being shall judge most fit, as is done here, and at that time more particularly, and at all Quarterly Communications he do recommend a General Charity, to be established for the relief of poor brethren of the said Province.

Given under our hand and seal of office, at London, this fifth day of June, 1730, and of Masonry, 5730.

NORFOLK, G. M.

## RICHARD RIGGS AND FRANCIS GOELET

Captain Richard Riggs was appointed Provincial Grand Master for New York, on November 15th, 1737, by the Earl of Darnley, Grand Master of England. A notice of his arrival in New York was announced in the *New York Gazette* of May 21st, 1738. Before his coming and during his term of office there appeared in the New York City papers several items relating to Masonry and Masons. It is certain that a duly constituted Lodge was at work in 1738. Whether it was formed by Captain Riggs, or whether it was in existence before his appointment as Provincial Grand Master, is not known. Indeed, there appears to be no reliable information as to anything that was done by him, neither have I been able to find any biographical notices concerning the man himself.

Captain Riggs had returned to England in or before 1751. During this year, Lord Byron, Grand Master of England, appointed Thomas Goelet to succeed him. Nothing beyond this bare record can be told about the third Provincial Grand Master of New York.

## NEWSPAPER ITEMS

Fortunately we are not left altogether in the dark regarding Masonic developments during the period covered by the Coxe, Riggs and Goelet deputations. The newspapers of the period supply a few items which suggest that Masons were at work in the Province and held meetings from time to time. No one appears to have taken the trouble to make a close search for references to Masonry contained in the various periodicals of the Province. The few meagre notices handed down do not reveal that any widespread interest was attached to the doings of the early Brethren.

On November 26th, 1737, the *New York Gazette* printed a "letter to the editor," in which the writer warned the colonists that "a Society called Freemasons" had appeared in Great Britain and had "at last extended to these parts of America." As the newspapers of Philadelphia and Boston had been running considerable news matter about Masonic affairs, for some years, and Benjamin

Franklin had gotten out a reprint of the Book of Constitutions of 1723, which must have been known to the newspaper publishers in New York, the *Gazette* story of 1737 does not necessarily imply that there were Lodges in the Province engrossing the interest of the general public. The "letter to the editor" reads as follows:

Mr. Bradford: There being a new and unusual sect or Society of Persons of late appeared in our native Country, and from thence spread into some other Kingdoms and Common Wealths, and at last has extended to these parts of *America*, their Principle, Practices and Designs not being known, nor by them published to the World, has been the reason that in Holland, France, Italy and other Places they have been suppress. All other societies that have appeared in the World have published their Principles and Practices, and when they meet set open their Meeting-house Doors, for all that will come in and see and hear them, but this Society called FREE MASONS, meet with their Doors shut, and a Guard at the outside to prevent any approach near to hear or see what they are doing. And as they do not publish their Principles or Practices, so they oblige all their Proselytes to keep them secret, as may appear by the severe Oath they are obliged to take at their first admittance. Which Oath is as follows, viz.:

"I, A. B., Hereby solemnly Vow and Swear in the Presence of Almighty Clod, and this Right Worshipful Assembly, that I will Hail and Conceal and never Reveal the Secrets or Secrecy of Masons or Masonry, that shall be revealed unto me; unless to a true and Lawful Brother, after due Examination, or in a just and Worshipful Lodge of Brothers and Fellows well met.

"I further more Promise and Vow, That I will not Write them, Print them, Mark them, Carve them, or Engrave them, or cause them to be Written, Printed, Marked, Carved, or Engraved on Wood or Stone, so as the Visible Character or Impression of a Letter may appear, whereby it may be unlawfully obtained.

"All this under no less Penalty than to have my Throat cut, my Tongue taken from the Roof of my Mouth, my Heart pluck'd from under my left Breast, then to be buried in the Sands of the Sea, the Length of a Cable Rope from Shore where the Tide ebbs and Flows twice in 24 Hours, my Body to be burnt to Ashes and be scatter'd upon the Face of the Earth, so that there shall be no more Remembrance of me among Masons. So help me God!"

If any duly constituted Lodge existed in New York at that time (1731), all traces of it are lost. As the letter writer views with alarm the extension of the Fraternity "to these parts of America," we may assume that Masonic meetings were beginning to attract notice in Little Old New York, and that somebody felt the urge to call out from his watch-tower, "From these snares of the Devil, O Lord, deliver us!"

On June 26th, 1738, the *Gazette* published "A Song for the Free Masons," followed by "A Parody of the Same Verses for the ladies," with quips which were probably considered quite clever in their day, but the humor of which has lost its flavor since. The only historic value they have is that they suggest pretty plainly that by this time meetings of the Fraternity were well under way.

The first public announcement of a Lodge called "by order of the Grand Master," appeared in the *Gazette* of January 22d, 1739, and read as follows:

Brethren of the Ancient and Honorable Society of Free and Accepted Masons are desired to take notice that the Lodge for the future will be held at the Montgomerie Arms Tavern on the first and third Wednesdays of every month. By order of the Grand Master.

CHARLES WOOD, *Secretary*.

Captain Riggs, Provincial Grand Master, had landed in New York, in May, 1738. So he was no doubt the Grand Master referred to. The announcement implies that the Lodge had been at work for some time, yet it is the first known record of a duly authorized assembly of the kind.

The next notice appeared in the form of an advertisement in the *Gazette* of September 24th, 1739:

All members of the Lodge of Free and Accepted Masons are desired to meet on Wednesday next, the twenty-ninth inst., at the Montgomerie Tavern, in the City of New York, at six o'clock in the afternoon. By order of the Grand Master.

CHARLES WOOD, *Secretary*.

The Provincial Grand Master who succeeded Francis Goelet was George Harison (spelled with *one r* by himself, and he ought to know best). His activities extended over a period of almost eighteen years and produced results which have survived to this day. Of him and his successor in office, Sir John Johnson, the fifth and last Provincial Grand Master appointed for the Province of New York by a Grand Master of the premier Grand Lodge of England, we shall speak in the next chapter.

#### ESTABLISHMENT OF DULY ORGANIZED MASONRY IN THE PROVINCE OF NEW YORK 1753 TO 1781

GEORGE HARISON, ESQUIRE, was appointed Provincial Grand Master of New York, on June 9th, 1753, by Lord Carysfort, Grand Master of the Grand Lodge. Harison was evidently resolved from the start to be of real service to the Fraternity. He infused new life in the Provincial Grand Lodge and stirred the craft into action. In order to impress upon the Brethren the dignity of the undertaking, he called a meeting of the Grand Lodge for the organization of preparations for a fitting installation. An advertisement was inserted in the New York *Mercury* of November 19th, 1753, reading as follows:

The members of the Provincial Grand Lodge of Free and Accepted Masons in New York, are desired to meet at the Kings Arms Tavern, on Wednesday, the 19th day of December, on business of importance. By order of the Grand Master.

H. GAINE, *Secretary*.

The installation and proclamation ceremony took place on the festival of St. John the Evangelist, in December. The Grand Lodge then walked in solemn procession to Trinity Church for Divine Service. The *Mercury* of December 31st, 1753, published the following most interesting report of the proceedings of the day:

On Thursday last at a Grand Lodge of the Ancient and Worshipful Fraternity of Free and Accepted Masons, a Commission from the Honorable John Proby, Baron of Craysfort, in the Kingdom of Ireland, Grand Master of England, appointed George Harison, Esquire, to be Provincial Grand Master, was solemnly published, we hear, to the universal satisfaction of all the brethren present, after which, it) being the festival of St. John the Evangelist, service at Trinity Church. The order to which they proceeded was as follows: First walked the Sword Bearer, carrying a drawn sword; then four stewards with White Maces, followed by the Treasurer and Secretary, who bore each a crimson damask cushion, on which lay a gilt Bible, and the Book of Constitution; after these came the Grand Wardens and Wardens; then came the Grand Master himself, bearing a truncheon and other badges of his office, followed by the rest of the brotherhood, according to their respective ranks—Masters, Fellow Crafts and 'Prentices, to about the number of Fifty, all clothed with their jewels, aprons, white gloves and stockings. The whole ceremony was conducted with utmost decorum, under a discharge of guns from some vessels in the harbor, and made a genteel appearance. We hear they afterwards conferred a generous donation of fifteen pounds from the public stock of the Society to be expended in clothing for the poor children belonging to our charity school; and made a handsome private contribution for the relief of indigent prisoners. In the evening, by the particular request of the brethren, a comedy, called "The Conscious Lovers," was presented in the Theatre in Nassau Street to a very crowded audience. Several pieces of vocal music, in praise of the Fraternity, were performed between the acts. An epilogue suitable to the occasion, was pronounced by Mrs. Hallam, with all grace of gesture, and propriety of execution, and met with universal and loud applause.

Query: Whether the performance of public and private acts of beneficence, such as feeding the hungry and clothing the naked, be most correspondent to the Genius of Christianity, or to the Institution of the Prince of Darkness?

The editorial postscript "query" was intended no doubt to confound the detractors of the craft and to appease public opinion.

Notices of individual Lodges now began to multiply. The *Mercury* of December 23d, 1758, announces a celebration of "the festival of St. John," to be held by Temple Lodge, at Fountain Tavern. Nine years later the same paper speaks of a like celebration planned by "the brethren composing St. John's, Trinity, Union and King Solomon's Lodges." On January 2d, 1768, we read that the festival was celebrated at Trinity Church by several other Lodges, among them Hiram Lodge, which on that occasion "contributed alone one hundred pounds" for poor relief.

Grand Master Harison labored with untiring zeal and exceptional ability for the extension of Freemasonry in the Province of New York. Several of the Lodges which he warranted have continued to this day. If he could have remained in office until the breaking out of the War for American Independence, the Grand Lodge of the State of New York might now be tracing its origin to a warrant from the premier Grand Lodge of England and be the oldest duly constituted Grand Lodge in the Western Hemisphere.

#### SIR JOHN JOHNSON, LAST PROVINCIAL, GRAND MASTER

Grand Master Harison's successor in office was Sir John Johnson, son of Sir William, the distinguished diplomat. The deputation was issued to him by Lord Blaney, Grand Master of England, in 1767, but Sir John was not formally installed as Grand Master until 1771. The first and only stationary Lodge warranted by him was St. George's, No. 1, at Schenectady, on September 14th, 1774, after it had been working under a dispensation from him since June 21st of that year.

The struggle for independence being rife, and Sir John being a Tory of the Tories, he appointed Dr. Peter Middleton, Deputy Grand Master, and devoted his energies to the Royalist cause. Dr. Middleton issued a warrant to St. John's Regimental, No. 1, composed of brethren belonging to the Colonial army. At the close of the war this warrant turned up at Clark's Town in possession of some brethren located there. The Deputy Grand Master also issued a warrant, in 1776, to Military Union Lodge, No. 1, composed of brethren of the Colonial army who had come from Boston.

#### EARLIEST DULY CONSTITUTED LODGES IN NEW YORK CITY

NOTHING DEFINITE is known of the earliest Lodges constituted in New York City, before 1757. The quoted newspaper report of the installation of George Harison as Provincial Grand Master, in 1753, makes no mention of the participating Lodges, but tells only that about fifty "Masons, Fellow Craft and "Prentices" marched in public procession to old Trinity Church.

In 1758, the New York *Mercury* printed a notice, on December 23d, announcing that Temple Lodge would celebrate St. John Evangelist Day.

Nine years later, the same paper named St. John's, No. 2, Trinity, Union, King Solomon's and Hiram Lodges as having been represented at the annual celebration. The only one of these Lodges surviving to this day is St. John's, No. 2, now No. 1 on the Grand Lodge register.

#### ST. JOHN'S LODGE, NO. 2

The original warrant of St. John's Lodge, No. 2, was surrendered to the Atholl Provincial Grand Lodge which was formed in 1781, and is no longer in existence. It was issued by George Harison and bore the date of December 7th, 1757. As the name of the Lodge was given as St. John's, No. 2, it is fair to assume that there was a No. 1 of an earlier date. The history of the Lodge is a most interesting one and might well form the subject of a separate chapter. As we are, however, concerned only with the general history of Masonry in the Province and State of New York, we must forego the temptation of entering upon a detailed account. Much that relates to St. John's, as, for example, its treasured Washington Bible on which the first President of the United States took his inaugural oath of office, will appear in succeeding chapters. The principal point to be fixed here is merely that No. 2 is really No. 1, the oldest surviving Lodge in the City and State of New York.

#### UNION LODGE

The date of the institution of Union Lodge of New York City is not known. It existed in 1767 and was warranted by George Harison, probably several years before. Robert P. Livingston, who became the first Grand Master of the State of New York, was Master of Union Lodge, in 1771, when he was twenty-five years old, for, as we shall see further on, on April 18th of this year he constituted

Solomon's Lodge, No. 1, at Poughkeepsie, as acting Grand Master by authority of Provincial Grand Master Harison. Union was active for a number of years. During the Revolution it appears to have suspended labor, New York City then being occupied by the British and the Lodge almost to a man having espoused the cause of Independence. After the close of the war, the Lodge was given a new warrant by the Atholl Provincial Grand Lodge and became Union, No. 8. Of its later fortunes no information has been found.

#### TEMPLE, TRINITY, AND HIRAM

Temple, Trinity, and Hiram Lodges of New York City have left no record behind them. It is more than likely that by amalgamations and changes of many sorts they lost their original identity, and the course of events which wrought the transmutations is not now discernible. The Lodges formed under the auspices of the premier Grand Lodge of England, as far as New York is concerned, were all of them composed of American patriots, and this may explain the disappearance of the City Lodges, after the British took possession in 1776. They helped to disseminate sound Masonic principles and practices and contributed liberally to the relief of the distressed. That much we can gather from the scant notices we have of them. Thus, for example, the *New York Gazette* and the *Weekly Mercury*, of January 2d, 1768, suggest somewhat of the spirit animating the Lodges, in this brief notice:

On Tuesday last being St. John's Day, by desire of His Excellency, Sir Heary Moore, a Charity sermon was preached at Trinity Church, in this city. The Rev. Dr. Auchmuty, Rector of Trinity, delivered a most excellent discourse upon the occasion, to a polite and numerous audience. Several Lodges of the Ancient and Honorable Society of Free and Accepted Masons, properly decorated, attended divine worship. The collection was very considerable, the Members of the Hiram Lodge alone having contributed one hundred pounds—a considerable relief at this inclement season to the poor of this City, many of whom have been in the greatest distress.

#### KING SOLOMON'S LODGE, NO. 7

Another of the Lodges named as taking part in the St. John's Day celebration, in December, 1767, is King Solomon's. It appears to have been very active and to have enjoyed considerable popularity. My reason for mentioning it separately is because there is in existence a certificate issued in 1767, which affords a glimpse of the importance attached to Masonic regularity. It reads as follows:

*"And the darkness comprehended it not."*

In the East a place full of light where reigns reason, silence and peace, We, the subscribers, Master, Wardens, Treasurer and Secretary, of King Solomon's Lodge No. 7, of Free and Accepted Masons of the Register of New York, granted to us by a dispensation of Great Britain to George Harison, esq., Grand Master of this Province, dedicated to St. John. Adorned with all their honors and regularities assembled in Lodge in due form, do declare, certify and attest, to all men, lighten'd and spread on the face of the earth. The bearer hereof, our well beloved Brother John Ledsam, hath been received by us an entered apprentice and Fellow Craft; and after have sustained with strength, firmness and courage, the most painful works and secret trials, we have raised and given unto him the sublime degree of a master, and have admitted and initiated him into the mysterious and most secret works of the Free and accepted Masons. And may without demur or hesitation, be incorporated into any community where ever met, congregated or convened. He having strenuously to the utmost of his ability, supported and contributed to the advancement and interest of Masonry with zeal and vigor.

Given under our hands and seal in our Lodge at New York, this ninth day of July, in the year of Masonry 5767, and of Salvation 1767.

HENRY VAN DE HAM, M.  
E. J. PRYOR, S. W.  
JOHN BESSONET, J. W.

JOHN KING, *Treas'r.*  
JOHN LEDSAM, *Sect'y.*  
(Seal)

#### INDEPENDENT ROYAL ARCH, NO. 8

A Lodge which is not mentioned in the published reports of St. John's Day celebrations, during the period of George Harison's Grand Mastership, but which, nevertheless, dates its constitution from December 15th, 1760, is Independent Royal Arch, No. 8 (now No. 2). Its warrant, granted by George Harison, was evidently attested in a manner sufficiently convincing to compel the Grand Lodge of the State of New York, in 1789, to accredit it officially as the second oldest Lodge in New York City.

#### KING DAVID'S LODGE

On February 17th, 1769, Harison issued a warrant for the constitution of King David's Lodge, in New York City. This Lodge appears to have been composed entirely of Jewish Brethren. Moses M. Hays was the first Master. About ten years later, the warrant was transferred to Newport, Rhode Island, where the Lodge continued to work under its name of King David's for a number of years and then was heard of no more. It was not among the Lodges which formed the Grand Lodge of the State of Rhode Island, on June 25th, 1791, but may have lived on for some time beyond that year.

On August 17th, 1790, King David's welcomed George Washington to Rhode Island in a Masonic address which elicited the following reply:

*To the Master, Wardens, and Brethren of King David's Lodge in Newport,  
Rhode Island:*

GENTLEMEN—I receive the welcome which you give me to Rhode Island with pleasure; and I acknowledge my obligations for the nattering expressions of regard contained in your address with grateful sincerity. Being persuaded that a just application of the principles on which the Masonic fraternity is founded, must be productive of private virtue and public prosperity, I shall always be

happy to advance the interests of the society, and to be considered by them as a deserving brother. My best wishes, gentlemen, are offered for your individual happiness.

G° WASHINGTON.

The letter bears the same date as that of the address of welcome and reveals what high regard Washington accorded to the Masonic Fraternity.

#### OTHER LODGES

There may have been other Lodges in the City of New York, working under lawful warrants. If so, we know nothing about them. Only two of the city Lodges warranted by George Harison have survived to this day; they are St. John's, No. 1, and Independent Royal Arch, No. 2.

#### EARLIEST DULY CONSTITUTED LODGES OUTSIDE OF NEW YORK CITY, 1758, TO THE BEGINNING OF THE REVOLUTION

THE RECORDS of the Lodges constituted in the State, above the Harlem River, are far more satisfying than those of the Lodges in the City of New York. Moreover, while of the City Lodges only two have survived to this day, at least four of the up-State Lodges can trace their history back to the time before the Declaration of Independence. Of the former, we have St. John, No. 1, and Independent Royal Arch, No. 2; of the latter we have Mount Vernon, No. 3, which was Union, No. 1, in Colonial days, St. Patrick's, No. 4, Masters', No. 5, and St. George's, No. 6. Mount Vernon and Masters' are located at Albany; St. Patrick's, at Johnstown; St. George's, at Schenectady.

#### UNION NO. 1, NOW MOUNT VERNON LODGE NO. 3

The Oldest Lodge, outside of New York City, was organized at Albany, in 1759, under a copy of the charter of Lodge No. 74, issued by the Grand Lodge of Ireland, in 1737, to brethren of the Second Battalion 1st Royals (now Royal Scots), First Regiment of Foot Guards (Infantry). After leaving Great Britain and serving for a time in Nova Scotia, the Battalion had been sent to Albany and was located there during the years of 1758 and 1759. The officers, according to the "Albany Hand Book," were "scholars and gentlemen" and "brought with them, and kept up, a large and valuable library of rare books," which they left to the city when the battalion was ordered away in 1759. No. 74 initiated many prominent citizens of the town into its mysteries. When the command was ordered to a new field of duty, the officers of the Lodge, following a custom of the time, left behind them a copy of their Irish warrant to enable the local brethren to continue their Masonic meetings. The copy was endorsed as follows:

We, the Master, Wardens and Brethren of a Lodge of Free and Accepted Masons, No. 74, Registry of Ireland, held in the second Battalion Royal, adorned with all the honors, and assembled in due form, Do hereby declare, certify and attest, that Whereas, our body is very numerous by the addition of many new members, merchants and inhabitants of the city of Albany, they having earnestly requested and besought us to enable them to hold a Lodge during our absence from them and we knowing them to be men of undoubted reputation and men of skill and ability in Masonry, and desirous to promote the welfare of the Craft: We have, therefore by unanimous consent and agreement, given them an exact true copy of our Warrant as above, and have properly installed Mr. Richard Cartright. Mr. Henry Bostwick and Mr. Wra. Ferguson, as Assistant Master and Wardens of our body, allowing them to set and act during our absence, or until they, by our assistance, can procure a separate WARRANT for themselves from the GRAND LODGE IN IRELAND.

Given under our hands and seal of our Lodge in the City of Albany, the eleventh day of April, in the year of MASONRY, 5759, and in the year of our LORD GOD 1759.

JOHN STEADMAN, *Secretary.*  
ANIAS SUTHERLAND, *Master.*  
CHARLES CALDER, *Senior Warden.*  
THOMAS PARKER, *Junior Warden.*

The Lodge continued to work under the copied warrant until February 21, 1765, when it was granted a charter as Union Lodge No. 1, by Provincial Grand Master Harison. The charter as confirmed by Sir John Johnson, Grand Master, on July 30, 1773, and under it the Lodge continued to work until the close of the War for Independence. After a period of struggle to maintain an isolated existence, it finally surrendered its Colonial warrant and received a warrant from the Grand Lodge of the State of New York, on January 6, 1807. Its present name, adopted at that time, is Mount Vernon Lodge, No. 3.

The Brethren of Mount Vernon, No. 3, are inclined to consider their Lodge the oldest in the State, because the original charter under which its founders worked was issued by the Grand Lodge of Ireland, in 1737. The Lodge, as an Albany unit, dates from April 11th, 1759. The authority under which it started under way, is of questionable validity, being a legally unauthorized warrant. The charter granted it by George Harison, on February 21st, 1765, made it a duly constituted Lodge, under the name of Union, No. 1. This latter is the true date of its constitution and was confirmed as such by the Grand Lodge of New York. However, Mount Vernon Lodge, No. 3, is justified in the claim that its continuous history can be traced back farther than that of any other surviving Lodge in the State, though it must yield precedence, in point of priority, to St. John's, No. 1, and Independent Royal Arch, No. 2, as a New York Lodge.

#### ST. PATRICK'S LODGE, NO. 8

On May 3d, 1766, Grand Master Harison issued a charter to St. Patrick's Lodge at Johnstown, beginning in this wise:

Know ye that we, of the great trust and confidence reposed in our worthy and well-beloved brother, the Honorable Sir William Johnson, Baronet, do hereby constitute and appoint him to be our Master; Guy Johnson, Esq., Senior Warden; Daniel Claus, Esq., Junior Warden; and John Butler, Secretary of the St. Patrick's Lodge, No. 8, to be held in Johnson hall, in the county of Albany, in the Province of New York.

Sir William, as the name of his lodge suggests, was an Irishman. He had come to America, about 1735, at the age of twenty, and soon won great distinction, especially for his remarkable influence with the Indians, whose confidence and friendship he held to the end of his life. In 1755, he was made commander of the provincial troops, and soon after became Superintendent of Indian Affairs. Johnson Hall, which is named in the lodge warrant, was his baronial residence, at Johnstown. He died on July 11, 1774.

Guy Johnson, the Senior Warden, was Sir William's son-in-law, and held the post of Assistant Superintendent of Indian Affairs. Daniel Clause, the Junior Warden, was also a son-in-law of Sir William and, becoming distinguished for his bravery as a soldier, rose to the rank of Colonel.

The original charter and the old jewels, which are now in the possession of the lodge, were carried away by Sir John Johnson, when, loyal to the Royalist cause, he fled to Canada, during the Revolution. On June 3, 1831, Sir John returned to the Lodge the old Provincial Warrant, together with jewels, mostly of silver and presented to it by Sir William Johnson. The records of St. Patrick's Lodge are complete from its organization in 1766 to the present time. The Lodge is No. 4 in the present State list of Lodges.

#### MASTERS' LODGE, NO. 2

In 1767 a warrant had been issued by the Grand Lodge of England appointing Sir John Johnson Provincial Grand Master. The installation not taking place until 1771, Grand Master Harison continued to exercise the prerogatives of the office in the interim. This condition appears to have created some confusion in the minds of the brethren.

In 1768 George Harison constituted Masters' Lodge at Albany, which is at present No. 5 in the list of lodges under the jurisdiction of the Grand Lodge of the State. William Gamble was the first Master. The following year Dr. Samuel Stringer was elected to the East. Under a misapprehension as to Grand Master Harison's powers, Dr. Stringer addressed a petition to Sir John Johnson asking that a new warrant be issued and the lodge designated St. John the Evangelist's Lodge, No. 2, of Albany. No reason was given for the requested change, but the letter accompanying the petition stated, "The reasons for renewing our warrant are many and urgent." Sir John replied promptly, assuring the Master and the brethren of his good will, but stating plainly that he could not be regarded as Grand Master until after his installation. The Albany brethren made no further request for a change, and the lodge retained its original name.

Masters' Lodge became very popular. Its relations with "Ineffable Lodge of Perfection" (Scottish Rite), organized on December 20th, 1767, appear to have been particularly intimate. Both bodies united in the building of a "house" for their joint accommodation on the site occupied by the present beautiful Masonic Temple of Albany.

The "Ineffable" managed to be on the best of terms with the lodges all around. It joined with St. Patrick's Lodge, in a public procession, in 1769, and celebrated St. John Evangelist Day in fraternal union with St. George's of Schenectady, and Union and Masters' of Albany, on December 27, 1774.

#### SOLOMON'S LODGE, NO. 1

The last lodge known to have been warranted by Grand Master Harison was Solomon's, No. 1, at Poughkeepsie, on April 18, 1771. Robert R. Livingston, Master of Union Lodge, New York City, as the deputized acting Grand Master, read the warrant and installed the officers. He continued to take an active interest in the lodge throughout his long and noble life. The most notable event in the history of this once prominent lodge was probably the visit with which George Washington honored it, on December 27, 1782.

The brethren were almost to a man on the side of the patriots. In the minutes of May 16, 1781, appeared this significant item:

Ordered that the name of Benedict Arnold be considered as obliterated from the Minutes of this Lodge.

Solomon's continued in more or less active operation until 1827; after that year it failed to be represented in the Grand Lodge and was not heard from again.

The warrant issued by George Harison for the constituting of Solomon's, No. 1, read as follows:

(L. Sigile.) To All and every our Right Worshipful, Worshipful and loving Brethren, We, George Harison, of the City of New York in the Province of New York in America, Provincial Grand Master of the Ancient and Honorable Society of Free and Accepted Masons.

Send Greeting:

Know Ye, that of the great trust and confidence reposed in our worthy and well beloved Brother, James Livingston, Esq., and on the recommendation of Our Worthy Brother, Robert R. Livingston, Junr., Esq., We do hereby Constitute and appoint the said James Livingston, Esq., to be Master of the Solomon's Lodge, No. One, to be holden at Poughkeepsie, in Dntchess County and Province of New York in America, and we do also at his own desire appoint Dr. John Lewis and John Child to be the Senior and Junior Wardens of the said Lodge with full power and authority in due form to make Masons and also to do all and every such other acts and things appertaining to the said office as usually have been and ought to be done and executed by other Masters. He our said Master taking especial care that all and every the members of his said Lodge have been regularly made Masons, and that they do observe, perform and keep all and every the Rules, Orders and Regulations contained into (*sic*) the Book of Constitutions (such only as have been repealed are excepted), together with all such other Rules, Orders and Regulations or Instructions as shall from time to time be transmitted to you by Us or Our successors. Grand Master of this province for the time being: And we do hereby will and require You our said Master to cause four Quarterly Communications to be held Yearly, One whereof to lie upon or as near the Feast day of St. John the Baptist as conveniently may be, and that you promote on that and all other occasions whatever may be for the Honor and Advantage of Masonry and the Benefit of the Grand Charity, and that you transmit unto Us and Our Successors Quarterly, an Account in Writing of the proceedings of your Lodge, when and where held, with a List of the members thereof and Copies of such Rules, Orders and Regulations as you shall make for the good Government thereof, with whatever else you shall do by virtue of these presents, always remembering the Grand end proposed in Masonry (Universal Benevolence to all men, but to Masons particularly).

THIS DONE by virtue of the power and authority vested in us by Our Commission, bearing date in London, the ninth day of June, A. D. 1753, A. L. 5753, under the hand and seal of John Proby, Baron of Carysfort in the County of Wicklow in the Kingdom of Ireland, the then GRAND MASTER of ENGLAND, appointing Us, Grand Master in and over this Province of New York in America.

GIVEN under our hand and seal of Masonry in the City of New York this eighteenth day of April, A. D. 1771: A. L. 5771.

(Signed) GEORGE HARISON,

P. G. M. (Signed) ROBERT R. LIVINGSTON, JUNR.,  
*Master of the Union Lodge.*

#### ST. GEORGE'S, NO. 1

On October 4th, 1773, Masters' Lodge, No. 2, at Albany, received a petition for the formation of a Lodge at Schenectady. The record in the minutes runs as follows:

A Petition to the Right Worshipful Provincial Grand Master, Sir John Johnson, Knight. Signed by Bros. Christopher Yates, John Hugham of Schenectady, and Benjamin Hilton, Jr., praying to be formed into a regular body by the name of "St. George's Lodge" in Schenectady, and to obtain a Warrant to them, and their successors, appointing Christopher Yates, Master, John Hugham, Senior, and Benjamin Hilton, Junior Wardens, was presented to this body for their recommendation; and was signed by the Worshipful Master and Wardens, and the Lodge Seal affixed thereto.

This record represents the first known instance in New York of the observance of a principle, which is at present generally enforced, that a recommendation by the geographically nearest Lodge must accompany the petition for a new Lodge.

The petition of the Schenectady brethren was approved by Masters' Lodge and sent to Sir John Johnson, then the Provincial Grand Master for New York, who granted the dispensation for the institution of St. George's Lodge, on June 21st, 1774. The warrant of constitution was issued under date of September 14th, 1774.

#### MILITARY LODGES

THE PRACTICE of granting warrants to Masons in the military and naval service empowering them to form Lodges in the regiments or other units to which they were attached, originated in Ireland. The premier Grand Lodge of England followed the precedent. Scotland also gave encouragement to the plan. After the Antients got under way, they, too, granted such migratory warrants. Wherever the warrant was, there was the Lodge. The very nature of the consequent instability suggests that the records of these traveling Lodges could not be kept accurately, and that the task of following their fortunes must prove an almost hopeless one. Nevertheless, the ambulant Lodges played an important part in the spreading of Freemasonry and left behind them in many places nuclei of stationary Lodges which would in the course of time receive due recognition from whatever lawful Masonic authority might be applied to for regularization.

New York had its share of the harvest sown by military Lodges within her confines. We have had occasion to refer to the rise of Union, No. 1, at Albany, from the Masonic remnant left behind when a military Lodge warranted by the Grand Lodge of Ireland left for another field of operation, after a stay of about two years. Harison regularized the unit. A Lodge was formed at Lake George, in 1757, one in 1759 and another in 1762, at Crown Point, by James Gridley, Provincial Grand Master of North America. George Harison issued a warrant to Brethren of the 60th Regiment, Foot Guards, in 1764, "to hold a Lodge of Masons, No. 1, at Detroit, under whatever name the said Master and his officers should please to distinguish it." The name adopted was Zion Lodge, No. 1.

There is no need of multiplying information about Lodges which had their short day and then were heard of no more. The Lodges that took an active part in forming the organization which became the Grand Lodge of the State of New York, will be mentioned in a later chapter. We ought to say a word, however, about two military Lodges which left behind them a distinct impress of their influence.

#### ST. JOHN'S REGIMENTAL LODGE

Sir John Johnson, Provincial Grand Master for New York, having left for Canada, at the beginning of hostilities in the War for American Independence, his prerogatives descended upon his Deputy, Dr. Peter Middleton, who exercised them with tact and a due regard for the feelings swaying the population of the Province. He issued the first warrant granted to any unit of the Continental Army, owing allegiance to George Washington as Commander-in-Chief; it authorized the formation of St. John's Regimental Lodge, composed of New York Brethren who had joined the ranks of the revolutionists. This warrant was dated July 24th, 1775. After the close of the war, it turned up at Clark's Town, Orange County, in the state of New York, where a Lodge continued to work under its authority, later transferring its headquarters to Warwick, in the same county. This Lodge, known later as St. John's Lodge, No. 18, succumbed finally, about 1825.

#### AMERICAN UNION LODGE, NO. 1

The best known and most important Lodge in the Continental Army was American Union, No. 1. Its inception was due to Joel Clark, who with five other Master Masons, four Fellowcrafts and one Entered Apprentice—all but one of them officers in the Connecticut Line—joined in a petition to Grand Master John Rowe of the St. John's Grand Lodge of Massachusetts to be allowed to form a Lodge while in camp at Roxbury. The warrant was issued by Deputy Grand Master Richard Gridley, under date of February 15th, 1776. It was brief and clear and read as follows:

JOHN ROWE, *Grand Master.*

To JOEL CLARK, ESQ.,—Greetings:

By virtue of authority invested in me, I hereby, reposing special trust and confidence in your knowledge and skill of the Ancient Craft, do appoint and constitute you, the said Joel Clark, Esquire, Master of the AMERICAN UNION LODGE now erected in Roxbury, or

wherever your BODY shall remove on the Continent of America, provided it is where no Grand Master is appointed. You are to promote in your Lodge the utmost Harmony and Brotherly Love, and to keep up the Constitutions.

The Lodge was formally constituted on the day following the receipt of the warrant and started on its career with a membership of twenty. Shortly after this it was removed to New York. As the warrant was valid only "where no Grand Master is appointed," the Lodge applied to Dr. Peter Middleton, the Deputy Grand Master, for a confirmation. This was denied, but a new warrant was issued constituting the Lodge as Military Union, No. 1. The Brethren did not relish the new designation, but accepted it, voted that the furniture belonging to them as American Union should be "considered as only lent to Military Union Lodge," and continued to work and be known under the more favored original name.

Then followed the battles of Long Island and Harlem, in which three of the Brethren were killed, and Joel Clark and several others were taken prisoners by the British, "by which misfortune the Lodge was deprived of its Master and some worthy members, and many other brethren were called to act in several departments, whereby the Lodge stood closed without day."

On March 19th, 1777, a remnant, having possession of the warrants, opened a Lodge at Redding, Connecticut. Joel Clark having died in prison, Samuel Holden Parsons was elected Master, and regular communications were resumed. March 25th, 1779, was celebrated as a gala occasion, General Israel Putnam and other military officers, all of them Masons, having been invited to be present. The first toast was given in honor of General Washington and was followed by one to the memory of Brothers Warren, Montgomery and Wooster, who had sealed their devotion to the cause of American Independence by the sacrifice of their lives.

Less than two months later, American Union Lodge appeared again in New York, at Nelson's Point on the Hudson. General Samuel Holden Parsons, who had been the Master and was now the Senior Warden, had succeeded General Putnam in the command of the Connecticut Line, with headquarters at the Robinson House, opposite West Point. In this historic building were held many memorable meetings, chief among them a celebration of the Festival of St. John Evangelist, in the summer of 1779, which was attended by George Washington and his family and many distinguished military leaders.

Among the patriots initiated in American Union Lodge, during its stay on the banks of the Hudson, were Colonel Rufus Putnam, then in charge of construction of the fortifications of West Point, and Colonel John Brooks, who later became Governor of Massachusetts.

In December, 1779, the Lodge was at work in the winter quarters of the Army, at Morristown, New Jersey. There were at least two other military Lodges in camp, St. John's Regimental and Washington, No. 10. The latter Lodge had been warranted, in October, by Grand Master Joseph Webb of the "ancient" Grand Lodge of Massachusetts, and had been constituted on November 11th, while the regiment to which it was attached was stationed at West Point. General John Patterson was its first Master, and Colonel Benjamin Tupper and Major William Hull (General Hull of the War of 1812), were the first Wardens. The records of Washington Lodge were lost during the war, and its activities can only be guessed at from scattered notices in the minutes of other Lodges. The great Lafayette, who is known to have been made a Mason in America, appears to have been initiated in this Lodge named after his revered friend.

American Union Lodge, ever on the alert for the advancement of Freemasonry among the patriots, conceived the plan of uniting all American Masons under one general Grand Master. The celebration of St. John Evangelist Day was chosen to win support for the project. A public procession was organized, headed by a band of music. The festal Lodge was attended by more than a hundred Masons, "Bro. Washington" heading the list of distinguished visitors. An address was read representing a petition to be sent to the several Provincial Grand Masters in the United States, in which, after expressing regret that "the misfortunes of war" had separated American Masons from the Grand Lodges of Europe, these reasons were set forth why a new organization should be effected:

Considering the present situation of our Lodges and Masonry in general, the necessity for the honor of the craft, and the importance of enjoying the benefits of so valuable an institution, that some exertions are made for checking the present irregularities, restoring peace and harmony to the lodges and for the re-establishment of the Order on the ancient respectable foundation, which we conceive can never be done more effectively than by the appointment of a Grand Master in and over the United States of America.

We, therefore, most earnestly request that the present Provincial Grand Masters in the respective said United States would take some measures for the appointment of a Grand Master in and over the said Thirteen United States of America.

The gathering greeted the proposition with enthusiasm and voted "that the petition be circulated through the different lines of the army, and that a committee be appointed from the different lodges in the army, from each line and from the staff, to convene on the first Monday of February to take the foregoing petition into consideration." The proposed convention was held on the appointed day. There were ten delegates representing American Union, St. John's Regimental, Washington, No. 10, and the Masons of seven States. General Mordecai Gist, who later became Grand Master of Masons in South Carolina, was chosen to preside. An address was formulated asking the Provincial Grand Masters in America to help promote the establishment of a supreme Grand Lodge for the United States under one Grand Master General "to preside over and govern all other lodges of whatsoever degree or denomination, licensed or to be licensed upon the continent." Much discussion and correspondence followed the issuance of the address, but the dream was never realized. Georgia, the Carolinas, Maryland, and other States revived the idea from time to time, but it failed to commend itself to the craft, which looked upon a centralization of power with suspicion.

In July, 1780, we find American Union Lodge again at work on the banks of the Hudson. In 1782, it united with Washington Lodge, No. 10, in the celebration of St. John Baptist Day, at West Point. After this, meetings were held for a time at Verplanck's Point. The last communication of which any record is preserved was held at West Point, on April 23rd, 1783. The disbanding of the Army is no doubt the explanation.

On October 22nd, 1791, there was read in the Grand Lodge of New York a letter, dated Marietta, Ohio, 1791, conveying the information that "to illumine their path in the Wilderness of the West" a number of Brethren had "incorporated themselves into a Lodge, under a Warrant, by the name of the *American Union Lodge, No. 1*. It was signed by Benjamin Tupper and Rufus Putnam as Wardens.

## CLOSE OF THE FIRST PROVINCIAL GRAND LODGE

THE FIRST PROVINCIAL GRAND LODGE of New York, derived from the premier Grand Lodge of England, did not survive the shock of the Revolution, chiefly because its last Grand Master saw fit to identify his fortunes with Great Britain in a manner which could not but make his very name odious to American patriots. Moreover, the headstrong Royalist, on leaving for Canada, had taken with him the deputation giving him authority to direct Masonic affairs in New York. If he had turned the warrant over to his Deputy, the likelihood is that this tactful leader could have held the Lodges together, and the history of the Grand Lodge of New York might now trace its beginning to the formation of the Provincial Grand Lodge by George Harison, if not to an earlier date. Sir John Johnson by his inexcusable proceedings gave an opening to the Antients who, as we shall presently see, took quick advantage of the situation and established themselves firmly in the State.

Nevertheless, we owe a great debt of gratitude to the official agents of the premier Grand Lodge of England. They succeeded in disseminating the pure principles of Freemasonry among the colonists and to inspire them with the lofty principles of our noble institution. In the Lodges founded upon a firm belief in the Fatherhood of God and the brotherhood of all men, our forebears learned the fundamental lessons of liberty under the law and equality before the law. There they were taught to keep their passions in due bounds, promote one another's welfare, respect the religious convictions of men, and work together as brothers for the common good. The Lodges raised the leaders in the struggle for the freedom and independence of the United States and developed the ideas which form the foundations of the Constitution of our country.

Although Freemasonry in New York issued from the premier Grand Lodge of England, all the Lodges formed under these auspices were essentially training schools of American patriots, while the Lodges constituted by the Antients, which formed the organization from which our present Grand Lodge, officially, derives its existence, were composed almost wholly of British soldiers and officials bent on preventing the success of the Revolution. In New England it was not so, nor in most of the other States. The fact that the city of New York was occupied by the British accounts no doubt for the difference.

After General Howe had taken New York, in 1776, the city became invested with British troops. A large portion of the officers and members of old St. John's Lodge, loyal to the American cause, followed Washington on his northward retreat, taking the Lodge warrant with them. The Royalist and other members who stayed behind, continued to meet and were later on given a warrant as St. John's, No. 4, by the Provincial Grand Lodge of the Antients. Of the doings of Independent Royal, the only other surviving old Lodge, no record has been preserved, if there were any doings during the period of the city's occupation. It is more than likely that not one of the original lodges constituted under the auspices of the premier Grand Lodge of England remained in the invested city.

Up-State conditions were more favorable to the sons of liberty. Union (now Mt. Vernon, No. 3) and Masters Lodges at Albany, Solomon's at Poughkeepsie, and St. George's at Schenectady, met more or less regularly during the whole period of the Revolution. All of them were aflame with zeal for the cause of American freedom, and among their members were to be found many officers of the Continental Army. One-half the number of 150 members of St. George's, the Lodge constituted by Sir John Johnson, were in the military service of the United States, and the communications went on uninterruptedly. St. John's Military Lodge was in winter quarters at Morristown with Washington. Thus all that remained of the original Lodges were identified with the cause of the United States.

Whatever of stability, strength and inspiring force Freemasonry possessed in the State of New York when British rule came to an end, was derived from the first Provincial Grand Lodge which passed out of existence when an Atholl warrant was transmitted to our shores authorizing the establishment of a new regimen.

## THE ATHOLL PROVINCIAL GRAND LODGE 1781 TO 1784

In the British regiments ordered to America to suppress the rising rebellion of the colonies, there were a large number of military Lodges which managed to leave a marked influence on Masonic development, particularly in the city of New York. The majority of these Lodges had been warranted by the Grand Lodge of the Antients, then better known as the Atholl Grand Lodge of England, the Duke of Atholl being its Grand Master at that time. The few Lodges holding warrants from Ireland or Scotland worked in close harmony with the Antients, the ritual and customs of the three Grand Lodges being very much alike, while differing in some points from the system of the premier Grand Lodge of England. Eventually the Antients gained the upper hand. Their principal merit was that they kept close to the humanity of the great middle class, preserved the original democracy of the craft and saved Masonry from becoming an aristocratic institution, or a fraternity of snobs. That is the glory of the Antients, which nobody can deny them. They were a thorn in the flesh of the premier Grand Lodge, a thorn it needed to keep it from exalting itself above measure.

The question of "regularity" did not trouble the Colonial Brethren in America, if it did form a subject for acrimonious discussions in English Masonic circles. They saw no reason for avoiding Masonic intercourse with Antient Brethren who were acknowledged as regular by the Grand Lodges of Ireland and Scotland.

In the Province of New York, the last impediment to a free mingling of Brethren, made under the older dispensation, with the members of the steadily increasing number of Antient Lodges, was removed when Sir John Johnson hied away to Canada and took his Provincial warrant with him. The up-State Brethren missed their opportunity for erecting a Grand Lodge at Albany or Poughkeepsie, and left the field open for New York City to make the move.

## THE INCHOATE GRAND LODGE OF NEW YORK

The Lodges connected with the military units quartered in New York City were dominated by the Antients, and these now had the field practically to themselves. The leading Lodge was No. 169 of "Antient York Masons." It held a warrant as a British Field Lodge, under which it had been constituted, while located in Boston, on July 13th, 1771. The warrant emanated from the Antient Grand Lodge of England. On the evacuation of Boston, in 1776, No. 169 followed the British military forces to New York. Here it saw the opportunity of uniting the several military Lodges now located in the city into a Provincial Grand Lodge. Accordingly it called a convention of the Lodges, which opened, on January 23rd, 1781, under the warrant of No. 169. There were present twenty-nine

representatives of seven Lodges. Past Master James McCuen, of No. 169, presided. A permanent formation was agreed upon, and officers were elected, as follows: the **Rev. William Walter, M. A.**, of No. 169, Grand Master; **John Studholme Brownrigg**, of No. 441, Senior Grand Warden; the **Rev. John Beardsley**, of No. 210, Junior Grand Warden. Information of the proceedings was transmitted to the Antient Grand Lodge at London, with a request for authority to make the organization legal and permanent.

Nothing now stood in the way of a legal organization of the new Provincial Grand Lodge of New York. A warrant authorizing this consummation was forwarded from England in the fall of 1782. The document bore the date of September 5th, 1781. Its earlier transmission had been retarded no doubt by war conditions. It is to this warrant that the Grand Lodge of New York traces its lawful establishment.

The first meeting, under the authority of the Atholl warrant, was held in Roubalet's Assembly Hall, New York City, on December 5th, 1782. There were present the Rev. William Walter, Grand Master, and the other officers mentioned in the warrant, together with the representatives of nine Lodges, one of them under dispensation. Officers were chosen by election and duly installed.

After paying due homage to the Grand Officers, the Lodges which were represented surrendered their warrants and received them again as coming from the Provincial Grand Lodge of New York.

#### CLOSE OF THE ATHOLL ORGANIZATION

Political events began to reveal that the independence of the United States was assured. New York was, at this time, the only place of importance still remaining in the hands of the British. The shifting of army officers and troops showed its effects. In the Grand Lodge, which, as already suggested, was largely controlled by sympathizers with the Royalist organization.

November 25th, 1783, had been fixed upon by the victorious American Army as the day when the British troops were to evacuate New York City. In anticipation of this memorable event, a "Grand Lodge of Emergency" was held, on September 19th, to discuss the propriety of "leaving the Grand Warrant in New York City." It was finally resolved that the Warrant should "remain in the care of such brethren as may hereafter be appointed to succeed the present Grand Officers, the most of whom are under the necessity of leaving New York upon the removal of His Majesty's troops."

The Rev. Dr. Walter, who was chaplain of De Lancey's 3d Battalion, was compelled to leave for Nova Scotia. On his nomination, Junior Grand Warden Cock was elected and installed as Grand Master.

At the meeting of February 4th, 1784, Grand Master Cock resigned his office and nominated as his successor the Hon. Robert R. Livingston, Chancellor of the State of New York. The election of this distinguished American patriot closed the brief existence of the Provincial Grand Lodge and opened the history of the Grand Lodge of the State of New York.

#### ESTABLISHMENT OF THE SOVEREIGN GRAND LODGE OF THE STATE OF NEW YORK

When Robert R. Livingston assumed the Grand Mastership, in 1784, the British Army Lodges had disappeared. The only Lodges united in the Grand Lodge of the State of New York at the time of his election were Nos. 169, 210, 212, St. John's No. 4, Hiram No. 5 and Union No. 8, all of them located in New York City.

Union, No. 8, had been "healed" and admitted to Grand Lodge membership in 1783. This and, possibly, Hiram were the only Lodges, so far, which could trace their authority to a warrant from the premier Grand Lodge of England. Nos. 169, 210, and 212 were Antient, as was the charter which created the Grand Lodge of New York.

The only other Lodges in New York City, not yet affiliated with the Grand Lodge, were St. John's, No. 2, and Royal Arch, No. 8. Temple and Trinity Lodges, if in existence, were dormant.

The Lodges in the state, outside of New York City, were all of them "Modern." At Albany were Union and Masters; at Johnstown was St. Patrick's; at Poughkeepsie, Solomon's; at Schenectady, St. George's; at Clark's Town, St. John's. A warrant had been issued to a Lodge on Long Island, but it was never heard of as being active.

The first problem confronting the Grand Master was how to gather into the Grand Lodge the Lodges established under authority of the premier Grand Lodge of England. Fortunately, the contentions which divided Moderns and Antients, in Great Britain, had never troubled the American brethren very pronouncedly. Unsettled conditions prevailing everywhere, the question of authority between Grand Lodges aroused little, if any, partisan strife. Organization was the need of the hour.

As a matter of fact, the old authority, vested by the premier Grand Lodge of England in Sir John Johnson, was still in existence. However, this ardent Royalist was a fugitive from his native country and had taken with him his own warrant and also that of St. Patrick's Lodge of Johnstown. His Deputy, Dr. Middleton, had died, and no one had been appointed to take his place. The Atholl charter, therefore, was the only valid official document at hand, authorizing the Masons in the State of New York to meet in Grand Lodge. That simplified the process of assimilation and union.

The fact that Chancellor Livingston himself had been Master of a Lodge originally identified with the premier Grand Lodge, made it easier to overcome any existing scruples. After he had been duly installed, inducted in the chair and proclaimed Grand Master, St. John's, No. 2, and Royal Arch, No. 8, surrendered their warrants and joined the State Grand Lodge. At the Grand Lodge of Emergency, held on June 2d, 1784, other "Moderns" appeared. There were present also representatives of Union and Masters', at Albany; of Solomon, at Poughkeepsie, and of St. John's, at Clarke's Town, who "acknowledged the jurisdiction of the Grand Lodge and were accorded seats." Peter W. Yates, for thirty-seven years Master of Union Lodge, at Albany, was elected Senior Grand Warden, soon after. Only one "Modern" Lodge now remained unaffiliated, and that was St. George's, of Schenectady. The sole supreme authority of the Grand Lodge in the State of New York was established.

The next thing undertaken was the gathering of unattached brethren into Lodges. No fewer than eighty-three Lodges were added to the roll under the Grand Mastership of Chancellor Livingston. Many of these Lodges have survived to the present day.

The Grand Lodge, while doing its best to increase its numerical strength, showed a nice sense of justice by denying, in 1785, a petition for a Lodge at Perth Amboy, New Jersey, thereby making clear that jurisdiction was to be confined to the State of New York.

Meanwhile, some irritation arose in the city over the order of precedence in public processions. A committee of influential members was appointed to handle the delicate subject. Before the committee could report, a meeting of the Grand Lodge adopted this ringing declaration: "No Lodge can exist in this state but under the jurisdiction of the Grand Lodge."

The committee took the cue and reported on June 6, 1787, in substance, as follows:

The Grand Lodge of this state is established according to the ancient and universal usages of Masonry, upon a constitution formed by the representatives of the regular Lodges, convened under a legal warrant from the Grand Lodge of England, dated the fifth day of September, in the year of Masonry 5781, the Most Noble Prince John, the Third Duke of Atholl, being the then Grand Master. . . . Nothing is necessary or essential in the future proceedings of the Grand Lodge but that a committee be appointed to prepare a draft of the style of warrants to be hereafter granted by the Grand Lodge, conformable to said constitution.

The report was confirmed and its recommendation adopted. The Lodges were ordered to deliver up their old warrants and to take out new ones as soon as the question of precedence of rank could be determined, and a new form of warrant printed. The only Lodge remaining obdurate was No. 210, which wrote, under date of December 5, 1787, "entreating indulgence until they received answers to letters that had been written to the Grand Lodge of England respecting the authority of constitution, we having laid aside the Provincial Grand Warrant." The answer of the Grand Lodge was prompt and emphatic:

That the dues of Lodge No. 210 be paid up in twenty days and they acknowledge the supremacy of this Grand Lodge, otherwise have their names erased from the books and be reported to the different lodges in the state.

No. 210 speedily submitted. The independence and supremacy of the Grand Lodge was settled. To emphasize the fact still further, the seal was ordered changed, on September 3, 1788, to bear the legend, "Grand Lodge of the State of New York."

## Appendix V

### Captain Edward Byrn(e) and Zion Lodge No. 10, Detroit

Outlines of the history of Freemasonry in the province of Quebec, by John Hamilton Graham, pages 114-117.

[http://books.google.com/books?id=ZrJJAAAAMAAJ&pg=PA115&lpg=PA115&dq=%22zion+lodge+no.+10%22+%22byrn%22&source=bl&ots=Me7t-194jM&sig=AEXsyaZHGq211hvN6YwTxA8Zdzw&hl=en&ei=DxR\\_TK-TJoa8lQeh5tj6Dg&sa=X&oi=book\\_result&ct=result&resnum=6&ved=0CCoQ6AEwBQ#v=onepage&q=%22zion%20lodge%20no.%2010%22%20%22byrn%22&f=false](http://books.google.com/books?id=ZrJJAAAAMAAJ&pg=PA115&lpg=PA115&dq=%22zion+lodge+no.+10%22+%22byrn%22&source=bl&ots=Me7t-194jM&sig=AEXsyaZHGq211hvN6YwTxA8Zdzw&hl=en&ei=DxR_TK-TJoa8lQeh5tj6Dg&sa=X&oi=book_result&ct=result&resnum=6&ved=0CCoQ6AEwBQ#v=onepage&q=%22zion%20lodge%20no.%2010%22%20%22byrn%22&f=false)

'Zion,' Detroit, No. 10, A: F: M.; L. C.—It will doubtless much please Quebec and other Brethren to learn that the original 'Ancient' Warrant of this Lodge still exists; and that it is preserved with devout Masonic care by Zion Lodge, Detroit, now 'No. 1' on the Registry of the G: L: of the State of Michigan, U. S.

This and the Warrant of Dorchester Lodge, St. Johns, Que., 'No. 3, L. C.' are the only two known to be in existence of the thirteen 'last Century Warrants,' granted by the Prov. G: L.; 'Ancients,' of L. C.

The Warrant of 'No. 10' was of date Sept. 7, 1794, seven months after the departure from Quebec of H. R. H. Prince Edward. One printed copy thereof was kindly forwarded to the writer by R: W: Bro: Wm. P. Innes, G: Sec, Michigan; and another by the officers of Zion Lodge, through V: W: Bro: Robt. A. Mackay, G: Rep. of the G: L: of Quebec, near the G: L: of C: in Ontario.

Warrant of No. 10, A: Y: M.; L. C.:

"Thomas Ainslie, D: Grand Master."

"Thomas Dodd, S: G: W.; John Lynd, J: G: W:

"To all whom it may concern:

"We, the Right Worshipful Thomas Ainslie, Esq., Collector of His Majesty's Customs. Lieutenant-Colonel of the British Militia of the City of Quebec, etc., and Deputy Grand Master of the Most Ancient and Honorable Fraternity of Free and Accepted Masons (according to the old Constitutions, granted by His Royal Highness Prince Edwin, at York, *Anno Domini* nine hundred twenty and six, and in the year of Masonry four thousand nine hundred twenty and six), in Canada, and Masonical jurisdiction thereunto belonging;"

"Know Ye, by the authority in us vested by His Royal Highness Prince Edward, Knight of the Most Noble Order of the Garter, and of the Most Illustrious Order of St. Patrick, Major General of His Majesty's Forces, etc., Grand Master in his absence; that we do hereby authorize and empower our trusty and well-beloved Brethren, viz: The Worshipful James Donaldson, one of our Master Masons; the **Worshipful Edward Byrn**, his Senior Warden; and the Worshipful Findly Campbell, his Junior Warden, to form and hold a Lodge of Free and Accepted Masons, aforesaid, at or in the City of Detroit, in Upper Canada, upon the first Monday of every Calendar month, and on all seasonable times and lawful occasions; and in the said Lodge (when duly congregated) to admit and make Freemasons according to the most ancient and honorable custom of the Royal Craft in all ages and nations throughout the Known world."

"And we do hereby further authorize and empower our said trusty and well-beloved brethren, James Donaldson, **Edward Byrn** and Findly Campbell (with the consent of the members of their Lodge), to nominate, choose and install their successors, to whom they shall deliver this Warrant, and invest them with their powers and dignities as Freemasons, etc., and such successors shall in like manner nominate, choose and install their successors, etc., etc." Such installations to be upon (or near) every Saint John's Day, during the continuance of this Lodge forever: Provided the above named Brethren and their successors duly conform to the known and established Rules and Regulations of the Craft; paying due respect to us by whom these presents are granted and to the R:

W: Grand Lodge of Canada ; conforming to the Laws and Regulations thereof, and preserving a regular and yearly communication therewith, otherwise this Warrant to be of no force or Virtue."

"Given under our hands and the seal of our Grand Lodge, in Quebec, this seventh day of September, in the year of our Lord one thousand seven hundred and ninety-four."

"JAMES DAV1DSON,  
Grand Secretary." 

"NOTE.—This Warrant is registered in the Grand Lodge, Volume 1, Letter S."

On the left margin of the Warrant are the words :—" Zion Lodge, No. 10, Canada."

**The Lodge Instituted.**—In a ' Historical Sketch of early Masonry in Michigan,' it is stated that " the first record by Zion Lodge, No. 10, is as follows " :

"**Bro: Byrn**, as proxy for the Grand Master, convened the Brethren at the house of Bro: James Donaldson, in Detroit, December 19, 1794, instituted the Lodge and installed James Donaldson as its Worshipful Master."

It is also noteworthy that the Warrant of No. 10 was granted but two years prior to the surrender, 1796, of the territory of Michigan to the United States; when the British Troops were immediately withdrawn therefrom and dispatched for active service in the then great international struggle in Europe, and American Troops at once took possession of the Forts at Detroit, Mackinaw, Michilimackinac, etc.

**Invasion of Jurisdiction ?** — Bearing in mind that upon the disseverance, 1791, of the old "Province of Quebec," the "Province of Upper-Canada" was 'erected' in that portion of the territory of the 'Ancient Province,' west of the Ottawa River ; and that a Warrant had been granted, 1792, by the 'Ancient' G : L : of England, for the establishment of a Prov. G : L : for Upper Canada ; and as the then Territory of Michigan was, from 1791, deemed to be an 'appendage ' of the Province of Upper Canada ; and that Detroit, as in the Warrant of ' No. 10,' was commonly said to be "in Upper Canada; " it would, at first sight, appear as if the D : G : M : of the 'Ancient' Prov. G : L : of Lower Canada had most inexcusably designated himself the "D : G : M : of the Most Ancient and Honorable Fraternity of F: and A: M : \* \* \* in Canada and Masonical jurisdiction thereunto belonging;" and that he had knowingly 'invaded the jurisdiction ' of the 'Ancient' Prov. G : L : of Upper Canada, by granting a Warrant to establish Zion Lodge, No. 10, A : F : M : , L. C.," at or in the City of Detroit in Upper Canada! "

It should, however, be borne in mind that H. R. H. Prince Edward, Prov. G : M : for L. C., had, 1792, granted Warrants to establish Lodges ' Nos. 2 and 5, L. C.' (see list), in Upper Canada, and that even if Prince Edward and R : W : Bro: Ainslie, D : G : M : (the first 'acting' Prov. G : M : in the ' absence' of H. R. H.), had learned of the appointment, 1792, of R : W : Bro: Wm. Jervis of Newark (Niagara), U. C., as ' Ancient' Prov. G : M : for that Province, it appears to be an unquestioned fact that no Warrants for the establishment of Lodges in U. C. had been issued under the sanction of Bro : Wm. Jervis, or others, at Newark, until the year 1794 (and the writer has not as yet discovered proof that the ' Ancient' Prov. G : L : of Upper Canada was in that year even, ' regularly constituted,' and the Officers thereof ' duly installed !'), and hence it follows that the ' territory ' of U. C. was not ' occupied' (' regularly or irregularly') under the sanction of Bro: Jervis' ' Ancient' Prov. Warrant from England until 1794; and that therefore the said 'occupancy of U. C. thereunder was not known either at Detroit or at the Prov. ' Grand East,' at Quebec, when the Warrant for 'Zion Lodge, No. 10 ' (L. C.), at Detroit, was applied for and granted! Moreover, it appears certain that after 1794, no Warrants to establish Lodges in U. C. were granted by the 'Ancient' Prov. G : L : of Lower Canada at Quebec.

It appears, moreover, that the three ' great' causes of the many difficulties which befel the ' Ancients' in Upper Canada in those days and for many years afterwards, were : the want of Masonic knowledge, fidelity, and zeal on the part of Bro : Wm. Jervis, who was appointed the first 'Ancient' Prov. G : M :; the peculiar 'antagonisms' of the 'Moderns' among the many 'royalists,' and 'others,' who had emigrated from New York and other American Provinces, more especially after the acknowledgment by Great Britain of the independence of the United States, in 1783; and the neglect and absence of Masonic correspondence, counsel and co-operation with the Prov. G : L : of Lower Canada, under H. R. H. Prince Edward, and with the many able, well-informed, and zealous Brethren in Quebec and Montreal in those early days, some of whom, it is well known, were, Masonically and otherwise, among the foremost men of their day!

**1807. Closing Minutes of Zion, "No. 10."**—The writer of the "Historical sketch of early Masonry in Michigan," above mentioned, *inter alia*, says:

"It will now be in place to copy and consider that interesting closing item in the record of ' Zion Lodge, No. 10,' before spoken of."

"The records of the Lodge, under the Canada Charter, close with following entry, dated June 24th, 1807."

"The Master Mason's Lodge was then closed and an Entered Apprentice Lodge opened. The Entered Apprentice Lodge was then closed as usual, in perfect love and harmony, and *stands closed forever*, by order of the Worshipful Master and Brethren! "

*Exit pro forma*, dear old 18th Century "Zion," Detroit, Michigan, No. 10, A : F : M : , Lower Canada (now Quebec). Four score and five years have passed away since then, and the "Ancient" Masonic spirit and influence of old "Zion, No. 10," "still live" in "Zion, No. 1," at Detroit, and D. V. " will live forever" in the M : W : the G : L : of Michigan !

In now bidding a reluctant *adieu* to No. 10, A : Y : M : , L. C., at Detroit, the writer is constrained to add that there are many collateral facts of record in his possession which appear conclusively to prove that the **Bro : Edward Byrn**, named in the Warrant as "Senior Warden" of "No. 10, Detroit," was the identical **Bro : " Edward Byrn," W : M :** of 'No. 9, E. R., A : Y : M :,' attached to the 4th Batt. of Royal Artillery (and now Albion, No. 2, Q. R.) at Woolwich, England, in 1789, and who as P : M : presided at its first meeting, held in Quebec, 1790; and that the Bro: "Findly (or Finly) Campbell," whose name also appears as J : W : in the Warrant of "No. 10," is the same " Bro: Finly Campbell " whose name also appears in the Minutes of the first meeting of " No. 9, E. R. 'Ancients,'" at Quebec, 1790; and that these and other "Ancient" Brethren from Quebec, in a " detachment " of the Royal Artillery, stationed at Detroit, 1792-

96, having healed from Modern to Antient Masonry' some, or all, the remaining members of the old " No. 1, Zion Lodge, Detroit," attached to the " 60th, or Royal American Regiment," and of 1764 "Modern" Prov. G: L: **of the Prov. of New York 'origin;** that these " well-skilled" Brethren from " No. 9, E. R., Ancients," Quebec, not only co-operated with the Detroit Brethren in establishing the first "Ancient," or "A: Y: M:" Lodge, in Michigan, under the Warrant of Zion, No. 10, Detroit, from the Prov. G: L: "Ancients," of Lower Canada, at Quebec, but that they thus also first introduced into Michigan, through "Zion" Lodge, the "Ancient," or "Ancient York," "work" which is known to have been scrupulously adhered to and skilfully exemplified by the three Lodges, "Ancients," E. R., existing at the City of Quebec at that period!

. On Dec. 11, 1795, a Bro: Marshall of "Zion Lodge, No. 10, Detroit," joined "No. 9," E. R., "Ancients," at Quebec ; and Nov. 11, 1796, a Bro : McKay, from " No. 10, Zion, Detroit," on the Registry of Lower Canada, proposed himself to become a member of this Lodge.

The name of **Bro: "Edward Byrn,"** spoken of above, also frequently appeared among the Visitors of "No. 241," A : Y : M : , from "No. 9," at Quebec, 1790-93 (and who acted as G: S: D: at the Installation of H. R. H. Prince Edward, as Prov. G: M : , June 22, 1792), wholly disappears from the Minutes of "No. 241," 1793-96; but it re-appears therein 1797-98, and in this connection it may also be borne in mind that in the treaty surrendering Northern N. Y. and Michigan to the United States, it was stipulated that the British Troops were to evacuate the "Posts" in these territories by June 1, 1796, and hence the re-appearance at Quebec of some of these Brethren of the Royal Artillery of that period. Michigan, by her attachment and fidelity to the G: L : of Quebec, and by the distinguished favors conferred upon the writer and upon other Quebec Brethren, has sought well to repay this " Ancient" debt to the (Prov.) "G : L : " of L. C., at Quebec!

## Appendix VI

Charles Geddes

Watch and Clock Maker

<http://www.qualityantiqueclocks.com/page/31058/31058.htm>



### Charles Geddes, London, Mahogany Bell Top Bracket Clock – 1780

A beautifully proportioned mahogany bell top bracket clock. The case with round and oblong glass apertures to the sides, nicely fretted sound apertures to the front door and standing on shallow wooden block feet. The mahogany with nice figuring to the bell top and to the front door.

The unusual dial with strike silent disc in the arch and a presentation signature dated 1855. The dial centre with calendar aperture above 6 o'clock and with the signature Charles Geddes, London 1780 on the polished brass surface.

The twin gut fusee movement with reconverted verge escapement striking the hours on a bell and with nicely engraved backplate.



[Click here to enlarge picture](#)



[Click to enlarge picture](#)



[Click to enlarge picture](#)



[Click here to enlarge picture](#)

This clock is somewhat of an enigma. There is no doubt that the movement, dial and case started life together, and although in very distressed condition the case was largely original. On first sight the clock is a typical London bell top bracket clock of the second half of the 18<sup>th</sup> century. However, the maker, Charles Geddes, although trained and originally working in London, England, moved to Boston and then New York in the U.S.A in 1773. In 1776 he then moved to Halifax, Nova Scotia, where presumably this clock was made. This clock is presumably signed London in order to make it more saleable in his adopted country, although an alternative solution is that it was made in London, Nova Scotia. Unfortunately no record of where Charles Geddes worked in Nova Scotia has been forthcoming. The fact that this clock was made in Canada would explain some of the unusual features in the dial, for example, the lack of matting to the dial centre.

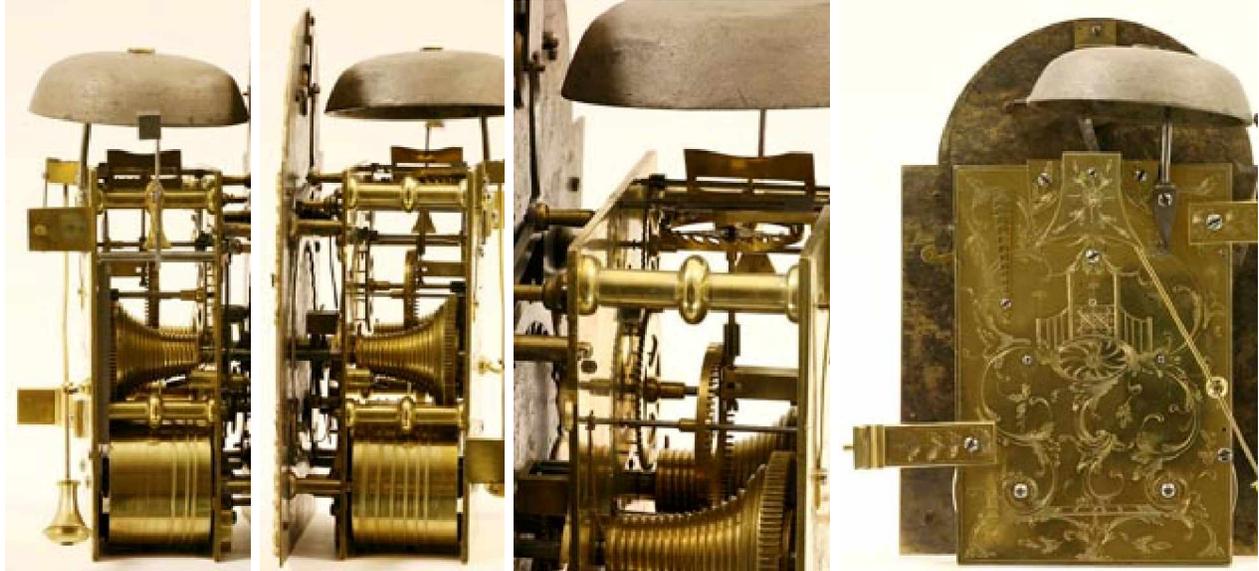
All in all an unusual and excellent clock.

Height to base of handle: 17.5" (44 cms.)

[Price band: C](#) [10 to 15,000 pounds sterling]



[Click here to enlarge picture](#)



[Click to enlarge picture](#)

[Click to enlarge picture](#)

[Click here to enlarge picture](#)

[Click here to enlarge picture](#)

## Appendix VII

### Captain Thomas Robison – Estate Litigation - 1831

[http://books.google.com/books?id=Dvw7AAAAIAAJ&pg=PA124&lpg=PA124&dq=%22thomas+robison%22+%22richard+cartwright%22&source=bl&ots=sE8NLJM5kp&sig=sI6BLX\\_gYysGf11ONXMXwdqWv0l&hl=en&ei=IUGKTNDQGIQglAfwq43BDA&sa=X&oi=book\\_result&ct=result&resnum=1&ved=0CBQQ6AEwAA#v=onepage&q=%22thomas%20robison%22%20%22richard%20cartwright%22&f=false](http://books.google.com/books?id=Dvw7AAAAIAAJ&pg=PA124&lpg=PA124&dq=%22thomas+robison%22+%22richard+cartwright%22&source=bl&ots=sE8NLJM5kp&sig=sI6BLX_gYysGf11ONXMXwdqWv0l&hl=en&ei=IUGKTNDQGIQglAfwq43BDA&sa=X&oi=book_result&ct=result&resnum=1&ved=0CBQQ6AEwAA#v=onepage&q=%22thomas%20robison%22%20%22richard%20cartwright%22&f=false) page 121-133.

#### WILLIAM ROBISON AND OTHERS V. STEPHEN CODMAN AND OTHERS.

Where there are several grantees in a conveyance, who take in trust for certain purposes, they are, under the Statute of Massachusetts of 1785, (ch. 62,) to be deemed tenants in common, and not joint tenants.

If one joint tenant convey his share, that is a severance of the joint tenancy.

In Maine, a husband is entitled to hold a trust estate of his wife, as tenant by the courtesy.

A widow is not entitled to dower, in a trust estate held by her husband for third persons ; nor in a reversion or remainder in a legal estate held by her husband.

Where the legal estate and the trust estate are co-extensive, (as in fee,) and both become vested in the same person, there is a merger of the trust estate in the legal estate.

An administrator has no authority to sell an estate held by his intestate in trust for other persons, as assets to pay the debts of the intestate.

THIS was a bill in equity, brought to determine the respective rights and interests of the several parties, plaintiffs and defendants, in certain lots of land in Portland, under the circumstances set forth in the bill. The bill was substantially as follows, those parts of it being omitted which are not necessary to a correct understanding of the points submitted by the parties, and decided by the Court.

Thomas Robison, senior, ancestor of the plaintiffs, a citizen of the Commonwealth of Massachusetts, resident in Portland, being seised and possessed of large estates in fee, and of large personal property, made his will August 7th, 1798, containing a devise and bequest to his wife, Elizabeth Robison, in the following words, viz. " I give, devise, and bequeath unto my beloved wife, Elizabeth Robison, the interest of all the moneys, notes, and bonds, that I may have, or which may be due to me at the time of my decease ; also I give, devise, and bequeath unto my said wife, the use and improvement of all my estate, both real and personal, of whatever kind, name, or nature, whether lands, houses, stores, wharves, vessels, and every other kind that I may own or be possessed of at the time of my decease, for and during the time she shall remain my widow; and if she choose to marry, then I give, devise, and bequeath to my said wife the use and improvement of one third part of all my real estate, during her natural life, and one third part of all the personal estate that I may be possessed of at the time of my decease, to her, and her heirs and assigns, for ever." And in said will, the testator further devised and bequeathed to his daughters, Hannah Codman, since deceased, wife of Stephen Codman, Jane Hodges, since deceased, widow of Thomas Hodges, Martha, Ann E., and Eliza, plaintiffs, and to his sons, Thomas and Richard, since deceased, and to his son William, plaintiff, and their heirs and assigns, for ever, " the whole of his estate, real and personal, which might remain after the decease or marriage of his said wife," to be equally divided between them, reserving the interest of his said wife therein, as aforesaid. And he appointed his said wife, and Richard Cartwright, his brother-in-law, Stephen Codman, his son-in-law, now resident of Boston aforesaid, and a citizen of the Commonwealth of Massachusetts,

Thomas Robison, Jr., his son, and his friend, Arthur McLellan, to be joint executors of his said will. Afterwards, viz. June 14th, 1802, the said testator for the nominal consideration of 30,000 dollars, when in truth nothing valuable was paid or secured, conveyed to said Arthur McLellan, by deed of general warranty, certain real estate lying in said Portland, being parcel of the estate devised in said will.

The said McLellan, at the time of the execution and delivery of said deed to him, made and delivered to said Thomas Robison, the grantor, his bond, conditioned that he would hold the estate so conveyed to him in trust for the said grantor, and permit him to take the rents and profits thereof at his pleasure, or account with the said grantor for the same ; and that he, the said McLellan, would convey said property to such persons as the grantor had or should, by deed or by his last will, order and designate as the grantees or devisees of the same, or of his estate and property in general.

Afterwards, on the 27th day of March, A. D. 1806, the said Thomas Robison died in the actual and open possession of all the said lands, which he had continued to possess and enjoy ever after the making his said deed to said McLellan, in the same manner as before; and his will was duly proved in the Probate Court of the County of Cumberland in said district, July 23d, 1806, and letters testamentary thereon were granted in due form of law to Richard Cartwright, one of the executors therein named, the other persons named as executors having declined that trust.

After the decease of said Thomas Robison, the said McLellan, on the 28th day of July, A. D. 1806, conveyed the same real estate by deed to the said Stephen Codman, Thomas Robison, Jr., and to Robert Ilsley, then resident of said Portland, who had become the second husband of said Jane Hodges, and at the same time said Cartwright delivered up to said McLellan his bond aforesaid to be cancelled ; and at the same time the said Stephen Codman, Robert Ilsley, and Thomas Robison, Jr. gave to said Cartwright their bond, conditioned that, whereas the said lands, notwithstanding the deed of conveyance thereof to said McLellan, were really and truly the estate of the said Thomas Robison, deceased, they, the said obligors, "should hold the same, subject to all lawful claims against the estate of said Thomas Robison, and subject to the provisions of the last will and testament of the said Thomas Robison, and should surrender the same to the aforesaid Richard Cartwright, the executor of said will, or his lawful representative, when thereunto required for the purposes aforesaid ; and in the mean time should annually account for, and pay to the said Richard Cartwright, or his lawful representatives, the rents arising from the same or any part thereof." But no valuable consideration was in truth paid to said McLellan by any of the grantees named in said deed, for the conveyance aforesaid.

The said Elizabeth Robison, widow of the testator upon his decease, entered into possession of all his real estate by virtue of the will aforesaid, including the estates held in trust as aforesaid, taking the rents, income, and profits thereof, as well as of said personal estate, with the consent of the executor, administrator *dc bonis non*, devisees, and heirs at law of said testator, until her decease, which happened on the 8th day of August, A. D. 1829. And at her decease there was left, as is said, of the personal property once belonging to the said testator, the amount of about 5,300 dollars vested in bankstock, by Lemuel Weeks, administrator *de bonis non* of the said testator, and standing in his name as such, subject to the uses and purposes appointed in the said will.

On the 21st day of November, A. D. 1814, the said Stephen Codman, by his deed of bargain and sale, conveyed to his son, Henry Codman of the city of Boston aforesaid, one undivided third part of all the lands and premises described in the deed to the said Ilsley, Robison, and Codman aforesaid, he, the said Henry, at the time of said conveyance paying no valuable consideration for the same, and having full knowledge of the trusts aforesaid.

The said Thomas Robison, Jr., during his lifetime, acted as the agent of his said mother, and of his brothers and sisters in all matters touching the estate of their father; and in that capacity he received from said Richard Cartwright, executor as aforesaid, large sums of money belonging to said estate, and he died August 25th, A. D. 1823, intestate and insolvent, being at the time of his decease indebted to the said estate, as well for moneys so received as for other causes, in the sum of 17,874 dollars and 72 cents ; and all his estate and property, excepting any interest which he may have had in the lands and property devised and bequeathed to the said widow Elizabeth Robison, his mother, in manner aforesaid, has been distributed to and among his creditors and his widow, according to the laws of Maine providing for the distribution of insolvent estates, thereby paying about sixty per cent. of his just debts. And he left a wife, Elizabeth Robison, and several children.

The said Hannah Codman died November 30th, 1819, in the lifetime of her mother, leaving issue the said Henry Codman, and also Stephen, Edward, and Elizabeth A. E. Codman, plaintiffs; also Richard C. Codman, who died August 17th, 1821, *vnder age*, leaving no widow nor issue.

The said Richard Robison also died in the lifetime of his mother, leaving issue.

The said Richard Cartwright died in the lifetime of the said widow Elizabeth Robison, whereupon the said Lemuel Weeks was duly appointed administrator of the goods and estate of said Thomas Robison not already administered by said Cartwright, and received letters of administration thereon, with the will annexed, according to the laws of Maine. But neither the said Cartwright, nor his lawful representative, nor the said Weeks ever demanded the surrender of the said trust estates and property for any of the purposes aforesaid; the other estate of said testator being amply sufficient for the payment of his debts, and for all other purposes of his will.

Whereupon, as the plaintiffs insist, the said trust estate created by the deed and bond last aforesaid, having survived to the said Stephen Codman, and the said Henry Codman holding one third thereof in the same trust, it was their duty, upon request, after the decease of the said Elizabeth Robison, to have surrendered and conveyed the same premises to the plaintiffs, as the devisees and heirs and representatives of the devisees thereof under the will of their ancestor, Thomas Robison, aforesaid, by such deeds of conveyance as counsel learned in the law might advise, and to have permitted the plaintiffs to enter upon and enjoy the same; saving to the said Henry Codman his part thereof, as one of the heirs of his mother, Hannah Codman, aforesaid.

And John P. Boyd, Esquire, of said Portland, lately appointed administrator of the goods and estate of said Thomas Robison, Jr., which were not before administered, is about to sell one third part of said trust property for the benefit of the creditors of his intestate, under the laws of Maine, claiming the same under said deed, as the estate of said intestate, and liable by law for the

payment of his debts, and at other times claiming one eighth part of the same, as the estate of his intestate as a devisee under the will of his father for the same purposes.

And Eliza Robison, widow of said Thomas Robison, Jr., claims dower in said one third part, and at other times in one eighth part, of said premises, under and by virtue of the laws of Maine, and of the deed and will aforesaid; and is about to sue in some of the judicial courts of Maine for the same.

Whereas the plaintiffs charge the contrary, and that the real estate, described in said deeds, came to the grantees Codman, Ilsley, and Robison in trust, and for the uses and purposes appointed and contained in the will of Thomas Robison aforesaid; that upon the decease of said grantees, Ilsley and Robison, the said estate survived to said Stephen Codman in trust as aforesaid.

That the said Henry Codman, by his said deed, took one third part thereof in the same trust, that the said Thomas Robison, Jr. at his decease, in the lifetime of his mother, had nothing in said lands and tenements which by law was liable to his creditors for the payment of his debts, nor of which his widow is dowable.

The bill closes in the usual form, praying for an injunction to restrain Boyd from selling any part of the premises, and Eliza Robison from claiming dower, &c.

The answers of Stephen Codman, Henry Codman, John P. Boyd, and Eliza Robison, admitted generally the facts stated in the bill.

*Simon Greenleaf* appeared for the plaintiffs; *Codman, Emery, and P. H. Greenleaf* for the defendants.

The case was submitted to the Court upon the bill and answers, without argument on either side, the bill having been originally brought by consent of all the parties concerned, for the purpose of obtaining the opinion of the Court upon the merits, and waiving all questions of form.

STORY J. This case having come on to be heard by consent of the parties upon the bill and answer, and having been submitted without argument, the object of all the parties being to obtain a decree upon the merits, I consider all objections as to the want of parties, and all formal objections whatsoever as waived. I am not certain, however, that I have a complete understanding of all the points intended to be raised by the parties. But, as far as I comprehend them, I shall proceed to state what I consider the legal results in a very brief manner.

The first question is, whether under the conveyance of Thomas Robison, the testator, to Arthur McLellan, and the conveyance of the latter to Stephen Codman, Thomas Robison, the son, and Robert Ilsley, the estate of Thomas Robison, the testator, in the premises passed to Codman, Robison, and Ilsley as joint tenants or as tenants in common. My opinion is, that, under the statute of Massachusetts respecting conveyances of this sort, [Stat. March 9th, 1786, (1785, ch. 62,)] the grantees took the estate as tenants in common, and not as joint tenants, upon the trusts specified in the conveyances. And if it had been otherwise, the conveyance of Stephen Codman to Henry Codman would have been a complete severance of the joint tenancy. So that Stephen Codman, Thomas Robison, the son, and Robert Ilsley, each took one third part of the premises, as tenants in common in fee, in trust; and the trust as to Stephen Codman has now devolved on his son, Henry Codman.

The next question is, whether Stephen Codman is entitled to hold, as tenant by the courtesy, the portion of the said premises so conveyed in trust, which came to his wife as heir and devisee of Thomas Robison, the father. I think he is. By the common law, the husband is entitled to courtesy in the *irust* estate of his wife, in the same manner as he would be if it were a legal estate. Our law is, as I understand it, the same.

The next question is, whether Stephen Codman is entitled to any portion of the same trust estate, as heir of his son Richard C. Codman. I am of opinion that he is not. The estate descended to Richard C. Codman from his mother on her decease, and he died *under age, unmarried, and without issue*. Under such circumstances, by the statute of Maine, as well as of Massachusetts, regulating descents, I think his share passed, not to his father, but to the other children of his mother. If he had died *over age*, it would have been otherwise, and his father would have been his heir.<sup>1</sup>

The next question is, whether John P. Boyd, as administrator of Thomas Robison, the son, has any right to sell any more of the trust estate conveyed to his intestate as aforesaid, by McLellan, than belonged to him as heir and devisee of his father, Thomas Robison; in other words, has he a right to sell the whole one third part vested in his intestate by the conveyance of McLellan, or only his interest in the trust estate according to the will of his father. My opinion is, that Boyd can sell no more of the estate than what belonged to his intestate as devisee of his father. An estate held by an intestate in trust for other persons, is not liable to be sold for payment of his own debts.

The next question is, whether Elizabeth Robison, the widow of Thomas Robison, the son, is entitled to dower in any part of the estate so held by her husband, under the conveyance of McLellan, and, if in any, what part. So far as her husband held the property merely in trust, it is not subject to dower, for estates held by the husband in trust are not liable to the dower of his wife. The only point worthy of consideration is, whether, so far as respected his own share in the trust estate under his father's will, there was not a merger of the trust estate in the legal estate, so as to unite them, and give him *pro tanto* a seisin in fee discharged of the trust. I rather think, that this is the true legal result, as the legal estate as to his share is co-extensive with the trust estate, that is, each is a fee. If so, Mrs. Robison would have been entitled to her dower in such share of her husband, (which the bill states to be one eighth part,) if her husband had survived his mother. But, as during the life-time of his mother he was seised only of his share in the *remainder or reversion* after her decease, his wife can take nothing in the premises by way of dower, for dower cannot be of a mere *remainder or reversion*.

1 R. C. Codman was in fact over twenty-one years of age at the time of his death; and the bill was subsequently amended so as to conform to the fact .

I am not aware of any other points intended to be raised by the parties. But if there be, it will be for them to suggest them before a decree is made.

Upon the foregoing views I am of opinion, that there ought to be an injunction to John P. Boyd against selling any more of the trust estate, than by the devise of the testator came to the share of his son, Thomas Robison, Jr.; that the plaintiffs are entitled to have a decree for their respective shares in the trust estate to be conveyed to them; that Stephen Codman has no title in the premises, except as tenant by the courtesy; and that Elizabeth Robison has no right or title to dower in the premises. The case ought to be referred to a master to consider and report, what conveyances ought to be made, and by whom, to the plaintiffs in the premises; and in the mean time, all further orders are to be reserved until the coming in of the master's report.

The District Judge concurs in this opinion, and therefore let a decree be entered accordingly.

*Note.* The parties at May Term, 1832, waived going to a master, and entered into arrangements, conforming exactly to the decree upon the merits.

## Appendix VIII

### Robert Hamilton

Publications of the Buffalo Historical Society, Volume 6, by Buffalo Historical Society (Buffalo, N.Y.), page 73-95.

[http://books.google.com/books?id=Fho8AAAAIAAJ&pg=PA75&dq=%22thomas+robison%22+%22richard+cartwright%22&hl=en&ei=zEeKTJOKAYH48AbTn5SrDA&sa=X&oi=book\\_result&ct=result&resnum=4&ved=0CEAQ6AEwAw#v=onepage&q=%22thomas%20robison%22%20%22richard%20cartwright%22&f=false](http://books.google.com/books?id=Fho8AAAAIAAJ&pg=PA75&dq=%22thomas+robison%22+%22richard+cartwright%22&hl=en&ei=zEeKTJOKAYH48AbTn5SrDA&sa=X&oi=book_result&ct=result&resnum=4&ved=0CEAQ6AEwAw#v=onepage&q=%22thomas%20robison%22%20%22richard%20cartwright%22&f=false)

#### ROBERT HAMILTON THE FOUNDER OF QUEENSTON



The warning which that royal scapegrace Prince Hal gave to his boon companion Falstaff, "List if thou canst hear the tread of travellers," might well be taken for their motto by those who would revive the memories of the past and reproduce the scenes of centuries that are fled; for though we may not share the optimistic faith of Shakespeare, who tells us by the false Duke of Milan's lips that "travellers ne'er did lie," yet without their aid historical research would oftentimes fail and old-time landmarks be forgotten. In this respect our Niagara frontier is fortunate, for the world-wide fame of the great cataract led many early travellers hither to tell their stories, each in his own way, and very often to our edification and advantage.

So it happened that in 1795 a French nobleman, the Duke de la Rochefoucault Liancourt, visited Niagara, and journeying from Fort Erie northward to Newark or West Niagara, a cluster of 100 houses on Mississauga Point where Niagara-on-the-Lake now stands, he paid his respects in passing to the little village of Queenston, which had sprung up at the beginning of the portage on the British side of the river leading around the falls to Chippewa.

He writes under date of June 22, 1795: "The roads from Fort Erie to Newark are tolerably open and lie for the most part over a sandy ground which renders it more easy to keep them in repair. The frequent passage to and fro in this part of the country does not destroy them. Such commodities as are destined for the upper country are unshipped in Queen's

Town, and goods expedited from it are embarked in this place. The different buildings constructed three years ago, consist of a tolerable inn, two or three good storehouses, some small houses, a block-house of stone covered with iron, and barracks which should be occupied by the regiment of General Simcoe, but which are now unoccupied, the regiment being quartered in another part of the province. Mr. Hamilton, an opulent merchant, who is concerned in the whole inland trade of this part of America, possesses in Queen's Town a very fine house built in the English style, a distillery and tan-yard. This merchant bears an excellent character; he is a member of the Legislature of Upper Canada, but at present in England."

Concerning the Honorable Robert Hamilton, who is thus introduced to us, Dr. William Canniff states in his "History of the Province of Ontario" (p. 598) that it is said he "died leaving an estate worth £200,000."

It seems a curious fact that so little should remain upon record concerning this founder of Queenston, a man who was of such importance at the time in which he lived, who was so intimately concerned in the politics of Upper Canada, whose business was so extended and prosperous, and who accumulated such extraordinary wealth for that early day. Some old letters from his pen which have lately come to light awakened a desire to know something more concerning him who wrote them, but the results of a careful research seem far from satisfactory and give but a meagre outline of his story.

He was the son of a Scotch clergyman, the Rev. John Hamilton of the old Dumfries family, born 1714, died 1797, who was minister of Bolton, Haddingtonshire, Scotland. A cousin had emigrated to America and was a hose-maker somewhere in New England, and it was to join him that young Robert Hamilton crossed the Atlantic at some time between 1760 and 1770.

Concerning his early career there is no record whatever, nor can we learn whether he went to Canada before the outbreak of the Revolution. Possibly, as in the case of his friend and associate **Richard Cartwright**, his loyalty to the Crown led him to leave rebellious New England when troubles threatened, for in June, 1779, we find him established as trader or factor at **Carleton Island** at the eastern end of Lake Ontario. In May, 1778, British troops detached from the garrisons at Niagara and Oswegatchie had taken possession of what had formerly been called Deer or Buck Island, changing its name in honor of General Guy Carleton, establishing a military post known as Fort Haldimand and building wharves and storehouses. Carleton Island then became the point for reshipment for stores of all kinds brought in bateaux from Montreal for the supply of the western posts during the continuance of the war. Here we have our first glimpse of Robert Hamilton in a letter written by him June 29, 1779, to Francis Goring, trader's clerk at Fort Niagara, informing him that the General had refused to allow passes for the merchants' goods going to the upper posts.

Niagara was a busy place in those days, for almost all goods for the upper posts had to pass that way and Lt. Col. Bolton, then in command, complained bitterly that the fort itself was "quite lumbered with merchandise" and that even the officers' barracks were filled with goods, causing him apprehension that this might be a temptation to the enemy to attack his isolated post.

Isolated it certainly was and Hamilton's correspondent, Francis Goring, who had lived there from August, 1776, as clerk for Edward Pollard, the leading trader and for his successors, **Captain Thomas Robison** and George Forsyth, wrote September 23, 1779: "This is a place which you may say is almost out of the world, in the woods, and frequented by nothing but Indians except the people of the garrison.

... At this place is carried on a great business which consumes every year £30,000 Sterling worth of merchandise of all sorts, which is mostly retailed to the Indians."

At this time there would seem to have been some business connection between these correspondents. Francis Goring had been in Edward Pollard's employment and although that successful trader had by 1779 accumulated a fortune that permitted him to return to England, some of his interests were doubtless still committed to Goring's care. September 14, 1779, the latter wrote to Hamilton: "Tobacco is a very scarce article at Detroit and sells at from eight to ten shillings a pound. I have made out another Indian account for £5808 17s. 9 ½ d., which is now gone to the Indian country to be certified," and Edward Pollard wrote to Goring from London, 27th March, 1780: "By this conveyance I send Mr. Douglas to assist you. He supplies the place of Mr. Hamilton who leaves you in June."

Among the Haldimand papers is a memorandum of "Goods belonging to Forsyth & Dyce, Merchts, Detroit, now laying at Carleton Island, April 20th, 1780, under charge of R. Hamilton."

It was probably about this time that he entered into partnership with **Richard Cartwright**, a young man of excellent education, born at Albany in 1759, whose thoughts had turned to the ministry, but who had accompanied his parents to Canada at the outbreak of the Revolution "and for a time attended **Colonel Butler** of the Rangers as his Secretary." Bishop Strachan in his sketch of Cartwright says: "At the solicitation of a near and worthy relation he formed a connection with the Honorable Robert Hamilton, a gentleman of such varied information, engaging manners and princely hospitality, as to be justly esteemed an honour to the Province. His memory is gratefully remembered by thousands whom his magnanimous liberality rescued from famine. The connection subsisted with great satisfaction to both parties for several years, when, on account of the extent of their business, a separation took place by mutual consent, Mr. Hamilton going to Niagara, and **Mr. Cartwright** remaining at Kingston; but their mutual regard and friendship was only dissolved by death."

In 1782 the settlement on the north shore of Lake Ontario at Catarauqui (Kingston) was in progress. A wharf was built and permanent buildings were being erected and apparently at this time the business of Hamilton and **Cartwright** was transferred from Carleton Island, as under date of November 2, 1782, Robert Hamilton gave an obligation to the Canadian Government "not to consider the house he has built (at Catarauqui) as private property, but subject to demolition if required by the King's service or to forfeiture in event of bad conduct."

The records do not show just when Robert Hamilton removed to Niagara. It is probable that the general trading and forwarding business in which Hamilton and **Cartwright** were engaged made it advisable that one of the partners should be at Niagara while the other remained at Kingston. A letter written by a Miss Powell during a journey from Montreal to Detroit in May, 1785, says: "Fort Niagara is by no means pleasantly situated. It is built close upon the lake which gains upon it so fast that in a few years they must be overflowed. There, however, we passed some days very agreeably at the house of a Mr. Hamilton, a sensible, worthy man. Mrs. Hamilton is an amiable, sweet little woman; I regretted very much she did not live at Detroit instead of at Niagara."

**Robert Hamilton was first married to Catherine Askin\***, widow of John Robertson, and their eldest son was born at Fort Niagara, in 1787. This was the first year of the "great famine" among the loyalists who had emigrated to Canada after the close of the war, and it is doubtless to his generous benefactions to those in distress at this time that Bishop Strachan so feelingly alludes.

For a biography of **Bro. John Askin**, father of Catherine, see **Appendix IX**.

Inasmuch as the British continued to hold possession of the western posts until 1796, thirteen years after the signing of the definitive treaty of peace, under which they should have been delivered over to the United States, the route of western travel remained unchanged for many years and provisions and stores for the British garrisons at Detroit and Michillimackinac, as well as the Indian goods and general supplies for the fur traders, continued to pass over the Niagara portage as they had since the capture of Fort Niagara by the British in 1759. The goods, securely packed for rough handling, were brought to the landing at Lewiston by small sailing vessels or by bateaux and were hoisted to the top of the "mountain" by Montresor's "cradles," then carted over the long portage road to Fort Schlosser and sent by boats to Fort Erie, where they were finally reshipped to their destination.

When it became evident that sooner or later the posts must be given up to the Americans, who would then control the old Niagara portage, the British traders and forwarders appreciated the need of a new road upon the Canadian side by which they could pass the falls on their way to the western lakes and as early as 1789 Robert Hamilton obtained permission to erect wharves and storehouses on the west side of the river as well as at Chippewa and Fort Erie. Accordingly a wharf was built on the west bank of the Niagara opposite the time-honored landing at Lewiston and a road laid out to Chippewa, which now supplanted Fort Schlosser as the point of transfer on the water route to Fort Erie. This now became "Fort Chippewa" and was protected by a small garrison. The new landing on the lower Niagara was at first called the "West landing," or more frequently "Landing of Niagara," until 1792, when under date of November 26th, we find one of Mr. Hamilton's letters dated "Landing—now Queenston." Doubtless the new name given in honor of Queen Charlotte was adopted at Robert Hamilton's suggestion. A stone blockhouse had been built, two or three good storehouses erected and gradually the route of travel around the falls was changed to the Canadian side of the river and Queenston became for half a century or more a busy spot of commercial importance, through which western traffic flowed and in later years the tides of western emigration, until with the building of railroads westward all this was again changed and of the once thriving village there remained only the sleepy and somewhat ruinous vestiges that we know today.

In 1800, when the English artist John Maude visited Niagara, he tells us that there were but two houses at Lewiston, one being the ferry house, but he was much impressed by what he saw at Queenston. "There is a portage," he says, "from this place to Chippewa, which employs numerous teams, chiefly oxen, each cart being drawn by two yoke of oxen or two horses; I passed great numbers on the road taking up bales and boxes and bringing down packs of peltries. Fourteen teams were at the wharf waiting to be loaded. Here were also three schooners."

Maude, however, had his own blunt British opinion of what the Duke de la Rochetoucault Liancourt had with fine French politeness called in 1795 "a tolerable inn." He says: "I sat down to a miserable dinner at Fairbank's Tavern, and after dinner sent my introductory letter to Col. Hamilton from his friend, Mr. Bache of New York, which procured me an invitation to supper. The goodness of the supper made amends for the badness of my dinner. Col. Hamilton has a good house and garden."\*

Besides the wharf and storehouse, the farm, the distillery and the tanyard which Robert Hamilton had established at Queenston, he had erected a handsome stone residence "in the English style" on the high bank overlooking the river, the site of which may still be marked on the pleasant grounds of "Halcyon," the summer residence of Richard K. Noye of Buffalo. This was apparently completed and occupied in 1791, for Captain Patrick Campbell, who visited Niagara in that year, writes, under date of December 8th: "Mr. Robert Hamilton, a gentleman of the first rank and property in the neighborhood, and now one of the Governor's council, came also to wait on me, and invite me to his house, an honor I readily embraced. He and Mrs. Hamilton were so very obliging as to go along with me in their own slea, to see the Grand Falls of Niagara," and he again notes, February 16, 1792, "Called at Mr. Hamilton's and arrived in the evening at Niagara."\*

One of the earliest glimpses of this new home comes to us from the diary of Mrs. Simcoe, who writes at "Niagara, 30th July, 1792: "We stopped and breakfasted at Mr. Hamilton's, a merchant who lives two miles from here at the landing, where the cargoes going to Detroit are landed and sent 9 miles to Ft. Chippewa. Mr. Hamilton has a very good stone house, the back rooms looking on the river. A gallery, the length of the house, is a delightful covered walk, both below and above in all weather."

Such a residence was a landmark on this new and wild frontier and was made the more beautiful and noteworthy from the generous hospitality with which its friendly doors were opened. It became an added pleasure to those oftentimes distinguished people who journeyed far to visit the great American cataract if they might be entertained at Queenston by Robert Hamilton, and here and there we find its acknowledgment, as we have already seen, in their published volumes of travel.

When the Duke of Kent, the father of Queen Victoria, visited Niagara in August, 1792, upon his return from the Falls, he was entertained at luncheon by Robert Hamilton, as we learn from the manuscript memoirs of Colonel John Clark, who calls him "our greatest man next to Simcoe."

A pleasant picture of festivity in that early day on the Niagara frontier as well as of its literary aspiration is the account of a wedding in the fine old house, on the night of St. Andrew's Day in 1799. Of this the following notice appeared in the Toronto *Constellation*, November 23, 1799:

"Married at the seat of the Hon. Mr. Hamilton at Queenston, on Sunday last, Mr. Thomas Dickson, merchant, to the amiable Mrs. Taylor, daughter of Captain Wilkinson, commanding Fort Erie.

"For thee, best treasure of a husband's heart,  
Whose bliss it is that thou for life art so ;  
That thy fond bosom bears a faithful part  
In every casual change his breast may know."

The *Upper Canada Gazette* also pays tribute to the charms of the bride to whom the epithet "amiable" is again applied, and although this dignified journal does not "drop into poetry" as did its starry rival, it gives the added news, that upon this occasion "Hon. R. Hamilton gave a most elegant dinner; 30 Scottish gentlemen and 12 others; no dinner given in Canada has been equal."

From the year 1789, when the West landing was built and the new portage begun, Robert Hamilton controlled the Canadian transfer business on the Niagara and prospered therein. Besides the storehouses and other structures at Queenston he had erected similar buildings at Chippewa and others at Fort Erie. In 1795, when the Duke de la Rochefoucault Liancourt visited the latter place he was but poorly impressed with its defensive worth. He says there were a few rude wooden blockhouses surrounded with rotting palisades, occupied by officers and soldiers; four of a like sort outside the palisades used by the workmen and "a large magazine or storehouse belonging to the King." Standing apart from this he describes a storehouse "belonging to a private gentleman in which are housed the goods for Detroit and the West, as well as those coming from thence for Niagara, Kingston, Montreal or Quebec." This was Hamilton's warehouse and a passage in the description indicates in a measure the extent of his forwarding business. "The owner of the storehouse hires at times about twenty Canadians for the shipping and unshipping of the goods, for carrying them into the magazines and transporting the boats by land to the lower country."

It would appear that four years later, in 1799, Mr. Hamilton made further important and costly improvements at Fort Erie to meet the necessities of commerce. A letter from R. Hamilton & Co., Queenston, April 24, 1805, addressed to James Green, Esq., Military Secy., York, shows that the firm had been requested to execute papers that would, if need compelled, place all this frontier property at the disposal of the Government. Against this Mr. Hamilton protests, reciting the permission he had received in 1789 to erect these buildings and that no restrictions were then imposed, but he relied upon just treatment and the encouragement of commerce. "On the faith of this Permission we did at a very considerable expense erect wharves and storehouses along this communication and through them we have for the length of fifteen years, carried on the transfer business of the country without question or any interruption or interference on the part of Government, or of any of the Military Commandants of the Posts."

He adds: "We do not object to signing the papers required for the stores at this place, and at the Chippewa, where our erections are of Wood, and consequently of less value. But what can we do with those at Fort Erie, where seven years ago, in the firm faith of what is before stated, in the view and with the perfect knowledge of the Engineer and all the Military in these parts, we have erected a wharf and stone storehouse in a situation, where a store of other materials could not properly stand, at the expense of not less

than four thousand dollars, and we are now called upon to declare under our hands that in so doing we have forfeited all right to the permission granted us of possessing a lott there. Surely a concession so unreasonable will never be required of us."

There is nothing to show that the exigencies of the times required any destruction of these valuable properties until the War of 1812 swept the frontier, which was after Mr. Hamilton's death.

By proclamation, dated July 24, 1788, Lord Dorchester, Governor General of Canada, divided Upper Canada into four districts: Lunenburg, extending from the Lower Canada line to the river Thames; Mecklenburgh, from the Thames to the Trent; Nassau, from the Trent to Long Point on Lake Erie, and Hesse, covering the remainder of Western Canada, including Detroit. He appointed a judge and a sheriff for each district and made Robert Hamilton Judge of Nassau, while his old friend and partner, Richard **Cartwright**, became Judge of Mecklenburgh. As military law had hitherto prevailed, these were the first courts of justice and the first magistrates in the province and concerning them Canniff says, "The Judge seems to have been clothed with almost absolute power. He dispensed justice according to his own understanding or interpretation of the law, and a Sheriff or Constable stood ready to carry out the decision, which in his wisdom he might arrive at."

When the separation of the provinces occurred and the Government of Upper Canada was first organized in July, 1792, by Colonel **John Graves Simcoe**, the pioneer Lieutenant Governor under Lord Dorchester, a Legislative Council, consisting of nine members, was summoned, Robert Hamilton and **Richard Cartwright** being of the number. During his administration Governor Simcoe acknowledged his indebtedness to Mr. Hamilton for much valuable information received from him respecting matters of commerce, particularly regarding the Indian trade, but both Hamilton and **Cartwright** found themselves much at variance with the Governor, whom they thought extravagant in his caprices, desiring measures "inapplicable to the state of society in this country." This awakened his lively displeasure and caused him with great injustice to represent both as being "inimical to Government" and to denounce Hamilton as an "avowed Republican." Concerning this **Mr. Cartwright** wrote October 1, 1794, "I will not hesitate to assert that his Majesty has not two more loyal subjects, and in this province none more useful, than Mr. Hamilton and myself, nor shall even the little pitiful jealousy that exists with respect to us make us otherwise. And though I hope we shall always have fortitude enough to do our duty, we are by no means disposed to form cabals, and certainly have not, nor do, intend wantonly to oppose or thwart the Governor."

Dr. Canniff states that prior to 1799, when **Dr. Strachan** came to Kingston, the only able teacher in Upper Canada was the Rev. John Stuart of that place. "Hon. Robert Hamilton of Queenston had at that time a brother living in Scotland and it was through him that an offer was made first to the celebrated Dr. Chalmers. He did not desire to come and mentioned the name of his friend, Strachan, to whom the offer was then made and who decided to come." At a later day he became the first Bishop of Toronto.

Mr. Hamilton's first wife having died in 1796, he was again **married to Mary [Maria] Herkimer [bapt. 13 Apr 1769]\*, widow of Neil McLean**. He had five children by his first wife and three by his second. He died at Queenston, March 8, 1809. The *York Gazette* of March 22, 1809, says: "His public utility, benevolence and conciliating disposition will render his death long and feelingly regretted."

\* Mary Herkimer [Herchmer] was the daughter of Johan Jost Herkimer [Hanyost Herchmer or Herchemer] (1732-1795), brother of General Nicholas Herikimer.

<http://my.tbaytel.net/bmartin/kingstn1.htm>

**Neil McLean**. He was a J.P., and a member of the Land Board of Mecklenburg (and the Midland District) from its inception and of that of the County of Frontenac down to the time of its abolition. He was also made a Judge of the Court of Common Pleas with Dr. Stuart and Mr. James Clark, on June 14, 1788. Apparently he had been an officer of the 84th Regt. and had been Acting Commissary General, which was the reason for his daughter Harriet receiving 3,000 acres of land "as the Devisee of her late Father," on the 18th of November, 1797.

For this same quantity of land he had himself applied to His Excellency in Council on October 17, 1792 (Q Series, Public Archives of Canada, Vol.282,I, pp.263-4), alleging that he had served His Majesty for thirty-four years and that he had been reduced in 1783 from 20 shillings per day to seven and sixpence. He represented also that he had been long resident in the Province. "Resolved," reads the entry, "That the honourable Executive Council would feel themselves extremely happy, could they comply with the prayer of the petition. But they are pleased to order that he shall have a Grant of Twelve Hundred Acres and in Consideration of his having been a faithful Servant of Government, they are pleased to Order that Mrs. Mary McLean have a Grant also of Eight Hundred Acres." This was on July 10, 1793. (Ibid., pp. 324-5).

He owned Lot 2 in the town of Kingston and he made representations to Council, on July 24, 1793, that "Occupancy of the Beach in the front of the same by any other Person would greatly lessen the Value of his Property." Accordingly it was "Ordered that, if any application be made for the same [it is] to be refused to Mr. McLean's Memorial" (Land and State Book A, p.126).

[http://freepages.genealogy.rootsweb.ancestry.com/~ancestorsofcedric/dec\\_herki/pafg03.htm#3378](http://freepages.genealogy.rootsweb.ancestry.com/~ancestorsofcedric/dec_herki/pafg03.htm#3378)

Johan (John) Jost Herkimer originated from the Mohawk Valley in New York. He was born in Little Falls and brought up in what came to be known as Herkimer fort. He lived on the Mohawk River where he had 510 acres. He owned an additional 300 acres of uncultivated land in Holland's Patent.

John was politically a Tory, which meant that he was a Loyalist and supported the British in the coming conflict in the War of Independence. He was imprisoned by "the Whigs" from May 12, 1776 to March 4, 1777; after being released on bail he joined the British at Niagra and **served under Colonel Butler**. He joined with the forces of **Colonel Barry St. Leger** on the expedition to Fort Stanwix and on August 6, 1777, fought at the Battle of Oriskany (Aurisco) against Rebel American forces commanded by his brother, **General Nicholas Herkimer** (1728-1777). Nicholas was mortally wounded in the battle.

John served afterwards in the Commissariat and as a Captain in the bateaux. His property was confiscated. His losses included one of his slaves, Richard Buck, who died while serving with Butler's Rangers. He estimated his losses at £2,939 sterling and received £1,815 sterling in compensation.

He appears on the Old United Empire Loyalist List and the following entry is made regarding himself and family: Herchimer, Jost Captain.... Midland District, daughters Catharine Markland, Jane Anderson, **Mary Hamilton**; sons Jacob, Joseph, Lawrence, Nicholas & Lieut. George P.L. 1786 - who is Dead  
Later he changed his name to Hanyost Herchmer or Herchemer. Both spellings have been used.  
Funeral was held Aug 17, 1795, St. George's Church, Kinston, Upper Canada; Burials 66. Aug 17, 1795: Hanzooost Herchmer

Johan married 2 Maria Van Allen 1 d/o Laurens Van Allen and Annatje Hogeboom on 18 Mar 1758. Maria was born 3 on 26 Apr 1735 in Ulster County, NY province, New England. She died 4 on 28 Aug 1805 in Kingston, Upper Canada.

They had the following children:

- i Johan Nicholas Herchmer
- ii Jacob Herchmer d. in 1804 in Lake Ontario onboard the Speedy.
- iii Catharine Herchmer
- iv George Herchmer.
- v Jane Herchmer b. 1763; d. 18 Apr 1850. m. Joseph Anderson.
- vi Lawrence Herchmer
- vii **Mary Herchmer; m1. Neil McLean; m2. Robert Hamilton**
- iii Joseph Herchmer

The letters which follow are selected from a considerable number recently found, covering Robert Hamilton's correspondence at intervals from 1789 to 1799 with **Mr. Porteous**, a merchant at Little Falls, N. Y. **John Porteous**, a native of Perth, Scotland, had come to America about the year 1761, and had been associated with **James Sterling and Phyn & Ellice** of Schenectady in the fur trade at Detroit and Michillimackinac until the beginning of the Revolutionary War. While the British army occupied New York he was engaged in general merchandizing there, but after the evacuation went to Nova Scotia, where he remained until about 1788, when he returned to the State of New York and still retaining a connection with James Phyn and **Alexander Ellice** of London, took up lands at the Little Falls on the Mohawk River, where he built a flouring mill and carried on a trading business until his death in 1799..

When the correspondence began Hamilton and **Cartwright** were the leading merchants at Fort Niagara; the loyalist emigration from the United States had settled the Canadian border; there was a small village on the western bank of the Niagara River opposite the old fort, largely settled by officers and men who had been enrolled in **Butler's Rangers**; the three years of famine and destitution were about ended; the British held the western posts with unyielding tenacity in despite of all negotiations for their cession, and exerted every endeavor to keep the Indians as their allies and to maintain a firm grasp upon the western fur trade.

At this time Hamilton was seeking permission to build his wharf and storehouse at the West landing, and his letters are of interest as giving occasional glimpses of life and its doings on this distant frontier, of some of the men concerned therein and of his own habit of thought and prudent judgment in public as well as private affairs.

In September, 1789, John Richardson, who had formerly been intimately associated with **John Porteous** at New York, now engaged in the Indian trade at Montreal and later a member of the first Legislative Council of Quebec, visited the western trading posts and wrote: "Col. Hunter has left Niagara and is succeeded by Col. Harris. . . . The forts in the Upper Country are all undergoing a repair this year, so that there appears no idea of delivering them over to Jonathan, and to take them by force would not be an easy business for him, were he so inclined." At Niagara he had made the acquaintance of Robert Hamilton, whose letters now begin.

NIAGARA, 28 Oct. 89.

DEAR SIR: The enclosed, from my friend Mr. Richardson was intended to recommend me to your Kind Civilities. I have occasion instantly to put these to the test, by troubling you to Recover for some persons here, a sum of money due by a Capt. Bend Frey, late of this place, but now residing in your neighborhood. He is intitled to half pay as Captain in Col. Butler's Rangers. I now inclose a power of Attorney by which he constitutes **Mesrs. Phyn & Ellice** irrevocably as his Agents. Also an Assignation of this half pay, by which he proposes to pay his Creditors and an obligation to put the Vouchers for this regularly into your hands as they become due. Lest these should fail he has granted a Bond also payable to you for same sum, by which we presume you may in force the other, should he prove backward in delivering the Vouchers. These when obtained will you be so oblidging to take to your own Account and have the Goodness to answer my dr(a)fts for the Amount, which shall only be given when you inform me you are in Cash for the same. My principal wish in settling it in this way is to provide a little fund to answer occasionally small demands due by persons with you. The terms of Agency I leave entirely to yourself. I will Account with the other Creditors here for the separate Amounts due them. For all this trouble I can only plead your Goodness, and my own willingness to serve you whenever Occasion shall put it in my power.

With Sincere Respect I remain, Dear Sir,  
Your most humble Servt.,

R- HAM1LTON.

Mr. John Porteous.

This Captain Bernard Frey, sometimes called Barent Frey, was a member of a prominent family in the Mohawk Valley which had become bitterly divided at the outbreak of the Revolution. His brother, Major John Frey, became an officer in the American army, while another brother, **Colonel Hendrick Frey**, who had fought bravely in the French war, retained his loyalist sympathies throughout the struggle for independence, but took no active part on either side. When the war broke out Bernard Frey, with his nephew, Philip R. Frey (son of **Col. Hendrick Frey**), went to Canada and himself became a captain in **Butler's Rangers**. He fought at the battle of Oriskany and later in all the fierce border forays at Wyoming, Cherry Valley and on the Mohawk, and Stone's life of

Brant publishes the extraordinary statement of an eye witness that when Major John Frey was made captive, Bernard attempted to take his brother's life and was only restrained by force. He received a large grant at Whitby from the Crown, and lived until 1813 when he was killed at Newark by an American cannon ball from Fort Niagara. By the assignment and bond which were enclosed with this letter it appears that he then owed Hamilton & Cartwright £243, Street & Butler £156 18s. 9 ½ d., John Burch £109 9s. 11 ½ d., John Thompson £10 12d. and Philip Stedman £5 10s., New York currency, all of these parties being named as merchants at Niagara.

Several letters now passed between Mr. Hamilton and his correspondent with reference to Captain Frey's affairs and the following alludes to another similar case:

NIAGARA, Deer. 10, 1790.

GENTLEMEN: I am favored with yours pr **Mr. McEwan** and have charged him Two pounds five shillings and nine pence York agreeable to your request, which sum is at your Credit with me. When Leisure permits I will thank you to mention if Capt. Frey has given his six months Vouchers to June to you or if there is a Chance of getting those to 24th Inst without trouble.

Permitt me also to mention that another of our Captains —Andrew Bradt—is now down with you and may perhaps be induced to raise money on his Vouchers. He has Assigned over the whole of his half pay to the Creditors here for some years to come, which Assignment is lodged with his Agents, who are appointed irrevocably, so that his Vouchers can not serve, but thro their hands. This for your Guidance should he apply to you—I would not, however, wish his Situation generally known.

The present will be handed you by Lieut. Gillespie of the 65th Regt who has resided at this post for some time and who now passes your place in his Rout to New York. You will Confer a particular favor on me by showing him any Civility in your power. Should1 any Circumstance occur that might induce him to apply for pecuniary Assistance you may depend on his Bills on Canada or London being duly honor'd as should those on me should he think proper to draw.

Excuse this trouble and believe me Gentlemen,  
Your most humle Svt.

R. HAMILTON.

Messrs. **Porteous** & Pollard.

The next letter touches upon public affairs and was written from the new "Landing of Niagara," whither the changes in his business matters frequently called him at this time.

LANDING OF NIAGARA, May 226., 1791.

DEAR SIR: I am this day favored with yours of 10th March and 2nd Inst, and take the earliest oportunity of returning my thanks for your kind attention to Capt. Freys Business. The Intelligence of the fate of his Bills comes most oportunely to help me to settle the affairs of a Major Nellis lately deceased in this Province and who has left considerable property, part of it to his two sons residing in your Neighborhood. Another son he has had at the School of Schenectady for some time and for his Expenses I have valued on you at 30 days for Forty-five pounds, Ten Shillings—In favor of John H. Nellis. I have also valued on you for £20 positively and for thirty-two pounds Ten— when you shall be in Cash for the Vouchers before mentioned to 24th Dec. A third son (name unknown) has from the same Estate to Receive £190 York. For any part of which should it suit you as a Merchant to deal with him, I shall be happy in securing you, prior to his coming here to settle the Business. I directly forwarded Mr. Burchs Letter as you desire. He lives 10 miles from this and I'm afraid may not hear in time of the present oportunity to Embrace it.

Our lattest Accounts from Britain say nothing as yet about giving up these posts. Our present Care in repairing them with the utmost diligence seem to point out the wish of making them worth something as Military posts when given up. Should such an Event take place the Pleasure of hearing from, perhaps Occasionally seeing our friends from your Quarter would in part recompense the Chagrin it might otherwise Occasion. Do me the honor of Accepting my Drafts and Believe me

Dear Sir Your most hum. Servt.

R. HAM1LTON.

John Porteous, Esq.

**Major Robert Nellis**, to whom the foregoing letter refers, had been an officer of **Butler's Rangers** and from the documents found with the letter it appears that the drafts in favor of his children were duly accepted and paid. The next letter, written on the eve of Colonel Simcoe's arrival to take up the reins of government in the newly-created Upper Province, is of much interest as indicative of the thoughtful judgment of one of its leading men deeply concerned for the best welfare of his country.

NIAGARA, 2nd August, 1791.

DEAR SIR: The Oportunity which hands you this, has been delayed for a Month waiting a return boat to your place: during all that time we have not had one come this way. I was duly favored with yours of 2nd June covering the different papers which Mr. Burch and his wife had to sign. Fortunately Mr. Richardson from Montreal was here at the time and took on himself the whole charge of seeing them executed, a Circumstance I was much pleased at, as he from his particular acquaintance with this Business, obviated some difficulties I should otherwise have been hampered with. You will now from Mr. Douglas the Bearer hereof, receive all these papers settled I trust to your satisfaction, if any thing remains undone I will be gratified on Receiving your further Commands.

Mr. Douglas is a young man who has resided with us for some time past, he is now called home to Scotland on some family Business. He will be thankful to you for your advice in the best mode of getting from Schenectady to New York, where he has acquaintances. I believe the Rout no way difficult but he is rather a Stranger to travelling.

Mr. Macomb with his large family and his boat which we denominated the little Ark, as Containing some thing of every thing, passed this and got safe to Detroit in perhaps as short a time as that voyage was ever compleated in. He found every thing there as he wished, and is now I believe settled very much to his satisfaction. The English papers which you see, Contain every thing new we

have in the Country. By these you will observe we are on the point of getting a New Constitution, with a separate Government for this new Country, which as not involving us in Canadian Politicks promises to be of essential use. We have some reason to hope that Colonel Simpcoe our proposed Governor may come to this Country by the way of your Seaports, authorized to settle with Congress the doubtful line of division which must be a pleasant thing to both countries. **Capt. Joseph Brant** after having attended for some time the Councils of the Western Indians at the Miamis River, sett of a few days ago for Quebec, attended with several of the Chiefs from that Quarter. As they avowedly go to ask Lord Dorchester's advice and as we well know his and Governments strong desire for peace, we would gladly hope that it may be the means of bringing on an Accomodation. Much will depend upon the moderation of your side. You have strength and power I doubt not to drive them to the last extremities—but when you consider that most assuredly their next resource will be to accept the strong offers and pressing Instances of the Spaniards to settle on their side, and that the only Motive for these offers is to form a barrier between you and them, which by restraining your frontier Settlements, will keep you at a Distance from them, of which they are so jealous,—when you consider the present animosity of the Indians, agravated by their loss of Lands and every thing dear to them, Policy and humanity will perhaps dictate an accommodation on Reasonable terms as preferable to the greatest success which may probably entail a cruel predatory war on the defenceless settlers of your Western boundary, for many years. My wish for peace has led me further into the field of Politicks than I had intended. I now have done.

Inclosed please receive a draft on Messrs. Todd & McGill for £20 York for four bills of 100/ each received by **Mr. Macomb** from your Mr. Pollard, due 10th Oct. when the paper money of this Country is payable. At your Leisure will you have the goodness to favor me with a state of the little transactions between us, that I may make our books correspond with yours. I have to thank you for your kind Acceptance of my drafts in favor of Mr. Nellis.

With Sincere Respect I remain  
Dear Sir Your most Obedient and very humble Servt

R. HAMILTON.

John Porteous, Esq.

This letter gives expression to the feeling which was common at this time among the better class of British traders at the western posts. Aside from such high motives as we may well believe influenced a man of Mr. Hamilton's character, those of self-interest led the fur traders to deprecate a continuance of hostilities between the Americans and the Indians. It was simply ruinous to their trade. The home Government also wanted peace. So long as they could manage to retain the posts, His Majesty's ministers were earnest in their desire not only to maintain a strict neutrality, but to do all within their power to terminate hostilities. And yet there was much smouldering bitterness of feeling which was but poorly concealed. Three months after this letter was written **St. Clair** met his crushing defeat by the Indians at the Wabash and Captain Patrick Campbell, whose visit to Fort Niagara was in the following month, December, 1791, tells of the jubilation with which the officers of that garrison received the news.

Throughout the two succeeding years such feelings of hostility as existed were for the most part suppressed or at least were passive, but conditions changed very greatly with the news of war between Great Britain and France in 1793. British impressment of American seamen and British embargoes upon American commerce aroused much resentment; the arrival and ill-advised conduct of Genet was the cause of much irritation, and by the spring of 1794 the relations between Great Britain and America had become seriously strained, a state of affairs which was unfortunately reflected in the imprudent action of Lord Dorchester, the Canadian Governor, who, in an address to the Indians, February 10th, expressed his belief that war would be declared within the year and added, "our patience is almost exhausted." In April Lieutenant Governor Simcoe went so far as to build and garrison a fort in the heart of the Miami country to the great encouragement of the hostile tribes and to the great disgust of **General Wayne**, who found the British rangers fighting with the Indians at the Fallen Timbers, August 20, 1794, when he routed both so effectually as to put a stop once and for all to Indian hostilities and to bring a lasting peace to the border. It is interesting at such a time to note the attitude of Mr. Hamilton, who was then one of the Legislative Council and evidently not in sympathy with Governor Simcoe.

DEAR SIR: I have received several of your late favors which my present time will not permit me to Reply. I, however, with you most sincerely deprecate a war between Britain and America as an Event that both parties must most essential lose by, and neither so far as I can judge have the least chance of Gain.

I remain most Respectfully, Dear Sir,  
Your most hum. Servt.

R. HAMILTON.

QUEENSTON, May 28th, 1794.

On the 26th of August, 1794, he again writes: "Our crops are now all in and we have great plenty most earnestly praying for its concomitant Blessing *Peace*."

A fortnight later (September 6, 1794,) he writes: "I sincerely hope with you that all chance of warr between these Neighboring Countries is now at an End. In that case I have some hopes of paying you a Visit this ensuing winter on my way to England."

Fortunately his hopes were realized. Wayne had conquered peace for the borders and the successful negotiations of Jay in England in that year resulted in the treaty with Great Britain which bears his name. The numerous letters which Mr. Hamilton had written during 1792 and 1793 referred, in the main, to transactions of business or courtesy; the passing eastward of friends who were commended to his correspondent's kind offices; the non-arrival of Indian messengers who had proven untrustworthy, etc. Prior to the autumn of 1792 they are dated at "Landing of Niagara," but in November the name of Queenston is first used and the letter is of interest as showing how isolated the Niagara frontier was a century ago and how slowly the news of the great world reached it.

LANDING—*noiv* QUEENSTON, NOV. 26, 1792.

DEAR SIR: I am favored with yours of 31st ulto. and thank you for the news papers sent. The present very unsettled state of Europe makes [us] wait with much Anxiety for Accounts from home and as the communication by the Lower Province is very tedious as well

as uncertain we are projecting with the profered aid of a Capt. Williamson of the Genesee Country to establish thro that place a Post once a Fortnight to New York. In the Event of this taking place I have directed a New York paper to be regularly sent me and I purpose getting a London paper now sent to Quebec transferred to this Rout. Will you have the Goodness to inform me if the post passes your place and of the Expencc that will attend the postage of a paper from New York to your place, and to the Genesee. If it would afford the smallest amusement to you I would most willingly direct the London paper to be addressed to your Care.

Accept my best thanks for your attention to the Mill stones ordered from Schenectady. Their Amount with the charges on them shall be remitted by the earliest oportunity after receiving the Account.

With much respect I remain,

Dear Sir, your very Humble Servt,

R. HAMILTON.

Besides his store at Little Falls, **John Porteous** had built a custom mill for Mohawk Valley trade and might very safely be entrusted with the purchase of the pair of Esopus millstones "four feet four in diameter" which Mr. Hamilton had ordered for "a neighbor," and also with the further commission of February 5, 1793, "I will thank you for procuring for me a Boulting Cloth of the best Quality for doing Country work. To you as a Brother Miller I need not be more particular in my directions. I wish it by the earllest boat."

In a letter of January 27, 1794, he writes: "Will you have the goodness to inform me what you know of the property in Land or otherwise belonging to the children of **the late Sir Wm. Johnson by Mary Brant**, particularly of that portion pertaining to the eldest daughter, **Elizabeth, late the wife of Robert Kerr**. I am sorry to inform you that the poor woman died some days ago in childbed."

This refers to **Dr. Robert Kerr**, who had been a surgeon in the British army and now resided near Niagara. His own letters preserved with these, show that in 1795 he made **Mr. Porteous** his attorney to sell the Mohawk river lands and those in the Royal Grant which his wife had inherited from her distinguished father.

The flourishing fruit orchards of the lower Niagara had their beginning about this time, for March 9, 1794, Mr. Hamilton wrote: "I have this day sent a small sum of money to our friend, **Mr. Alexander Macomb** of New York to be laid out in Fruit trees from the nursery of Mr. Prince on Long Island on account of a Society established here for the purpose of promoting Agriculture. I have taken the liberty to desire these to be addressed to your care in Schenectady. Will you have the goodness to direct Mr. Miller oblidgingly to forward these if possible by the very first boat that may come to this place, as it is of much consequence to have them here early in the season."

Under the operation of Jay's treaty Fort Niagara was finally delivered over to the United States August 11, 1796, but the only effect of this long anticipated and long postponed event which appears in Mr. Hamilton's letters is a reference to a claim against Philip Stedman sent him for collection, concerning which he says that Stedman is now a resident of the United States and difficult to reach by processes of law. The letters from this time onward deal mostly with personal affairs, though they contain frequent mention of familiar names. His kinsfolk and associates, William and Thomas Dickson, are commended to his correspondent's kind offices. Judge Powell carries a letter of introduction referring to those civilities "which you so kindly show to every body from this Quarter." At another time he says: "Our Chief Justice, Mr. Ellensley, has mentioned more than once his sense of your Kindness while they were detained at the Little Falls." The boats that go down to Schenectady must come back well laden, and scythes and axes, woolen checks and tea, nankeens and casks of nails, indigo, candles and French brandy snuggle together cheek by jowl when the bateaux return and doubtless both of the thrifty Scotchmen profit thereby.

It is certainly in a spirit of thankfulness that Robert Hamilton closes his letter of Sept. 5, 1798, "Having nothing new to offer from this remote corner, where however, thank God, we enjoy more peace and as much plenty as falls to the Lott of most of our Brethren of Mankind, I conclude," etc.

A few months **later, in March, 1799, John Porteous died**, and although Robert Hamilton survived him for a decade, it was perhaps fortunate that he did not live to see within four short years his dreams of peace rudely shattered, contending armies in bloody strife at his very door, his own home destroyed and the beautiful Niagara border, the region that he loved, devastated by the stern vicissitudes of relentless war.

## Appendix IX

John Askin

[http://www.biographi.ca/009004-119.01-e.php?&id\\_nbr=2242&interval=25&&PHPSESSID=ctaar1ahgmp01t4suf5agqvf2](http://www.biographi.ca/009004-119.01-e.php?&id_nbr=2242&interval=25&&PHPSESSID=ctaar1ahgmp01t4suf5agqvf2)

**ASKIN (Erskine), JOHN**, fur trader, merchant, office holder, and militia officer; b. 1739 in Aughnacloy (Northern Ireland), son of James Askin, a shopkeeper, and Alice Rea (Rae); d. 1815 in Sandwich (Windsor), Upper Canada.

According to family tradition, the Askins were related to John Erskine, 23rd Earl of Mar, whose unsuccessful revolt in 1715 forced some of the family to move to Ireland from Scotland. John Askin came to North America in 1758 and was a sutler with the British army at Albany, N.Y. Following the capitulation of New France he entered the western fur trade and formed a series of partnerships, the most notable of which included Major Robert Rogers. Bankrupted by Pontiac's uprising of 1763, the firm was dissolved, but Askin was not cleared of his debts until 1771. Meanwhile, some time in the mid 1760s Askin had moved to Michilimackinac (Mackinaw City, Mich.). He ran a trading store in the settlement, was commissary for the garrison, and farmed. It was at Michilimackinac that he formed the close ties with traders Isaac TODD, James McGILL, and Alexander Henry that were to be of such significance in his business and personal life. He also established a cordial relationship with Arent Schuyler DePeyster\*, commandant during the 1770s, and had likely been on good terms with his predecessors as well. Not only were such friendships valuable in themselves to Askin; they were also important to his economic interests. Commandants were in a position to regulate trade with the Indians, allocate shipping space (private vessels being prohibited on the Great Lakes during and after the American

revolution), and tacitly approve illegal purchases of land from the Indians. In 1780 a conflict with Patrick SINCLAIR, who had recently arrived to take charge at Michilimackinac, may have been instrumental in Askin's decision to move to Detroit (Mich.).

In 1781 Askin signed a co-partnership agreement with merchants **Robert HAMILTON** and **Richard CARTWRIGHT**. He was to take care of the business (selling supplies to the Indian trade and the garrisons and buying furs) at Detroit and the upper posts while Hamilton and Cartwright managed affairs at Fort Niagara (near Youngstown, N.Y.). The firm of Todd and McGill was to look after the Montreal aspects of the concern. When the co-partnership was dissolved in 1784 it was indebted to Todd and McGill for £9, 261. That same year Askin entered into partnership with William Robertson, a Detroit merchant, and this arrangement was not terminated until 1787. Meanwhile, in 1786, Askin joined with five other Detroit firms in the Miamis Company, an attempt to bring to the trading business south of the Great Lakes the efficiency and profitability of the North West Company. Circumstances were different, however. The animal population was declining and the Indians were in a state of more or less open warfare with the Americans [see Michikinakoua]. Fur exports from Detroit continued to drop – from 5,000 packs in 1784 to 1,900 in 1796. By 1789 the Miamis Company was dead. Askin was becoming increasingly indebted to his Montreal suppliers Todd and McGill and Alexander Henry but, although the situation prompted a number of requests for payment, the friendly relationships never deteriorated and these merchants, now among the foremost in Canada, continued to shield Askin from financial ruin.

Askin was not oblivious to the precarious state of the fur trade and he made many efforts to generate income from other sources. In 1788 the British had opened the Great Lakes to private vessels, and Askin took the opportunity to go into the shipping business. In 1793, probably through the influence of Todd and McGill, he obtained a contract to supply corn and flour to the NWC. Selling provisions to the garrison was always important to a merchant and from 1791 to 1795 particularly another chance of sales to the government presented itself – the furnishing of supplies to the Indians who had gathered on the Miamis (Maumee) River to make a last stand against the Americans. Askin did not neglect these opportunities.

Much of Askin's hope for prosperity seems to have been pinned on his land speculations. As early as 1789 Todd and McGill reproved him for having £8,000 tied up in real property. "It is more than any man in business should keep from the circulation of his Trade and in the part of the Country where yours is placed the tenure of it is but uncertain . . .," wrote McGill, advising him to sell at least half what he owned. In the 1790s, however, Askin engaged in even larger scale speculation. By 1794 the British government had agreed to evacuate the posts south of the Great Lakes that it had retained – after the 1783 treaty with the United States, and many British residents of Detroit tried to accumulate land holdings from the Indians before the transfer to American authority occurred. With his son John, Patrick McNiff, and others he was a member of a partnership that acquired from the Indians a huge tract along the south shore of Lake Erie – the Cuyahoga Purchase. He was also involved in an attempt to get title to the entire lower peninsula of Michigan. The American government opposed these schemes and both came to nothing. Over the years Askin succeeded in accumulating numerous properties in Upper Canada, which was to become his home after 1802. As a merchant he was in a favourable position to acquire land for debts, and no doubt by this means as well as through various purchases he built up his holdings. From 1791 to 1794 he sat on the district land board, which dealt with the location of claims and title to them. Either he or his son John was appointed in 1798 to the Heir and Devisee Commission, a body that was to rule on the validity of certain types of claim. Both offices would have made their holder well informed about what land might be available for purchase.

From the American revolution to 1796 Detroit was under military government, with little civil jurisdiction. In 1789 Askin became a justice of the peace there, and in this capacity took part in the enforcement of "such regulations . . . as are generally practiced in the internal polity of the towns of Quebec and Montreal and which are most conducive to prevent public nuisances, and to preserve the health and convenience of the inhabitants." Although Askin continued to reside in Detroit after it was turned over to the Americans in 1796, he chose to remain a British subject and became a JP for the Western District of Upper Canada in 1796.

In the spring of 1802 Askin moved to Sandwich, a change of location he had apparently been intending to make for some time. Although much of his land passed to Todd and McGill in payment of his debts, they gave him back the property on which he established his estate, Strabane, near Sandwich, and he acted as land agent for them. He continued to hold extensive lands of his own, acquiring the nickname the Count of Kent. As in his early years he took a great interest in farming, recording in a diary the day-to-day activities of his farm. He seems to have lived in considerable comfort. An inventory of his estate in 1787 listed among other things carriages, silver plate, mahogany furniture, and a well-stocked library.

Although Askin's first three children, John, **Catherine**, and Madelaine, were probably born to the Indian slave Manette (Monette) whom he freed in 1766, he made no distinction between them and the nine children of his marriage to Marie-Archange Barthe, contracted at Detroit on 21 June 1772. His connection with the Barthes, a prominent local family, soon gave him a relative in high office, since in 1774 his wife's sister married Alexander GRANT, an officer in the marine forces on the Great Lakes and later an executive councillor. John Askin Jr became collector of customs for Amherstburg in 1801 and storekeeper for the Indian Department at St Joseph Island, Upper Canada, in 1807. Askin's other children married British military officers or members of locally influential families. **Catherine's second marriage was to Robert Hamilton**. Thérèse married Thomas McKee, son of the deputy superintendent general of Indian affairs in Upper Canada, Alexander McKee.

Askin's correspondence with those of his children who lived at a distance reveals a great fondness and pride. Looking back in his old age he wrote, "All my Children . . . continue to behave as I could wish And I think Mrs Askin and I have lived so long at peace with each other that I do not dread any rupture will take place in future." His kindness extended beyond his own family. In a letter of 1778 from Michilimackinac to trader Charles Paterson he rebuked Paterson for allowing a child "that every body but yourself says is yours" to be sold to the Ottawas. Askin had retrieved the child and he informed Paterson, "He's at your service if you want him, if not I shall take good care of him until he is able to earn his Bread without Assistance." Mixing good sense with humour he wrote to another colleague, Sampson Fleming, who had recently become the father of a baby boy, "I beg you will not kill him with d-m-d Physick. . . . If I hear any more of your tampering with him & Mrs Fleming permits me, I will go down & take him from you."

His attitude towards his role as lieutenant-colonel of militia is equally charming. "On[c]e a year," he reported in 1805 to DePeyster, "I put on my best Cloths & as Colonel Commands the Militia . . . make them Fire in Honor to the best of Kings. If we dont all Fire at once thats no matter[.] a Drink generally closes the Scene."

Distant though Askin was from the cultural centres of his time, his letters ring with the rationalist assumptions of his age. Writing to Alexander Henry in 1796 he remarked, "I think before a man's two hours dead he Knows more about . . . [religion] than all those who remain behind. at Same time surely there can be no risk, in being what all the world agrees is good; and this is in the power of all who are disposed to be so."

During the War of 1812 Askin had four sons, two sons-in-law, and ten grandchildren fighting for the British and one son-in-law for the Americans. As his health failed, his son Charles took over responsibility for the family estate and Askin died at the age of 76.

